

13464.7 (5)

A

www.libtool.com.cn



Harvard College Library

FROM

Mrs. Algernon

and

Miss Anne Coolidge

TRANSFERRED
TO
HARVARD COLLEGE
LIBRARY

www.libtool.com.cn

www.libtool.com.cn

www.libtool.com.cn

www.libtool.com.cn

www.libtool.com.cn

The Cambridge Shakespeare.

www.libtool.com.cn



THE WORKS

www.libtool.com.cn
OF

WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE

EDITED BY

WILLIAM ALDIS WRIGHT

IN NINE VOLUMES

VOLUME V.

London

MACMILLAN AND CO.

AND NEW YORK

1892

All Rights reserved.

~~13464.7.3~~

13464.7 (5)

www.libtool.com.cn

- A

51743
11/1
✓



*The First Edition of the plays contained in this volume of
The Cambridge Shakespeare was published in 1864, 1865.
Second Edition 1892.*

CAMBRIDGE: PRINTED BY C. J. CLAY, M.A. AND SONS
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS.

11/1
11/1
11/1

CONTENTS.

| | PAGE |
|--|------|
| Preface to the First Edition | vii |
| Note by the Editor | xix |
| THE FIRST PART OF KING HENRY VI. | 3 |
| Notes to The First Part of King Henry VI. | 118 |
| THE SECOND PART OF KING HENRY VI. | 123 |
| Notes to the Second Part of King Henry VI. | 258 |
| THE THIRD PART OF KING HENRY VI. | 265 |
| Notes to The Third Part of King Henry VI. | 392 |
| KING RICHARD III. | 399 |
| Notes to King Richard III. | 590 |
| KING HENRY VIII. | 605 |
| Notes to King Henry VIII. | 742 |
| Addenda | 748 |

www.libtool.com.cn

PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION.

THE First Part of King Henry the Sixth was printed for the first time, so far as we know, in the Folio of 1623. The same edition contained also for the first time in their present form, 'The second Part of Henry the Sixth, with the death of the Good Duke Humfrey,' and 'The third Part of Henry the Sixth, with the death of the Duke of Yorke.'

The play upon which the Second Part of Henry the Sixth was founded was first printed in quarto (Q₁), in 1594, with the following title :

The | First part of the Con-|tention betwixt the two famous
Houses of Yorke | and Lancaster, with the death of the good |
Duke Humphrey : | And the banishment and death of the Duke
of | *Suffolke*, and the Tragicall end of the proud Cardinall | of
Winchester, with the notable Rebellion | of *Jacks Cade* : | *And the*
Duke of Yorkes first claime vnto the | Crowne. | LONDON | Printed
by Thomas Creed, for Thomas Millington, | and are to be sold at his
shop vnder Saint Peters | Church in Cornwall. | 1594. |

The only copy known of this edition is in the Bodleian Library (Malone, Add. 870)¹, and is probably the same which was once in Malone's possession, and which he collated with the second Quarto printed in 1600. Mr Halliwell, in the preface to 'The first sketches of the second and third parts of King Henry the Sixth,' edited by him for the Shakespeare Society, is inclined

¹ I have since found a copy in the Library of Lord Mostyn. [W. A. W.]

to doubt this, on the ground that Malone quotes, from the copy in his possession, a reading which does not exist in that now in the Bodleian. The passage in question is in Scene ix. line 12, 'Honouring him as if he were their king:' on which Mr Halliwell in his note observes, 'Malone, who has collated his copy of the edition of 1600, "printed by W. W.," with a copy of the 1594 edition formerly in his possession, distinctly writes—

"Thinking him as if he were their king,"

as the reading of his copy of the first edition. If so, it must have been a different copy from that now in the Bodleian, from which the present text is reprinted, and another instance of the curious variations in different copies of the same editions, which were first discovered by Steevens (Boswell's *Malone*, Vol. x. p. 73), and recently applied to good use by Mr Collier.' Mr Halliwell has here inadvertently fallen into error. Malone's collation is made in a copy of the edition of 1600, in which the line stands thus:

'Honouring him as if he were a king.'

At the foot of the page he wrote 'their king,' which is the reading of the edition of 1594 for the last two words, but which Mr Halliwell misread 'thinking' and regarded as a various reading for 'Honouring.' It is still possible, therefore, that Malone's copy and that at present in the Bodleian may be identical.

The second edition (Q₂) of the First Part of the Contention appeared in quarto in 1600, with the following title:

The | First part of the Con-|tention betwixt the two famous
hou-|ses of *Yorke and Lancaster*, with the | death of the good Duke |
Humphrey: | And the banishment and death of the Duke of |
Suffolke, and the Tragical end of the proud Cardinal | of *Win-*
chester, with the notable Rebellion of | *Iacke Cade*: | And the Duke of
Yorke's first clayme to the | *Crowne*. | LONDON | Printed by Valentine
Simmes for Thomas Millington, and | are to be sold at his shop vnder
S. Peters church | in Cornewall. | 1600. |

Copies with this title are in the Library of the Duke of Devonshire, and in the Bodleian (Malone, 867). An imperfect copy, wanting the last seven leaves, is in the Capell collection. Another impression bearing the same date, 'Printed by W. W. for Thomas Millington,' is said to exist, but we have been unable to find it. The MS. title quoted by Mr Halliwell from a copy in the Bodleian (Malone, 36) is prefixed to what appears to us unquestionably the same edition as the above. The minute correspondence of misplaced and defective letters between this copy and Capell's, with which, as well as with the other copy in the Bodleian, we have compared it, proves beyond question that all three must have been printed from the same form, and that the MS. title inserted in Malone's copy is out of place. So far therefore from Capell's imperfect copy of this edition being unique, as Mr Halliwell states, there are at least two other perfect copies in existence, besides one which only wants the title-page. In Lowndes's *Bibliographer's Manual* (ed. Bohn, p. 2281), another is said to be in the possession of Mr Tite. The late Mr George Daniel is stated, on the same authority, to have had the editions printed by Valentine Simmes and by W. W. in one volume, but they were not sold at his sale, and we have been unable to trace them.

In 1619, a third edition (Q₃) without date, printed by Isaac Jaggard, and including also 'The True Tragedy of Richard Duke of York,' appeared with the following title:

The | Whole Contention | betweene the two Famous | Houses,
LANCASTER and | YORKE. | *With the Tragicall ends of the good*
Duke | Humfrey, Richard Duke of Yorke, | *and King Henrie the*
sixt. | Divided into two Parts: And newly corrected and | enlarged.
Written by *William Shake-speare*, Gent. | Printed at LONDON, for
T. P. |

On the title-page of his copy of this edition, Capell has added in MS. the date '1619.—at the same time with the Pericles that follows; as appears by the continuation of the signatures.' The signatures of 'The Whole Contention' are

from A to Q in fours, while in *Pericles*, 'Printed for T. P. 1619,' the first page has signature R, which shows that the two must have formed part of the same volume.

'The True Tragedy of Richard Duke of York,' which formed the ground-work of The Third Part of King Henry the Sixth, was first printed in small 8vo. in 1595, with the following title:

The true Tragedie of Richard | *Duke of Yorke, and the death of* | good King Henrie the Sixt, | *with the whole contention betweene* | the two Houses Lancaster | and Yorke, as it was sundrie times | acted by the Right Honoura-|ble the Earle of Pem-brooke his seruants. | Printed at London by P. S. for Thomas Milling-|ton, and are to be sold at his shoppe vnder | *Saint Peters Church in* | *Cornwal*, 1595. |

A unique copy of this edition is in the Bodleian Library (Malone, 876). Although printed in 8vo. we have quoted it as (Q₁), in order to avoid introducing a new notation.

The second edition (Q₂) was printed in 1600, with the following title:

The | True Tragedie of | *Richarde Duke of* | *Yorke, and the death of good* | King Henrie the sixt : | *With the whole contention betweene the two* | Houses, Lancaster and Yorke ; as it was | sundry times acted by the Right | Honourable the Earle | of Pembroke his | seruantes. | Printed at London by *W. W.* for *Thomas Milling-|ton*, | and are to be sold at his shoppe vnder Saint | *Peters Church in* | *Cornewall*. | 1600. |

Copies of this edition are in the Duke of Devonshire's Library, the Bodleian (Malone, 36), and the British Museum. In Malone's Shakespeare (ed. 1790, Vol. I. Pt. I. p. 235), among the 'Dramatick Pieces on which plays were formed by Shakespeare,' an edition of The True Tragedy is mentioned, bearing date '1600, V. S. for Thomas Millington,' but in a note to the 'Third Part of King Henry VI.' (Vol. VI. p. 261) he confesses, 'I have never seen the quarto copy of the *Second* part of The

whole Contention, &c. printed by *Valentine Simmes* for Thomas Millington, 1600; and it is extremely doubtful whether such a one exists. A copy of *The True Tragedy*, and not, as stated in Bohn's *Lowndes*, of *The First Part of the Contention*, printed by W. W. 1600, was sold at Rhodes's sale in 1825 (No. 2113). The only authority therefore for the existence of an edition of *The First Part of the Contention*, printed by W. W. in 1600, is the MS. title-page of Malone's copy in the Bodleian Library. Capell merely quotes it on the authority of Pope, and all that Pope says in the Table at the end of his first edition, after giving the title of *The Whole Contention* printed in 1619, is, 'Since Printed under the same Title by *W. W.* for *Tho. Millington*, with the true Tragedy of *Richard D. of York*, and the Death of good King *Henry* the 6th, acted by the Earl of Pembroke his servants 1600.' This clearly refers to the second Quarto of *The True Tragedy*, not to that of *The First Part of the Contention*, and appears to us to be the origin of the error².

The third edition (Q₃) of the *True Tragedy* formed the second part of *The Whole Contention* described above. It has no separate title-page, but merely the heading:

The Second Part. | Containing the Tragedie of | Richard Duke
of Yorke, and the | *good King Henrie the* | Sixt. |

We have reprinted the text of *The First Part of the Contention* and of *The True Tragedy* from the first edition of each, giving in notes at the foot of the page the various readings of the second and third editions³. For this purpose we collated Mr Halliwell's reprint for the Shakespeare Society with the originals in the Bodleian Library. The accuracy of Mr Halli-

² This view is further confirmed by a manuscript note at the back of the title-page of Steevens's copy of *The True Tragedy*, ed. 1600, now in the British Museum. It shews that Pope is the only authority for the statement, and is as follows: 'This is only the *third* part of *K. Henry VI.* The *second* part, according to Pope, was likewise printed in 1600, by *W. W.* for *Thos. Millington.* MALONE.'

³ These reprints are in the present edition transferred to Vol. ix.

well's work materially facilitated our labours, and we can only hope that the errors of our own reprint may be as few and as unimportant as those we have discovered in his. For the readings of the second Quartos of *The First Part of the Contention* and *The True Tragedy* we collated the copies in the Bodleian and the Duke of Devonshire's Library, using also for the former the imperfect copy in the Capell collection. The readings of *The Whole Contention* (Q₂) have been given from Capell's copy verified by reference to that in the Devonshire Library.

With regard to the authorship of *The First Part of the Contention* and *The True Tragedy*, while we cannot agree with Malone on the one hand that they contain nothing of Shakespeare's, nor with Mr Knight on the other that they are entirely his work, there are so many internal proofs of his having had a considerable share in their composition, that, in accordance with our principle, we have reprinted them in a smaller type.

The first edition of *KING RICHARD THE THIRD* is a Quarto printed in 1597, with the following title-page :

The Tragedy of | King Richard the third. | Containing, | His treacherous Plots against his brother Clarence: | the pittiefull murder of his innocent nephewes: | his tyrannicall vsurpation: with the whole course | of his detested life, and most deserued death. | As it hath beene lately Acted by the | Right honourable the Lord Chamber-laine his seruants. | AT LONDON | Printed by Valentine Sims, for Andrew Wise, | dwelling in Paules Church-yard, at the | Sign of the Angell. | 1597. |

This edition is referred to, in our notes, as Q₁.

We have collated a complete copy belonging to the Duke of Devonshire and also an imperfect copy formerly belonging to Malone and now in the Bodleian. Malone had supplied the missing leaves by the insertion of some from the second Quarto⁴. There is no copy in the Capell collection.

⁴ He says in a MS. note: 'This copy of the original edition of *King Richard III.* was imperfect, when I purchased it, wanting signat. C 1 and 2, D 4, L 4,

The second edition, also in Quarto, which we call Q₂, was published in the following year, with the name of the author. It is in other respects a reprint of the first. The title-page is as follows:

THE | TRAGEDIE | of King Richard | the third. | Containing
his treacherous Plots against his | brother *Clarence*: the pitiful
murder of his innocent | Nephewes: his tyrannicall vsurpation:
with | the whole course of his detested life, and most | *deserued*
death. | *As it hath bene lately Acted by the Right honourable | the*
Lord Chamberlaine his seruants. | By William Shake-speare. | LON-
DON | Printed by Thomas Creede, for Andrew Wise, | dwelling in
Paules Church-yard, at the signe | of the Angell. 1598. |

The third Quarto, our Q₃, has the following title-page:

THE | TRAGEDIE | of King Richard | the third. | *Containing*
his treacherous Plots against his brother | Clarence: the pittifull
murder of his innocent Ne-phewes: his tyrannicall vsurpation:
with the | whole course of his detested life, and | most deserued
death. | *As it hath bene lately Acted by the Right Honourable | the*
Lord Chamberlaine his seruants. | Newly augmented, | By *William*
Shakespeare. | LONDON | Printed by Thomas Creede, for Andrew
Wise, dwelling | in Paules Church-yard, at the signe of the | Angell.
1602. |

Notwithstanding the words 'newly augmented,' this edition contains nothing that is not found in the second Quarto, from which it is reprinted, except some additional errors of the press.

The fourth Quarto, our Q₄, was printed from the third, by

and M 1, 2, and 3. These seven leaves I have supplied from a later copy (that of 1598), and have collated with the edition of 1597. The variations are set down in the margin.' He adds: 'Mr Penn Ashton Curzon and Mr Kemble are possessed of copies of this original edition of this play: I know of no other, except that in this volume.' Mr Kemble's copy is now in the Devonshire Library, and Mr Curzon's is perhaps the same which was sold at Mr Daniel's sale and is now in the possession of Mr Huth. Besides the leaves of Malone's copy which are missing, signatures C 3 and C 4 are imperfect, the upper half of each being supplied from the edition of 1598.

the same printer for a different bookseller, as appears by the title-page :

www.libtool.com.cn

THE | TRAGEDIE | of King Richard | the third. | *Containing his treacherous Plots against his brother | Clarence: the pittifull murder of his innocent Ne-phewes: his tyrannicall vsurpation: with the | whole course of his detested life, and | most deserved death. | As it hath bin lately Acted by the Right Honourable | the Lord Chamberlaine his seruants. | Newly augmented, | By William Shake-speare. |* LONDON, | Printed by Thomas Creede, and are to be sold by *Mathew | Lawe*, dwelling in Paules Church-yard, at the Signe | of the Foxe, neare S. Austins gate, 1605. |

There is no copy of Q₄ in the Capell collection. We have collated one in the Bodleian which formerly belonged to Malone. It is numbered 880.

The fifth Quarto, Q₅, was printed in 1612, not from its immediate predecessor, but from the Quarto of 1602, although it was printed by the same printer and for the same bookseller as that of 1605. The title-page of Q₅ is as follows :

THE | TRAGEDIE | of King Richard | the third. | *Containing his treacherous Plots against his brother | Clarence: the pittifull murder of his innocent Ne-phewes: his tyrannicall vsurpation: with the | whole course of his detested life, and | most deserved death. | As it hath beene lately Acted by the Kings Maiesties | seruants. | Newly augmented, | By William Shake-speare. |* LONDON, | Printed by Thomas Creede, and are to be sold by *Mathew | Lawe*, dwelling in Pauls Church-yard, at the Signe | of the Foxe, neare S. Austins gate, 1612. |

The edition of 1622 is so rare that its very existence has been called in question⁵. There is however a copy in the Capell collection, of which the title-page is as follows :

THE | TRAGEDIE | OF | KING | RICHARD | THE THIRD. | Contayning his treacherous Plots against | *his brother Clarence: The*

⁵ 'An impression of 1622 is mentioned in some lists, but the existence of a copy of that date is more than doubtful.' Collier, Ed. 2, Vol. rv. p. 217.

pittifull murder of his innocent | Nephewes : his tyrannicall Vsurpation : with the whole | course of his detested life, and most | *deserued death.* | As it hath been lately Acted by the Kings Maiesties | *Seruant*s. | Newly augmented. | By *William Shakespeare*. | LONDON, | Printed by *Thomas Purfoot*, and are to be sold by *Mathew Law*, dwelling | in *Pauls Church-yard*, at the Signe of the *Foxe*, neere | *S. Austines gate*, 1622.

This edition we call Q_6 . It is printed from Q_5 .

Another edition in Quarto was printed in 1629, not from the first Folio, but from the sixth Quarto. It was printed by John Norton for Matthew Law. Except in the name of the printer and the substitution of the word 'tiranous' for 'tyrannicall' the title-page does not differ from that of Q_6 . We call it Q_7 .

The eighth and last Quarto, our Q_8 , copied from the seventh, was printed by John Norton in 1634. There is no bookseller's name on the title-page, if we may trust that which Capell has supplied in MS. 'from a copy in the possession of Messrs Tonsons and Draper.'

In quoting the readings of the Quartos and Folios, we have, in all cases where the spelling is unimportant, given that of the earliest copy.

In 1766 Steevens published a reprint of the Quarto of 1612, 'collated'—to use his own words—'with the following editions.'

1598. *Thomas Creede*, for *Andrew Wise*.

1602. Ditto.

1624. *Thomas Purfoot*, *Thomas Purfoot*, &c.

1629. *John Norton*, &c.

1634. *John Norton*, &c. and another imperfect Copy, differing from the rest, but without a Title Page.

The date 1624 is probably a mistake for 1622. At the foot of each page he gives various readings, but without specifying the editions to which they respectively belong. Several of these are not found in any of the Quartos with which we are acquainted. We have therefore recorded them as 'quoted in

Steevens's reprint.' So many of the other readings which he gives are found only in the first Quarto that we have no doubt that the imperfect copy which he mentions was of that edition.

We have made, and, as we believe, for the first time, a complete collation of all the extant Quartos. Those of 1597 and 1605 were unknown to Capell when he collated the other six.

The respective origin and authority of the first Quarto and first Folio texts of *Richard III.* is perhaps the most difficult question which presents itself to an editor of Shakespeare. In the case of most of the plays a brief survey leads him to form a definite judgement; in this, the most attentive examination scarcely enables him to propose with confidence a hypothetical conclusion.

The Quarto, Q₁, contains passages not found in the Folio, F₁, which are essential to the understanding of the context: the Folio, on the other hand, contains passages equally essential, which are not found in the Quarto.

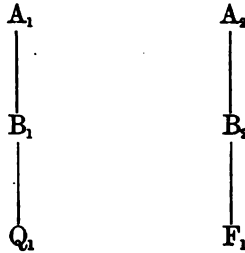
Again, passages which in the Quarto are complete and consecutive, are amplified in the Folio, the expanded text being quite in the manner of Shakespeare. The Folio, too, contains passages not in the Quartos, which, though not necessary to the sense, yet harmonize so well, in sense and tone, with the context that we can have no hesitation in attributing them to the author himself.

On the other hand, we find in the Folio some insertions and many alterations which we may with equal certainty affirm not to be due to Shakespeare. Sometimes the alterations seem merely arbitrary, but more frequently they appear to have been made in order to avoid the recurrence of the same word, even where the recurrence adds to the force of the passage, or to correct a supposed defect of metre, although the metre cannot be amended except by spoiling the sense.

Occasionally we seem to find indications that certain turns of phrase, uses of words or metrical licences, familiar enough to

Shakespeare and his earlier contemporaries, had become obsolete in the time of the corrector, and the passages modified accordingly. In short, *Richard III.* seems even before the publication of the Folio to have been tampered with by a nameless transcriber who worked in the spirit, though not with the audacity, of Colley Cibber.

The following scheme will best explain the theory which we submit as a not impossible way of accounting for the phenomena of the text :



A_1 is the Author's original MS.

B_1 is a transcript by another hand with some accidental omissions and, of course, slips of the pen. From this transcript was printed the Quarto of 1597, Q_1 .

A_2 is the Author's original MS. revised by himself, with corrections and additions, interlinear, marginal, and on inserted leaves.

B_2 is a copy of this revised MS., made by another hand, probably after the death of the Author and perhaps a very short time before 1623. As the stage directions of the Folio, which was printed from B_2 , are more precise and ample as a rule than those of the Quarto, we may infer that the transcript, B_2 , was made for the library of the theatre, perhaps to take the place of the original which had become worn by use, for *Richard III.* continued to be a popular acting play. Some curious, though not frequent, coincidences between the text of the Folio and that of the Quarto of 1602, Q_2 , lead us to suppose that the writer of B_2 had occasionally recourse to that Quarto to supple-

ment passages which, by its being frayed or stained, had become illegible in A₂.

Assuming the truth of this hypothesis, the object of an Editor must be to give in the text as near an approximation as possible to A₂, rejecting from F₁ all that is due to the unknown writer of B₂ and supplying its place from Q₁, which, errors of pen and press apart, certainly came from the hand of Shakespeare. In the construction of our text we have steadily borne this principle in mind, only deviating from it in a few instances where we have retained the expanded version of the Folio in preference to the briefer version of the Quarto, even when we incline to think that the earlier form is more terse and therefore not likely to have been altered by its author. Our reason is this: as the Folio version contains substantially that of the Quarto and as the question does not admit of a positive decision we prefer the risk of putting in something which Shakespeare did not to that of leaving out something which he did write. *Cæteris paribus*, we have adopted the reading of the Quarto.

In conclusion we commend a study of the text of *Richard III.* to those, if such there be, who imagine that it is possible by the exercise of critical skill to restore with certainty what Shakespeare actually wrote.

We have great pleasure in repeating our thanks to the curators of the British Museum and of the Bodleian Library and in adding to the number of those who have laid us under obligation the names of the Rev. Joseph Power, Fellow of Clare College, Mr Huth, and Mr Lilly.

It is only right to add that it is the constant kindness of the Duke of Devonshire which enables us to publish this volume without further delay and with such an approach to completeness as it may be found to possess.

W. G. C.

W. A. W.

[1864]

'The Famous History of the Life of KING HENRY THE EIGHT' was printed for the first time in the Folio of 1623.

www.libtool.com.cn

W. G. C.

W. A. W.

[1865]

NOTE BY THE EDITOR.

SINCE the appearance of the first edition of the Cambridge Shakespeare, the question of the relation of the Quarto and Folio texts of *Richard III.* has been elaborately discussed by Mr Spedding and others in the *Transactions of the New Shakspeare Society* for 1875-6, and by Professor Delius in an Essay in the *Jahrbuch der Deutschen Shakespeare Gesellschaft*, VII. Mr Spedding's conclusion is that the Quarto text is the original of the play, and that the Folios represent the text as revised by Shakespeare himself, the result being 'that where express reason cannot be shown to the contrary, the readings of the Folios ought always to be preferred.' 'Professor Delius, on entirely different grounds, also maintains the superior authority of the Folio readings. He believes that the Folios contain the original text of Shakespeare, and that the text of the Quartos was made from it by an anonymous editor, who for various reasons audaciously tampered both with language and metre. For instance, he holds that the smooth lines of the Folio were purposely made rugged by the anonymous editor of the Quarto, the alternative supposition being that Shakespeare originally wrote these irregular lines which were made smooth at a later time when he himself indulged in a freer metre. Indeed Professor Delius lays it down as a principle, and not at all as a paradox, that the more correct versification of the Folio, as compared with the frequently incorrect

versification of the Quarto, is an evidence of the priority of the former.' (*Preface to the Clarendon Press Edition of Richard III.* 1880.)

Mr P. A. Daniel, in the Preface to his edition of the facsimile of the first Quarto of *Richard III.* (1597), considers that the Folio 'represents the play as first set forth by Shakespeare,' the Quarto 'a shortened and revised copy of it.' He is of opinion that the 'copy' supplied to the printers of the first Folio was 'a copy of Q₁, 1622, enlarged, altered, and corrected in accordance with a complete MS. of the play in the possession of the theatre.' This theory is elaborately worked out in the remainder of his Preface.

If any one wishes to examine the question for himself the materials for such a purpose will be found in the various readings of the Quartos and Folios which are given in the notes.

WILLIAM ALDIS WRIGHT.

September, 1891.

www.libtool.com.cn

THE FIRST PART
OF
KING HENRY VI.

VOL. V.

1

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ¹.

KING HENRY the Sixth.

DUKE OF GLOUCESTER, uncle to the King, and Protector.

DUKE OF BEDFORD, uncle to the King, and Regent of France.

THOMAS BEAUFORT, Duke of Exeter, great-uncle to the King.

HENRY BEAUFORT, great-uncle to the King, Bishop of Winchester,
and afterwards Cardinal.

JOHN BEAUFORT, Earl, afterwards Duke, of Somerset.

RICHARD PLANTAGENET, son of Richard late Earl of Cambridge,
afterwards Duke of York.

EARL OF WARWICK.

EARL OF SALISBURY.

EARL OF SUFFOLK.

LORD TALBOT, afterwards Earl of Shrewsbury.

JOHN TALBOT, his son.

EDMUND MORTIMER, Earl of March.

SIR JOHN FASTOLFE.

SIR WILLIAM LUCY.

SIR WILLIAM GLANSDALE.

SIR THOMAS GARGRAVE.

Mayor of London.

WOODVILLE, Lieutenant of the Tower.

VERNON, of the White-Rose or York faction.

BASSET, of the Red-Rose or Lancaster faction.

A Lawyer. Mortimer's Keepers.

CHARLES, Dauphin, and afterwards King, of France.

REIGNIER, Duke of Anjou, and titular King of Naples.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

DUKE OF ALENÇON.

BASTARD OF ORLEANS.

Governor of Paris.

Master-Gunner of Orleans, and his Son.

General of the French forces in Bourdeaux.

A French Sergeant. A Porter.

An old Shepherd, father to Joan la Pucelle.

MARGARET, daughter to Reignier, afterwards married to King Henry.

COUNTESS OF AUVERGNE.

JOAN LA PUCELLE, commonly called Joan of Arc.

Lords, Warders of the Tower, Heralds, Officers, Soldiers, Messengers,
and Attendants.

Fiends appearing to La Pucelle.

SCENE: *Partly in England, and partly in France.*

¹ First given, imperfectly, by Rowe. See note (1).

THE FIRST PART
OF
KING HENRY VI.

ACT I.

SCENE I. *Westminster Abbey.*

Dead March. Enter the Funeral of KING HENRY the Fifth, attended on by the DUKE of BEDFORD, Regent of France; the DUKE of GLOUCESTER, Protector; the DUKE of EXETER, the EARL of WARWICK, the BISHOP of WINCHESTER, Heralds, &c.

Bed. Hung be the heavens with black, yield day to night!

Comets, importing change of times and states,
Brandish your crystal tresses in the sky,
And with them scourge the bad revolting stars
That have consented unto Henry's death! 5
King Henry the Fifth, too famous to live long!

Westminster Abbey.] Theobald.
the Earl of Warwick,] Warwicke,
Ff.

Heralds, &c.] Malone. and the Duke
of Somerset. Ff.

3 *crystal*] *crisped* Hanmer. *cristed* or
crested Warburton conj.

crystal...sky] *tristful tresses in the sky*
or *tresses in the crystal sky* Roderick
conj.

5 *consented*] *concented* Steevens conj.
Henry's] *Harry's* Johnson.

6 *King*] om. Pope.
the] om. S. Walker conj.

England ne'er lost a king of so much worth.

Glou. England ne'er had a king until his time.
Virtue he had, deserving to command :

His brandish'd sword did blind men with his beams : 10

His arms spread wider than a dragon's wings ;

His sparkling eyes, replete with wrathful fire,

More dazzled and drove back his enemies

Than mid-day sun fierce bent against their faces.

What should I say ? his deeds exceed all speech : 15

He ne'er lift up his hand but conquered.

Exe. We mourn in black : why mourn we not in
blood ?

Henry is dead and never shall revive :

Upon a wooden coffin we attend,

And death's dishonourable victory

20

We with our stately presence glorify,

Like captives bound to a triumphant car.

What ! shall we curse the planets of mishap

That plotted thus our glory's overthrow ?

Or shall we think the subtle-witted French

25

Conjurers and sorcerers, that afraid of him

By magic verses have contrived his end ?

Win. He was a king bless'd of the King of kings.

Unto the French the dreadful judgement-day

So dreadful will not be as was his sight.

30

The battles of the Lord of hosts he fought :

The church's prayers made him so prosperous.

Glou. The church ! where is it ? Had not churchmen
pray'd,

10 *his] its* Pope.

12 *wrathful] awful* Rowe.

16 *ne'er lift...conquered] never lifted...
conquer'd* Pope.

24 *glory's]* Rowe. *Glories* Ff.

27 *verses have]* F₁. *Verses have* F₂F₃F₄.

verse have thus Pope. *verse they have*
Long MS.

32 *church's]* *Churches* Ff.

33 *The church!...pray'd,]* So Pope. As
two lines in Ff.

not] but Vaughan conj.

His thread of life had not so soon decay'd :
 None do you like but an effeminate prince, 35
 Whom, like a school-boy, you may over-awe.

Win. Gloucester, whate'er we like, thou art Pro-
 tector,

And lookest to command the prince and realm.
 Thy wife is proud ; she holdeth thee in awe,
 More than God or religious churchmen may. 40

Glou. Name not religion, for thou lovest the flesh,
 And ne'er throughout the year to church thou go'st
 Except it be to pray against thy foes.

Bed. Cease, cease these jars and rest your minds in
 peace :

Let's to the altar : heralds, wait on us : 45
 Instead of gold, we'll offer up our arms ;
 Since arms avail not now that Henry's dead.

Posterity, await for wretched years,
 When at their mothers' moist eyes babes shall suck,
 Our isle be made a nourish of salt tears, 50
 And none but women left to wail the dead.

Henry the Fifth, thy ghost I invoke :
 Prosper this realm, keep it from civil broils,
 Combat with adverse planets in the heavens !
 A far more glorious star thy soul will make 55
 Than Julius Cæsar or bright—

45 *heralds,*] Pope. *Heralds* Ff.

48 *Posterity, await*] *Posteritis await* Ff.
for] *sore* Vaughan conj.

49 *moist*] F₂F₃F₄. *moistned* F₁.

50 *nourish*] *marish* Pope. *nourice*
 Theobald.

56 *Cæsar or bright—* Mess. *My honour-
 able*] *Cæsar's orb.* Mess. *Right
 honourable* Anon. apud Fraz. Mag.
 conj.

or bright—] Ff. *or bright Francis
 Draks.* Pope conj. Omitted by
 Hanmer. *or bright Cassiopeia.*
 Theobald conj. *or bright Berenice.*
 Dyce, ed. 2 (Johnson conj.). *or
 bright Alexander.* Capell conj. *bright.*
 Jackson conj. *or bright Cassiope.*
 Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). *or bright
 Orion.* Mitford conj. *or great Alex-
 ander.* Bulloch conj. *or bright Ce-*

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. My honourable lords, health to you all !
Sad tidings bring I to you out of France,
Of loss, of slaughter and discomfiture :
Guienne, Champagne, Rheims, Orleans, 60
Paris, Guysors, Poitiers, are all quite lost.

Bed. What say'st thou, man, before dead Henry's
corse ?

Speak softly ; or the loss of those great towns
Will make him burst his lead and rise from death.

Glou. Is Paris lost ? is Rouen yielded up ? 65
If Henry were recall'd to life again,

These news would cause him once more yield the ghost.

Exe. How were they lost ? what treachery was used ?

Mess. No treachery ; but want of men and money.
Amongst the soldiers this is muttered, 70

That here you maintain several factions,

And whilst a field should be dispatch'd and fought,

You are disputing of your generals :

One would have lingering wars with little cost ;

Another would fly swift, but wanteth wings ; 75

A third thinks, without expense at all,

By guileful fair words peace may be obtain'd.

phœus. Keightley conj. or bright
Charlemagne. Anon. conj. or bright
Hercules. Lloyd conj. or bright
Constantine. Perring conj. or bright
Hesperus. Orger conj.

57 SCENE II. Pope.

60 *Rheims*] *Rhoimes* Ff. and *Rheims*
and Pope. *Rheims, Roan, Capell*
See note (II).

Orleans] *Orleans, and Roan* Keight-
ley.

62, 63 *man, ...corse ? Speak] man !...*

corse Speak Staunton.

65 *is Rouen*] *is Roan* F₁. and *is Roan*
F₂F₃F₄. and *Roan* Pope. and *Or-*
leans Hanmer.

76 *A third thinks*] *A third thinks* F₁.
A third man thinks F₂F₃F₄. *A third*
one thinks S. Walker conj. *A third*
thinketh Delius conj. *A third thinks*
that Keightley. *While a third thinks*
Anon. conj. *And a third thinks*
Dyce (ed. 2). *A third, he thinks*
Orger conj.

Awake, awake, English nobility!
 Let not sloth dim your honours new-begot:
 Cropp'd are the flower-de-luces in your arms; 80
 Of England's coat one half is cut away.

Exe. Were our tears wanting to this funeral,
 These tidings would call forth their flowing tides.

Bed. Me they concern; Regent I am of France.
 Give me my steeled coat. I'll fight for France. 85
 Away with these disgraceful wailing robes!
 Wounds will I lend the French instead of eyes,
 To weep their intermissive miseries.

Enter to them another Messenger.

Mess. Lords, view these letters full of bad mischance.
 France is revolted from the English quite, 90
 Except some petty towns of no import:
 The Dauphin Charles is crowned king in Rheims;
 The Bastard of Orleans with him is join'd;
 Reignier, Duke of Anjou, doth take his part;
 The Duke of Alençon flieth to his side. 95

Exe. The Dauphin crowned king! all fly to him!
 O, whither shall we fly from this reproach?

Glou. We will not fly, but to our enemies' throats.
 Bedford, if thou be slack, I'll fight it out.

Bed. Gloucester, why doubt'st thou of my forwardness?

- | | |
|--|---|
| 78 <i>Awake, awake</i>] F ₁ F ₃ F ₄ . <i>Awake, a-way</i> F ₂ . | 92 <i>Dauphin</i>] <i>Dolphin</i> Ff (and elsewhere). |
| 79 <i>new-begot</i>] <i>newly got</i> Vaughan conj. | 93 <i>of</i>] om. Pope. |
| 80, 81 <i>arms</i> ; <i>Of...coat</i>] <i>arms, Of...coat</i> Pope. <i>Armes Of...Coat</i> , Ff. | 94 <i>Reignier</i>] Rowe. <i>Reynold</i> Ff. <i>doth take</i>] F ₁ . <i>doth</i> F ₂ F ₃ F ₄ . <i>takes</i> Hanmer. |
| 83 <i>their</i>] Theobald. <i>her</i> Ff. <i>our</i> Anon. conj. | 95 <i>of</i>] om. S. Walker conj. <i>flieth to</i>] <i>flyeth</i> to F ₁ F ₂ . <i>flieth</i> on F ₃ F ₄ . <i>flies</i> to Pope. |
| 85 <i>steeled</i>] <i>stealed</i> F ₂ . | <i>side.</i>] Capell. <i>side</i> . Exit. Ff. |
| 87 <i>will I</i>] <i>I will</i> Pope. | 96 <i>crowned</i>] Rowe. <i>crown'd</i> Ff. |
| 89 SCENE III. Pope. <i>Mess.</i>] 2 <i>Mess.</i> Rowe. <i>bad</i>] <i>sad</i> Vaughan conj. | |

An army have I muster'd in my thoughts, 101
 Wherewith already France is overrun.

www.libtool.com.cn

Enter another Messenger.

Mess. My gracious lords, to add to your laments,
 Wherewith you now bedew King Henry's hearse,
 I must inform you of a dismal fight 105
 Betwixt the stout Lord Talbot and the French.

Win. What! wherein Talbot overcame? is't so?

Mess. O, no; wherein Lord Talbot was o'erthrown:
 The circumstance I'll tell you more at large.
 The tenth of August last this dreadful lord, 110
 Retiring from the siege of Orleans,
 Having full scarce six thousand in his troop,
 By three and twenty thousand of the French
 Was round encompassed and set upon.
 No leisure had he to enrank his men; 115
 He wanted pikes to set before his archers;
 Instead whereof sharp stakes pluck'd out of hedges
 They pitched in the ground confusedly,
 To keep the horsemen off from breaking in.
 More than three hours the fight continued; 120
 Where valiant Talbot above human thought
 Enacted wonders with his sword and lance:
 Hundreds he sent to hell, and none durst stand him;
 Here, there, and every where, enraged he flew:
 The French exclaim'd, the devil was in arms; 125
 All the whole army stood agazed on him:
 His soldiers spying his undaunted spirit

103 SCENE IV. Pope.

Mess.] 3 *Mess.* Rowe.

108, 145, 157 *Mess.*] 3. *Mes.* or 3. *Mess.*

Ff.

112 *full scarce*] *Ff.* *scarce full* Rowe.

123 *durst*] *did* Vaughan conj.

124 *flew*] Rowe (ed. 2). *slew* *Ff.*

126 *the*] *their* Capell conj.

A Talbot! a Talbot! cried out amain,
 And rush'd into the bowels of the battle.
 Here had the conquest fully been seal'd up, 130
 If Sir John Fastolfe had not play'd the coward:
 He, being in the vaward, placed behind
 With purpose to relieve and follow them,
 Cowardly fled, not having struck one stroke.
 Hence grew the general wreck and massacre; 135
 Enclosed were they with their enemies:
 A base Walloon, to win the Dauphin's grace,
 Thrust Talbot with a spear into the back,
 Whom all France with their chief assembled strength
 Durst not presume to look once in the face. 140
Bed. Is Talbot slain? then I will slay myself,
 For living idly here in pomp and ease,
 Whilst such a worthy leader, wanting aid,
 Unto his dastard foemen is betray'd.
Mess. O no, he lives; but is took prisoner, 145
 And Lord Scales with him, and Lord Hungerford:
 Most of the rest slaughter'd or took likewise.
Bed. His ransom there is none but I shall pay:
 I'll hale the Dauphin headlong from his throne:
 His crown shall be the ransom of my friend; 150
 Four of their lords I'll change for one of ours.
 Farewell, my masters; to my task will I;

128 *A Talbot! a Talbot! cried]* *A*
Talbot! Talbot! cried Pope. *A*
Talbot! cried, a Talbot! Seymour
 conj. *Talbot! a Talbot! cried*
 Vaughan conj.
 131 *Fastolfe]* Theobald. *Falstaffe* F₁
 F₂F₃. *Falstaff* F₄.
 132 *in...behind]* *in aidance, placed be-*
hind the vaward Singer conj.
in] *nigh* Vaughan conj.

vaward] *Vaward* Ff. *rereward*
 Hanmer (Theobald conj.).
 135 *wreck]* Theobald (ed. 2). *wrack*
 Ff.
 137 *Walloon]* F₂F₄. *Wallon* F₁F₂.
 139 *their chief]* *their chiefs* F₁F₂. *their*
 F₃F₄. *her chief* Pope (ed. 2).
 141 *slain? then]* Johnson. *slaine then?*
 Ff.

Bonfires in France forthwith I am to make,
 To keep our great Saint George's feast withal:
 Ten thousand soldiers with me I will take, 155
 Whose bloody deeds shall make all Europe quake.

Mess. So you had need; for Orleans is besieged;
 The English army is grown weak and faint:
 The Earl of Salisbury craveth supply,
 And hardly keeps his men from mutiny, 160
 Since they, so few, watch such a multitude.

Exe. Remember, lords, your oaths to Henry sworn,
 Either to quell the Dauphin utterly,
 Or bring him in obedience to your yoke.

Bed. I do remember it; and here take my leave, 165
 To go about my preparation. [*Exit.*]

Glou. I'll to the Tower with all the haste I can,
 To view the artillery and munition;
 And then I will proclaim young Henry king. [*Exit.*]

Exe. To Eltham will I, where the young king is, 170
 Being ordain'd his special governor,
 And for his safety there I'll best devise. [*Exit.*]

Win. Each hath his place and function to attend:
 I am left out; for me nothing remains.
 But long I will not be Jack out of office: 175
 The king from Eltham I intend to steal
 And sit at chiefest stern of public weal. [*Exeunt.*]

156 *make*] *cause* Collier MS.

157 *for Orleans is besieged;*] *'fore Or-*
leans besieg'd Hammer.

162 *oaths*] *oath* S. Walker conj.

165 *it*] *'t* S. Walker conj. om. Anon.
 conj.

my] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

166 [*Exit.*] *Exit* Bedford. Ff.

168 *munition*] *amunition* Pope.

169 [*Exit.*] *Exit* Gloster. Ff.

170, 176 *Eltham*] Steevens. *Eltham*
 Ff.

175 *Jack*] *thus* Pope.

176 *steal*] Singer (Mason conj.). *send*
 Ff. *fetch* Keightley conj.

177 *at chiefest stern*] *as chief, at stern*
 Vaughan conj.

[*Exeunt.*] Edd. *Exit.* Ff. *Exit.*
 Scene closes. Capall.

SCENE II. *France. Before Orleans.*

Sound a Flourish. Enter CHARLES, ALENÇON, and REIGNIER, marching with Drum and Soldiers.

Char. Mars his true moving, even as in the heavens
So in the earth, to this day is not known :
Late did he shine upon the English side ;
Now we are victors ; upon us he smiles.
What towns of any moment but we have ? 5
At pleasure here we lie near Orleans ;
Otherwhiles the famish'd English, like pale ghosts,
Faintly besiege us one hour in a month.

Alen. They want their porridge and their fat bull-
beeves :

Either they must be dieted like mules, 10
And have their provender tied to their mouths,
Or piteous they will look, like drowned mice.

Reig. Let's raise the siege : why live we idly here ?
Talbot is taken, whom we wont to fear :
Remaineth none but mad-brain'd Salisbury ; 15
And he may well in fretting spend his gall,
Nor men nor money hath he to make war.

Char. Sound, sound alarum ! we will rush on them.
Now for the honour of the forlorn French !

- SCENE II.] Capell. SCENE V. Pope. 11, 12 *And have...mice.*] Misplaced in
France. Before Orleans.] Before Or- F₂F₃F₄ after line 13.
leans in France. Theobald. France. 13 *Reig. Let's.....here f]* Omitted by
Pope. France. The English Posts Rowe, Pope, and Hanmer.
before Orleans. Capell. *live]* sit Capell. *lie* Hudson (S.
Sound a Flourish.] F₁. om. F₂F₃ Walker conj.).
F₄. 19 *forlorn]* *forborne* Collier MS. *for-*
6 *lie]* *live* S. Walker conj. *ward* Lettsom conj. *true-born* Kin-
7 *Otherwhiles]* *Tho' still* Pope. *The near* conj.
whiles Capell.

Him I forgive my death that killeth me 20
 When he sees me go back one foot or fly. [Exeunt.

Here Alarum; they are beaten back by the English with great loss.
Re-enter CHARLES, ALENÇON, and REIGNIER.

Char. Who ever saw the like? what men have I!
 Dogs! cowards! dastards! I would ne'er have fled,
 But that they left me 'midst my enemies.

Reig. Salisbury is a desperate homicide; 25
 He fighteth as one weary of his life.
 The other lords, like lions wanting food,
 Do rush upon us as their hungry prey.

Alen. Froissart, a countryman of ours, records, 30
 England all Olivers and Rowlands bred
 During the time Edward the Third did reign.
 More truly now may this be verified;
 For none but Samsons and Goliases
 It sendeth forth to skirmish. One to ten!
 Lean raw-boned rascals! who would e'er suppose 35
 They had such courage and audacity?

Char. Let's leave this town; for they are hare-brain'd
 slaves,
 And hunger will enforce them to be more eager:
 Of old I know them; rather with their teeth
 The walls they'll tear down than forsake the siege. 40

Reig. I think, by some odd gimmors or device

21 *one]* on F₃F₄.
or fly] to *fly* Hanmer. *or see* Dyce
 (Collier MS.).
 Here...loss.] Ff.
 Re-enter...] Theobald. Enter... Ff.
 and Reignier.] Reignier and the rest.
 Capell.
 27 *The]* F₁. *To* F₂F₃. *Too* F₄. *Two*
 Rowe.
 28 *hungry]* *hungred* Johnson conj.

29 *Froissart]* *Froysard* Ff.
 30 *bred]* Rowe. *breed* Ff.
 33 *Goliases]* *Goliaths now* Hanmer.
 37 *Let's...slaves,]* As in Pope. As two
 lines in Ff.
hare-brain'd] Dyce. *hayre-brayn'd*
 F₁F₂. *hair-brain'd* F₃F₄.
 38 *to]* om. Pope.
 41 *gimmors]* F₁. *Gimmalls* F₂F₃. *Gim-*
mals F₄.

Their arms are set like clocks, still to strike on;
 Else ne'er could they hold out so as they do.
 By my consent, we'll even let them alone.

Alen. Be it so. 45

Enter the BASTARD of Orleans.

Bast. Where's the Prince Dauphin? I have news for
 him.

Char. Bastard of Orleans, thrice welcome to us.

Bast. Methinks your looks are sad, your cheer appall'd:
 Hath the late overthrow wrought this offence?

Be not dismay'd, for succour is at hand: 50

A holy maid hither with me I bring,
 Which by a vision sent to her from heaven

Ordained is to raise this tedious siege,
 And drive the English forth the bounds of France.

The spirit of deep prophecy she hath, 55

Exceeding the nine sibyls of old Rome:

What's past and what's to come she can descry.

Speak, shall I call her in? Believe my words,

For they are certain and unfallible.

Char. Go, call her in. [*Exit Bastard.*] But first, to try
 her skill, 60

Reignier, stand thou as Dauphin in my place:

Question her proudly; let thy looks be stern:

By this means shall we sound what skill she hath.

Re-enter the BASTARD of Orleans, with JOAN LA PUCELLE.

Reig. Fair maid, is't thou wilt do these wondrous feats?

42 *on*] *one* S. Walker conj.

44 *even*] *'en* Pope.

58 *my*] *her* Johnson conj.

59 *unfallible*] *infallible* Rowe.

60 [*Exit Bastard.*] Capell. om. Ff.

63 [*Retires.* Capell.

64 SCENE VI. Pope.

Re-enter.....Joan La Pucelle.] Re-

enter.....La Pucelle. Dyce. Enter

La Pucelle, usher'd. Capell. Enter

Ioane Puzel. Ff.

Fair...feats ?] As prose in Ff.

wilt] will Capell conj.

Puc. Reignier, is't thou that thinkest to beguile me?
Where is the Dauphin? Come, come from behind; 66
I know thee well, though never seen before.

Be not amazed, there's nothing hid from me:
In private will I talk with thee apart.

Stand back, you lords, and give us leave awhile. 70

Reig. She takes upon her bravely at first dash.

Puc. Dauphin, I am by birth a shepherd's daughter,
My wit untrain'd in any kind of art.
Heaven and our Lady gracious hath it pleased
To shine on my contemptible estate: 75

Lo, whilst I waited on my tender lambs,
And to sun's parching heat display'd my cheeks,
God's mother deigned to appear to me,

And in a vision full of majesty
Will'd me to leave my base vocation, 80

And free my country from calamity:
Her aid she promised and assured success:
In complete glory she reveal'd herself;
And, whereas I was black and swart before,
With those clear rays which she infused on me 85
That beauty am I bless'd with which you see.

Ask me what question thou canst possible,
And I will answer unpremeditated:
My courage try by combat, if thou darest,
And thou shalt find that I exceed my sex. 90

Resolve on this, thou shalt be fortunate,
If thou receive me for thy warlike mate.

Char. Thou hast astonish'd me with thy high terms:

74 *Lady gracious*] *gracious Lady* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS. and S. Walker conj.).

77 *sun's*] *suns'* or *summer's* Vaughan conj.

86 *which you see*] F₂F₃F₄. *which you may see* F₁. *you may see* Anon. conj.

90 *my*] *thy* Anon. conj.

Only this proof I'll of thy valour make,
 In single combat thou shalt buckle with me, 95
 And if thou vanquishest, thy words are true;
 Otherwise I renounce all confidence.

Puc. I am prepared: here is my keen-edged sword,
 Deck'd with five flower-de-luces on each side;
 The which at Touraine, in Saint Katharine's churchyard,
 Out of a great deal of old iron I chose forth. 101

Char. Then come, o' God's name; I fear no woman.

Puc. And while I live, I'll ne'er fly from a man.

[Here they fight, and Joan La Pucelle overcomes.]

Char. Stay, stay thy hands! thou art an Amazon,
 And fightest with the sword of Deborah. 105

Puc. Christ's mother helps me, else I were too weak.

Char. Whoe'er helps thee, 'tis thou that must help
 me :

Impatiently I burn with thy desire;
 My heart and hands thou hast at once subdued.
 Excellent Pucelle, if thy name be so, 110
 Let me thy servant and not sovereign be:
 'Tis the French Dauphin sueth to thee thus.

Puc. I must not yield to any rites of love,
 For my profession's sacred from above :

97 *Otherwise...confidence*] *Or...confidence in you* Collier MS.
Otherwise I] *I otherwise* Seymour conj.
 99 *five*] Steevens, 1793 (from Holinshead). *fine* Ff.
 100 *churchyard*] *church* Pope.
 101 *Out of a great deal of*] *Out a deal of* Steevens conj. *Out of ordeal'd* Jackson conj. *Out of a deal* Dyce (ed. 2).
great] om. Pope.
forth] om. Capell.
 102 *come*] *come on* Keightley.

o'] Theobald. *a Ff.*
I fear] *for I fear* Pope. *I do fear* Hudson (S. Walker conj.). *on*; *I fear* Lettsom conj.
 103 *ne'er fly from a man*] F₁. *ne're flye no man* F₂F₃F₄ (*flie* F₃F₄). *never fly no man* Capell. *ne'er fly from no man* Collier MS.
 [Here...Joan La Pucelle...] Here ...Ioane de Puzel... Ff.
 112 *to thee thus*] *thus to thee* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).
 113 *rites*] Pope. *rights* Ff.

When I have chased all thy foes from hence, 115
Then will I think upon a recompense.

Char. Meantime look gracious on thy prostrate thrall.

Reig. My lord, methinks, is very long in talk.

Alen. Doubtless he shrives this woman to her smock;
Else ne'er could he so long protract his speech. 120

Reig. Shall we disturb him, since he keeps no mean?

Alen. He may mean more than we poor men do know:
These women are shrewd tempters with their tongues.

Reig. My lord, where are you? what devise you on?
Shall we give over Orleans, or no? 125

Puc. Why, no, I say, distrustful recreants!
Fight till the last gasp; I will be your guard.

Char. What she says I'll confirm: we'll fight it out.

Puc. Assign'd am I to be the English scourge.
This night the siege assuredly I'll raise: 130

Expect Saint Martin's summer, halcyon days,
Since I have entered into these wars.

Glory is like a circle in the water,
Which never ceaseth to enlarge itself
Till by broad spreading it disperse to nought. 135

With Henry's death the English circle ends;
Dispersed are the glories it included.

Now am I like that proud insulting ship
Which Cæsar and his fortune bare at once.

Char. Was Mahomet inspired with a dove? 140
Thou with an eagle art inspired then.

122 *know:] know, F₁. know? F₂F₃F₄.*

124 *devise you on] devise you now or
decide you on Vaughan conj.
on F] F₁. on, F₂F₃F₄.*

125 *over] Rowe. o're Ff. o'er this Ca-
pell.*

127 *I will] Capell. Ile F₁. for Ile F₂.
for I'le F₃F₄.*

128 *I'U] I Lettsom conj.*

129 *am I] F₁F₂. I am F₃F₄.*

131 *halcyon] F₂F₄. Halcyons F₁F₂.*

132 *entered] entred F₁. entred thus F₂.
F₃F₄.*

138 *proud insulting] proud - insulting
S. Walker conj. proud exulting
Vaughan conj.*

139 *fortune] fortunes Collier MS.
bare] bore Rowe.*

Helen, the mother of great Constantine,
Nor yet Saint Philip's daughters, were like thee.

Bright star of Venus, fall'n down on the earth,

How may I reverently worship thee enough? 145

Alen. Leave off delays, and let us raise the siege.

Reig. Woman, do what thou canst to save our honours;
Drive them from Orleans and be immortalized.

Char. Presently we'll try: come, let's away about it:
No prophet will I trust, if she prove false. [*Exeunt.* 150

SCENE III. *London. Before the Tower.*

Enter the DUKE of GLOUCESTER, with his Serving-men in blue coats.

Glou. I am come to survey the Tower this day:
Since Henry's death, I fear, there is conveyance.
Where be these warders, that they wait not here?
Open the gates; 'tis Gloucester that calls.

144 *fall'n*] *falne* F₁. *faine* F₂. *fa'n*
F₃. *faln* F₄.

145 *reverently worship*] *ever worship* Capell.
reverence, worship Steevens
conj. *reverent worship* Dyce, ed. 2
(Collier MS.). *reverent-worship*
Vaughan conj.

145, 146 *thee enough?* *Alen.*] *thee?*
Alen. Pope. *thee?* *Alen.* *Enough:*
Anon. conj.

148 *Orleans*] *Orleance* Ff. *hence* Capell.

149 *we'll*] om. Pope.

150 *prove*] *proves* Rowe (ed. 2).

SCENE III.] Capell. SCENE VII.
Pope.

London.....] The Tower-gates, in
London. Theobald.

the Duke of Gloucester] Capell.
Gloster F₁F₂. Gloucester F₃F₄.
in blue coats] in blue Capell. om.
Ff.

1 *I am...day*] *I am this day come to*
survey the Tower Pope. *I am come*
here...day Seymour conj.
come] om. F₂F₄.

4 *'tis Gloucester*] Pope. *'tis Gloster* Ff.
it is Gloster Steevens (1778). *Gloster*
it is Reed (1803).

calls] *now calls* Collier MS.
[Servants knock at the gates. Capell.

First Warder. [*Within*] Who's there that knocks so imperiously? 5

First Serv. It is the noble Duke of Gloucester.

Second Warder. [*Within*] Whoe'er he be, you may not be let in.

First Serv. Villains, answer you so the lord protector?

First Warder. [*Within*] The Lord protect him! so we answer him:

We do no otherwise than we are will'd. 10

Glou. Who willed you? or whose will stands but mine? There's none protector of the realm but I.

Break up the gates, I'll be your warrantize:

Shall I be flouted thus by dunghill grooms?

[*Gloucester's men rush at the Tower Gates, and Woodvile the Lieutenant speaks within.*]

Woodv. What noise is this? what traitors have we here? 15

Glou. Lieutenant, is it you whose voice I hear? Open the gates; here's Gloucester that would enter.

Woodv. Have patience, noble duke; I may not open; The Cardinal of Winchester forbids:

From him I have express commandment 20

That thou nor none of thine shall be let in.

Glou. Faint-hearted Woodvile, prizest him 'fore me? Arrogant Winchester, that haughty prelate,

5, 7, 9 [*Within*] Malone.

5 *Who's*] *Who is* Malone.

knocks so imperiously] *so imperiously*

doth knock Seymour conj.

knocks] *knocketh* Theobald.

6, 17, &c. [*Gloucester*] Pope. *Gloster* Ff.

6 *First Serv.*] *Glost.* 1. Man. Ff.

Gloucester] *Gloster* *knocks* Vaughan conj.

7 *you*] *he* Capell.

8 *First Serv.*] 1. Man. Ff.

Villains, answer...protector?] *Answer*

...protector, villains? Reed (1803).

Villains.....the lord protector so?

Keightley.

11 *willed you*] *will'd you* so Collier MS.

13 *Break up*] *Break ope* Grey conj.

20 *commandment*] F₄. *commandement*

F₁F₂F₃.

23 *that*] *the* Rowe (ed. 2).

Whom Henry, our late sovereign, ne'er could brook?

Thou art no friend to God or to the king: 25

Open the gates, or I'll shut thee out shortly.

Serving-men. Open the gates unto the lord protector,
Or we'll burst them open, if that you come not quickly.

*Enter to the Protector at the Tower Gates WINCHESTER and his men
in tawny coats.*

Win. How now, ambitious Humphry! what means
this?

Glou. Peel'd priest, dost thou command me to be shut
out? 30

Win. I do, thou most usurping proditor,
And not protector, of the king or realm.

Glou. Stand back, thou manifest conspirator,
Thou that contrivedst to murder our dead lord;
Thou that givest whores indulgences to sin: 35
I'll canvass thee in thy broad cardinal's hat,
If thou proceed in this thy insolence.

Win. Nay, stand thou back; I will not budge a foot:
This be Damascus, be thou cursed Cain,
To slay thy brother Abel, if thou wilt. 40

Glou. I will not slay thee, but I'll drive thee back:
Thy scarlet robes as a child's bearing-cloth
I'll use to carry thee out of this place.

Win. Do what thou darest; I beard thee to thy face.

Glou. What! am I dared and bearded to my face?

27 unto] F₁F₂. to F₃F₄. there to
Pope.

28 Or we'll...if that] We'll...if Pope.
[Servants rush at the Gates again.
Capell.

29 ambitious] ambition F₁.
Humphry] Theobald. Vmpher F₁.
Umpire F₂F₃F₄.

30 Peel'd] Pied'd Ff. Pied Grey conj.
Pill'd Collier.

to be] be Pope.
34 murder] Pope. murther Ff.
dead] F₁F₂F₄. dread F₃.

35 indulgences] indulgencies Pope.
41—56 Glou. I will...hypocrite] Put
in the margin by Pope.

Draw, men, for all this privileged place; 46
 Blue coats to tawny coats. Priest, beware your beard;
 I mean to tug it and to cuff you soundly:
 Under my feet I stamp thy cardinal's hat:
 In spite of pope or dignities of church, 50
 Here by the cheeks I'll drag thee up and down.
Win. Gloucester, thou wilt answer this before the pope.
Glou. Winchester goose, I cry, a rope! a rope!
 Now beat them hence; why do you let them stay?
 Thee I'll chase hence, thou wolf in sheep's array. 55
 Out, tawny coats! out, scarlet hypocrite!

Here Gloucester's men beat out the Cardinal's men, and enter in the hurly-burly the Mayor of London and his Officers.

May. Fie, lords! that you, being supreme magistrates,
 Thus contumeliously should break the peace!

Glou. Peace, mayor! thou know'st little of my wrongs:
 Here's Beaufort, that regards nor God nor king, 60
 Hath here distrain'd the Tower to his use.

Win. Here's Gloucester, a foe to citizens,
 One that still motions war and never peace,
 O'ercharging your free purses with large fines,
 That seeks to overthrow religion, 65
 Because he is protector of the realm,
 And would have armour here out of the Tower,
 To crown himself king and suppress the prince.

Glou. I will not answer thee with words, but blows.
 [*Here they skirmish again.*]

46 *privileged*] is a *privileg'd* Collier MS.

47 *tawny coats*] *tawny* Pope.
your] *thy* F₃F₄.

[*Gloster*, and his Men, attack the others. Capell.

49]] F₁. *He* F₂F₃F₄. *ay*, Anon. conj.

52 *thou wilt*] *thou'lt* Pope.

57 *Mayor*] F₂F₃F₄. *Maior* F₁.

59 *mayor*] *Maior*, F₁. *Mayor*, for F₂F₃F₄. See note (III).

60 *Beaufort*] Capell. *Beauford* Ff.
nor God] F₁F₂. *not God* F₃F₄.

62 *Gloucester*] *Gloster* F₁. *Gloster too* F₂F₃F₄. *Gloster here* Vaughan conj.

May. Nought rests for me in this tumultuous strife
 But to make open proclamation : 71
 Come, officer ; as loud as e'er thou canst :
 Cry.

Off. All manner of men assembled here in arms this day against
 God's peace and the king's, we charge and command you, in his high-
 ness' name, to repair to your several dwelling-places ; and not to wear,
 handle, or use any sword, weapon, or dagger, henceforward, upon pain
 of death.

Glou. Cardinal, I'll be no breaker of the law :
 But we shall meet, and break our minds at large. 80

Win. Gloucester, we will meet ; to thy cost, be sure :
 Thy heart-blood I will have for this day's work.

May. I'll call for clubs, if you will not away.
 This cardinal's more haughty than the devil.

Glou. Mayor, farewell : thou dost but what thou mayst.

Win. Abominable Gloucester, guard thy head ; 86
 For I intend to have it ere long.

[*Exeunt, severally, Gloucester and Winchester
 with their Serving-men.*]

May. See the coast clear'd, and then we will depart.
 Good God, these nobles should such stomachs bear !
 I myself fight not once in forty year. [Exeunt.. 90

72, 73 as *e'er...canst : Cry.*] Edd. as
*e're thou canst, cry : Ff. as e'er...
 canst. Pope. as thou canst cry. Col-
 lier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). as ever...
 cry. Staunton.*

72—74 *canst : Cry. Off. All...]* *canst.*
Crier. All... Anon. conj. canst.
Off. [reads] All Dyce (ed. 2).

74 *Off.*] Hanmer. om. Ff.

80 *break]* tell Pope.

81 *we...cost]* *we'll meet ; and to thy cost*
 Keightley.

we will] Edd. (S. Walker conj.).

wee'le F₁. we'll F₂F₃F₄.

cost] F₁. *dears cost F₂F₃F₄.*

84 *'s]* F₁. *is F₂F₃F₄.*

85 *Mayor]* F₄. *Maioir F₁. Major F₂
 F₃.*

87 *it ere long]* F₁F₂. *it e're be long F₃
 F₄, it, ere't be long Capell. it off,
 ere long Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).
 't ere long Staunton.*

[*Exeunt.....]* Exeunt either Party,
 severally. Capell Exeunt. Ff.

89, 90 *Good.....year.]* Given to Off. by
 Hanmer (Warburton).

89 *these]* that Rowe.

www.libtool.com SCENE IV. Orleans.

Enter, on the walls, a Master Gunner and his Boy.

M. Gun. Sirrah, thou know'st how Orleans is besieged,
And how the English have the suburbs won.

Boy. Father, I know; and oft have shot at them,
Howe'er unfortunate I miss'd my aim.

M. Gun. But now thou shalt not. Be thou ruled by
me : 5

Chief master-gunner am I of this town;
Something I must do to procure me grace.
The prince's espials have informed me
How the English, in the suburbs close intrench'd,
Wont through a secret grate of iron bars 10
In yonder tower to overpeer the city,
And thence discover how with most advantage
They may vex us with shot or with assault.
To intercept this inconvenience,
A piece of ordnance 'gainst it I have placed; 15
And even these three days have I watch'd,
If I could see them.
Now do thou watch, for I can stay no longer.
If thou spy'st any, run and bring me word;

SCENE IV.] Capell. SCENE VIII.
Pope.

Orleans.] Orleans in France. Pope.
Under Orleans. Capell.

Enter...] Enter the Master Gunner
of Orleans, and his Boy. Ff. Enter,
upon the Walls, above, a Gunner
and his Son. Capell.

8 *espials*] *'spials* Pope.

9 *How the*] *The* Pope.

10 *Wont*] Steevens, 1793 (Tyrwhitt

conj.). *Went* Ff. *Watch* Hanmer.
View Roderick conj. *Are wont*
Heath conj. *Won* Vaughan conj.

16—18 *And even.....longer.*] See note
(iv).

16 *have I*] om. Vaughan conj., reading
And even...them as one line.

18 *Now*] *Now Boy* F₂F₃. *Now, Boy,*
F₄.

longer.] *longer on my post.* Collier
MS.

And thou shalt find me at the governor's. [Exit. 20

Boy. Father, I warrant you; take you no care;
I'll never trouble you, if I may spy them. [Exit.

Enter, on the turrets, the LORDS SALISBURY and TALBOT, SIR WILLIAM
GLANSDALE, SIR THOMAS GARGRAVE, and others.

Sal. Talbot, my life, my joy, again return'd!
How wert thou handled being prisoner?
Or by what means got'st thou to be released? 25
Discourse, I prithee, on this turret's top.

Tal. The Duke of Bedford had a prisoner
Call'd the brave Lord Ponton de Santrailles;
For him was I exchanged and ransomed.
But with a baser man of arms by far 30
Once in contempt they would have barter'd me:
Which I disdain'd scorn'd, and craved death
Rather than I would be so vile-esteem'd.
In fine, redeem'd I was as I desired.
But, O! the treacherous Fastolfe wounds my heart, 35
Whom with my bare fists I would execute,
If I now had him brought into my power.

Sal. Yet tell'st thou not how thou wert entertain'd.

Tal. With scoffs and scorns and contumelious taunts.
In open market-place produced they me, 40
To be a public spectacle to all:

22 [Exit.] F₁F₂. om. F₃F₄.

23 Enter...] Enter Salisbury and Talbot on the Turrets, with others. Ff. Enter, in an upper chamber of a tower... Malone.

25 got'st] F₄. got's F₁F₂F₃.

27 Duke] Theobald. Earle Ff.

28 Call'd] Called Pope.

Lord] Lord of Collier MS.

Santrailles] Capell. Santrayle F₁.

Santraile F₂F₃F₄.

29 ransomed] Pope. ransom'd Ff.

33 so vile-esteem'd] so vilde esteem'd Pope. so pill'd esteem'd Ff. so pill'd esteem'd Capell. so ill-esteem'd Mason conj. so vile-esteem'd Malone conj. so Philistin'd Steevens conj. sop-oil'd esteem'd Jackson conj. so pill'd esteem Vaughan conj.

35 Fastolfe] Theobald. Falstaffe F₁F₂ F₃. Falstaff F₄.

Here, said they, is the terror of the French,
 The scarecrow that affrights our children so.
 Then broke I from the officers that led me,
 And with my nails digg'd stones out of the ground, 45
 To hurl at the beholders of my shame :
 My grisly countenance made others fly ;
 None durst come near for fear of sudden death.
 In iron walls they deem'd me not secure ;
 So great fear of my name 'mongst them was spread 50
 That they supposed I could rend bars of steel,
 And spurn in pieces posts of adamant :
 Wherefore a guard of chosen shot I had,
 That walk'd about me every minute while ;
 And if I did but stir out of my bed, 55
 Ready they were to shoot me to the heart.

Enter the Boy with a linstock.

Sal. I grieve to hear what torments you endured,
 But we will be revenged sufficiently.
 Now it is supper-time in Orleans :
 Here, through this grate, I count each one, 60
 And view the Frenchmen how they fortify :
 Let us look in ; the sight will much delight thee.
 Sir Thomas Gargrave, and Sir William Glansdale,
 Let me have your express opinions
 Where is best place to make our battery next. 65

Gar. I think, at the north gate ; for there stand lords.

Glan. And I, here, at the bulwark of the bridge.

43 *scarecrow*] *Scar-crow* F₁F₂.

50 *So...spread*] *So great a fear my name
amongst them spread* Pope.
was] Rowe. *were* Ff.

54 *That*] *They* Rowe (ed. 2).

57 *Enter...*] Ff. Omitted by Pope.

60 *through*] Ff. *thorough* Malone.

grate] *secret grate* Dyce (ed. 2).

count each one] F₁. *can count every
one* F₂F₃F₄. *count each enemy* Anon.
conj. *can count each stone* Vaughan
conj.

65 *next.*] Capell. *next ?* Ff.

66 *stand*] F₂F₃F₄. *stands* F₁.

Tal. For aught I see, this city must be famish'd,
Or with light skirmishes enfeebled.

[*Here they shoot.* *Salisbury and Gargrave fall.*

Sal. O Lord, have mercy on us, wretched sinners! 70

Gar. O Lord, have mercy on me, woful man!

Tal. What chance is this that suddenly hath cross'd us?
Speak, Salisbury; at least, if thou canst speak:

How farest thou, mirror of all martial men?

One of thy eyes and thy cheek's side struck off! 75

Accursed tower! accursed fatal hand

That hath contrived this woful tragedy!

In thirteen battles Salisbury o'ercame;

Henry the Fifth he first train'd to the wars;

Whilst any trump did sound, or drum struck up, 80

His sword did ne'er leave striking in the field.

Yet livest thou, Salisbury? though thy speech doth fail,

One eye thou hast, to look to heaven for grace:

The sun with one eye vieweth all the world.

Heaven, be thou gracious to none alive, 85

If Salisbury wants mercy at thy hands!

Bear hence his body; I will help to bury it.

Sir Thomas Gargrave, hast thou any life?

Speak unto Talbot; nay, look up to him.

Salisbury, cheer thy spirit with this comfort; 90

Thou shalt not die whiles—

He beckons with his hand and smiles on me,

68 *ought*] Theobald (ed. 2). *ought* Ff. 78—86 *In...hands!*] Erased in Collier MS.

69 [*Here...fall.*] Here...Sir Thomas Gargrave fall down. Hanmer. Here they shot, and Salisbury falls downe. 84 *The sun...world.*] Put in the margin by Pope.

Ff. 87 *his*] *this* F₃F₄.

shoot] Rowe. 90 *Salisbury, cheer*] *O Salisb'ry, cheer* Pope. *Cheer, Salisbury* Seymour conj.

fall] Capell. 91 *whiles*—] Ff. *while*— Pope.

73 *canst speak*] Pope. *canst, speak* Ff.

75 *thy eyes*] *thine eyes* Collier MS.

As who should say 'When I am dead and gone,
Remember to avenge me on the French.'

Plantagenet, I will; and like thee, Nero,

95

Play on the lute, beholding the towns burn:

Wretched shall France be only in my name.

[Here an alarum, and it thunders and lightens.

What stir is this? what tumult's in the heavens?

Whence cometh this alarum, and the noise?

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. My lord, my lord, the French have gather'd head:

The Dauphin, with one Joan la Pucelle join'd, 101

A holy prophetess new risen up,

Is come with a great power to raise the siege.

[Here Salisbury lifteth himself up and groans.

Tal. Hear, hear how dying Salisbury doth groan!

It irks his heart he cannot be revenged. 105

Frenchmen, I'll be a Salisbury to you:

Pucelle or puzzel, dolphin or dogfish,

Your hearts I'll stamp out with my horse's heels,

And make a quagmire of your mingled brains.

Convey me Salisbury into his tent, 110

And then we'll try what these dastard Frenchmen dare.

[Alarum. *Exeunt.*

95 *like thee, Nero,*] Malone. *like thee,*
F₁. *Nero like will,* F₂. *Nero like,*
will F₃F₄. *Nero-like,* Pope. *like*
the Roman, S. Walker conj. *like the*
emperor Vaughan conj. *like to Nero*
Kinnear conj.

97 *my name*] *thy name* S. Walker conj.

99 *the noise*] *this noise* Pope.

101 *la Pucelle*] *de Puzel* Ff (and else-
where).

107—109 *Pucelle...brains.*] Put in the
margin by Pope.

107 *Pucelle or puzzel*] *Puzel or Pussel*

Ff.

110 *me*] *brave* Pope. *vs* Vaughan conj.

111 *And then we'll try*] *Then we'll try*
Long MS. *Then try* vs Hudson
(Stevens conj.). *And then try* S.
Walker conj.

these dastard] *these said* Vaughan
conj.

these] om. Pope.

[Alarum.] om. Capell.

Exeunt.] F₁F₂. *Exit.* F₃F₄. *Exe-*
unt, bearing Salisbury and Sir
Thomas Gargrave out. Theobald.

SCENE V. *The same.*

Here an alarum again: and TALBOT pursueth the DAUPHIN, and driveth him: then enter JOAN LA PUELLE, driving Englishmen before her, and exit after them: then re-enter TALBOT.

Tal. Where is my strength, my valour, and my force?
Our English troops retire, I cannot stay them;
A woman clad in armour chaseth them.

Re-enter LA PUELLE.

Here, here she comes. I'll have a bout with thee;
Devil or devil's dam, I'll conjure thee: 5
Blood will I draw on thee, thou art a witch,
And straightway give thy soul to him thou servest.

Puc. Come, come, 'tis only I that must disgrace thee.
[*Here they fight.*]

Tal. Heavens, can you suffer hell so to prevail?
My breast I'll burst with straining of my courage, 10
And from my shoulders crack my arms asunder,
But I will chastise this high-minded strumpet.

[*They fight again.*]

Puc. Talbot, farewell; thy hour is not yet come:
I must go victual Orleans forthwith.

[*A short alarum: then enter the town with soldiers.*]

SCENE V.] Capell. SCENE X. Pope.
The same.] The same. Before one
of the Gates. Capell.
Here...Joan La Pucelle...re-enter...]
Here...Ioane de Puzel...enter... Ff.
and exit after them] Dyce. om.
Ff.
3 *them.*] *men!* Vaughan conj.
4 Re-enter La Pucelle.] Dyce. Enter
Puzel. Ff.
a bout] *about* F₂.

[throwing himself in her Way. Ca-
pell.
6 *thou art*] *tho' thou'rt* Vaughan conj.
9—12 *Tal. Heavens...strumpet.*] Put
in the margin by Pope.
10 *breast*] *brace* Vaughan conj.
14 *forthwith.*] *forwith*; F₂. *forthwith?*
F₄.
[A short...enter...] Ff. A short...
enters... Johnson. Quitting him, to
head some Troops. Capell.

O'ertake me, if thou canst; I scorn thy strength. 15
 Go, go, cheer up thy hungry-starved men;
 Help Salisbury to make his testament:
 This day is ours, as many more shall be. [Exit.

Tal. My thoughts are whirled like a potter's wheel;
 I know not where I am, nor what I do: 20
 A witch, by fear, not force, like Hannibal,
 Drives back our troops and conquers as she lists:
 So bees with smoke and doves with noisome stench
 Are from their hives and houses driven away.
 They call'd us for our fierceness English dogs; 25
 Now, like to whelps, we crying run away. [*A short alarum.*
 Hark, countrymen! either renew the fight,
 Or tear the lions out of England's coat;
 Renounce your soil, give sheep in lions' stead:
 Sheep run not half so treacherous from the wolf, 30
 Or horse or oxen from the leopard,
 As you fly from your oft-subdued slaves.

[*Alarum. Here another skirmish.*

It will not be: retire into your trenches:
 You all consented unto Salisbury's death,
 For none would strike a stroke in his revenge. 35
 Pucelle is enter'd into Orleans,
 In spite of us or aught that we could do.
 O, would I were to die with Salisbury!
 The shame hereof will make me hide my head.

[*Exit Talbot. Alarum; retreat; flourish.*

16 *hungry-starved*] F₁F₃F₄. *hongry-*
starved F₂. *hunger-starved* Rowe.
hungry, starved Boswell conj. *hun-*
gry staid Jackson conj.

26 *like to*] F₁. *like the* F₂F₃F₄. *like*
their Pope.

29 *soil*] *style* or *scroll* Dyce conj. *shield*
 Vaughan conj.

30 *treacherous from the*] F₃F₄. *trecher-*

ous from the F₁F₂. *tim'rous* from the
 Pope. *from the treacherous* Mitford
 conj. *tremulous* from the Collier
 MS. *reckless* from the Vaughan
 conj.

31 *leopard*] *leopard's paw* Vaughan
 conj.

37 *ought*] Theobald (ed. 2). *ought* Ff.

SCENE VI. *The same.*

Enter, on the walls, LA PUCELLE, CHARLES, REIGNIER, ALENÇON, and Soldiers.

Puc. Advance our waving colours on the walls;
Rescued is Orleans from the English:
Thus Joan la Pucelle hath perform'd her word.

Char. Divinest creature, Astræa's daughter,
How shall I honour thee for this success? 5
Thy promises are like Adonis' gardens
That one day bloom'd and fruitful were the next.
France, triumph in thy glorious prophets!
Recover'd is the town of Orleans:
More blessed hap did ne'er befall our state. 10

Reig. Why ring not out the bells aloud throughout
the town?
Dauphin, command the citizens make bonfires
And feast and banquet in the open streets,
To celebrate the joy that God hath given us.

Alen. All France will be replete with mirth and joy,
When they shall hear how we have play'd the men. 16

Char. 'Tis Joan, not we, by whom the day is won;
For which I will divide my crown with her,
And all the priests and friars in my realm
Shall in procession sing her endless praise. 20

SCENE VI.] Capell. SCENE XL. Pope.
om. Ff. Dyce and Staunton con-
tinue the scene.
walls] Wall F₂F₄.

2 *Rescued*] *For rescu'd* Keightley.
English] F₁. *English wolves* F₂F₃
F₄. *English dogs* Staunton conj.
4 *Astræa's*] F₁. *bright Astræa's* F₂F₃

F₄.

6 *gardens*] Hanmer. *Garden* Ff.
11 *Why...town f*] As two lines, the first
ending *aloud*, in Ff.
out the bells aloud] *out the bells*
Pope. *bells aloud* Steevens conj.
loud the bells Vaughan conj.

A statelier pyramis to her I'll rear
 Than Rhodope's or Memphis' ever was:
 In memory of her when she is dead,
 Her ashes, in an urn more precious
 Than the rich-jewel'd coffer of Darius,
 Transported shall be at high festivals
 Before the kings and queens of France.
 No longer on Saint Denis will we cry,
 But Joan la Pucelle shall be France's saint.
 Come in, and let us banquet royally,
 After this golden day of victory.

25

30

[Flourish. *Exeunt.*]

ACT II.

SCENE I. *Before Orleans.*

Enter a Sergeant of a band, with two Sentinels.

Serg. Sirs, take your places and be vigilant:
 If any noise or soldier you perceive
 Near to the walls, by some apparent sign
 Let us have knowledge at the court of guard.

First Sent. Sergeant, you shall. [*Exit Sergeant.*] Thus
 are poor servitors,

5

- 21 *pyramis*] Ff. *pyramid* Rowe.
 22 *or Memphis*] Hanmer. *or Memphis*
 Ff. *of Memphis* Dyce (Capell
 conj.).
 23 *when*] *wen* F₂.
 24 *precious*] *gracious* Rowe.
 25 *rich-jewel'd coffer*] Ff. *rich jewel'd*
coffer Pope. *rich jewel-coffer* Stee-
 vens conj.
 25, 26 *Darius, Transported*] F₄. *Da-*
rius, Transported, F₁F₂F₃. *Darius*
Transported, Capell.
 27 *Before*] *Ever before* Hanmer. *And*

borne before Anon. conj.
queens] *queens and peers* Dyce conj.
France] *France up-born* Capell.
France for aye Keightley. *France*
for ever Id. conj.
 ACT II. SCENE I.] Actus Secundus.
 Scœna Prima. Ff.
 Before Orleans.] Theobald. Con-
 tinues in Orleans. Pope.
 Enter...] Ff. Enter a French Ser-
 jeant, and Sentinels, to the Gate.
 Capell.

When others sleep upon their quiet beds,
 Constrain'd to watch in darkness, rain and cold.

Enter TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, and forces, with scaling-ladders, their drums beating a dead march.

Tal. Lord Regent, and redoubted Burgundy,
 By whose approach the regions of Artois,
 Wallon and Picardy are friends to us, 10
 This happy night the Frenchmen are secure,
 Having all day caroused and banqueted :
 Embrace we then this opportunity,
 As fitting best to quittance their deceit
 Contrived by art and baleful sorcery. 15

Bed. Coward of France! how much he wrongs his
 fame,
 Despairing of his own arm's fortitude,
 To join with witches and the help of hell!

Bur. Traitors have never other company.
 But what's that Pucelle whom they term so pure? 20

Tal. A maid, they say.

Bed. A maid! and be so martial!

Bur. Pray God she prove not masculine ere long,
 If underneath the standard of the French
 She carry armour as she hath begun.

Tal. Well, let them practise and converse with spirits :
 God is our fortress, in whose conquering name 26
 Let us resolve to scale their flinty bulwarks.

Bed. Ascend, brave Talbot; we will follow thee.

Tal. Not all together: better far, I guess,
 That we do make our entrance several ways; 30
 That, if it chance the one of us do fail,
 The other yet may rise against their force.

8 and forces] Capell. om. Ff.

29 all together] Rowe. altogether Ff.

Bed. Agreed: I'll to yond corner.

Bur. And I to this.

Tal. And here will Talbot mount, or make his grave.
Now, Salisbury, for thee, and for the right 35
Of English Henry, shall this night appear
How much in duty I am bound to both.

Sent. Arm! arm! the enemy doth make assault!

[*Cry: 'St George,' 'A Talbot.'*]

*The French leap over the walls in their shirts. Enter, several ways, the
BASTARD of Orleans, ALENÇON, and REIGNIER, half ready, and half
unready.*

Alen. How now, my lords! what, all unready so?

Bast. Unready! ay, and glad we 'scaped so well. 40

Reig. 'Twas time, I trow, to wake and leave our beds,
Hearing alarums at our chamber-doors.

Alen. Of all exploits since first I follow'd arms,
Ne'er heard I of a warlike enterprise 45
More venturous or desperate than this.

Bast. I think this Talbot be a fiend of hell.

Reig. If not of hell, the heavens, sure, favour him.

Alen. Here cometh Charles: I marvel how he sped.

Bast. Tut, holy Joan was his defensive guard.

Enter CHARLES and LA PUCELLE.

Char. Is this thy cunning, thou deceitful dame? 50
Didst thou at first, to flatter us withal,
Make us partakers of a little gain,

33 *And*] om. Pope.

37 [The English, scaling the Walls,
Cry St George! A Talbot! Theo-
bald.

38 [Cry...] om. Theobald.

39 SCENE II. Pope.
over] ore Ff.

the...Orleans,] Bastard, Ff.

40 *ay, and glad*] *I and glad* Ff. *I am
glad* Pope.

42 *alarums*] *Alarms* F.

46 *be*] *is* Pope.

50 *Enter...*] *Enter...Joane.* Ff (after
line 48).

That now our loss might be ten times so much ?

Puc. Wherefore is Charles impatient with his friend ?
At all times will you have my power alike ? 55

Sleeping or waking must I still prevail,
Or will you blame and lay the fault on me ?
Improvident soldiers ! had your watch been good,
This sudden mischief never could have fall'n.

Char. Duke of Alençon, this was your default, 60
That, being captain of the watch to-night,
Did look no better to that weighty charge.

Alen. Had all your quarters been as safely kept
As that whereof I had the government,
We had not been thus shamefully surprised. 65

Bast. Mine was secure.

Reig. And so was mine, my lord.

Char. And, for myself, most part of all this night,
Within her quarter and mine own precinct
I was employ'd in passing to and fro,
About relieving of the sentinels : 70

Then how or which way should they first break in ?

Puc. Question, my lords, no further of the case,
How or which way : 'tis sure they found some place
But weakly guarded, where the breach was made.
And now there rests no other shift but this ; 75
To gather our soldiers, scatter'd and dispersed,
And lay new platforms to endamage them.

Alarum. Enter an English Soldier, crying 'A Talbot ! a Talbot !'
They fly, leaving their clothes behind.

Sold. I'll be so bold to take what they have left.

63 *your*] F₁. *our* F₂F₃F₄.
quarters] F₁F₂F₃. *Quarter* F₄.

76 *our*] om. Pope.

77 [Exeunt. Ff. Omitted first by Capell.

78 SCENE III. Within the walls of
Orleans. Pope.
an English Soldier] Capell. a Souldier Ff.

The cry of Talbot serves me for a sword;
 For I have loaden me with many spoils,
 Using no other weapon but his name.

80

[Exit.]

SCENE II. *Orleans. Within the town.*

Enter TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, a Captain, and others.

Bed. The day begins to break, and night is fled,
 Whose pitchy mantle over-veil'd the earth.
 Here sound retreat, and cease our hot pursuit.

[Retreat sounded.]

Tal. Bring forth the body of old Salisbury,
 And here advance it in the market-place, 5
 The middle centre of this cursed town.
 Now have I paid my vow unto his soul;
 For every drop of blood was drawn from him
 There hath at least five Frenchmen died to-night.
 And that hereafter ages may behold 10
 What ruin happen'd in revenge of him,
 Within their chiefest temple I'll erect
 A tomb, wherein his corpse shall be interr'd:
 Upon the which, that every one may read,
 Shall be engraved the sack of Orleans, 15
 The treacherous manner of his mournful death
 And what a terror he had been to France.
 But, lords, in all our bloody massacre,
 I muse we met not with the Dauphin's grace,

SCENE II.] Capell. om. Ff and 3 [Retreat sounded.] Capell. Retreat.
 Pope. Ff.
 Orleans...] The same... Theobald 6 *centres*] F₃F₄. *Centure* F₁. *Center*
 (after line 77 of Scene I.) F₂.
 a Captain, and others] Capell. om. 11 *happen'd*] Rowe. *happened* Ff.
 Ff.

His new-come champion, virtuous Joan of Arc, 20
Nor any of his false confederates.

Bed. 'Tis thought, Lord Talbot, when the fight began,
Roused on the sudden from their drowsy beds,
They did amongst the troops of armed men
Leap o'er the walls for refuge in the field. 25

Bur. Myself, as far as I could well discern
For smoke and dusky vapours of the night,
Am sure I scared the Dauphin and his trull,
When arm in arm they both came swiftly running,
Like to a pair of loving turtle-doves 30
That could not live asunder day or night.
After that things are set in order here,
We'll follow them with all the power we have.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. All hail, my lords! Which of this princely train
Call ye the warlike Talbot, for his acts 35
So much applauded through the realm of France?

Tal. Here is the Talbot: who would speak with him?

Mess. The virtuous lady, Countess of Auvergne,
With modesty admiring thy renown,
By me entreats, great lord, thou wouldst vouchsafe 40
To visit her poor castle where she lies,
That she may boast she hath beheld the man
Whose glory fills the world with loud report.

Bur. Is it even so? Nay, then, I see our wars
Will turn unto a peaceful comic sport, 45
When ladies crave to be encounter'd with.

20 *Arc*] Rowe. *Acre* Ff.

27 *dusky*] *dusty* Rowe.

34 *of this*] *of his* F₂.

38 *Auvergne*] Rowe. *Ouvergne* F₁. *Au-*
ergne F₂, F₃. *Avergne* F₄.

40 *great lord*] *good lord* Reed (1803,
1813, 1821).

45 *unto*] *into* Rowe (ed. 2).

46 *with.*] *with* F₄.

You may not, my lord, despise her gentle suit.

Tal. Ne'er trust me then; for when a world of men
 Could not prevail with all their oratory,
 Yet hath a woman's kindness over-ruled: 50
 And therefore tell her I return great thanks,
 And in submission will attend on her.
 Will not your honours bear me company?

Bed. No, truly; it is more than manners will:
 And I have heard it said, unbidden guests 55
 Are often welcomest when they are gone.

Tal. Well then, alone, since there's no remedy,
 I mean to prove this lady's courtesies.
 Come hither, captain. [*Whispers.*] You perceive my mind?
Capt. I do, my lord, and mean accordingly. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *Auvergne. The Countess's castle.*

Enter the COUNTESS and her Porter.

Count. Porter, remember what I gave in charge;
 And when you have done so, bring the keys to me.

Port. Madam, I will. [*Exit.*]

Count. The plot is laid: if all things fall out right,
 I shall as famous be by this exploit 5
 As Scythian Tomyris by Cyrus' death.
 Great is the rumour of this dreadful knight,

47 *may not*] *can't* Pope.
my] *om.* Capell.

48 *Ne'er trust me then*] *Nay, trust me there* Hanmer.

54 *it is*] *Malone.* 'tis *Ff.* *that is* Pope.

59 [*Whispers.*] So Johnson. After the line, in *Ff.*

mind] *Dyce.* *minde.* *F₁F₂* *mind.* *F₃F₄.*

SCENE III.] Capell. SCENE IV. Pope. *om.* *Ff.*

Auvergne...] The Countess of Auvergne's Castle. Pope. *Auvergne.* Court of the Castle. Capell.

2 *you have*] *you've* Pope.

And his achievements of no less account :
 Fain would mine eyes be witness with mine ears,
 To give their censure of these rare reports.

10

Enter Messenger and TALBOT.

Mess. Madam,
 According as your ladyship desired,
 By message craved, so is Lord Talbot come.

Count. And he is welcome. What! is this the man?

Mess. Madam, it is.

Count. Is this the scourge of France? 15
 Is this the Talbot, so much fear'd abroad
 That with his name the mothers still their babes?

I see report is fabulous and false :

I thought I should have seen some Hercules,

A second Hector, for his grim aspect, 20

And large proportion of his strong-knit limbs.

Alas, this is a child, a silly dwarf!

It cannot be this weak and writhled shrimp

Should strike such terror to his enemies.

Tal. Madam, I have been bold to trouble you ; 25

But since your ladyship is not at leisure,

I'll sort some other time to visit you.

Count. What means he now? Go ask him whither he
 goes.

Mess. Stay, my Lord Talbot ; for my lady craves
 To know the cause of your abrupt departure. 30

9 *mine ears*] *my Ears* F.

11, 12 *Madam...desired,*] As in Steevens (1793). As one line in Ff.

12 *desired,*] om. Pope, reading *Madam...ladyship* as one line.

16 *abroad*] *abroad*, Pope. *abroad?* Ff.

21 *And*] *A* F.

23 *writhled*] *wrized* Hanmer.

24 *to*] *in* Pope.

27 [Going. Capell.

28 *What.....goes.*] As two lines in Ff.

As one (omitting *him*) in Pope.

goes.] Pope. *goes?* Ff.

Tal. Marry, for that she's in a wrong belief,
I go to certify her Talbot's here.

Re-enter Porter with keys.

Count. If thou be he, then art thou prisoner.

Tal. Prisoner! to whom?

Count. To me, blood-thirsty lord;

And for that cause I train'd thee to my house. 35

Long time thy shadow hath been thrall to me,

For in my gallery thy picture hangs :

But now the substance shall endure the like,

And I will chain these legs and arms of thine,

That hast by tyranny these many years 40

Wasted our country, slain our citizens,

And sent our sons and husbands captivate.

Tal. Ha, ha, ha!

Count. Laughest thou, wretch? thy mirth shall turn
to moan.

Tal. I laugh to see your ladyship so fond 45

To think that you have aught but Talbot's shadow

Whereon to practise your severity.

Count. Why, art not thou the man?

Tal. I am indeed.

Count. Then have I substance too.

Tal. No, no, I am but shadow of myself: 50

You are deceived, my substance is not here ;

For what you see is but the smallest part

And least proportion of humanity :

I tell you, madam, were the whole frame here,

It is of such a spacious lofty pitch, 55

33 *Re-enter...*] Capell. *Enter...* Ff. 48 *Why,*] *Why?* Ff.

44 *Laughest...moan.*] One line in Pope: 49 *I substance*] *I shadow, aye and sub-*
two in Ff. *stance* Vaughan conj.

46 *ought*] Theobald. *ought* Ff.

Your roof were not sufficient to contain 't.

Count. This is a riddling merchant for the nonce;
He will be here, and yet he is not here:
How can these contrarities agree?

Tal. That will I show you presently. 60
[Winds his horn. Drums strike up: a peal
of ordnance. Enter Soldiers.

How say you, madam? are you now persuaded
That Talbot is but shadow of himself?
These are his substance, sinews, arms and strength,
With which he yoketh your rebellious necks,
Razeth your cities and subverts your towns 65
And in a moment makes them desolate.

Count. Victorious Talbot! pardon my abuse:
I find thou art no less than fame hath bruted,
And more than may be gather'd by thy shape.
Let my presumption not provoke thy wrath; 70
For I am sorry that with reverence
I did not entertain thee as thou art.

Tal. Be not dismay'd, fair lady; nor misconstrue
The mind of Talbot, as you did mistake
The outward composition of his body. 75
What you have done hath not offended me;
Nor other satisfaction do I crave,
But only, with your patience, that we may
Taste of your wine and see what cates you have;
For soldiers' stomachs always serve them well. 80

Count. With all my heart, and think me honoured
To feast so great a warrior in my house. [Exeunt.

60 *That*] *That, madam*, Steevens conj.

Lady, that Keightley.

presently] *lady, presently* Collier, ed.
2 (S. Walker conj.).

Enter Soldiers.] The Gates are
forced; and enter certain of his

Troops. Capell.

69 *gather'd*] Pope. *gathered* Ff.

73 *misconstrue*] Rowe. *misconster* Ff.

77 *Nor*] *No* Steevens (1793).

78 *your*] F₁. *our* F₂F₃F₄.

SCENE IV. *London. The Temple-garden.*

Enter the EARLS of SOMERSET, SUFFOLK, *and* WARWICK; RICHARD PLANTAGENET, VERNON, *and another* Lawyer.

Plan. Great lords and gentlemen, what means this silence?

Dare no man answer in a case of truth?

Suf. Within the Temple-hall we were too loud; The garden here is more convenient.

Plan. Then say at once if I maintain'd the truth; 5
Or else was wrangling Somerset in the error?

Suf. Faith, I have been a truant in the law,
And never yet could frame my will to it;
And therefore frame the law unto my will. 9

Som. Judge you, my lord of Warwick, then, between us.

War. Between two hawks, which flies the higher pitch;
Between two dogs, which hath the deeper mouth;
Between two blades, which bears the better temper;
Between two horses, which doth bear him best;
Between two girls, which hath the merriest eye; 15
I have perhaps some shallow spirit of judgement:
But in these nice sharp quillets of the law,
Good faith, I am no wiser than a daw.

SCENE IV.] Capell. SCENE V. Pope.
om. Ff.

London...] Pope.

Enter.....] Capell. Enter Richard Plantagenet, Warwick, Somerset, Poole, and others. Ff.

another Lawyer.] a Lawyer. Ritson conj. another, a Lawyer. Vaughan conj.

1 *Plan.*] Rowe. Yorke. Ff (and throughout the scene).

Great...silence?] One line in Pope: two in Ff.

6 *Or else was*] *And was not* Hanmer. *in the error*] *'t the right* Capell (Johnson conj.). *in error* Hudson (Dyce conj.).

8 *And never*] *I never* Pope.

9 *unto*] *into* Ff.

13 *bears*] *wears* or *hath* Anon. conj. *boasts* Vaughan conj.

Plan. Tut, tut, here is a mannerly forbearance :
 The truth appears so naked on my side 20
 That any purblind eye may find it out.

Som. And on my side it is so well apparell'd,
 So clear, so shining and so evident
 That it will glimmer through a blind man's eye.

Plan. Since you are tongue-tied and so loath to speak,
 In dumb significants proclaim your thoughts : 26
 Let him that is a true-born gentleman,
 And stands upon the honour of his birth,
 If he suppose that I have pleaded truth,
 From off this brier pluck a white rose with me. 30

Som. Let him that is no coward nor no flatterer,
 But dare maintain the party of the truth,
 Pluck a red rose from off this thorn with me.

War. I love no colours, and without all colour
 Of base insinuating flattery 35
 I pluck this white rose with Plantagenet.

Suf. I pluck this red rose with young Somerset,
 And say withal I think he held the right.

Ver. Stay, lords and gentlemen, and pluck no more,
 Till you conclude that he, upon whose side 40
 The fewest roses are cropp'd from the tree,
 Shall yield the other in the right opinion.

Som. Good Master Vernon, it is well objected :
 If I have fewest, I subscribe in silence.

Plan. And I. 45

Ver. Then for the truth and plainness of the case,
 I pluck this pale and maiden blossom here,
 Giving my verdict on the white rose side.

20 *The truth*] *Truth* F₁.

24 *blind man's*] F₁. *blind-man's* F₁F₂.
blind-man's F₃.

26 *significant's*] *significance* Pope.

31 *nor no*] *and no* Pope.

35 *base insinuating*] *base-insinuating* S.
 Walker conj.

48 *rose*] *rose'* S. Walker conj.

Som. Prick not your finger as you pluck it off,
Lest bleeding you do paint the white rose red, 50
And fall on my side so, against your will.

Ver. If I, my lord, for my opinion bleed,
Opinion shall be surgeon to my hurt
And keep me on the side where still I am.

Som. Well, well, come on: who else? 55

Law. Unless my study and my books be false,
The argument you held was wrong in you; [To Somerset.
In sign whereof I pluck a white rose too.

Plan. Now, Somerset, where is your argument?

Som. Here in my scabbard, meditating that 60
Shall dye your white rose in a bloody red.

Plan. Meantime your cheeks do counterfeit our roses;
For pale they look with fear, as witnessing
The truth on our side.

Som. No, Plantagenet,
'Tis not for fear but anger that thy cheeks 65
Blush for pure shame to counterfeit our roses,
And yet thy tongue will not confess thy error.

Plan. Hath not thy rose a canker, Somerset?

Som. Hath not thy rose a thorn, Plantagenet?

Plan. Ay, sharp and piercing, to maintain his truth;
Whiles thy consuming canker eats his falsehood. 71

Som. Well, I'll find friends to wear my bleeding roses,
That shall maintain what I have said is true,
Where false Plantagenet dare not be seen.

49—54 *Prick not.....I am.*] Put in the
margin by Pope.

54 *where still*] *still where* F₄.

57 *in you*] *in law* Anon. conj.

[To Somerset.] Rowe.

61 *in a*] *to a* Pope.

62—74 *Meantime...be seen.*] Put in the

margin by Pope.

65 *anger*] *anger*— Capell.

that] *but* Long MS. and Collier
MS.

thy] F₁F₂. *my* F₃F₄.

72 *roses*] *rose* Dyce (ed. 2).

Plan. Now, by this maiden blossom in my hand, 75
I scorn thee and thy fashion, peevish boy.

Suf. Turn not thy scorns this way, Plantagenet.

Plan. Proud Pole, I will, and scorn both him and thee...

Suf. I'll turn my part thereof into thy throat.

Som. Away, away, good William de la Pole! 80
We grace the yeoman by conversing with him.

War. Now, by God's will, thou wrong'st him, Somerset;
His grandfather was Lionel Duke of Clarence,
Third son to the third Edward King of England:
Spring crestless yeomen from so deep a root? 85

Plan. He bears him on the place's privilege,
Or durst not, for his craven heart, say thus.

Som. By him that made me, I'll maintain my words
On any plot of ground in Christendom.

Was not thy father, Richard Earl of Cambridge, 90

For treason executed in our late king's days?

And, by his treason, stand'st not thou attainted,

Corrupted, and exempt from ancient gentry?

His trespass yet lives guilty in thy blood;

And, till thou be restored, thou art a yeoman. 95

Plan. My father was attached, not attainted,
Condemn'd to die for treason, but no traitor;

And that I'll prove on better men than Somerset,

Were growing time once ripen'd to my will.

For your partaker Pole and you yourself, 100

I'll note you in my book of memory,

To scourge you for this apprehension:

Look to it well and say you are well warn'd.

76 *fashion*] *passion* Pope. *faction*
Theobald.

86 *bears*] *braves* Collier MS.
him on] *in mind* Vaughan conj.

91 *executed*] *headed* Pope. *execute*

Steevens conj.

99 *ripen'd*] Pope. *ripened* Ff.

102 *this apprehension*] *this reprehension*
Theobald. *misapprehension*
Vaughan conj.

Som. Ah, thou shalt find us ready for thee still ;
 And know us by these colours for thy foes, 105
 For these my friends in spite of thee shall wear.

Plan. And, by my soul, this pale and angry rose,
 As cognizance of my blood-drinking hate,
 Will I for ever and my faction wear,
 Until it wither with me to my grave, 110
 Or flourish to the height of my degree.

Suf. Go forward and be choked with thy ambition !
 And so farewell until I meet thee next. [Exit.

Som. Have with thee, Pole. Farewell, ambitious
 Richard. [Exit.

Plan. How I am braved and must perforce endure it !

War. This blot that they object against your house
 Shall be wiped out in the next parliament
 Call'd for the truce of Winchester and Gloucester ;
 And if thou be not then created York,
 I will not live to be accounted Warwick. 120
 Meantime, in signal of my love to thee,
 Against proud Somerset and William Pole,
 Will I upon thy party wear this rose :
 And here I prophesy : this brawl to-day,
 Grown to this faction in the Temple-garden, 125
 Shall send between the red rose and the white
 A thousand souls to death and deadly night.

Plan. Good Master Vernon, I am bound to you,
 That you on my behalf would pluck a flower.

Ver. In your behalf still will I wear the same. 130

Law. And so will I.

110 *to my grave*] *in my grave* Collier
 MS.

117 *wiped*] *wip't* F₂F₃F₄. *whipt* F₁.

127 *A thousand*] *Ten thousand* Collier

MS.

128—134 *Good...day.*] Put in the margin by Pope.

Plan. Thanks, gentle sir.
Come, let us four to dinner: I dare say
This quarrel will drink blood another day.

[*Exeunt.*]SCENE V. *The Tower of London.**Enter* MORTIMER, *brought in a chair, and Gaolers.*

Mor. Kind keepers of my weak decaying age,
Let dying Mortimer here rest himself.
Even like a man new haled from the rack,
So fare my limbs with long imprisonment;
And these grey locks, the pursuivants of death, 5
Nestor-like aged in an age of care,
Argue the end of Edmund Mortimer.
These eyes, like lamps whose wasting oil is spent,
Wax dim, as drawing to their exigent;
Weak shoulders, overborne with burthening grief, 10
And pithless arms, like to a wither'd vine
That droops his sapless branches to the ground:
Yet are these feet, whose strengthless stay is numb,
Unable to support this lump of clay,
Swift-winged with desire to get a grave, 15
As witting I no other comfort have.

132 *Thanks*] *I thank you* Collier conj.
gentle sir.] F₂F₃F₄. *gentle.* F₁.
gentle sir; thanks, both. Steevens
conj. *gentlemen.* Anon. conj.
SCENE V.] Capell. SCENE VI. Pope.
om. Ff.
The...London.] A Prison. Theobald.
A Room in the Tower. Capell.
and Gaolers.] and Iaylors. Ff.
supported by two of his Keepers.
Capell.

3 *man*] *man's* Capell conj.

rack] Pope. *Wrack* Ff.
6 *aged*] *faded* Vaughan conj. (with-
drawn).
an age] *a cage* Collier MS. *one age*
Vaughan conj. (withdrawn).
9 *exigent*] *exeunt* Vaughan conj.
10 *burthening*] *burd'ning* Steevens
(1793).
11 *like*] *look like* Vaughan conj.
wither'd] Pope. *withered* Ff.
16 *comfort*] *comfore* F₂.

But tell me, keeper, will my nephew come?

First Gaol. Richard Plantagenet, my lord, will come:
We sent unto the Temple, unto his chamber;
And answer was return'd that he will come. 20

Mor. Enough: my soul shall then be satisfied.
Poor gentleman! his wrong doth equal mine.
Since Henry Monmouth first began to reign,
Before whose glory I was great in arms,
This loathsome sequestration have I had; 25
And even since then hath Richard been obscured,
Deprived of honour and inheritance.
But now the arbitrator of despairs,
Just death, kind umpire of men's miseries,
With sweet enlargement doth dismiss me hence: 30
I would his troubles likewise were expired,
That so he might recover what was lost.

Enter RICHARD PLANTAGENET.

First Gaol. My lord, your loving nephew now is come.

Mor. Richard Plantagenet, my friend, is he come?

Plan. Ay, noble uncle, thus ignobly used, 35
Your nephew, late despised Richard, comes.

Mor. Direct mine arms I may embrace his neck,
And in his bosom spend my latter gasp:
O, tell me when my lips do touch his cheeks,
That I may kindly give one fainting kiss. 40
And now declare, sweet stem from York's great stock,

18, 33 *First Gaol.*] 1. K. Capell. Keeper. Ff.

19 *unto his*] F₁. *his* F₂F₃F₄. *to his* Rowe.

21 *shall then*] F₁. *then shall* F₂F₃F₄.

28 *despairs*] *despair* Dyce conj.

32 *That so*] *But so*, Vaughan conj.

33 *Enter Richard Plantagenet.*] *Enter Richard.* Ff.

34 *my*] om. Hanmer.

35 *Plan.*] Rich. Ff (and throughout the scene).

38 *latter*] *later* F₄. *latest* Pope.

Why didst thou say of late thou wert despised?

Plan. First, lean thine aged back against mine arm ;
And, in that ease, I'll tell thee my disease.

This day, in argument upon a case, 45

Some words there grew 'twixt Somerset and me ;

Among which terms he used his lavish tongue

And did upbraid me with my father's death :

Which obloquy set bars before my tongue,

Else with the like I had requited him. 50

Therefore, good uncle, for my father's sake,

In honour of a true Plantagenet

And for alliance sake, declare the cause

My father, Earl of Cambridge, lost his head.

Mor. That cause, fair nephew, that imprison'd me 55

And hath detain'd me all my flowering youth

Within a loathsome dungeon, there to pine,

Was cursed instrument of his decease.

Plan. Discover more at large what cause that was,

For I am ignorant and cannot guess. 60

Mor. I will, if that my fading breath permit,

And death approach not ere my tale be done.

Henry the Fourth, grandfather to this king,

Deposed his nephew Richard, Edward's son,

The first-begotten and the lawful heir 65

Of Edward king, the third of that descent :

During whose reign the Percies of the north,

Finding his usurpation most unjust,

Endeavour'd my advancement to the throne :

44 *disease*] *displeasure* Pope.

47 *Among*] *F*₁. *Amongst* *F*₂*F*₃*F*₄.

used] *loos'd* Warburton conj.

tongue] *mouth* Vaughan conj.

55 *That cause*] *This cause* Rowe.

58 *decease*] *disease* So quoted in Mrs

Cowden Clarke's Concordance.

61 *fading*] *failing* Hudson (S. Walker conj.).

64 *nephew*] *cousin* Rowe.

66 *the third*] *third* *F*₂.

The reason moved these warlike lords to this 70
 Was, for that—young King Richard thus removed,
 Leaving no heir begotten of his body—
 I was the next by birth and parentage;
 For by my mother I derived am
 From Lionel Duke of Clarence, the third son 75
 To King Edward the Third; whereas he
 From John of Gaunt doth bring his pedigree,
 Being but fourth of that heroic line.
 But mark: as in this haughty great attempt
 They laboured to plant the rightful heir, 80
 I lost my liberty and they their lives.
 Long after this, when Henry the Fifth,
 Succeeding his father Bolingbroke, did reign,
 Thy father, Earl of Cambridge, then derived
 From famous Edmund Langley, Duke of York, 85
 Marrying my sister that thy mother was,
 Again in pity of my hard distress
 Levied an army, weening to redeem
 And have install'd me in the diadem:
 But, as the rest, so fell that noble earl 90
 And was beheaded. Thus the Mortimers,
 In whom the title rested, were suppress'd.

Plan. Of which, my lord, your honour is the last.

Mor. True; and thou seest that I no issue have,
 And that my fainting words do warrant death: 95
 Thou art my heir; the rest I wish thee gather:

71 *that—young*] *that* (young Ff. *that*
young Pope.

King] F₂F₃F₄. om. F₁.

75 *the third*] F₂F₃F₄. *third* F₁.

76 *To King...he*] *To the third Edward;*
whereas Bolingbroke Pope.

To] *Unto* Keightley.

he] *he, Bolingbroke* Capell.

78 *fourth*] F₁. *the fourth* F₂F₃F₄.

79 *haughty great*] *haughty-great* S.
 Walker conj.

82 *the Fifth*] *nam'd the Fifth* Seymour
 conj.

83 *Succeeding*] *After* Pope.

89 *have install'd*] *re-install* Pope.

93 *Of which*] *Of whom* Capell conj.

But yet be wary in thy studious care.

Plan. Thy grave admonishments prevail with me :

But yet, methinks, my father's execution

Was nothing less than bloody tyranny. 100

Mor. With silence, nephew, be thou politic :

Strong-fixed is the house of Lancaster,

And like a mountain not to be removed.

But now thy uncle is removing hence ;

As princes do their courts, when they are cloy'd 105

With long continuance in a settled place.

Plan. O, uncle, would some part of my young years

Might but redeem the passage of your age !

Mor. Thou dost then wrong me, as that slaughterer
doth

Which giveth many wounds when one will kill. 110

Mourn not, except thou sorrow for my good ;

Only give order for my funeral :

And so farewell, and fair be all thy hopes,

And prosperous be thy life in peace and war ! *[Dies.*

Plan. And peace, no war, befall thy parting soul !

In prison hast thou spent a pilgrimage, 116

And like a hermit overpass'd thy days.

Well, I will lock his counsel in my breast ;

And what I do imagine let that rest.

Keepers, convey him hence, and I myself 120

Will see his burial better than his life.

[Exeunt Gaolers, bearing out the body of Mortimer.

Here dies the dusky torch of Mortimer,

102 *Strong-fixed*] Theobald. *Strong*
fixed Ff.

105 *do*] from Hanmer.

109 *that slaughterer*] F₃F₄. *y' slaught-*
erer F₁F₂. *that slaughter* Rowe
(ed. 2). *the slaughterer* Capell.

113 *be all*] *befal* Theobald.

121 *[Exeunt.....Mortimer.] Exeunt*
Keepers, bearing out Mortimer.
Capell. Exit. Ff. om. Rowe.

122 *dies*] *lies* Warburton.

Choked with ambition of the meaner sort :
 And for those wrongs, those bitter injuries,
 Which Somerset hath offer'd to my house,
 I doubt not but with honour to redress ;
 And therefore haste I to the parliament,
 Either to be restored to my blood,
 Or make my ill the advantage of my good.

125

[Exit.

ACT III.

SCENE I. *London. The Parliament-house.*

Flourish. Enter KING, EXETER, GLOUCESTER, WARWICK, SOMERSET, and SUFFOLK ; the BISHOP of WINCHESTER, RICHARD PLANTAGENET, and others. GLOUCESTER offers to put up a bill ; WINCHESTER snatches it, tears it.

Win. Comest thou with deep premeditated lines,
 With written pamphlets studiously devised,
 Humphrey of Gloucester? If thou canst accuse,
 Or aught intend'st to lay unto my charge,
 Do it without invention, suddenly ;
 As I with sudden and extemporal speech
 Purpose to answer what thou canst object.

5

123 *ambition of the] th' ambition of a Hanmer.*

126 *redress] redress them Hanmer. redress 'em Keightley.*

129 *ill the advantage] will the advancer Collier MS. ill] Theobald. will Ff.*

ACT III. SCENE I.] Actus Tertius. Scena Prima. Ff.

London.] The same. Capell.

The Parliament-house.] Capell.

The Parliament. Pope.

the Bishop of Winchester,] Capell. Winchester, Ff.

and others.] and many others attending. Capell. om. Ff.

1 *deep premeditated] deep-premeditated Dyce (S. Walker conj.).*

2, 3 *devised, Humphrey of Gloucester?] deuis'd? Humfrey of Gloster, Ff.*

4 *ought] Theobald (ed. 2). ought Ff.*

Glou. Presumptuous priest! this place commands my
patience,

Or thou shouldst find thou hast dishonour'd me.

Think not, although in writing I preferr'd 10

The manner of thy vile outrageous crimes,

That therefore I have forged, or am not able

Verbatim to rehearse the method of my pen:

No, prelate; such is thy audacious wickedness,

Thy lewd, pestiferous and dissentious pranks, 15

As very infants prattle of thy pride.

Thou art a most pernicious usurer,

Froward by nature, enemy to peace;

Lascivious, wanton, more than well beseems

A man of thy profession and degree; 20

And for thy treachery, what's more manifest?

In that thou laid'st a trap to take my life,

As well at London-bridge as at the Tower.

Beside, I fear me, if thy thoughts were sifted,

The king, thy sovereign, is not quite exempt 25

From envious malice of thy swelling heart.

Win. Gloucester, I do defy thee. Lords, vouchsafe

To give me hearing what I shall reply.

If I were covetous, ambitious or perverse,

As he will have me, how am I so poor? 30

Or how haps it I seek not to advance

Or raise myself, but keep my wonted calling?

13 *the method of my pen] them off my pen or the method of them* Vaughan conj.

37 *vouchsafe] vouchsafe* F₂.

28 *me] my* F₁.

29, 30 *If...poor?] If covetous...perverse As.....poor? or If I were covetous, ambitious, or Perverse as he will have me, how so poor?* Vaughan conj.

29 *If I were...perverse] Were I...perverse*

Steevens conj. *Were I ambitious, covetous, or perverse* Seymour conj. *ambitious or perverse] perverse, ambitious* Pope. *ambitious, proud* Collier MS.

31 *Or how haps it] How haps it then* Pope.

32 *myself, but...calling?] my self? but ...Calling.* Ff.

And for dissension, who preferreth peace
 More than I do?—except I be provoked.
 No, my good lords, it is not that offends;
 It is not that that hath incensed the duke:
 It is, because no one should sway but he;
 No one but he should be about the king;
 And that engenders thunder in his breast,
 And makes him roar these accusations forth.
 But he shall know I am as good—

Glou. As good!

Thou bastard of my grandfather!

Win. Ay, lordly sir; for what are you, I pray,
 But one imperious in another's throne?

Glou. Am I not protector, saucy priest?

Win. And am not I a prelate of the church?

Glou. Yes, as an outlaw in a castle keeps
 And useth it to patronage his theft.

Win. Unreverent Gloster!

Glou. Thou art reverent

Touching thy spiritual function, not thy life.

Win. Rome shall remedy this.

War. Roam thither, then.

33 *preferreth*] *preserveth* Collier MS.

36 *that that*] *that which* Pope.

41, 42 *as good*— *Glou. As good! Thou]*
as good as he. Glou. As good thou
S. Walker conj.

As good! Thou] *As good As I, thou*
Vaughan conj.

41 *good*—] *F₂F₃F₄. good. F₁.*

45 *Am I not]* *F₁F₂. Am not I F₃F₄.*
Am not I ihen Pope. *And am I not*
Capell. Am I not the Steevens
(1793). Am I not Lord Keightley
(S. Walker conj.).

saucy] *thou saucy* Anon. conj.

49 *Unreverent]* *Unreverend F₄.*

reverent] *reverend F₃F₄.*

51 *Rome...this]* *This Rome shall remedy*
Pope. Rome this shall remedy
Keightley. Rome shall this remedy
Id. conj.

Roam] *Go* Pope.

51—55 *War. Roam...Som. My lord...*
War. Ay, see...Som. Methinks my
lord...such.] Arranged as by Theo-
bald. Warw. Roams..... forbear.
Som. I, see...such. Ff. Glou. Go...
then. War. [to Win.] My lord.....
Som. I'll see...such. Hanmer. Glo.
Roam...Som. [to Glo.] My lord...
War. Ay, see.....Som. Methinks my
lord...such. Capell.

Som. My lord, it were your duty to forbear.

War. Ay, see the bishop be not overborne.

Som. Methinks my lord should be religious,
And know the office that belongs to such. 55

War. Methinks his lordship should be humbler;
It fitteth not a prelate so to plead.

Som. Yes, when his holy state is touch'd so near.

War. State holy or unhallow'd, what of that?
Is not his grace protector to the king? 60

Plan. [*Aside*] Plantagenet, I see, must hold his tongue,
Lest it be said 'Speak, sirrah, when you should;
Must your bold verdict enter talk with lords?'
Else would I have a fling at Winchester.

King. Uncles of Gloucester and of Winchester, 65
The special watchmen of our English weal,
I would prevail, if prayers might prevail,
To join your hearts in love and amity.
O, what a scandal is it to our crown,
That two such noble peers as ye should jar! 70
Believe me, lords, my tender years can tell
Civil dissension is a viperous worm
That gnaws the bowels of the commonwealth.

[*A noise within*, 'Down with the tawny-coats!'
What tumult's this?

War. An uproar, I dare warrant,
Begun through malice of the bishop's men. 75
[*A noise again*, 'Stones! stones!'

53 *Ay*,] Rowe. *I*, Ff. *I'll* Hanmer.

56 *humbler*] *humbler* then Pope.

61—64 First marked as '*Aside*' by

Hanmer.

65 [coming from his Throne. Capell.

Enter Mayor.

May. O, my good lords, and virtuous Henry,
 Pity the city of London, pity us!
 The bishop and the Duke of Gloucester's men,
 Forbidden late to carry any weapon,
 Have fill'd their pockets full of pebble stones, 80
 And banding themselves in contrary parts
 Do pelt so fast at one another's pate
 That many have their giddy brains knock'd out:
 Our windows are broke down in every street,
 And we for fear compell'd to shut our shops. 85

Enter Serving-men, in skirmish, with bloody pates.

King. We charge you, on allegiance to ourself,
 To hold your slaughtering hands and keep the peace.
 Pray, uncle Gloucester, mitigate this strife.

First Serv. Nay, if we be forbidden stones, we'll fall
 to it with our teeth. 90

Sec. Serv. Do what ye dare, we are as resolute.

[Skirmish again.]

Glou. You of my household, leave this peevish broil
 And set this unaccustom'd fight aside.

Third Serv. My lord, we know your grace to be a man
 Just and upright; and, for your royal birth, 95
 Inferior to none but to his majesty:

76 SCENE II. Pope.

77 *of*] om. Pope.

78 *bishop*] *Bishop's* Hanmer.

80 *pebble*] *pebble* F₁F₂. *peble* F₃F₄.

81 *banding themselves*] *themselves band-*
ing Capell.

82 *pate*] *pates* Pope.

86 *Serving-men*] om. Ff.

ourself] *our selfe* F₁. *our selves* F₂

F₃F₄.

89, 90 *Nay...teeth.*] As prose in Ff. As
 two lines in Capell, the first ending
 be.

93 *fight*] *sight* Vaughan conj.

96 *Inferior...majesty*] *To none inferior,*
but his majesty Steevens conj.
to his] *his* Hanmer.

And ere that we will suffer such a prince,
 So kind a father of the commonweal,
 To be disgraced by an inkhorn mate,
 We and our wives and children all will fight, 100
 And have our bodies slaughter'd by thy foes.

First Serv. Ay, and the very parings of our nails
 Shall pitch a field when, we are dead. [Begin again.

Glou. Stay, stay, I say!

And if you love me, as you say you do,
 Let me persuade you to forbear awhile. 105

King. O, how this discord doth afflict my soul!
 Can you, my Lord of Winchester, behold
 My sighs and tears and will not once relent?
 Who should be pitiful, if you be not?
 Or who should study to prefer a peace, 110
 If holy churchmen take delight in broils?

War. Yield, my lord protector; yield, Winchester;
 Except you mean with obstinate repulse
 To slay your sovereign and destroy the realm.
 You see what mischief and what murder too 115
 Hath been enacted through your enmity;
 Then be at peace, except ye thirst for blood.

Win. He shall submit, or I will never yield.

Glou. Compassion on the king commands me stoop;
 Or I would see his heart out, ere the priest 120
 Should ever get that privilege of me.

War. Behold, my Lord of Winchester, the duke
 Hath banish'd moody discontented fury,

100 *children*] *our children* Boswell.

101 *have*] *leave* Hudson (S. Walker
 conj.).

103 *I say*] om. Hanmer.

104 *And if*] *An if* Dyce (S. Walker
 conj.).

110 *prefer*] *preserve* Collier MS.

112 *Yield, my lord protector; yield*]

My lord protector yield: yield Pope.

Yield, lord protector, and yield Col-
 lier MS.

115 *murder*] Johnson. *Murther* Ff.

As by his smoothed brows it doth appear :

Why look you still so stern and tragical? 125

Glou. Here, Winchester, I offer thee my hand.

King. Fie, uncle Beaufort! I have heard you preach
That malice was a great and grievous sin;
And will not you maintain the thing you teach,
But prove a chief offender in the same? 130

War. Sweet king! the bishop hath a kindly gird.
For shame, my lord of Winchester, relent!
What, shall a child instruct you what to do?

Win. Well, Duke of Gloucester, I will yield to thee;
Love for thy love and hand for hand I give. 135

Glou. [*Aside*] Ay, but, I fear me, with a hollow heart.—
See here, my friends and loving countrymen;
This token serveth for a flag of truce
Betwixt ourselves and all our followers:
So help me God, as I dissemble not! 140

Win. [*Aside*] So help me God, as I intend it not!

King. O loving uncle, kind Duke of Gloucester,
How joyful am I made by this contract!
Away, my masters! trouble us no more;
But join in friendship, as your lords have done. 145

First Serv. Content: I'll to the surgeon's.

Sec. Serv. And so will I.

Third Serv. And I will see what physic the tavern
affords. [*Exeunt Serving-men, Mayor, &c.*]

124 *As*] *And* Rowe (ed. 2).

smoothed] *smother'd* Pope.

129 *not you*] *you not* Capell conj.

129, 130 *teach, ... same*] Pope. *teach* f...
sams. Ff.

131 *king* !] Pope. *king*: Ff.

136 Marked as 'Aside' first by Collier.

138 *This*] *The* F.

141 Marked as 'Aside' first by Pope.

142 *kind*] *gentle* Pope. *kind, kind* Ca-

pell. most kind Steevens conj.
and kind Collier, ed. 2 (Collier
MS.). *O kind* Vaughan conj.

146, 147 *And so...physic*] As one line
in Capell.

146 *And so*] *So* Pope.

147 *I will*] *I'll* Pope.

148 [*Exeunt Serving-men...*] *Exeunt*
Servants... Capell. *Exeunt* Ff.

War. Accept this scroll, most gracious sovereign,
Which in the right of Richard Plantagenet 150
We do exhibit to your majesty.

Glou. Well urged, my Lord of Warwick: for, sweet
prince,
An if your grace mark every circumstance,
You have great reason to do Richard right;
Especially for those occasions 155
At Eltham place I told your majesty.

King. And those occasions, uncle, were of force:
Therefore, my loving lords, our pleasure is
That Richard be restored to his blood.

War. Let Richard be restored to his blood; 160
So shall his father's wrongs be recompensed.

Win. As will the rest, so willeth Winchester.

King. If Richard will be true, not that alone
But all the whole inheritance I give
That doth belong unto the house of York, 165
From whence you spring by lineal descent.

Plan. Thy humble servant vows obedience
And humble service till the point of death.

King. Stoop then and set your knee against my foot;
And, in reguerdon of that duty done, 170
I gird thee with the valiant sword of York:
Rise, Richard, like a true Plantagenet,
And rise created princely Duke of York.

Plan. And so thrive Richard as thy foes may fall!
And as my duty springs, so perish they 175
That grudge one thought against your majesty!

149 SCENE III. Pope.

150 *the right*] *right* Hammer.

153 *An if*] Theobald. *And if* Ff.

163 *alone*] F₂F₃F₄. *all alone* F₁.

167 *humble*] *honour'd* Collier MS.

168 *humble*] *faithful* Pope.

169 [Plantagenet kneels to the King.
Capell.

171 *gird*] F₄. *gyrt* F₁F₂. *girt* F₃.

175 *springs*] *springs* [rising. Capell.

All. Welcome, high prince, the mighty Duke of York!

Som. [*Aside*] Perish, base prince, ignoble Duke of York!

Glou. Now will it best avail your majesty
To cross the seas and to be crown'd in France: 180
The presence of a king engenders love
Amongst his subjects and his loyal friends,
As it disanimates his enemies.

King. When Gloucester says the word, King Henry
goes;

For friendly counsel cuts off many foes. 185

Glou. Your ships already are in readiness.

[*Sennet. Flourish. Exeunt all but Exeter.*]

Exe. Ay, we may march in England or in France,
Not seeing what is likely to ensue.
This late dissension grown betwixt the peers
Burns under feigned ashes of forged love, 190
And will at last break out into a flame:
As fester'd members rot but by degree,
Till bones and flesh and sinews fall away,
So will this base and envious discord breed.
And now I fear that fatal prophecy 195
Which in the time of Henry named the fifth
Was in the mouth of every sucking babe;
That Henry born at Monmouth should win all
And Henry born at Windsor lose all:
Which is so plain, that Exeter doth wish 200
His days may finish ere that hapless time. [*Exit.*]

178 Marked as 'Aside' first by Rowe.

186 [*Sennet.*] *Senet.* F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

Exeunt all.....] *Capell.* *Exeunt.*

Manet Exeter. Ff.

187—201 *Ay...time.*] Erased in Collier
MS.

192 *degree*] Ff. *degrees* Rowe.

199 *lose*] *loose* F₁. *should lose* F₂F₃F₄.

SCENE II. *France. Before Rouen.*

Enter LA PUCELLE disguised, with four Soldiers with sacks upon their backs.

Puc. These are the city gates, the gates of Rouen,
Through which our policy must make a breach :
Take heed, be wary how you place your words ;
Talk like the vulgar sort of market men
That come to gather money for their corn. 5
If we have entrance, as I hope we shall,
And that we find the slothful watch but weak,
I'll by a sign give notice to our friends,
That Charles the Dauphin may encounter them.

First Sol. Our sacks shall be a mean to sack the city,
And we be lords and rulers over Rouen ; 11
Therefore we'll knock. [*Knocks.*]

Watch. [*Within*] Qui est là ?

Puc. Paysans, pauvres gens de France ;
Poor market folks that come to sell their corn. 15

Watch. Enter, go in ; the market bell is rung.

Puc. Now, Rouen, I'll shake thy bulwarks to the
ground. [*Exeunt.*]

- | | |
|--|---|
| SCENE II.] Scœna Secunda. Ff. | 12 [<i>Knocks.</i>] Knock. Ff. |
| SCENE IV. Pope. | 13 <i>Watch.</i> [<i>Within</i>] <i>Watch.</i> Ff. Gua. |
| France. Before Rouen.] Changes to | [<i>Within.</i> Capell. |
| Roan in France. Pope. | <i>Qui est là ?</i> Malona. <i>Che la.</i> F ₁ F ₂ F ₃ . |
| Enter La Pucelle...] Enter Pucell... | <i>Che la ?</i> F ₄ . <i>Qui va là ?</i> Rowe. |
| Ff (and throughout the scene). Enter | 14 <i>Paysans, pauvres</i>] Rowe. <i>Peasants</i> |
| Enter Pucelle, and Soldiers, disguis'd | <i>la pouure</i> Ff. |
| like Countrymen,... Capell. | 16 <i>is rung</i>] <i>has rung</i> Capell conj. |
| with four] and four F ₄ . | 17 [<i>Exeunt.</i>] Ff. Guard open ; and |
| 1 <i>Rouen</i>] <i>Roan</i> Ff (and passim). | Pucelle, and her soldiers, enter the |
| 10 <i>First Sol.</i>] 1. S. Capell. Souldier. Ff. | city. Capell. |

*Enter CHARLES, the BASTARD of Orleans, ALENÇON, REIGNIER, and
www.libtool.com.cn forces.*

Char. Saint Denis bless this happy stratagem!
And once again we'll sleep secure in Rouen.

Bast. Here enter'd Pucelle and her practisants; 20
Now she is there, how will she specify
Where is the best and safest passage in?

Reign. By thrusting out a torch from yonder tower;
Which, once discern'd, shows that her meaning is,
No way to that, for weakness, which she enter'd. 25

Enter LA PUCELLE on the top, thrusting out a torch burning.

Puc. Behold, this is the happy wedding torch
That joineth Rouen unto her countrymen,
But burning fatal to the Talbotites! [Exit.

Bast. See, noble Charles, the beacon of our friend;
The burning torch in yonder turret stands. 30

Char. Now shine it like a comet of revenge,
A prophet to the fall of all our foes!

Reign. Defer no time, delays have dangerous ends;
Enter, and cry 'The Dauphin!' presently,
And then do execution on the watch. [Alarum. Exeunt. 35

18 the Bastard of Orleans] Bastard
Ff.

Reignier] Edd. om. Ff. See note
(v).

and forces] Capell.

20 *practisants*] *partisans* Hanmer.

21, 22 *specify* *Where.....in?*] *specifie*,
Where...in? Rowe. *specifie?* *Here*
...in. Ff.

23, 33 *Reign.*] Ff. Ale. Capell.

25 *No*] *Our* Nicholson conj.

weakness] *waxness* F₃.

26 on the top,] Ff. on a battlement,
Capell.

28 *Talbotites*] Theobald. *Talbonites*
Ff. *Talbotines* Hanmer.

[Exit.] Edd. om. Ff.

31 *shine*] F₁F₂. *shines* F₃F₄.

35 [Alarum. Exeunt.] Edd. Alarum.
Ff. They shout; Force open the
Gate, and enter. Capell.

An alarum. Enter TALBOT in an excursion.

www.libtool.com.cn

Tal. France, thou shalt rue this treason with thy tears,
If Talbot but survive thy treachery.
Pucelle, that witch, that damned sorceress,
Hath wrought this hellish mischief unawares,
That hardly we escaped the pride of France. [*Exit.* 40

An alarum: excursions. BEDFORD, brought in sick in a chair. Enter TALBOT and BURGUNDY without: within LA PUCELLE, CHARLES, BASTARD, ALENÇON, and REIGNIER, on the walls.

Puc. Good morrow, gallants! want ye corn for bread?
I think the Duke of Burgundy will fast
Before he'll buy again at such a rate:
'Twas full of darnel; do you like the taste?

Bur. Scoff on, vile fiend and shameless courtezan! 45
I trust ere long to choke thee with thine own,
And make thee curse the harvest of that corn.

Char. Your grace may starve perhaps before that
time.

Bed. O, let no words, but deeds, revenge this treason!

Puc. What will you do, good grey-beard? break a
lance, 50

And run a tilt at death within a chair?

36 Enter Talbot... Talbot... Ff. Enter Talbot, and certain English. Capell.

40 *the pride] the prize* Theobald. *being prize* Hanmer. *the bride* Jackson conj. *the gripe* Vaughan conj. [*Exit.*] Ff. Enters the City again. Capell.

41 SCENE V. Pope. Burgundy] Burgonie Ff. Alençon, and Reignier.....] Collier.

and Reignier... Ff. and Alanson... Hanmer.

Good] F₃F₄. *God* F₁F₂.

42 *Burgundy]* Rowe. *Burgonie* Ff (and passim).

49 *no]* not F₄.

50, 51 *What...chair?* As in Pope. As three lines in Ff, ending *gray-beard?* ...*death...chayre.*

51 *chair?*] Pope. *Chayre.* F₁F₂. *Chair.* F₃F₄.

Tal. Foul fiend of France, and hag of all despite,
 Encompass'd with thy lustful paramours!
 Becomes it thee to taunt his valiant age,
 And twit with cowardice a man half dead? 55
 Damsel, I'll have a bout with you again,
 Or else let Talbot perish with this shame.

Puc. Are ye so hot, sir? yet, Pucelle, hold thy peace;
 If Talbot do but thunder, rain will follow. 59

[*The English whisper together in council.*]

God speed the parliament! who shall be the speaker?

Tal. Dare ye come forth and meet us in the field?

Puc. Belike your lordship takes us then for fools,
 To try if that our own be ours or no.

Tal. I speak not to that railing Hecate,
 But unto thee, Alençon, and the rest; 65
 Will ye, like soldiers, come and fight it out?

Alen. Signior, no.

Tal. Signior, hang! base muleters of France!
 Like peasant foot-boys do they keep the walls,
 And dare not take up arms like gentlemen. 70

Puc. Away, captains! let's get us from the walls;
 For Talbot means no goodness by his looks.
 God be wi' you, my lord! we came but to tell you
 That we are here. [*Exeunt from the walls.*]

Tal. And there will we be too, ere it be long, 75
 Or else reproach be Talbot's greatest fame!
 Vow, Burgundy, by honour of thy house,

52 *all*] *hell's* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

57 *this*] *his* Rowe.

58 *ye so hot*] *you so hot* Capell. *you hot*
 Vaughan conj.

hot, sir?] Capell. *hot, sir:* Ff. *hot?*
 Pope.

59 [The English...] They... Ff.

60 *the speaker*] *speaker* Collier MS.

68 *hang !*] *hang then:* Hanmer.
muleters] *muleteers* Rowe.

71 *Away, captains !*] *Captains away,*
 Rowe.

73 *God be wi' you*] Rowe. *God buy*
 Ff.

came] F₁. *came sir* F₂F₃F₄. *came*
 up Dyce, ed. 2 (Lettsom conj.).

Prick'd on by public wrongs sustain'd in France,
 Either to get the town again or die:
 And I, as sure as English Henry lives, 80
 And as his father here was conqueror,
 As sure as in this late-betrayed town
 Great Cœur-de-lion's heart was buried,
 So sure I swear to get the town or die.

Bur. My vows are equal partners with thy vows. 85

Tal. But, ere we go, regard this dying prince,
 The valiant Duke of Bedford. Come, my lord,
 We will bestow you in some better place,
 Fitter for sickness and for crazy age.

Bed. Lord Talbot, do not so dishonour me: 90
 Here will I sit before the walls of Rouen
 And will be partner of your weal or woe.

Bur. Courageous Bedford, let us now persuade you.

Bed. Not to be gone from hence; for once I read 95
 That stout Pendragon in his litter sick
 Came to the field and vanquished his foes:
 Methinks I should revive the soldiers' hearts,
 Because I ever found them as myself.

Tal. Undaunted spirit in a dying breast!
 Then be it so: heavens keep old Bedford safe! 100
 And now no more ado, brave Burgundy,
 But gather we our forces out of hand
 And set upon our boasting enemy.

[*Exeunt all but Bedford and Attendants.*]

An alarm: excursions. Enter SIR JOHN FASTOLFE and a Captain.

Capt. Whither away, Sir John Fastolfe, in such haste?

Fast. Whither away! to save myself by flight: 105

92 or woe] and woe Pope.

99 Undaunted] Undaunting F₃.

103 [Exeunt...] Exeunt Burgundy,
 Talbot, and Forces; leaving Bed-

ford under the Guard of a Captain,
 and Others. Capell. Exit. Ff.

104 Fastolfe] Theobald. Falstaffe Ff.
 Fastolfe] Theobald. Falstaffe Ff.

We are like to have the overthrow again.

Cap. What! will you fly, and leave Lord Talbot?

Fast.

Ay,

All the Talbots in the world, to save my life. *[Exit.*

Cap. Cowardly knight! ill fortune follow thee! *[Exit.*

Retreat: excursions. LA PUCELLE, ALENÇON and CHARLES fly.

Bed. Now, quiet soul, depart when heaven please,
For I have seen our enemies' overthrow. 111

What is the trust or strength of foolish man?

They that of late were daring with their scoffs

Are glad and fain by flight to save themselves.

[Bedford dies, and is carried in by two in his chair.

An alarm. Re-enter TALBOT, BURGUNDY, and the rest.

Tal. Lost, and recover'd in a day again! 115

This is a double honour, Burgundy:

Yet heavens have glory for this victory!

Bur. Warlike and martial Talbot, Burgundy

Enshrines thee in his heart and there erects

Thy noble deeds as valour's monuments. 120

Tal. Thanks, gentle duke. But where is Pucelle now?

I think her old familiar is asleep:

Now where's the Bastard's braves, and Charles his gleeks?

What, all amort? Rouen hangs her head for grief

That such a valiant company are fled. 125

Now will we take some order in the town,

107, 108 *Ay...life.*] As in Hanmer. One line in Ff.

114 *glad] fled* Vaughan conj. carried in] carried F.

115 SCENE VI. Pope. Scene, within the walls of Roan. Theobald.

Re-enter...] Dyce. *Enter... Ff.*

recover'd] Pope. *recovered Ff.*

117 *Yet]* Let Dyce (ed. 2). *Ye* Anon. conj.

118 *and martial]* *and matchless* Collier MS. *unmatchable* Vaughan conj.

120 *monuments]* *monument* Capell.

123 *gleeks]* Hanmer. *glikes Ff.*

Placing therein some expert officers,
 And then depart to Paris to the king,
 For there young Henry with his nobles lie.

Bur. What wills Lord Talbot pleaseth Burgundy. 130

Tal. But yet, before we go, let's not forget
 The noble Duke of Bedford late deceased,
 But see his exequies fulfill'd in Rouen :
 A braver soldier never couched lance,
 A gentler heart did never sway in court ; 135
 But kings and mightiest potentates must die,
 For that's the end of human misery. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The plains near Rouen.*

*Enter CHARLES, the BASTARD of Orleans, ALENCON, LA PUCELLE,
 and forces.*

Puc. Dismay not, princes, at this accident,
 Nor grieve that Rouen is so recovered :
 Care is no cure, but rather corrosive,
 For things that are not to be remedied.
 Let frantic Talbot triumph for a while 5
 And like a peacock sweep along his tail ;
 We'll pull his plumes and take away his train,
 If Dauphin and the rest will be but ruled.

Char. We have been guided by thee hitherto,
 And of thy cunning had no diffidence : 10
 One sudden foil shall never breed distrust.

Bast. Search out thy wit for secret policies,

129 *lie*] *lyes* Pope.

137 *human*] Rowe. *humane* Ff.

SCENE III.] *Scæna Tertia.* Ff. SCENE
 VII. Pope.

The plains near Rouen.] The same.

Plains near the city. Capell. om.
 Ff.

and forces] Capell. om. Ff.

3 *corrosive*] F₁F₄. *corrasive* F₂F₃. a
corrosive Boswell conj.

And we will make thee famous through the world.

Alen. We'll set thy statue in some holy place,
And have thee revered like a blessed saint : 15
Employ thee then, sweet virgin, for our good.

Puc. Then thus it must be ; this doth Joan devise :
By fair persuasions mix'd with sugar'd words
We will entice the Duke of Burgundy
To leave the Talbot and to follow us. 20

Char. Ay, marry, sweeting, if we could do that,
France were no place for Henry's warriors ;
Nor should that nation boast it so with us,
But be extirped from our provinces.

Alen. For ever should they be expulsed from France,
And not have title of an earldom here. 26

Puc. Your honours shall perceive how I will work
To bring this matter to the wished end.

[*Drum sounds afar off.*]

Hark ! by the sound of drum you may perceive
Their powers are marching unto Paris-ward. 30

*Here sound an English march. Enter, and pass over at a distance,
TALBOT and his forces.*

There goes the Talbot, with his colours spread,
And all the troops of English after him.

French march. Enter the DUKE OF BURGUNDY and forces.

Now in the rearward comes the duke and his :
Fortune in favour makes him lag behind.
Summon a parley ; we will talk with him. 35

[*Trumpets sound a parley.*]

Char. A parley with the Duke of Burgundy !

23 *should*] *shall* F.

31 *Here...march.*] Ff.

Enter...] Capell. om. Ff.

33 *French march.*] Ff.

Enter...] Capell. om. Ff.

36 SCENE VIII. Pope.

[*Enter the Duke of Burgundy,
marching.* Rowe.

Bur. Who craves a parley with the Burgundy?

Puc. The princely Charles of France, thy countryman.

Bur. What sayst thou, Charles? for I am marching hence.

Char. Speak, Pucelle, and enchant him with thy words.

Puc. Brave Burgundy, undoubted hope of France! 41
Stay, let thy humble handmaid speak to thee.

Bur. Speak on; but be not over-tedious.

Puc. Look on thy country, look on fertile France,
And see the cities and the towns defaced 45
By wasting ruin of the cruel foe.

As looks the mother on her lowly babe
When death doth close his tender dying eyes,
See, see the pining malady of France;
Behold the wounds, the most unnatural wounds, 50

Which thou thyself hast given her woful breast.
O, turn thy edged sword another way;
Strike those that hurt, and hurt not those that help.
One drop of blood drawn from thy country's bosom
Should grieve thee more than streams of foreign gore:
Return thee therefore with a flood of tears, 56
And wash away thy country's stained spots.

Bur. Either she hath bewitch'd me with her words,
Or nature makes me suddenly relent.

Puc. Besides, all French and France exclaims on thee,
Doubting thy birth and lawful progeny. 61
Who join'st thou with but with a lordly nation
That will not trust thee but for profit's sake?
When Talbot hath set footing once in France

45 *the...the] her...her* Collier MS.

47 *lowly] lovely* Warburton.

48 *tender dying] Pope. tender-dying*
Ff.

52 *thy] the* F₄.

55 *foreign] forraine* F₁F₂ common F₃
F₄.

60 *exclaims] exclaim* Pope.

62 *Who] F₁. Whom* F₂F₃F₄.

And fashion'd thee that instrument of ill, 65
 Who then but English Henry will be lord,
 And thou be thrust out like a fugitive?
 Call we to mind, and mark but this for proof,
 Was not the Duke of Orleans thy foe?
 And was he not in England prisoner? 70
 But when they heard he was thine enemy,
 They set him free without his ransom paid,
 In spite of Burgundy and all his friends.
 See, then, thou fight'st against thy countrymen
 And join'st with them will be thy slaughter-men. 75
 Come, come, return; return, thou wandering lord;
 Charles and the rest will take thee in their arms.

Bur. I am vanquished; these haughty words of hers
 Have batter'd me like roaring cannon-shot,
 And made me almost yield upon my knees. 80
 Forgive me, country, and sweet countrymen,
 And, lords, accept this hearty kind embrace:
 My forces and my power of men are yours:
 So farewell, Talbot; I'll no longer trust thee.

Puc. [*Aside*] Done like a Frenchman: turn, and turn
 again! 85

Char. Welcome, brave duke! thy friendship makes us
 fresh.

Bast. And doth beget new courage in our breasts.

Alen. Pucelle hath bravely play'd her part in this,
 And doth deserve a coronet of gold.

Char. Now let us on, my lords, and join our powers,
 And seek how we may prejudice the foe. [*Exeunt.* 91

78 *I am...hers*] One line in Rowe: two
 in Ff.

I am] *I'm* Pope.

84 *trust*] *trust trust* F.

85 Marked as 'Aside' by Capell.

90 *Now.....powers,*] One line in Rowe:
 two in Ff.

91 [*Exeunt.*] *Exit* F.

SCENE IV. *Paris. The palace.*

Enter the KING, GLOUCESTER, BISHOP OF WINCHESTER, YORK, SUFFOLK, SOMERSET, WARWICK, EXETER: VERNON, BASSET, and others. To them with his Soldiers, TALBOT.

Tal. My gracious prince, and honourable peers,
 Hearing of your arrival in this realm,
 I have awhile given truce unto my wars,
 To do my duty to my sovereign:
 In sign whereof, this arm, that hath reclaim'd 5
 To your obedience fifty fortresses,
 Twelve cities and seven walled towns of strength,
 Beside five hundred prisoners of esteem,
 Lets fall his sword before your highness' feet,
 And with submissive loyalty of heart 10
 Ascribes the glory of his conquest got
 First to my God and next unto your grace. [*Kneels.*

King. Is this the Lord Talbot, uncle Gloucester,
 That hath so long been resident in France?

Glou. Yes, if it please your majesty, my liege. 15

King. Welcome, brave captain and victorious lord!
 When I was young, as yet I am not old,
 I do remember how my father said

SCENE IV.] Scœna Quarta. Ff. SCENE
 ix. Pope.
 Paris.] Pope.
 The palace.] A Room in the Palace.
 Capell.
 Biahop of Winchester,] Winchester,
 Ff.
 Vernon, Basset, and others.] Vernon,
 and Bassett, in the Train. Capell.
 om. Ff.
 with his Soldiers, Talbot.] Ff. Tal-
 bot, and some of his Officers. Ca-

pell.
 8 *Beside*] *Besides* Knight.
 11 *his*] *this* Vaughan conj.
 12 *my God*] *his God* Collier MS.
 [*Kneels.*] Edd.
 13 *the Lord*] *the fam'd Lord* Rowe.
the Capell. Lord Hudson (Anon.
 conj.). *then the Lord* Vaughan
 conj.
 18 *do remember*] *was remember'd* Han-
 mer.

A stouter champion never handled sword.
 Long since we were resolved of your truth, 20
 Your faithful service and your toil in war;
 Yet never have you tasted our reward,
 Or been reguerdon'd with so much as thanks,
 Because till now we never saw your face :
 Therefore, stand up ; and, for these good deserts, 25
 We here create you Earl of Shrewsbury ;
 And in our coronation take your place.

[*Sennet. Flourish. Exeunt all but Vernon and Basset.*]

Ver. Now, sir, to you, that were so hot at sea,
 Disgracing of these colours that I wear
 In honour of my noble Lord of York :— 30
 Darest thou maintain the former words thou spakest ?

Bas. Yes, sir ; as well as you dare patronage
 The envious barking of your saucy tongue
 Against my lord the Duke of Somerset.

Ver. Sirrah, thy lord I honour as he is. 35

Bas. Why, what is he ? as good a man as York.

Ver. Hark ye ; not so : in witness, take ye that.

[*Strikes him.*]

Bas. Villain, thou know'st the law of arms is such
 That whoso draws a sword, 'tis present death,
 Or else this blow should broach thy dearest blood. 40
 But I'll unto his majesty, and crave
 I may have liberty to venge this wrong ;

20 *were*] F₁F₂. *have* F₂F₄.
your truth] *that truth* Collier, ed. 2
 (Collier MS.).

22 *our*] *your* Warburton.

27 [Sennet. Flourish.] Sennet. Flourish.
 F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.
 Exeunt all but...] Exeunt. Manet...
 F₁. Exeunt. Manent... F₂F₃F₄.

34 *my lord*] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

37 *ye*] F₁F₂. *you* F₂F₄.

38 *Villain.....such*] One line in Rowe:
 two in Ff.

know'st] Pope. *knowest* Ff.

39 *whoso draws*] Rowe. *who so draws*
 Ff.

'tis present death] *in th' presence, 'tis*
death Warburton.

When thou shalt see I'll meet thee to thy cost.

Ver. Well, miscreant, I'll be there as soon as you;
And, after, meet you sooner than you would. [*Exeunt.* 45]

ACT IV.

SCENE I. *Paris. A hall of state.*

Enter the KING, GLOUCESTER, BISHOP OF WINCHESTER, YORK, SUFFOLK, SOMERSET, WARWICK, TALBOT, EXETER, the Governor of Paris, and others.

Glou. Lord bishop, set the crown upon his head.

Win. God save King Henry, of that name the sixth!

Glou. Now, governor of Paris, take your oath,
That you elect no other king but him;
Esteem none friends but such as are his friends, 5
And none your foes but such as shall pretend
Malicious practices against his state:
This shall ye do, so help you righteous God!

Enter SIR JOHN FASTOLFE.

Fast. My gracious sovereign, as I rode from Calais,
To haste unto your coronation, 10
A letter was deliver'd to my hands,
Writ to your grace from the Duke of Burgundy.

ACT IV. SCENE I.] Actus Quartus.

Scena Prima. Ff.

Paris.] Pope.

A hall...] Capell.

Exeter, the Governor of Paris, and
others.] Exeter and Governor of
Paris. Pope. and Governor Exeter.

Ff.

3 [Governor kneels. Capell.

8 [Exeunt Gov. and Train. The King
comes from his Throne. Capell.

9 Enter...] Enter Fastolfe. Theobald.
Enter Falstaffe. Ff.

12 to] om. Vaughan conj.

Tal. Shame to the Duke of Burgundy and thee!
 I vow'd, base knight, when I did meet thee next, 14
 To tear the garter from thy craven's leg, [*Plucking it off.*
 Which I have done, because unworthily
 Thou wast installed in that high degree.
 Pardon me, princely Henry, and the rest:
 This dastard, at the battle of Patay,
 When but in all I was six thousand strong 20
 And that the French were almost ten to one,
 Before we met or that a stroke was given,
 Like to a trusty squire did run away:
 In which assault we lost twelve hundred men;
 Myself and divers gentlemen beside 25
 Were there surprised and taken prisoners.
 Then judge, great lords, if I have done amiss;
 Or whether that such cowards ought to wear
 This ornament of knighthood, yea or no.

Glou. To say the truth, this fact was infamous 30
 And ill beseeming any common man,
 Much more a knight, a captain and a leader.

Tal. When first this order was ordain'd, my lords,
 Knights of the garter were of noble birth,
 Valiant and virtuous, full of haughty courage, 35
 Such as were grown to credit by the wars;
 Not fearing death, nor shrinking for distress,
 But always resolute in most extremes.
 He then that is not furnish'd in this sort
 Doth but usurp the sacred name of knight, 40

14 *thee*] *the* F₁.

15 *thy*] *the* Keightley.

craven's] *craven* Theobald.

[*Plucking it off.*] Capell. om. Ff.

18 *me, princely*] *me Princely* F₁F₂ *my Princely* F₃F₄.

19 *Patay*] Malone (Capell conj.). *Poictiers* Ff.

23 *Like*] *Unlike* Vaughan conj.

29 *no.*] Capell. *no* Ff.

38 *most*] *worst* Hanmer.

Profaning this most honourable order,
 And should, if I were worthy to be judge,
 Be quite degraded, like a hedge-born swain
 That doth presume to boast of gentle blood.

King. Stain to thy countrymen, thou hear'st thy
 doom ! 45

Be packing, therefore, thou that wast a knight :
 Henceforth we banish thee, on pain of death.

[*Exit Fastolfe.*]

And now, my lord protector, view the letter
 Sent from our uncle Duke of Burgundy.

Glou. What means his grace, that he hath changed his
 style ? 50

No more but, plain and bluntly, 'To the king !'
 Hath he forgot he is his sovereign ?
 Or doth this churlish superscription
 Pretend some alteration in good will ?

What's here ? [*Reads*] 'I have, upon especial cause,
 Moved with compassion of my country's wreck,
 Together with the pitiful complaints
 Of such as your oppression feeds upon,
 Forsaken your pernicious faction,
 And join'd with Charles, the rightful King of France.' 60

O monstrous treachery ! can this be so,
 That in alliance, amity and oaths,
 There should be found such false dissembling guile ?

King. What ! doth my uncle Burgundy revolt ?

Glou. He doth, my lord, and is become your foe. 65

King. Is that the worst this letter doth contain ?

47 [*Exit Fast.*] *Exit.* Ff.

48 *my lord*] *lord* F₁.

51 *bluntly*, 'To the king !'] *bluntly* ?
 (*To the King.*) Ff.

[*Reading.* Rowe. viewing the Super-
 scription. Capell.

54 *Pretend*] *Portend* Rowe (ed. 2).

55 [*Reads*] Rowe. opens the Letter.
 Capell.

56 *of*] *of of* F₂
wreck] Theobald (ed. 2). *wracks*
 F₁F₂. *wrack* F₃F₄.

61 *so,*] *so* ; Capell. *so* ? Ff.

65 *your*] F₁. *my* F₂F₃F₄. *our* Pope.

Glou. It is the worst, and all, my lord, he writes.

King. Why, then, Lord Talbot there shall talk with him,

And give him chastisement for this abuse.

How say you, my lord? are you not content? 70

Tal. Content, my liege! yes, but that I am prevented, I should have begg'd I might have been employ'd.

King. Then gather strength, and march unto him straight:

Let him perceive how ill we brook his treason, And what offence it is to flout his friends. 75

Tal. I go, my lord, in heart desiring still You may behold confusion of your foes. [Exit.

Enter VERNON and BASSET.

Ver. Grant me the combat, gracious sovereign.

Bas. And me, my lord, grant me the combat too.

York. This is my servant: hear him, noble prince. 80

Som. And this is mine: sweet Henry, favour him.

King. Be patient, lords; and give them leave to speak.

Say, gentlemen, what makes you thus exclaim?

And wherefore crave you combat? or with whom? 84

Ver. With him, my lord; for he hath done me wrong.

Bas. And I with him; for he hath done me wrong.

King. What is that wrong whereof you both complain?

First let me know, and then I'll answer you.

Bas. Crossing the sea from England into France,

70 *How say you, my lord? My lord, how say you?* Pope.

71 *yes*] om. Capell conj.

77 [Exit.] Rowe. om. Ff.

78 SCENE II. Pope.

87 *whereof*] *wherof* F₁. *whereon* F₂F₃ F₄.

This fellow here, with envious carping tongue, 90
 Upbraided me about the rose I wear;
 Saying, the sanguine colour of the leaves
 Did represent my master's blushing cheeks,
 When stubbornly he did repugn the truth
 About a certain question in the law 95
 Argued betwixt the Duke of York and him;
 With other vile and ignominious terms:
 In confutation of which rude reproach,
 And in defence of my lord's worthiness,
 I crave the benefit of law of arms. 100

Ver. And that is my petition, noble lord:
 For though he seem with forged quaint conceit
 To set a gloss upon his bold intent,
 Yet know, my lord, I was provoked by him;
 And he first took exceptions at this badge, 105
 Pronouncing that the paleness of this flower
 Bewray'd the faintness of my master's heart.

York. Will not this malice, Somerset, be left?

Som. Your private grudge, my Lord of York, will out,
 Though ne'er so cunningly you smother it. 110

King. Good Lord, what madness rules in brainsick
 men,

When for so slight and frivolous a cause
 Such factious emulations shall arise!
 Good cousins both, of York and Somerset,
 Quiet yourselves, I pray, and be at peace. 115

York. Let this dissension first be tried by fight,
 And then your highness shall command a peace.

Som. The quarrel toucheth none but us alone;

90 *envious*] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄. *sharp*
 and Rowe.

93 *represents*] F₁. *present* F₂F₃F₄.

101 *noble*] *royal* Collier MS.

103 *bold*] *bad* or *bold* Vaughan conj.

113 *factious*] *factions* F₂.

115 *I pray, and be*] F₁. *and be* F₂F₃F₄.
and be again Pope.

Betwixt ourselves let us decide it then.

York. There is my pledge; accept it, Somerset. 120

Ver. Nay, let it rest where it began at first.

Bas. Confirm it so, mine honourable lord.

Glou. Confirm it so! Confounded be your strife!

And perish ye, with your audacious prate!

Presumptuous vassals, are you not ashamed 125

With this immodest clamorous outrage

To trouble and disturb the king and us?

And you, my lords, methinks you do not well

To bear with their perverse objections;

Much less to take occasion from their mouths 130

To raise a mutiny betwixt yourselves:

Let me persuade you take a better course.

Exe. It grieves his highness: good my lords, be friends.

King. Come hither, you that would be combatants:
Henceforth I charge you, as you love our favour, 135

Quite to forget this quarrel and the cause.

And you, my lords, remember where we are;

In France, amongst a fickle wavering nation:

If they perceive dissension in our looks

And that within ourselves we disagree, 140

How will their grudging stomachs be provoked

To wilful disobedience, and rebel!

Beside, what infamy will there arise,

When foreign princes shall be certified

That for a toy, a thing of no regard, 145

King Henry's peers and chief nobility

Destroy'd themselves, and lost the realm of France!

O, think upon the conquest of my father,

My tender years, and let us not forgo

133 *It...friends.*] One line in Pope: two
in Ff.

137 *we*] *you F.*

138 *amongst*] *among F.*

142 *rebel*] *rebellion Keightley.*

That for a trifle that was bought with blood! 150

Let me be umpire in this doubtful strife.

I see no reason, if I wear this rose, [Putting on a red rose.

That any one should therefore be suspicious

I more incline to Somerset than York:

Both are my kinsmen, and I love them both: 155

As well they may upbraid me with my crown,

Because, forsooth, the king of Scots is crown'd.

But your discretions better can persuade

Than I am able to instruct or teach:

And therefore, as we hither came in peace, 160

So let us still continue peace and love.

Cousin of York, we institute your grace

To be our regent in these parts of France:

And, good my Lord of Somerset, unite

Your troops of horsemen with his bands of foot; 165

And, like true subjects, sons of your progenitors,

Go cheerfully together and digest

Your angry choler on your enemies.

Ourselves, my lord protector and the rest

After some respite will return to Calais; 170

From thence to England; where I hope ere long

To be presented, by your victories,

With Charles, Alençon and that traitorous rout.

[Flourish. Exeunt all but York, Warwick, Exeter and Vernon.

War. My Lord of York, I promise you, the king

Prettily, methought, did play the orator. 175

York. And so he did; but yet I like it not,

In that he wears the badge of Somerset.

War. Tush, that was but his fancy, blame him not;

150 *that was*] *which was* Pope.

151 *umpire*] *Umper* F₁F₂. *Umpier* F₃
F₄.

152 [Putting.....rose.] Johnson. om.
Ff.

167 *digest*] *disgest* F₂.

173 [Flourish.] Ff (after line 181).
Exeunt all but...] Exeunt. Manet...
F₁F₂. Exeunt. Manent... F₃F₄.

175 *Prettily*] *Most prettily* Pope.

I dare presume, sweet prince, he thought no harm.

York. An if I wist he did,—but let it rest; 180
Other affairs must now be managed. [*Exeunt all but Exeter.*

Exe. Well didst thou, Richard, to suppress thy voice;
For, had the passions of thy heart burst out,
I fear we should have seen decipher'd there
More rancorous spite, more furious raging broils, 185
Than yet can be imagined or supposed.
But howsoe'er, no simple man that sees
This jarring discord of nobility,
This shouldering of each other in the court,
This factious bandying of their favourites, 190
But that it doth presage some ill event.
'Tis much when sceptres are in children's hands;
But more when envy breeds unkind division;
There comes the ruin, there begins confusion. [*Exit.*

SCENE II. *Before Bourdeaux.*

Enter TALBOT, with trump and drum.

Tal. Go to the gates of Bourdeaux, trumpeter;
Summon their general unto the wall.

180 *An if I wist he did,*—] Capell. *And if I wish he did.* ff. *And if I wish he did.*— Rowe. *An if I wis, he did.*— Theobald, ed. 1 (in text). *And if I wis, he did.*— Theobald (in note). *And if—I wish—he did*— or *And if he did,*—*I wish*— Johnson conj. *And, if I wist, he did,*— Steevens.

181 [*Exeunt...*] *Exeunt.* Flourish. *Ma-*
net Exeter. ff.

183 *had*] om. F₄.

191 *But that it*] F₁F₂. *By that it* F₃F₄.
But that he Rowe. *But saith it*

Capell conj. *But thinks it* Anon. conj. *But sees it* Keightley conj. *But at it* Vaughan conj.

193 *more when*] om. Roderick conj.

194 *There comes*] F₁. *Then comes* F₂F₃, F₄. *Thence comes* Hudson (S. Walker conj.).

SCENE II.] Capell. SCENE III. Pope. om. ff.

Before...drum.] *Enter Talbot with Trumpe and Drumme, before Bourdeaux.* ff (*Trumpet* F₂F₃. *Trumpets* F₄).

Trumpet sounds. Enter General and others, aloft.

English John Talbot, captains, calls you forth,
 Servant in arms to Harry King of England ;
 And thus he would : Open your city-gates ; 5
 Be humble to us ; call my sovereign yours,
 And do him homage as obedient subjects ;
 And I'll withdraw me and my bloody power :
 But, if you frown upon this proffer'd peace,
 You tempt the fury of my three attendants, 10
 Lean famine, quartering steel, and climbing fire ;
 Who in a moment even with the earth
 Shall lay your stately and air-braving towers,
 If you forsake the offer of their love.

Gen. Thou ominous and fearful owl of death, 15
 Our nation's terror and their bloody scourge !
 The period of thy tyranny approacheth.
 On us thou canst not enter but by death ;
 For, I protest, we are well fortified
 And strong enough to issue out and fight : 20
 If thou retire, the Dauphin, well appointed,
 Stands with the snares of war to tangle thee :
 On either hand thee there are squadrons pitch'd,
 To wall thee from the liberty of flight ;
 And no way canst thou turn thee for redress, 25
 But death doth front thee with apparent spoil,
 And pale destruction meets thee in the face.
 Ten thousand French have ta'en the sacrament.

3 Trumpet sounds.] Sounds. Ff.
 and others.] Malone. om. Ff.
 calls] call F₁.

6 humble] F₁. humbled F₂F₃F₄.

14 their] our Hanmer.

22 war] death Capell.

26 spoil] steel Vaughan conj.

28 Ten...sacrament] This line is placed
 before line 25, And no way... in F₂
 F₃F₄.

To rive their dangerous artillery
 Upon no Christian soul but English Talbot. 30
 Lo, there thou stand'st, a breathing valiant man,
 Of an invincible unconquer'd spirit!
 This is the latest glory of thy praise
 That I, thy enemy, due thee withal;
 For ere the glass, that now begins to run, 35
 Finish the process of his sandy hour,
 These eyes, that see thee now well coloured,
 Shall see thee wither'd, bloody, pale and dead.

[*Drum afar off.*

Hark! hark! the Dauphin's drum, a warning bell,
 Sings heavy music to thy timorous soul; 40
 And mine shall ring thy dire departure out.

[*Exeunt General, &c.*

Tal. He fables not; I hear the enemy:
 Out, some light horsemen, and peruse their wings.
 O, negligent and heedless discipline!
 How are we park'd and bounded in a pale, 45
 A little herd of England's timorous deer,
 Mazed with a yelping kennel of French curs!
 If we be English deer, be then in blood;
 Not rascal-like, to fall down with a pinch,
 But rather, moody-mad and desperate stags, 50
 Turn on the bloody hounds with heads of steel
 And make the cowards stand aloof at bay:
 Sell every man his life as dear as mine,

29 *rive*] F₃F₄. *ryue* F₁F₂. *drive* Johnson conj. *rain* Vaughan conj.

34 *dus*] Theobald. *dew* Ff. '*dus* Collier. *dow* Vaughan conj.

37 *well coloured*] *well-colour'd red* Vaughan conj.

38 *wither'd*] Rowe (ed. 2). *withered* Ff.

41 *Exeunt...*] Malone. *Exit* Ff.

42 *hear*] *heard* F₄.

50 *moody-mad and*] Capell. *moodie mad*: *And* F₁F₂F₃. *moodie mad and* F₄.

53, 54 *Sell...friends.*] Put in the margin by Pope.

And they shall find dear deer of us, my friends.
 God and Saint George, Talbot and England's right, 55
 Prosper our colours in this dangerous fight! [Exeunt.]

SCENE III. *Plains in Gascony.*

*Enter a Messenger that meets YORK. Enter YORK with trumpet
 and many Soldiers.*

York. Are not the speedy scouts return'd again,
 That dogg'd the mighty army of the Dauphin?

Mess. They are return'd, my lord, and give it out
 That he is march'd to Bourdeaux with his power,
 To fight with Talbot: as he march'd along, 5
 By your espials were discovered
 Two mightier troops than that the Dauphin led,
 Which join'd with him and made their march for Bour-
 deaux.

York. A plague upon that villain Somerset,
 That thus delays my promised supply 10
 Of horsemen, that were levied for this siege!
 Renowned Talbot doth expect my aid,
 And I am lowted by a traitor villain,
 And cannot help the noble chevalier:
 God comfort him in this necessity! 15
 If he miscarry, farewell wars in France.

56 [Exeunt.] om. F₁.

SCENE III.] Capell. SCENE IV. Pope.

om. Ff.

Plains...] Capell. Another part of
 France. Theobald.

5 Talbot: as...along,] F₂F₃F₄. Tal-

bot as...along. F₁.

11 this] the F₄.

13 lowted] Ff. flouted Grey conj. loit-
 er'd Nicholson conj. lotted Vaughan
 conj.

by a] by at F₂.

Enter Sir WILLIAM LUCY.

Lucy. Thou princely leader of our English strength,
 Never so needful on the earth of France,
 Spur to the rescue of the noble Talbot,
 Who now is girdled with a waist of iron, 20
 And hemm'd about with grim destruction:
 To Bourdeaux, warlike duke! to Bourdeaux, York!
 Else, farewell Talbot, France, and England's honour.

York. O God, that Somerset, who in proud heart
 Doth stop my cornets, were in Talbot's place! 25
 So should we save a valiant gentleman
 By forfeiting a traitor and a coward.
 Mad ire and wrathful fury makes me weep,
 That thus we die, while remiss traitors sleep.

Lucy. O, send some succour to the distress'd lord! 30

York. He dies, we lose; I break my warlike word;
 We mourn, France smiles; we lose, they daily get;
 All 'long of this vile traitor Somerset.

Lucy. Then God take mercy on brave Talbot's soul;
 And on his son young John, who two hours since 35
 I met in travel toward his warlike father!
 This seven years did not Talbot see his son;
 And now they meet where both their lives are done.

York. Alas, what joy shall noble Talbot have
 To bid his young son welcome to his grave? 40
 Away! vexation almost stops my breath,
 That sunder'd friends greet in the hour of death.

17 *Enter Sir William Lucy.]* Theobald.

Enter another Messenger. Ff.

Lucy.] 2. Mes. Ff.

20 *waist]* Steevens (1778). *waste* Ff.

30 *Lucy.]* Mes. Ff (and throughout the scene).

31 *lose]* loose F₁.

33 *'long]* Johnson. *long* Ff.

35 *who]* whom Theobald (ed. 2).

36 *toward]* F₁. *towards* F₂F₃F₄.

40 *grave?]* Capell. *grave:* Ff. *grave!* Rowe.

42 *sunder'd]* *sundry* Rowe (ed. 1).

Lucy, farewell: no more my fortune can,
 But curse the cause I cannot aid the man.
 Maine, Blois, Poictiers, and Tours, are won away, 45
 'Long all of Somerset and his delay. [*Exit, with his soldiers.*]

Lucy. Thus, while the vulture of sedition
 Feeds in the bosom of such great commanders,
 Sleeping neglectation doth betray to loss
 The conquest of our scarce cold conqueror, 50
 That ever living man of memory,
 Henry the Fifth: whiles they each other cross,
 Lives, honours, lands and all hurry to loss. [*Exit.*]

SCENE IV. *Other plains in Gascony.*

Enter SOMERSET, with his army; a Captain of TALBOT'S with him.

Som. It is too late; I cannot send them now:
 This expedition was by York and Talbot
 Too rashly plotted: all our general force
 Might with a sally of the very town
 Be buckled with: the over-daring Talbot 5
 Hath sullied all his gloss of former honour
 By this unheedful, desperate, wild adventure:
 York set him on to fight and die in shame,
 That, Talbot dead, great York might bear the name.

Cap. Here is Sir William Lucy, who with me 10
 Set from our o'er-match'd forces forth for aid.

44 *cause I] cause: I* Lloyd conj.

46 'Long] Johnson. Long Ff.

[Exit...] Exit York with his Forces.
 Collier. Exit. Ff.

49 *loss] Pope. loss: F₁F₂F₃. loss, F₄.*

50 *conquest] conquests F₄.*

51 *ever living man of] man of ever-living*
 Lettsom conj.

52 *whiles] while* Pope.

other] others F₄.

53 [Exit.] om. F₁.

SCENE IV.] Capell. SCENE V. Pope.

Other plains...] Capell. Another
 part of France. Theobald.

a Captain...] an Officer... Capell.
 om. Ff.

Enter Sir WILLIAM LUCY.

www.libtool.com.cn

Som. How now, Sir William! whither were you sent?

Lucy. Whither, my lord? from bought and sold Lord Talbot;

Who, ring'd about with bold adversity,
 Cries out for noble York and Somerset, 15
 To beat assailing death from his weak legions:
 And whiles the honourable captain there
 Drops bloody sweat from his war-wearied limbs,
 And, in advantage lingering, looks for rescue,
 You, his false hopes, the trust of England's honour, 20
 Keep off aloof with worthless emulation.
 Let not your private discord keep away
 The levied succours that should lend him aid,
 While he, renowned noble gentleman,
 Yields up his life unto a world of odds: 25
 Orleans the Bastard, Charles, Burgundy,
 Alençon, Reignier, compass him about,
 And Talbot perisheth by your default.

Som. York set him on; York should have sent him aid.

Lucy. And York as fast upon your grace exclaims;
 Swearing that you withhold his levied host, 31

- 12 Enter...] Theobald. om. Ff.
whither] *whether* F₁.
were you] *were thou* F₄. *werst thou*
 Rowe (ed. 1).
 13 *Whither, my lord?*] Rowe. *Whither*
my lord, F₂F₃F₄. *Whether my lord*,
 F₁. *Hither, my lord*; Pope.
 14 *bold adversity*] *bloody adversaries*
 Vaughan conj.
 16 *legions*] Rowe. *Regions* Ff.
 17 *whiles*] *while* Pope.
 19 *in advantage lingering*] *in disadvan-*
tage ling'ring Staunton conj. *in*

- disvantage lingering* Dyce, ed. 2
 (Lettsom conj.). *disadvantage lin-*
g'ring Vaughan conj.
 20 *the trust*] *thro' trust* Vaughan conj.
 21 *off*] *both* Vaughan conj.
 23 *should*] F₁. *shall* F₂F₃F₄.
 25 *Yields*] *Yeeld* F₁.
 26 *Burgundy*] *Burgundie* F₁. *and Bur-*
gundie F₂F₃F₄.
 27 *Reignier*] Rowe. *Reignard* Ff.
 31 *host*] F₃F₄. *hoast* F₁F₂. *horse* Han-
 mer (Theobald conj.).

Collected for this expedition.

Som. York lies; he might have sent and had the horse:
I owe him little duty, and less love;
And take foul scorn to fawn on him by sending. 35

Lucy. The fraud of England, not the force of France,
Hath now entrapp'd the noble-minded Talbot:
Never to England shall he bear his life;
But dies, betray'd to fortune by your strife.

Som. Come, go; I will dispatch the horsemen straight:
Within six hours they will be at his aid. 41

Lucy. Too late comes rescue: he is ta'en or slain;
For fly he could not, if he would have fled;
And fly would Talbot never, though he might.

Som. If he be dead, brave Talbot, then adieu! 45

Lucy. His fame lives in the world, his shame in you.
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *The English camp near Bourdeaux.*

Enter TALBOT and JOHN his son.

Tal. O young John Talbot! I did send for thee
To tutor thee in stratagems of war,
That Talbot's name might be in thee revived,
When sapless age and weak unable limbs
Should bring thy father to his drooping chair. 5
But, O malignant and ill-boding stars!
Now thou art come unto a feast of death,

42 *rescue: he is*] *rescue, he is* F₁F₂.
rescue, if he is F₃F₄. *rescue, if he's*
Rowe (ed. 1). *rescue, he's* Id. (ed.
2). *rescue now, he's* Pope.

44 *though*] *if* Capell.

SCENE V.] Capell. SCENE VI. Pope.

The English camp...] Malone. A
Field of Battle near Bourdeaux.
Theobald. Camp near Bourdeaux.
Capell.

John his son.] Malone. his Son. Ff.

7 *thou art*] *art thou* F₃F₄.

A terrible and unavoyded danger :

Therefore, dear boy, mount on my swiftest horse ;
 And I'll direct thee how thou shalt escape
 By sudden flight : come, dally not, be gone.

10

John. Is my name Talbot? and am I your son?
 And shall I fly? O, if you love my mother,
 Dishonour not her honourable name,
 To make a bastard and a slave of me!

15

The world will say, he is not Talbot's blood,
 That basely fled when noble Talbot stood.

Tal. Fly, to revenge my death, if I be slain.

John. He that flies so will ne'er return again.

Tal. If we both stay, we both are sure to die.

20

John. Then let me stay; and, father, do you fly:
 Your loss is great, so your regard should be;
 My worth unknown, no loss is known in me.
 Upon my death the French can little boast;
 In yours they will, in you all hopes are lost.
 Flight cannot stain the honour you have won;
 But mine it will, that no exploit have done:
 You fled for vantage, every one will swear;
 But, if I bow, they'll say it was for fear.
 There is no hope that ever I will stay,
 If the first hour I shrink and run away.
 Here on my knee I beg mortality,
 Rather than life preserved with infamy.

25

30

Tal. Shall all thy mother's hopes lie in one tomb?

John. Ay, rather than I'll shame my mother's womb.

Tal. Upon my blessing, I command thee go.

36

John. To fight I will, but not to fly the foe.

9 *my*] *thy* Rowe.

13 *mother*] F₁F₂. *Mothers* F₃. *Mother's*
 F₄.

29 *bow, they 'll*] *fly, they 'll* Hudson
 (Collier MS.). *go, they 'll* Long MS.

flew, they'd Singer (Anon. conj. MS.).
do, they 'll Keightley. *budge, they 'll*
 Vaughan conj.

37 *to fly*] *flye* F₃F₄.

Tal. Part of thy father may be saved in thee.

John. No part of him but will be shame in me. 39

Tal. Thou never hadst renown, nor canst not lose it.

John. Yes, your renowned name: shall flight abuse it?

Tal. Thy father's charge shall clear thee from that stain.

John. You cannot witness for me, being slain.

If death be so apparent, then both fly.

Tal. And leave my followers here to fight and die?

My age was never tainted with such shame. 46

John. And shall my youth be guilty of such blame?

No more can I be sever'd from your side,

Than can yourself yourself in twain divide:

Stay, go, do what you will, the like do I; 50

For live I will not, if my father die.

Tal. Then here I take my leave of thee, fair son,

Born to eclipse thy life this afternoon.

Come, side by side together live and die; 54

And soul with soul from France to heaven fly. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *A field of battle.*

Alarum: excursions, wherein TALBOT'S SON is hemmed about, and TALBOT rescues him.

Tal. Saint George and victory! fight, soldiers, fight:

The regent hath with Talbot broke his word,

And left us to the rage of France his sword.

39 *shame*] *sham'd* Hudson (S. Walker conj.).

40 *nor*] *and* Pope.

lose it] *lose't* S. Walker conj.

41 *abuse it*] *abuse't* S. Walker conj.

42 *that*] *y' F₁. y' F₂. the F₃F₄.*

48 *sever'd*] Pope. *severed* Ff.

52 [embracing him. Capell.

55 *heaven fly*] *heav'n shall fly* Pope.

SCENE VI.] Capell. Pope continues the scene.

A field of battle.] Capell.

3 *France his*] *France's* Rowe.

Where is John Talbot? Pause, and take thy breath;
I gave thee life and rescued thee from death. 5

John. O, twice my father, twice am I thy son!
The life thou gavest me first was lost and done,
Till with thy warlike sword, despite of fate,
To my determined time thou gavest new date.

Tal. When from the Dauphin's crest thy sword struck
fire, 10

It warm'd thy father's heart with proud desire
Of bold-faced victory. Then leaden age,
Quicken'd with youthful spleen and warlike rage,
Beat down Alençon, Orleans, Burgundy,
And from the pride of Gallia rescued thee. 15

The ireful bastard Orleans, that drew blood
From thee, my boy, and had the maidenhood
Of thy first fight, I soon encountered,
And interchanging blows I quickly shed
Some of his bastard blood; and in disgrace 20

Bespoke him thus; 'Contaminated base
And misbegotten blood I spill of thine,
Mean and right poor, for that pure blood of mine,
Which thou didst force from Talbot, my brave boy:'
Here, purposing the Bastard to destroy, 25

Came in strong rescue. Speak, thy father's care,
Art thou not weary, John? how dost thou fare?
Wilt thou yet leave the battle, boy, and fly,
Now thou art seal'd the son of chivalry?
Fly, to revenge my death when I am dead: 30

The help of one stands me in little stead.
O, too much folly is it, well I wot,
To hazard all our lives in one small boat!

6 *am I*] *I am* Rowe (ed. 1).

20 *and*] *then* Pope.

21 *him thus*; 'Contaminated'] *him*—

'*This contaminated* Vaughan conj.

26 *care,*] *care?* F₄.

If I to-day die not with Frenchmen's rage,
 To-morrow I shall die with mickle age: 35
 By me they nothing gain an if I stay;
 'Tis but the shortening of my life one day:
 In thee thy mother dies, our household's name,
 My death's revenge, thy youth, and England's fame:
 All these and more we hazard by thy stay; 40
 All these are saved if thou wilt fly away.

John. The sword of Orleans hath not made me smart;
 These words of yours draw life-blood from my heart:
 On that advantage, bought with such a shame,
 To save a paltry life and slay bright fame, 45
 Before young Talbot from old Talbot fly,
 The coward horse that bears me fall and die!
 And like me to the peasant boys of France,
 To be shame's scorn and subject of mischance!
 Surely, by all the glory you have won, 50
 An if I fly, I am not Talbot's son:
 Then talk no more of flight, it is no boot;
 If son to Talbot, die at Talbot's foot.

Tal. Then follow thou thy desperate sire of Crete,
 Thou Icarus; thy life to me is sweet: 55
 If thou wilt fight, fight by thy father's side;
 And, commendable proved, let's die in pride. [*Exeunt.*]

35 *mickle*] *milky* Theobald conj.

36 *an if*] Capell. *and if* Ff.

44, 45 *On that advantage...fame,*] Ff.

On that bad vantage...fame, Theobald conj. *Out on that vantage...fame!* Theobald. *Oh! what advantage...fame!* Hanmer. *On that advantage...(To save...fame,)* Mason conj. *Oh hated vantage!...fame!* Vaughan conj. *On that advantage...fame!* Perring conj.

47 *coward*] *coward's* Vaughan conj.

48 *like me to*] *leave me to* Hanmer. *take me so* Vaughan conj.

49 *scorn*] *own* Vaughan conj.

51 *An if*] Theobald. *And if* Ff.

53 *If*] *I* Vaughan conj.

55 *Thou Icarus; thy*] *Though, Icarus, thy* Vaughan conj.

57 *proved*] *proud* Vaughan conj.

[*Exeunt.*] Rowe. Exit. Ff.

www.libtool.com.cn SCENE VII. *Another part of the field.*

Alarum: excursions. Enter old TALBOT led by a Servant.

Tal. Where is my other life? mine own is gone;
 O, where's young Talbot? where is valiant John?
 Triumphant death, smear'd with captivity,
 Young Talbot's valour makes me smile at thee:
 When he perceived me shrink and on my knee, 5
 His bloody sword he brandish'd over me,
 And, like a hungry lion, did commence
 Rough deeds of rage and stern impatience;
 But when my angry guardant stood alone,
 Tendering my ruin and assail'd of none, 10
 Dizzy-eyed fury and great rage of heart
 Suddenly made him from my side to start
 Into the clustering battle of the French;
 And in that sea of blood my boy did drench
 His over-mounting spirit, and there died, 15
 My Icarus, my blossom, in his pride.

Serv. O my dear lord, lo, where your son is borne!

Enter Soldiers, with the body of young TALBOT.

Tal. Thou antic death, which laugh'st us here to scorn,

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>SCENE VII.] Pope. SCENE VI. Capell (a misprint). Another...] Malone. Another Part of the same. Capell. Enter...led by a servant.] Enter... led. Ff. Enter...led by the French. Johnson. Enter Talbot wounded, supported by a Soldier. Collier (ed. 2). Enter old Talbot led by a Soldier. Collier MS. 3 <i>death,...captivity,</i>] Ff. <i>death,...captivity!</i> Pope. <i>death!.....captivity,</i></p> | <p>Malone conj. <i>death,.....captivity</i> Vaughan conj. <i>smear'd</i>] <i>smeared</i> Vaughan conj. 5 <i>shrink and on</i>] <i>sink upon</i> or <i>sinking</i> <i>on Lettsom</i> conj. 10 <i>Tendering</i>] <i>Tending</i> Tyrwhitt conj. <i>Fending</i> Becket conj. 18 Enter...] Capell. Enter with Iohn Talbot, borne. Ff (born. F₃F₄), after line 16. <i>antic</i>] <i>antick</i> F₃F₄. <i>antiqua</i> F₁F₇.</p> |
|---|---|

Anon, from thy insulting tyranny,
 Coupled in bonds of perpetuity, 20
 Two Talbots, winged through the lither sky,
 In thy despite shall 'scape mortality.
 O thou, whose wounds become hard-favour'd death,
 Speak to thy father ere thou yield thy breath!
 Brave death by speaking, whether he will or no; 25
 Imagine him a Frenchman and thy foe.
 Poor boy! he smiles, methinks, as who should say,
 Had death been French, then death had died to-day.
 Come, come and lay him in his father's arms:
 My spirit can no longer bear these harms. 30
 Soldiers, adieu! I have what I would have,
 Now my old arms are young John Talbot's grave. [*Dies.*]

*Enter CHARLES, ALENÇON, BURGUNDY, Bastard, LA PUCELLE,
 and forces.*

Char. Had York and Somerset brought rescue in,
 We should have found a bloody day of this.

Bast. How the young whelp of Talbot's, raging-wood,
 Did flesh his puny sword in Frenchmen's blood! 36

Puc. Once I encounter'd him, and thus I said:
 'Thou maiden youth, be vanquish'd by a maid:'
 But, with a proud majestical high scorn,
 He answer'd thus: 'Young Talbot was not born 40
 To be the pillage of a giglot wench:'

21 *lither*] *hither* S. Walker conj.

23 *hard-favour'd*] Theobald. *hard
 favoured* Ff.

25—28 *Brave.....to-day.*] Put in the
 margin by Pope.

25 *whither*] F₃F₄. *whither* F₁F₂.

23 [Alarums. Exeunt. Sol. and Ser.
 leaving the two Bodies. Drums. Ca-
 pell.

33 Actus Quintus. Scœna Prima. F₁F₃

F₄. om. F₁. Capell first continued
 the scene.

Enter...and forces.] *Enter...and Pu-
 cell.* Ff.

Alençon,] om. Capell.

35 *Talbot's, raging-wood.*] Capell. *Tal-
 bots raging wood*, Ff. *Talbot's
 raging brood*, Rowe (ed. 2).

36 *puny sword*] Hyphened in Ff.

39 *proud*] *prood* F₂.

So, rushing in the bowels of the French,
He left me proudly, as unworthy fight.

Bur. Doubtless he would have made a noble knight:
See, where he lies inhearsed in the arms 45
Of the most bloody nurser of his harms!

Bast. Hew them to pieces, hack their bones asunder,
Whose life was England's glory, Gallia's wonder.

Char. O, no, forbear! for that which we have fled
During the life, let us not wrong it dead. 50

Enter Sir WILLIAM LUCY, attended; Herald of the French preceding.

Lucy. Herald, conduct me to the Dauphin's tent,
To know who hath obtain'd the glory of the day.

Char. On what submissive message art thou sent?

Lucy. Submission, Dauphin! 'tis a mere French word;
We English warriors wot not what it means. 55

I come to know what prisoners thou hast ta'en,
And to survey the bodies of the dead.

Char. For prisoners ask'st thou? hell our prison is.
But tell me whom thou seek'st.

Lucy. But where's the great Alcides of the field, 60
Valiant Lord Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury,

42, 43 *So, rushing.....He left] So left*
Pope.

42 *So...French,] F₁.* Omitted in F₂F₃
F₄.

46 *most bloody] still bleeding Collier*
MS.
his] our Staunton conj.

51 *Enter...]* Capell. *Enter Lucie.* Ff.

51, 52 *Herald...day.]* Arranged as in Ff.
As three lines, ending *Herald.....*
know...day by Malone.

51 *Herald]* om. Pope, ending the line
at *know*.

52 *To know]* om. Hanmer. *I know*
Anon. conj. (*Gent. Mag.*, 1789).

obtain'd] obtained F₄. om. Capell
conj.

59 *But tell] There look my friends; but*
tell Lettsom conj.

whom thou seek'st] briefly whom thou
seekest now Collier, ed. 2 (*Collier*
MS.).

seek'st.] Capell. *seek'st ? Ff.*

60 *But where's] Ff.* *Where is Rowa.*
First, where's Lettsom conj.

61, 62 *Earl...arms] for his rare success*
In arms, created Earl of Shrewsbury
Anon. conj.

61, 71 *Shrewsbury,...France?] Dyce.*
Shrewsbury?...France. Ff.

Created, for his rare success in arms,
 Great Earl of Washford, Waterford and Valence;
 Lord Talbot of Goodrig and Urchinfield,
 Lord Strange of Blackmere, Lord Verdun of Alton, 65
 Lord Cromwell of Wingfield, Lord Furnival of Sheffield,
 The thrice-victorious Lord of Falconbridge;
 Knight of the noble order of Saint George,
 Worthy Saint Michael and the Golden Fleece;
 Great marshal to Henry the Sixth 70
 Of all his wars within the realm of France?

Puc. Here is a silly stately style indeed!
 The Turk, that two and fifty kingdoms hath,
 Writes not so tedious a style as this.
 Him that thou magnifiest with all these titles 75
 Stinking and fly-blown lies here at our feet.

Lucy. Is Talbot slain, the Frenchmen's only scourge,
 Your kingdom's terror and black Nemesis?
 O, were mine eye-balls into bullets turn'd,
 That I in rage might shoot them at your faces! 80
 O, that I could but call these dead to life!
 It were enough to fright the realm of France:
 Were but his picture left amongst you here,
 It would amaze the proudest of you all.
 Give me their bodies, that I may bear them hence 85
 And give them burial as beseems their worth.

Puc. I think this upstart is old Talbot's ghost,
 He speaks with such a proud commanding spirit.

66 *Lord Cromwell.....Lord Furnival]*

Walker conj.).

Cromwell...Furnival Capell conj.

75 *Him that]* *He that* Hanmer. *He,*
whom Capell.

70 *marshal]* *marishal* Capell. Corrected
 to *mareschal* in Errata.

83 *amongst]* *among* F₄.

Henry] F₁. *our king Henry* F₂F₃
 F₄.

85 *may bear them hence]* *bear them forth*
 Collier MS. *may bear hence* Vaughan
 conj.

72 *Here is]* Pope. *Heere's* F₁F₂. *Here's*
 F₃F₄.

88 *proud commanding]* *proud-com-*
manding S. Walker conj.

silly stately] *silly-stately* Dyce (S.

For God's sake, let him have 'em ; to keep them here,
They would but stink, and putrefy the air. 90

Char. Go, take their bodies hence.

Lucy. I'll bear them hence ; but from their ashes shall
be rear'd

A phoenix that shall make all France afeard.

Char. So we be rid of them, do with 'em what thou
wilt.

And now to Paris, in this conquering vein : 95
All will be ours, now bloody Talbot's slain. [*Exeunt.*]

ACT V.

SCENE I. London. The palace.

Sennet. Enter KING, GLOUCESTER, and EXETER.

King. Have you perused the letters from the pope,
The emperor, and the Earl of Armagnac?

89 'em] Theobald. *him* Ff. *them* Collier (Theobald conj.).

them] om. Vaughan conj.

92 I'll...rear'd] As in Ff. Pope, reading *ashes Dauphin*, ends the first line at *hence*; Steevens at *bear*.

but] *But doubt not* Dyce, ed. 2 (Lettsom conj.), making *But...rear'd* one line.

ashes] *very ashes* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

[Att. take up the Bodies. Capell.

93 *afeard*] *afeard* Rowe. *affear'd* Ff.

94 *So...them*] *So they be rid* Vaughan conj.

rid...what] Malone. *rid of them, do*

with him what F₁. *rid of them, do with them what* F₂F₃F₄. *rid of them, do what* Pope. *rid, do with them what* Capell.

[*Exeunt* Luc. and Att. bearing out the Bodies. Capell.

96 [*Exeunt.*] Rowe. Exit. F₁F₂F₃. om. F₄.

ACT V. SCENE I.] Capell. *Scena Secunda*. Ff.

London.....] Changes to England. Pope. London. A Room in the Palace. Capell.

Sennet.] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

2, 17 *Armagnac*] *Arminack* Ff.

Glou. I have, my lord: and their intent is this:
They humbly sue unto your excellence
To have a godly peace concluded of 5
Between the realms of England and of France.

King. How doth your grace affect their motion?

Glou. Well, my good lord; and as the only means
To stop effusion of our Christian blood
And stablish quietness on every side. 10

King. Ay, marry, uncle; for I always thought
It was both impious and unnatural
That such immanity and bloody strife
Should reign among professors of one faith.

Glou. Beside, my lord, the sooner to effect 15
And surer bind this knot of amity,
The Earl of Armagnac, near knit to Charles,
A man of great authority in France,
Proffers his only daughter to your grace
In marriage, with a large and sumptuous dowry. 20

King. Marriage, uncle! alas, my years are young!
And fitter is my study and my books
Than wanton dalliance with a paramour.
Yet call the ambassadors; and, as you please,
So let them have their answers every one: 25
I shall be well content with any choice
Tends to God's glory and my country's weal.

7 *their*] *this* F₄.

9 *our*] *much* Collier MS.

16 *this*] *his* F₄.

17 *knit*] Ff. *kin* Pope. See note (vi).

20 *dowry*] *dower* Dyce, ed. 2 (S. Walker conj.).

21 *Marriage...young!*] *Marriage, alas!*
my years are yet too young: Pope.

*Marriage, good uncle! alas, my years
are young;* Capell. *Marriage, uncle,
'las my years are young!* S. Walker
conj.

Marriage] *In marriage* Anon. conj.
uncle! alas,] alas! uncle, Anon.
conj.

27 *my*] F₁F₂F₄. om. F₃.

Enter WINCHESTER in Cardinal's habit, a Legate and two
www.libtool.com.cn Ambassadors.

Exe. What! is my Lord of Winchester install'd,
 And call'd unto a cardinal's degree?
 Then I perceive that will be verified 30
 Henry the Fifth did sometime prophesy,
 'If once he come to be a cardinal,
 He'll make his cap co-equal with the crown.'

King. My lords ambassadors, your several suits
 Have been consider'd and debated on. 35
 Your purpose is both good and reasonable;
 And therefore are we certainly resolved
 To draw conditions of a friendly peace;
 Which by my Lord of Winchester we mean
 Shall be transported presently to France. 40

Glou. And for the proffer of my lord your master,
 I have inform'd his highness so at large,
 As liking of the lady's virtuous gifts,
 Her beauty and the value of her dower,
 He doth intend she shall be England's queen. 45

King. In argument and proof of which contract,
 Bear her this jewel, pledge of my affection.
 And so, my lord protector, see them guarded
 And safely brought to Dover; where inshipp'd
 Commit them to the fortune of the sea. 50

[*Exeunt all but Winchester and Legate.*]

Win. Stay, my lord legate: you shall first receive
 The sum of money which I promised

28 Enter.....] Enter Winchester, and
 three Ambassadors. Ff. Enter a
 Legate, and two Ambassadors,
 usher'd; Winchester with them,
 habited as a Cardinal. Capell.

39 of] om. F₂.

46 [to the Emb. Capell.

49 *where inshipp'd*] F₁. *wherein ship'd*
 F₁F₂. *wherein shipp'd* F₂.

50 [*Exeunt...*] *Exeunt.* Ff.

Should be deliver'd to his holiness
For clothing me in these grave ornaments.

Leg. I will attend upon your lordship's leisure. 55

Win. [*Aside*] Now Winchester will not submit, I trow,
Or be inferior to the proudest peer.

Humphrey of Gloucester, thou shalt well perceive
That, neither in birth or for authority,
The bishop will be overborne by thee: 60

I'll either make thee stoop and bend thy knee,
Or sack this country with a mutiny. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *France. Plains in Anjou.*

Enter CHARLES, BURGUNDY, ALENÇON, BASTARD, REIGNIER,
LA PUCELLE, and forces.

Char. These news, my lords, may cheer our drooping
spirits:

'Tis said the stout Parisians do revolt
And turn again unto the warlike French.

Alen. Then march to Paris, royal Charles of France,
And keep not back your powers in dalliance. 5

Puc. Peace be amongst them, if they turn to us;
Else, ruin combat with their palaces!

53 *deliver'd*] Pope. *delivered* Ff.

54 *grave*] *brave* Collier conj.

55 *your*] om. F₄.

[*Exit.* Dyce and Staunton.

56 *Win.* [*Aside*] Edd. *Win.* Ff.

59 *neither...or for*] *nor...or for* Pope.
nor...nor for Hanmer. *nor for birth,*
or for Johnson conj. *neither on*
birth, or for Vaughan conj.

60 *be overborne*] *not be o'erborn* Capell.

62 *sack*] *rack* Vaughan conj.

[*Exeunt.*] Ff. *Exit.* Dyce and
Staunton.

SCENE II.] Capell. *Scæna Tertia.*
Ff.

France.] Pope.

Plains in Anjou.] Capell.

Enter...] *Enter...and Ione.* Ff.

Bastard, Reignier,] om. Capell.
and forces.] and Forces, marching.
Capell. om. Ff.

1 *These*] F₁F₂. *This* F₃F₄.

3 *turn*] *turne* F₁. *returne* F₂. *return*
F₃F₄.

5 *powers*] F₁. *power* F₂F₃F₄.

Enter Scout.

Scout. www.libtool.com.cn Success unto our valiant general,
And happiness to his accomplices!

Char. What tidings send our scouts? I prithee, speak.

Scout. The English army, that divided was 11
Into two parties, is now conjoin'd in one,
And means to give you battle presently.

Char. Somewhat too sudden, sirs, the warning is;
But we will presently provide for them. 15

Bur. I trust the ghost of Talbot is not there:
Now he is gone, my lord, you need not fear.

Puc. Of all base passions, fear is most accursed.
Command the conquest, Charles, it shall be thine,
Let Henry fret and all the world repine. 20

Char. Then on, my lords; and France be fortunate!
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *Before Angiers.*

Alarum. Excursions. Enter LA PUCELLE.

Puc. The regent conquers, and the Frenchmen fly.
Now help, ye charming spells and periapts;
And ye choice spirits that admonish me,
And give me signs of future accidents. [Thunder. 5
You speedy helpers, that are substitutes
Under the lordly monarch of the north,
Appear and aid me in this enterprise.

8 Scout.] Ff. a Messenger. Capell.

10 *scouts*] *Scout* F₄.

12 *parties*] *parts* Pope.

conjoin'd] *join'd* Anon. conj.

SCENE III.] Capell. Ff continue the

scene.

Before Angiers.] Under Angiers. Capell.

4 *accidents.*] *accidents*, Dyce.

7 [Thunder again. Capell.

Enter Fiends.
www.libtool.com.cn

This speedy and quick appearance argues proof
Of your accustom'd diligence to me.
Now, ye familiar spirits, that are cull'd 10
Out of the powerful regions under earth,
Help me this once, that France may get the field.
[They walk, and speak not.
O, hold me not with silence over-long!
Where I was wont to feed you with my blood,
I'll lop a member off and give it you 15
In earnest of a further benefit,
So you do condescend to help me now.
[They hang their heads.
No hope to have redress? My body shall
Pay recompense, if you will grant my suit.
[They shake their heads.
Cannot my body nor blood-sacrifice 20
Entreat you to your wonted furtherance?
Then take my soul, my body, soul and all,
Before that England give the French the foil. *[They depart.*
See, they forsake me! Now the time is come
That France must vail her lofty-plumed crest, 25
And let her head fall into England's lap.
My ancient incantations are too weak,
And hell too strong for me to buckle with:
Now, France, thy glory droopeth to the dust. *[Exit.*

8 *speedy and quick*] *speedy quick* Pope.
speed and quick Dyce, ed. 2 (S.
Walker conj.).
argues] *urges* Vaughan conj.
10 *cull'd*] *call'd* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier
MS.).

11 *regions*] *Regions* Ff. *legions* Singer,
ed. 2 (Warburton conj.).
25 *vail*] F₃F₄. *vale* F₁F₂.
lofty-plumed] Capell. *lofty plumed*
Ff.

Excursions. Re-enter LA PUCELLE fighting hand to hand with
 YORK: LA PUCELLE is taken. The French fly.

York. Damsel of France, I think I have you fast:
 Unchain your spirits now with spelling charms, 31
 And try if they can gain your liberty.

A goodly prize, fit for the devil's grace!
 See, how the ugly witch doth bend her brows,
 As if with Circe she would change my shape! 35

Puc. Changed to a worsor shape thou canst not be.

York. O, Charles the Dauphin is a proper man;
 No shape but his can please your dainty eye.

Puc. A plaguing mischief light on Charles and thee!
 And may ye both be suddenly surprised 40
 By bloody hands, in sleeping on your beds!

York. Fell banning hag, enchantress, hold thy tongue!

Puc. I prithee, give me leave to curse awhile.

York. Curse, miscreant, when thou comest to the stake.
 [Exeunt.]

Alarum. Enter SUFFOLK, with MARGARET in his hand.

Suf. Be what thou wilt, thou art my prisoner. 45
 [Gazes on her.]

O fairest beauty, do not fear nor fly!
 For I will touch thee but with reverent hands;
 I kiss these fingers for eternal peace,
 And lay them gently on thy tender side.
 Who art thou? say, that I may honour thee. 50

30 Re-enter La Pucelle...] Burgundie
 and Yorke fight hand to hand.
 French flye. Ff.

32 your] you Anon. conj.

44 comest] Rowe. comst F₁F₂. com'st
 F₃F₄.

45 SCENE IV. Popea.

47 reverent] Hanmer. reverend Ff.

48, 49 I kiss...side.] As in Ff. Capell
 transposed the lines, thus: And
 lay.....side. I kiss.....[Kissing her
 Hand.]...peace.

50 thou? say,] thou? say; Pope. thou,
 say? Ff.

Mar. Margaret my name, and daughter to a king,
The King of Naples, whosoe'er thou art.

Suf. An earl I am, and Suffolk am I call'd.

Be not offended, nature's miracle,
Thou art allotted to be ta'en by me: 55

So doth the swan her downy cygnets save,
Keeping them prisoner underneath her wings.

Yet, if this servile usage once offend,
Go and be free again as Suffolk's friend. [*She is going.*]

O, stay! I have no power to let her pass; 60

My hand would free her, but my heart says no.

As plays the sun upon the glassy streams,
Twinkling another counterfeited beam,

So seems this gorgeous beauty to mine eyes.

Fain would I woo her, yet I dare not speak: 65

I'll call for pen and ink, and write my mind.

Fie, de la Pole! disable not thyself;

Hast not a tongue? is she not here?

Wilt thou be daunted at a woman's sight?

Ay, beauty's princely majesty is such, 70

Confounds the tongue and makes the senses rough.

53 *An*] F₁F₄. *And* F₂F₃.

56 *cygnets*] Hanmer. *signets* F₁. *cig-*
nets F₂F₃F₄.

57 *prisoner*] F₁F₂. *prisoners* F₃F₄.
prisoned Vaughan conj.

her wings] F₃F₄. *his wings* F₁. *hir*
wings F₂. *its wings* Vaughan conj.

59 [*She is going.*] Ff. She turns from
him, as going. Capell.

60 *pass*] *go* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

62 *streams*] *stream* Singer, ed. 2 (Collier
MS.).

63 *Twinkling...beam*] *Kindling...beam*
or *Twinkling in other.....beams*
Vaughan conj.

64 *seems*] *shines* or *flames* Vaughan

conj.

68 *tongue*] *tongue to speak*? Anon.
conj.

here] *heere*? F₁. *heere thy prisoner?*
F₂F₃F₄. *here alone*? Keightley
conj. *here in place* or *here beside*
thee Lettsom conj. *present here?*
Vaughan conj.

70 *Ay,*] *Oh,* Pope.

71 *Confounds*] *'Confounds* F₁.
makes the senses rough] Ff. *makes*
the senses crouch Hanmer. *make...*
crouch Capell. *makes the senses touch*
Jackson conj. *wakes the sense's*
touch Anon. MS. apud Singer. *mocks*
the sense of touch Collier, ed. 2 (Col-

Mar. Say, Earl of Suffolk,—if thy name be so—
What ransom must I pay before I pass?

For I perceive I am thy prisoner.

Suf. How canst thou tell she will deny thy suit, 75
Before thou make a trial of her love?

Mar. Why speak'st thou not? what ransom must I
pay?

Suf. She's beautiful and therefore to be woo'd;
She is a woman, therefore to be won.

Mar. Wilt thou accept of ransom? yea, or no. 80

Suf. Fond man, remember that thou hast a wife;
Then how can Margaret be thy paramour?

Mar. I were best to leave him, for he will not hear.

Suf. There all is marr'd; there lies a cooling card.

Mar. He talks at random; sure, the man is mad. 85

Suf. And yet a dispensation may be had.

Mar. And yet I would that you would answer me.

Suf. I'll win this Lady Margaret. For whom?
Why, for my king: tush, that's a wooden thing!

Mar. He talks of wood: it is some carpenter. 90

Suf. Yet so my fancy may be satisfied,
And peace established between these realms.
But there remains a scruple in that too;
For though her father be the King of Naples,
Duke of Anjou and Maine, yet is he poor, 95
And our nobility will scorn the match.

Mar. Hear ye, captain, are you not at leisure?

lier MS.). *makes the senses dull*
Keightley conj. *makes the senses*
nought Vaughan conj.

75 See note (vii).

77 *pay*] *pray* F₂.

83 *I were best to leave*] Ff. *'Twere best*
to leave Pope. *I were best leave* Ca-
pell.

85 *random*] F₄. *randon* F₁F₂. *ran-*
dome F₃.

89, 90 *tush...carpenter.*] Put in the mar-
gin by Pope.

95 *is he*] *he is* F₄.

97 *ye*] *ye me* Pope.

you] *ye* Pope.

Suf. It shall be so, disdain they ne'er so much:
Henry is youthful and will quickly yield.

Madam, I have a secret to reveal. 100

Mar. What though I be enthral'd? he seems a knight,
And will not any way dishonour me.

Suf. Lady, vouchsafe to listen what I say.

Mar. Perhaps I shall be rescued by the French;
And then I need not crave his courtesy. 105

Suf. Sweet madam, give me hearing in a cause—

Mar. Tush, women have been captivate ere now.

Suf. Lady, wherefore talk you so?

Mar. I cry you mercy, 'tis but Quid for Quo.

Suf. Say, gentle princess, would you not suppose 110
Your bondage happy, to be made a queen?

Mar. To be a queen in bondage is more vile
Than is a slave in base servility;
For princes should be free.

Suf. And so shall you,
If happy England's royal king be free. 115

Mar. Why, what concerns his freedom unto me?

Suf. I'll undertake to make thee Henry's queen,
To put a golden sceptre in thy hand
And set a precious crown upon thy head,
If thou wilt condescend to be my—

Mar. What? 120

Suf. His love.

Mar. I am unworthy to be Henry's wife.

101 *enthral'd?]* *enthrall'd?* Capell. *in-*
thral'd, F₁F₂. *inthrall'd*, F₃F₄.

108 *cause—]* Capell. *cause*. Ff.

108, 109 *Suf. Lady...Quo.]* Put in the
margin by Pope.

108 *Lady] Nay, hear me, lady* Capell.
Lady, pray tell me Collier (Collier
MS.). *Lady, sweet lady* Lettsom

conj. *I prithee, lady* Dyce (ed. 2).

110 *suppose] then ween* Collier MS.

112 *To be a queen...vile] A queen in*
bondage is more vile to me Collier
MS.

115 *free] true* Collier MS.

120 *to be my—]* F₁F₂F₃. *to my—* F₄.
to— Dyce, ed. 2 (Stevens conj.).

Suf. No, gentle madam; I unworthy am
To woo so fair a dame to be his wife,
And have no portion in the choice myself. 125
How say you, madam, are ye so content?

Mar. An if my father please, I am content.

Suf. Then call our captains and our colours forth.
And, madam, at your father's castle walls
We'll crave a parley, to confer with him. 130

A parley sounded. Enter REIGNIER on the walls.

See, Reignier, see, thy daughter prisoner!

Reig. To whom?

Suf. To me.

Reig. Suffolk, what remedy?

I am a soldier, and unapt to weep,
Or to exclaim on fortune's fickleness.

Suf. Yes, there is remedy enough, my lord: 135
Consent, and for thy honour give consent,
Thy daughter shall be wedded to my king;
Whom I with pain have woo'd and won thereto;
And this her easy-held imprisonment
Hath gain'd thy daughter princely liberty. 140

Reig. Speaks Suffolk as he thinks?

Suf. Fair Margaret knows
That Suffolk doth not flatter, face, or feign.

125 *And...myself*] [Aside] *And...thyself* Delius conj. [Aside] *And...myself* Vaughan conj.

126 *are ye*] F₁F₂. *are you* F₃F₄.

127 *An if*] Theobald. *And if* Ff.
am content] *give consent* Collier MS.

128 [To his troops; who come forward.
Capell.

131 SCENE V. Pope.

A parleysounded.] Trumpetsounds
a parley. Capell. Sound. Ff.
Enter...] Ff.

136, 137 *Consent, and...Thy*] *Consent*
and—for...consent—Thy Vaughan
conj.

139 *easy-held*] *easy-held* Rowe (ed. 2).
easy held Ff.

142 *or feign*] *nor feign* Capell conj.

Reig. Upon thy princely warrant, I descend
To give thee answer of thy just demand.

www.libtool.com.cn

[*Exit from the walls.*]

Suf. And here I will expect thy coming. 145

Trumpets sound. Enter REIGNIER, below.

Reig. Welcome, brave earl, into our territories :
Command in Anjou what your honour pleases.

Suf. Thanks, Reignier, happy for so sweet a child,
Fit to be made companion with a king :
What answer makes your grace unto my suit? 150

Reig. Since thou dost deign to woo her little worth
To be the princely bride of such a lord ;
Upon condition I may quietly
Enjoy mine own, the country Maine and Anjou,
Free from oppression or the stroke of war, 155
My daughter shall be Henry's, if he please.

Suf. That is her ransom ; I deliver her ;
And those two counties I will undertake
Your grace shall well and quietly enjoy.

Reig. And I again, in Henry's royal name, 160
As deputy unto that gracious king,
Give thee her hand, for sign of plighted faith.

Suf. Reignier of France, I give thee kingly thanks,
Because this is in traffic of a king.

[*Aside*] And yet, methinks, I could be well content 165

144 [Exit....] Capell. om. Ff.

145 *here*] *here, my lord*, Dyce (ed. 2).
coming] F₄. *comming* F₁F₂F₃.
coming, Reignier Capell. *coming*
down Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).
coming, king Anon. conj. *com-*
muning Anon. conj.

146 Enter Reignier, below.] Capell.
Enter Reignier. Ff.

148 *for*] in Pope.

149 *with*] of Pope.

154 *country*] Ff. *counties* Theobald
conj. *countries* Capell. *county*
Malone.

158 *counties*] *countries* Rowe (ed. 1).

164 *this*] it F₄.

165, 166 Marked 'Aside' by Rowe.

To be mine own attorney in this case.
 I'll over then to England with this news,
 And make this marriage to be solemnized.
 So farewell, Reignier: set this diamond safe
 In golden palaces, as it becomes. 170

Reig. I do embrace thee, as I would embrace
 The Christian prince, King Henry, were he here.

Mar. Farewell, my lord: good wishes, praise and
 prayers

Shall Suffolk ever have of Margaret. [Going.]

Suf. Farewell, sweet madam: but hark you, Margaret;
 No princely commendations to my king? 176

Mar. Such commendations as becomes a maid,
 A virgin and his servant, say to him.

Suf. Words sweetly placed and modestly directed.
 But, madam, I must trouble you again; 180
 No loving token to his majesty?

Mar. Yes, my good lord, a pure unspotted heart,
 Never yet taint with love, I send the king.

Suf. And this withal. [Kisses her.]

Mar. That for thyself: I will not so presume 185
 To send such peevish tokens to a king.

[*Exeunt Reignier and Margaret.*]

Suf. O, wert thou for myself! But, Suffolk, stay;
 Thou mayst not wander in that labyrinth;
 There Minotaurs and ugly treasons lurk.
 Solicit Henry with her wondrous praise: 190
 Bethink thee on her virtues that surmount,

172 [Exit. Anon. conj.]

174 [Going.] Shee is going. Ff.

175 *but* om. Pope.

[calling her back. Capell.

177 *becomes*] Ff. *become* Rowe.

179 *modestly*] *modestie* F₁.

184 [Kisses her.] F₄. Kisse her. F₁F₂,
 F₃.

185 *Mar.*] Wark. F₄.

186 [Exeunt...] Capell. om. Ff. Exit.
 Anon. conj.]

And natural graces that extinguish art ;
 Repeat their semblance often on the seas,
 That, when thou comest to kneel at Henry's feet, 194
 Thou mayst bereave him of his wits with wonder. [*Exit.*]

SCENE IV. *Camp of the DUKE OF YORK in Anjou.*

Enter YORK, WARWICK, and others.

York. Bring forth that sorceress condemn'd to burn.

Enter LA PUCELLE, guarded, and a Shepherd.

Shep. Ah, Joan, this kills thy father's heart outright !
 Have I sought every country far and near,
 And, now it is my chance to find thee out,
 Must I behold thy timeless cruel death ? 5

Ah, Joan, sweet daughter Joan, I'll die with thee !

Puc. Decrepit miser ! base ignoble wretch !
 I am descended of a gentler blood :
 Thou art no father nor no friend of mine.

Shep. Out, out ! My lords, an please you, 'tis not so ;
 I did beget her, all the parish knows : 11
 Her mother liveth yet, can testify

192 *And natural*] *Maid-natural* Perring conj.

And] Capell. *Mad* F₁. *Made* F₂, F₃F₄. *Her* Pope. *'Mid* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier conj.). *Man*: Jackson conj. *Made* Barry conj. *Mild* Vaughan conj.

193 *their*] *her* Vaughan conj.

195 [*Exit.*] Ff. *Ereunt* Rowe.

SCENE IV.] Capell. SCENE VI. Pope. om. Ff.

Camp...Anjou.] Capell.

Enter.....] Capell. *Enter Yorke, Warwicke, Shepheard, Pucell.* Ff.

2 *Enter La Pucelle...*] *Enter Pucelle, guarded ; Shepheard, her Father, with her.* Capell.

5 *timeless cruel*] *timeless-cruel* S. Walker conj.

death] *Death!* Rowe. *death*: Ff.

6 *Joan, I'll*] *Jone, Ile* F₁. *Ile* F₂. *I'll* F₃F₄. *I will* Rowe.

10 *an*] Pope. *and* Ff. *an't* Anon. conj.

She was the first fruit of my bachelorship.

War. Graceless! wilt thou deny thy parentage?

York. This argues what her kind of life hath been,
Wicked and vile; and so her death concludes. 16

Shep. Fie, Joan, that thou wilt be so obstacle!
God knows thou art a collop of my flesh;
And for thy sake have I shed many a tear:
Deny me not, I prithee, gentle Joan. 20

Puc. Peasant, avaunt! You have suborn'd this man,
Of purpose to obscure my noble birth.

Shep. 'Tis true, I gave a noble to the priest
The morn that I was wedded to her mother.
Kneel down and take my blessing, good my girl. 25
Wilt thou not stoop? Now cursed be the time
Of thy nativity! I would the milk
Thy mother gave thee when thou suck'dst her breast,
Had been a little ratsbane for thy sake!
Or else, when thou didst keep my lambs a-field, 30
I wish some ravenous wolf had eaten thee!
Dost thou deny thy father, cursed drab?
O, burn her, burn her! hanging is too good. [*Exit.*]

York. Take her away; for she hath lived too long,
To fill the world with vicious qualities. 35

Puc. First, let me tell you whom you have condemn'd:
Not me begotten of a shepherd swain,
But issued from the progeny of kings;
Virtuous and holy; chosen from above,
By inspiration of celestial grace, 40

13 *first fruit*] *first-fruits* Capell conj.

17 *obstacle*] *obstinate* S. Walker conj.

20 *prithee*] *prythes* F₁F₂. *pray thee* F₃

F₄.

27 *the*] *i the* Vaughan conj.

28 *suck'dst*] *suck'st* F₁.

30 *my*] *thy* F₄.

a-field] F₁. *a field* F₂F₃. *afield* F₄.

35 *fill*] *file* Vaughan conj.

37 *Not me*] *Me, not* Anon. conj.

me begotten] *one begotten* Collier
(Malone conj.). *mean-begotten* Anon.
conj.

To work exceeding miracles on earth.
 I never had to do with wicked spirits:
 But you, that are polluted with your lusts,
 Stain'd with the guiltless blood of innocents,
 Corrupt and tainted with a thousand vices, 45
 Because you want the grace that others have,
 You judge it straight a thing impossible
 To compass wonders but by help of devils.
 No, misconceived! Joan of Arc hath been
 A virgin from her tender infancy, 50
 Chaste and immaculate in very thought;
 Whose maiden blood, thus rigorously effused,
 Will cry for vengeance at the gates of heaven.

York. Ay, ay: away with her to execution!

War. And hark ye, sirs; because she is a maid, 55
 Spare for no faggots, let there be enow:
 Place barrels of pitch upon the fatal stake,
 That so her torture may be shortened.

Puc. Will nothing turn your unrelenting hearts?
 Then, Joan, discover thine infirmity, 60
 That warranteth by law to be thy privilege.
 I am with child, ye bloody homicides:
 Murder not then the fruit within my womb,
 Although ye hale me to a violent death.

York. Now heaven forfend! the holy maid with child!

War. The greatest miracle that e'er ye wrought: 66
 Is all your strict preciseness come to this?

48 *help] the help* F₄.

49 *No, misconceived!*] Steevens. *No misconceyued*, F₁. *No misconceived*, F₂, F₃. *No, misconceived* F₄. *No, misconceivers*; Capell. *No, misconceited!* Vaughan conj.

Arc] Rowe. *Aire* Ff.

52 *maiden blood]* Hyphened in Ff.

54 *Ay.....execution.]* As two lines, S.

Walker conj.

56 *enow] enough* Steevens (1778).

60 *discover]* F₃F₄. *discovet* F₁F₂.

61 *warranteth]* *warrants* S. Walker conj. *warrant hath* Vaughan conj. *to be]* om. Hanmer.

63 *Murder]* Johnson. *Murther* Ff.

66 *ye]* *you* Rowe.

York. She and the Dauphin have been juggling :
I did imagine what would be her refuge.

War. Well, go to ; we'll have no bastards live ; 70
Especially since Charles must father it.

Puc. You are deceived ; my child is none of his :
It was Alençon that enjoy'd my love.

York. Alençon ! that notorious Machiavel !
It dies, an if it had a thousand lives. 75

Puc. O, give me leave, I have deluded you :
'Twas neither Charles nor yet the duke I named,
But Reignier, king of Naples, that prevail'd.

War. A married man ! that's most intolerable.

York. Why, here's a girl ! I think she knows not well,
There were so many, whom she may accuse. 81

War. It's sign she hath been liberal and free.

York. And yet, forsooth, she is a virgin pure.
Strumpet, thy words condemn thy brat and thee :
Use no entreaty, for it is in vain. 85

Puc. Then lead me hence ; with whom I leave my
curse :

May never glorious sun reflex his beams
Upon the country where you make abode ;
But darkness and the gloomy shade of death
Environ you, till mischief and despair 90
Drive you to break your necks or hang yourselves !

[*Exit, guarded.*]

York. Break thou in pieces and consume to ashes,
Thou foul accursed 'minister of hell !

70 *Well*] *Well, well* Capell.

we'll] F_1 . *we will* $F_2F_3F_4$.

74 *Alençon...Machiavel* [] Put in the
margin by Pope.

Machiavel] Pope. *Macheville* $F_1F_2F_3$.

Matchevile F_4 .

75 *an if*] Theobald. *and if* Ff.

82 *sign*] *a sign* F_3F_4 .

hath] F_1 . *had* $F_2F_3F_4$.

83 *forsooth*] *fore seeth* F_4 .

87 *reflex*] *reflect* Warburton.

91 [*Exit, guarded.*] Theobald. *Exit.*

Ff.

Enter CARDINAL BEAUFORT, Bishop of Winchester, *attended.*

Car. Lord regent, I do greet your excellence
 With letters of commission from the king. 95
 For know, my lords, the states of Christendom,
 Moved with remorse of these outrageous broils,
 Have earnestly implored a general peace
 Betwixt our nation and the aspiring French;
 And here at hand the Dauphin and his train 100
 Approacheth, to confer about some matter.

York. Is all our travail turn'd to this effect?
 After the slaughter of so many peers,
 So many captains, gentlemen and soldiers,
 That in this quarrel have been overthrown, 105
 And sold their bodies for their country's benefit,
 Shall we at last conclude effeminate peace?
 Have we not lost most part of all the towns,
 By treason, falsehood and by treachery,
 Our great progenitors had conquered? 110
 O, Warwick, Warwick! I foresee with grief
 The utter loss of all the realm of France.

War. Be patient, York: if we conclude a peace,
 It shall be with such strict and severe covenants
 As little shall the Frenchmen gain thereby. 115

Enter CHARLES, ALENÇON, Bastard, REIGNIER, *and others.*

Char. Since, lords of England, it is thus agreed

94 SCENE VII. Pope.

Enter Cardinal...] Enter Cardinal.
 Ff (after line 91). Enter Cardinal
 Beaufort, attended. Capell.

99 *aspiring*] *respiring* Warburton.

100, 101 *here...Approacheth*] *see...Approaching* Pope.

101 *maiter*] *F₁. matters F₂F₃F₄.*

102 *travail*] *travell F₁F₂F₃. travel F₄.
 effect f] Rowe. effect, Ff.*

114 *severe*] *several* Vaughan conj.

116 ...Bastard...] Ff. om. Capell.
 ...and others] Capell. om. Ff.

That peaceful truce shall be proclaim'd in France,
 We come to be informed by yourselves
 What the conditions of that league must be.

York. Speak, Winchester; for boiling choler chokes
 The hollow passage of my poison'd voice, 121
 By sight of these our baleful enemies.

Car. Charles, and the rest, it is enacted thus:
 That, in regard King Henry gives consent,
 Of mere compassion and of lenity, 125
 To ease your country of distressful war,
 And suffer you to breathe in fruitful peace,
 You shall become true liegemen to his crown:
 And, Charles, upon condition thou wilt swear
 To pay him tribute, and submit thyself, 130
 Thou shalt be placed as viceroy under him,
 And still enjoy thy regal dignity.

Alen. Must he be then as shadow of himself?
 Adorn his temples with a coronet,
 And yet, in substance and authority, 135
 Retain but privilege of a private man?
 This proffer is absurd and reasonless.

Char. 'Tis known already that I am possess'd
 With more than half the Gallian territories,
 And therein revered for their lawful king: 140
 Shall I, for lucre of the rest unvanquish'd,
 Detract so much from that prerogative,
 As to be call'd but viceroy of the whole?
 No, lord ambassador, I'll rather keep
 That which I have than, coveting for more, 145
 Be cast from possibility of all.

York. Insulting Charles! hast thou by secret means

118 *We]* *I* Capell.

121 *poison'd]* *prison'd* Theobald. See
 note (VIII).

122 *these]* *those* F₃F₄.

133 *as]* *a* F₄.

139 *With]* *Of* Rowe.

Used intercession to obtain a league,
 And, now the matter grows to compromise,
 Stand'st thou aloof upon comparison? 150

Either accept the title thou usurp'st,
 Of benefit proceeding from our king
 And not of any challenge of desert,
 Or we will plague thee with incessant wars.

Reig. My lord, you do not well in obstinacy 155
 To cavil in the course of this contract :
 If once it be neglected, ten to one
 We shall not find like opportunity.

Alen. To say the truth, it is your policy 160
 To save your subjects from such massacre
 And ruthless slaughters, as are daily seen,
 By our proceeding in hostility;
 And therefore take this compact of a truce,
 Although you break it when your pleasure serves.

War. How say'st thou, Charles? shall our condition
 stand? 165

Char. It shall;
 Only reserved, you claim no interest
 In any of our towns of garrison.

York. Then swear allegiance to his majesty, 170
 As thou art knight, never to disobey
 Nor be rebellious to the crown of England,
 Thou, nor thy nobles, to the crown of England.

148 *league*] *truce* or *peace* Keightley 159—164 [Aside to the Dauphin. Pope.
 conj. 163 *compact*] *contract* F₃F₄.

149 *compromise*] Rowe. *compremise* 165 *How.....stand?*] As in Pope: two
 Ff. lines in Ff.

150 *comparison?*] Rowe. *comparison.* 166, 167 *It...interest*] One line, Vaughan
 Ff. *comparisons.* Collier MS. conj.

155—158 [To the Dauphin aside. Han- 172 [Charles and the rest give tokens
 mer. of fealty. Johnson.

158 *like*] *the like* F₄.

So, now dismiss your army when ye please ;
 Hang up your ensigns, let your drums be still,
 For here we entertain a solemn peace. [*Exeunt.* 175

SCENE V. *London. The royal palace.*

*Enter SUFFOLK in conference with the KING, GLOUCESTER
 and EXETER.*

King. Your wondrous rare description, noble earl,
 Of beauteous Margaret hath astonish'd me :
 Her virtues graced with external gifts
 Do breed love's settled passions in my heart :
 And like as rigour of tempestuous gusts 5
 Provokes the mightiest hulk against the tide,
 So am I driven by breath of her renown,
 Either to suffer shipwreck or arrive
 Where I may have fruition of her love.
Suf. Tush, my good lord, this superficial tale 10
 Is but a preface of her worthy praise ;
 The chief perfections of that lovely dame,
 Had I sufficient skill to utter them,
 Would make a volume of enticing lines,
 Able to ravish any dull conceit : 15
 And, which is more, she is not so divine,
 So full-replete with choice of all delights,
 But with as humble lowliness of mind
 She is content to be at your command ;

173 *ye]* you F₄.

175 *entertain]* *enterchange* Collier MS.

SCENE V.] Capell. SCENE VIII. Pope.

Actus Quintus. F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

London. The royal palace.] Changes
 to England. Pope. London. A room
 in the palace. Capell.

Enter...] Ff. Enter King Henry,

and Suffolk, conferring ; Gloster,
 and Exeter, after them. Capell.

3 *graced]* *grac'd* F₄.

6 *Provokes]* *Propels* Keightley conj.

11 *of her]* F₁F₂. to her F₃F₄.

17 *full-replete]* Hyphenated by Dyce.

18 *as]* a F₄.

Command, I mean, of virtuous chaste intents, 20
To love and honour Henry as her lord.

King. And otherwise will Henry ne'er presume.
Therefore, my lord protector, give consent
That Margaret may be England's royal queen.

Glou. So should I give consent to flatter sin. 25
You know, my lord, your highness is betroth'd
Unto another lady of esteem:

How shall we then dispense with that contract,
And not deface your honour with reproach?

Suf. As doth a ruler with unlawful oaths; 30
Or one that, at a triumph having vow'd
To try his strength, forsaketh yet the lists
By reason of his adversary's odds:
A poor earl's daughter is unequal odds,
And therefore may be broke without offence. 35

Glou. Why, what, I pray, is Margaret more than that?
Her father is no better than an earl,
Although in glorious titles he excel.

Suf. Yes, my lord, her father is a king,
The King of Naples and Jerusalem; 40
And of such great authority in France,
As his alliance will confirm our peace,
And keep the Frenchmen in allegiance.

Glou. And so the Earl of Armagnac may do,
Because he is near kinsman unto Charles. 45

Exe. Beside, his wealth doth warrant a liberal dower,
Where Reignier sooner will receive than give.

Suf. A dower, my lords! disgrace not so your king,

28 *that contract*] *the contract* Rowe (ed. 2).

36 *And*] *It* Vaughan conj.

36 *pray,*] *pray?* Vaughan conj.

39 *Yes, my lord*] *F*₁. *Yes my good lord*
*F*₂*F*₃*F*₄. *Yes, yes, my lord* or *Why,*

yes, my lord Anon. conj. *O, yes, my lord* Dyce (ed. 2). *Yes, my lord—*

more Vaughan conj.

42 *As*] *That* Rowe.

46 *warrant a*] *F*₁. *warrant* *F*₂*F*₃*F*₄.

47 *Where*] *While* Pope.

That he should be so abject, base and poor,
 To choose for wealth and not for perfect love. 50
 Henry is able to enrich his queen,
 And not to seek a queen to make him rich :
 So worthless peasants bargain for their wives,
 As market-men for oxen, sheep, or horse.
 Marriage is a matter of more worth 55
 Than to be dealt in by attorneyship ;
 Not whom we will, but whom his grace affects,
 Must be companion of his nuptial bed :
 And therefore, lords, since he affects her most,
 It most of all these reasons bindeth us, 60
 In our opinions she should be preferr'd.
 For what is wedlock forced but a hell,
 An age of discord and continual strife ?
 Whereas the contrary bringeth bliss,
 And is a pattern of celestial peace. 65
 Whom should we match with Henry, being a king,
 But Margaret, that is daughter to a king ?
 Her peerless feature, joined with her birth,
 Approves her fit for none but for a king :
 Her valiant courage and undaunted spirit, 70
 More than in women commonly is seen,
 Will answer our hope in issue of a king ;
 For Henry, son unto a conqueror,
 Is likely to beget more conquerors,
 If with a lady of so high resolve 75
 As is fair Margaret he be link'd in love.
 Then yield, my lords ; and here conclude with me
 That Margaret shall be queen, and none but she.

55 *Marriage*] F₁. *But marriage* F₂F₃F₄.

60 *It most*] Rowe. *Most* Ff. *The most*
Keightley (Collier MS.).

64 *bringeth*] F₁. *bringeth forth* F₂F₃F₄.

71 *women*] *woman* Rowe (ed. 2).

72 *Will answer*] Ff. *Answer* Pope. *will*
Answer Capell.

our] om. Hudson (Steevens conj.).

King. Whether it be through force of your report,
 My noble Lord of Suffolk, or for that 80
 My tender youth was never yet attain'd
 With any passion of inflaming love,
 I cannot tell; but this I am assured,
 I feel such sharp dissension in my breast,
 Such fierce alarums both of hope and fear, 85
 As I am sick with working of my thoughts.
 Take, therefore, shipping; post, my lord, to France;
 Agree to any covenants, and procure
 That Lady Margaret do vouchsafe to come
 To cross the seas to England, and be crown'd 90
 King Henry's faithful and anointed queen:
 For your expenses and sufficient charge,
 Among the people gather up a tenth.
 Be gone, I say; for, till you do return,
 I rest perplexed with a thousand cares. 95
 And you, good uncle, banish all offence:
 If you do censure me by what you were,
 Not what you are, I know it will excuse
 This sudden execution of my will.
 And so, conduct me where, from company, 100
 I may revolve and ruminare my grief. [*Exit.*
Glou. Ay, grief, I fear me, both at first and last.

[*Exeunt Gloucester and Exeter.*]

Suf. Thus Suffolk hath prevail'd; and thus he goes,
 As did the youthful Paris once to Greece,
 With hope to find the like event in love, 105
 But prosper better than the Trojan did.
 Margaret shall now be queen, and rule the king;
 But I will rule both her, the king and realm. [*Exit.*

82 *love*] *Ious* F₁.

90 *To cross*] *Across* Hudson (S. Walker
 conj.).

102 [*Exeunt...*] Capell. *Exit* Glouces-
 ter. Ff.

106 *Trojan*] *Troian* F₁.

NOTES.

NOTE I.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ. Mr G. R. French writes to us: 'In 1 Henry VI., it is generally said of the Duke of York: "Richard Plantagenet, *eldest* son of Richard, late Earl of Cambridge." But he was an *only* son. "Eldest" should therefore be left out.'

We have made other changes in the 'Dramatis Personæ' of the following plays, in accordance with suggestions from Mr French, to whom we beg to repeat our acknowledgements.

[Mr French afterwards embodied a great deal of valuable information on the historical characters in Shakespeare's English plays in a volume called *Shakespeareana Genealogica*, which has been treated with undeserved neglect. W. A. W.]

NOTE II.

i. 1. 60. The word Rheims, spelt 'Rheimes' in the Folios, must be pronounced as a disyllable, otherwise the metre halts. Capell's interpolation, the credit of which is claimed as usual by Steevens, derives some support from the fact that *Roan*, i.e. *Rouen*, is mentioned by Gloucester in line 65. Possibly we should read *Rheimes* for *Roan* in the latter passage.

NOTE III.

i. 3. 59. The insertion made by the Editor of the second Folio for the sake of the metre shows that a change had already taken place in the pronunciation of the word 'Mayor,' which in Shakespeare's day was sometimes written and pronounced 'Major.' See 1 *Henry IV.* II. 4. 478: 'I deny your major; if you will deny the Sheriff, so; let him enter.' In line 85 of the present scene, however, the 'Maïor' of the first Folio becomes 'Major' in the second—probably from inadvertence.

NOTE IV.
www.libtoof.com.cn

i. 4. 16—18. We leave this corrupt passage as it stands in the first Folio. In the second Folio, which is followed as usual by the third and fourth, it is thus given :

‘And fully even these three dayes have I watcht,
If I could see them. Now Boy doe thou watch,
For I can stay no longer.’

Pope omits the words ‘For...longer.’

Malone has :

‘And even these three days have I watched,
If I could see them.
Now do thou watch, for I can stay no longer.’

Mr Collier :

‘And even these three days have I watch’d, if I
Could see them.
Now, do thou watch, for I can stay no longer.’

Mr Kinnear conjectures :

Aim’d fully even ; these three days &c.

reading what follows with the second Folio.

NOTE V.

III. 2. 18. All editors previous to Capell, except Hanmer, follow the Folios in making Reignier speak without having brought him on the stage, and all subsequent editors follow Capell in giving Reignier’s speeches to Alençon, without noting that he had made any change. Hanmer altered Alençon to Reignier, in the stage-direction, line 18, and Reignier to Alençon in the stage-direction, line 41.

NOTE VI.

v. 1. 17. However plausible the emendation *kin* may seem, we leave *knit*, the reading of the Folios, as the conceit suggested by the ‘knot of amity,’ in the preceding line, is not alien from the author’s manner. Mr Collier, in a note to his second edition, says : “Mr Singer

is obliged to admit that it has been proposed to read 'near *kin* to Charles.' Where has it been so proposed? In the corrected Folio, 1632, which Mr Singer has always such a wish to ignore. The emendation was never suggested (not even in Mr Singer's corrected Folio, 1632) until it appeared in our volume of 'Notes and emendations,' p. 277."

In fact, it was first suggested by Pope, and adopted by Theobald, Hanmer, Warburton, and Johnson. Capell restored *knit*, in which he was followed by Steevens and Malone.

NOTE VII.

v. 3. 75. This and other speeches which follow are marked by Pope and subsequent editors as spoken aside, but this is so obvious that we have not thought it necessary to encumber our pages with marginal directions.

NOTE VIII.

v. 4. 121. Malone, followed by Singer, Mr Collier, and Herr Delius, attributes the emendation 'prison'd' for 'poison'd' to Pope. Mr Staunton rightly assigns it to Theobald.

www.libtool.com.cn

THE SECOND PART
OF
KING HENRY VI.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ¹.

KING HENRY the Sixth.
HUMPHREY, Duke of Gloucester, his uncle.
CARDINAL BEAUFORT, Bishop of Winchester, great-uncle to the King.
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, Duke of York.
EDWARD and RICHARD, his sons.
DUKE OF SOMERSET.
DUKE OF SUFFOLK.
DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.
LORD CLIFFORD.
Young CLIFFORD, his son.
EARL OF SALISBURY.
EARL OF WARWICK.
LORD SCALES.
LORD SAY.
SIR HUMPHREY STAFFORD, and WILLIAM STAFFORD, his brother.
SIR JOHN STANLEY.
VAUX.
MATTHEW GOFFE².
A Sea-captain, Master, and Master's-Mate, and WALTER WHITMORE
Two Gentlemen, prisoners with Suffolk.
JOHN HUME and JOHN SOUTHWELL, priests.
BOLINGBROKE, a conjurer.
THOMAS HORNER, an armourer. PETER, his man.
Clerk of Chatham. Mayor of Saint Alban's.
SIMPCOX, an impostor.
ALEXANDER IDEN, a Kentish gentleman.
JACK CADE, a rebel.
GEORGE BEVIS, JOHN HOLLAND, DICK the butcher, SMITH the weaver,
MICHAEL, &c., followers of Cade.
Two Murderers.
MARGARET, Queen to King Henry.
ELEANOR, Duchess of Gloucester.
MARGARET JOURDAIN, a witch.
Wife to Simpcox.

Lords, Ladies, and Attendants, Petitioners, Aldermen, a Herald, a Beadle,
Sheriff, and Officers, Citizens, 'Prentices, Falconers, Guards, Soldiers,
Messengers, &c.

A Spirit.

SCENE : *England.*

¹ DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.] First given imperfectly by Rowe.

² MATTHEW GOFFE.] Edd. (French conj.) om. Rowe.

THE SECOND PART
OF
KING HENRY VI.

ACT I.

SCENE I. *London. The palace.*

Flourish of trumpets: then hautboys. Enter, THE KING, HUMPHREY, Duke of Gloucester, SALISBURY, WARWICK, and CARDINAL BEAUFORT, on the one side; THE QUEEN, SUFFOLK, YORK, SOMERSET, and BUCKINGHAM, on the other.

Suf. As by your high imperial majesty
I had in charge at my depart for France,
As procurator to your excellence,
To marry Princess Margaret for your grace,
So, in the famous ancient city Tours, 5
In presence of the Kings of France and Sicil,
The Dukes of Orleans, Calaber, Bretagne and Alençon,
Seven earls, twelve barons, and twenty reverend bishops,
I have perform'd my task and was espoused :

London.] Capell.
The palace.] Scene, the Palace.
Theobald.

¹ *by]* from Lettsom conj.

² *for]* F₁F₂ from F₃F₄.

⁷ *Calaber, Bretagne and]* Bretagne
Hanmer.

and] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

⁹ *have perform'd]* *did perform* Hudson
(Lettsom conj.), from (Qq).

And humbly now upon my bended knee, 10
 In sight of England and her lordly peers,
 Deliver up my title in the queen
 To your most gracious hands, that are the substance
 Of that great shadow I did represent;
 The happiest gift that ever marquess gave, 15
 The fairest queen that ever king received.

King. Suffolk, arise. Welcome, Queen Margaret:
 I can express no kinder sign of love
 Than this kind kiss. O Lord, that lends me life,
 Lend me a heart replete with thankfulness! 20
 For Thou hast given me in this beauteous face
 A world of earthly blessings to my soul,
 If sympathy of love unite our thoughts.

Queen. Great King of England and my gracious lord,
 The mutual conference that my mind hath had, 25
 By day, by night, waking and in my dreams,
 In courtly company or at my beads,
 With you, mine alder-liefest sovereign,
 Makes me the bolder to salute my king
 With ruder terms, such as my wit affords 30
 And over-joy of heart doth minister.

King. Her sight did ravish; but her grace in speech,
 Her words y-clad with wisdom's majesty,
 Makes me from wondering fall to weeping joys;
 Such is the fulness of my heart's content. 35
 Lords, with one cheerful voice welcome my love.

All [kneeling]. Long live Queen Margaret, England's
 happiness!

13 *To...are]* *Unto your excellence, that art Seymour conj., from (Qq). hands]* F₁. *hand* F₂F₃F₄.

19 *lends]* *lend'st* Rowe (ed. 2).

28 *alder-liefest]* *Alder liefest* (in italics) Ff. *aller-liefest* Malone conj.

34 *Makes]* F₁F₂. *Make* F₃F₄. *wondering fall to weeping]* *Wondring, fall to Weeping* F₁F₂. *wondring, fall to weeping* F₃F₄.

37 All [kneeling]. All kneel. Ff.

Queen. We thank you all. [Flourish.]

Suff. My lord protector, so it please your grace,
Here are the articles of contracted peace 40
Between our sovereign and the French king Charles,
For eighteen months concluded by consent.

Glow. [Reads] 'Imprimis, It is agreed between the French king Charles and William de la Pole, Marquess of Suffolk, ambassador for Henry King of England, that the said Henry shall espouse the Lady Margaret, daughter unto Reignier King of Naples, Sicilia and Jerusalem, and crown her Queen of England ere the thirtieth of May next ensuing. Item, that the duchy of Anjou and the county of Maine shall be released and delivered to the king her father—'

[Lets the paper fall.]

King. Uncle, how now!

Glow. Pardon me, gracious lord; 50
Some sudden qualm hath struck me at the heart,
And dimm'd mine eyes, that I can read no further.

King. Uncle of Winchester, I pray, read on.

Car. [Reads] 'Item, It is further agreed between them, that the duchies of Anjou and Maine shall be released and delivered over to the king her father, and she sent over of the King of England's own proper cost and charges, without having any dowry.'

King. They please us well. Lord marquess, kneel
down:

We here create thee the first duke of Suffolk,
And gird thee with the sword. Cousin of York, 60
We here discharge your grace from being regent

46 unto] to (Qq) Capell.

47 thirtieth] thirteenth Rowe.

48 duchy...county of Maine] duchies of Anjou and Maine Capell, from (Qq).

49 father—] Malone. father. Ff. fa. (Q₁Q₂). fa— (Q₃) Capell. [Lets...fall.] Duke Humphrey lets it fall (Qq). om. Ff.

51 af] to F₄.

54 [Reads] om. Ff. [taking the paper from Glo. and reading. Capell.

It is...them,] Omitted by Pope.

55 duchies] Dutchesse F₁F₂F₃. Dutchesse F₄.

57 any] om. Malone.

58 kneel] kneel you Pope. kneel thee Keightley (Collier MS.).

60 gird] girt (Qq) Ff.

I' the parts of France, till term of eighteen months
 Be full expired. Thanks, uncle Winchester,
 Gloucester, York, Buckingham, Somerset,
 Salisbury, and Warwick ;

65

We thank you all for this great favour done,
 In entertainment to my princely queen.
 Come, let us in, and with all speed provide
 To see her coronation be perform'd.

[*Exeunt King, Queen, and Suffolk.*]

Glou. Brave peers of England, pillars of the state, 70

To you Duke Humphrey must unload his grief,
 Your grief, the common grief of all the land.

What! did my brother Henry spend his youth,
 His valour, coin, and people, in the wars?

Did he so often lodge in open field,

75

In winter's cold and summer's parching heat,
 To conquer France, his true inheritance?

And did my brother Bedford toil his wits,
 To keep by policy what Henry got?

Have you yourselves, Somerset, Buckingham,
 Brave York, Salisbury, and victorious Warwick,
 Received deep scars in France and Normandy?

80

Or hath mine uncle Beaufort and myself,
 With all the learned council of the realm,

Studied so long, sat in the council-house

85

Early and late, debating to and fro

How France and Frenchmen might be kept in awe,

62 *I' the*] *I' th* F₁F₂F₃. *I' th'* F₄. in
the (Qq) Capell. See note (1).

64 *Somerset*] F₁. and *Somerset* F₂F₃,
 F₄.

66 *all for*] *for all* (Q₃) and Warburton.

69 [*Exeunt*...] F₂F₃F₄. *Erit*... F₁.
Manet the rest. F₁. *Manent the*
rest. F₂F₃F₄.

70 SCENE II. Pope.

79 *got*?] Pope (ed. 2). *got*: FfQ.

82 *Normandy*?] Theobald. *Norman-*
die: Ff.

83 *Beaufort*] *Beauford* Ff. *Bedford*
 Rowe.

87 *awe*,] *awe*? Rowe (ed. 2).

And had his highness in his infancy
 Crowned in Paris in despite of foes?
 And shall these labours and these honours die? 90
 Shall Henry's conquest, Bedford's vigilance,
 Your deeds of war and all our counsel die?
 O peers of England, shameful is this league!
 Fatal this marriage, cancelling your fame,
 Blotting your names from books of memory, 95
 Razing the characters of your renown,
 Defacing monuments of conquer'd France,
 Undoing all, as all had never been!

Car. Nephew, what means this passionate discourse,
 This peroration with such circumstance? 100
 For France, 'tis ours; and we will keep it still.

Glou. Ay, uncle, we will keep it, if we can;
 But now it is impossible we should:
 Suffolk, the new-made duke that rules the roast,
 Hath given the duchy of Anjou and Maine 105
 Unto the poor King Reignier, whose large style
 Agrees not with the leanness of his purse.

Sal. Now, by the death of Him that died for all,
 These counties were the keys of Normandy.
 But wherefore weeps Warwick, my valiant son? 110

War. For grief that they are past recovery:
 For, were there hope to conquer them again,
 My sword should shed hot blood, mine eyes no tears.
 Anjou and Maine! myself did win them both;
 Those provinces these arms of mine did conquer: 115

88, 89 *And had.....Crowned*] Grant
 White. *And hath...Crowned* F₁F₂
 F₃. *And hath...Crown'd* F₄. *And*
was...Crowned Rowe. *Or hath...Been*
crown'd Capell. *And hath...Been*
crown'd Malone.

89 *foes?*] Rowe. *foes*, Ff.
 97 *Defacing*] *Reversing* (Qq) Capell.
 100 *peroration*] *preroration* F₁.
 104 *roast*] Pope. *rost* Ff. *roost* Grant
 White.
 105 *duchy*] *dutchies* Capell.

And are the cities, that I got with wounds,
 Deliver'd up again with peaceful words?
 Mort Dieu!

York. For Suffolk's duke, may he be suffocate,
 That dims the honour of this warlike isle! 120
 France should have torn and rent my very heart,
 Before I would have yielded to this league.
 I never read but England's kings have had
 Large sums of gold and dowries with their wives;
 And our King Henry gives away his own, 125
 To match with her that brings no vantages.

Glou. A proper jest, and never heard before,
 That Suffolk should demand a whole fifteenth
 For costs and charges in transporting her!
 She should have stay'd in France and starved in France,
 Before— 131

Car. My lord of Gloucester, now ye grow too hot:
 It was the pleasure of my lord the king.

Glou. My lord of Winchester, I know your mind;
 'Tis not my speeches that you do dislike, 135
 But 'tis my presence that doth trouble ye.
 Rancour will out: proud prelate, in thy face
 I see thy fury: if I longer stay,
 We shall begin our ancient bickerings.
 Lordings, farewell; and say, when I am gone, 140
 I prophesied France will be lost ere long. [*Exit.*]

Car. So, there goes our protector in a rage.
 'Tis known to you he is mine enemy,
 Nay, more, an enemy unto you all,
 And no great friend, I fear me, to the king. 145
 Consider, lords, he is the next of blood,

116 *I] are F₄.*
wounds] swords Collier conj., from
 (Qq).

118 *Mort Dieu I] om.* Pope.

119, 120 *For...isle I]* Put in the margin
 by Pope.

130 *starved] sterv'd F₁F₂.* *starv'd F₃F₄.*

136 *ye] you* Rowe.

And heir apparent to the English crown:
 Had Henry got an empire by his marriage,
 And all the wealthy kingdoms of the west,
 There's reason he should be displeas'd at it. 150
 Look to it, lords; let not his smoothing words
 Bewitch your hearts; be wise and circumspect.
 What though the common people favour him,
 Calling him 'Humphrey, the good Duke of Gloucester,'
 Clapping their hands, and crying with loud voice, 155
 'Jesu maintain your royal excellence!'
 With 'God preserve the good Duke Humphrey!'
 I fear me, lords, for all this flattering gloss,
 He will be found a dangerous protector.

Buck. Why should he, then, protect our sovereign,
 He being of age to govern of himself? 161
 Cousin of Somerset, join you with me,
 And all together, with the Duke of Suffolk,
 We'll quickly hoise Duke Humphrey from his seat.

Car. This weighty business will not brook delay; 165
 I'll to the Duke of Suffolk presently. [*Exit.*]

Som. Cousin of Buckingham, though Humphrey's pride
 And greatness of his place be grief to us,
 Yet let us watch the haughty cardinal:
 His insolence is more intolerable 170
 Than all the princes in the land beside:
 If Gloucester be displaced, he'll be protector.

Buck. Or thou or I, Somerset, will be protector,

149 *west*] *east* Warburton.

160, 161 *sovereign,.....himself?*] *Souveraigne?*...*himselfe.* Ff.

162 *of*] *om.* F₄.

163 *all together*] Rowe. *altogether* Ff.

164 *We 'll*] *We* Capell (corrected in *Errata*).

hoise] *hoyse* Ff. *heaus* (Qq). *hoist*

Theobald.

169 *us*] *us all* F₄.

171 *princes*] *princes'* Vaughan conj.

173 *Or thou or I, Somerset,*] *Or Somerset or I* Pope. *Thou, or I, Somerset,* Capell.

protector] F₂F₃F₄. *Protectors* F₁.

Despite Duke Humphrey or the cardinal.

[*Exeunt Buckingham and Somerset.*

Sol. Pride went before, ambition follows him. 175

While these do labour for their own preferment,
Behoves it us to labour for the realm.

I never saw but Humphrey Duke of Gloucester
Did bear him like a noble gentleman.

Oft have I seen the haughty cardinal, 180

More like a soldier than a man o' the church,
As stout and proud as he were lord of all,
Swear like a ruffian, and demean himself
Unlike the ruler of a commonweal.

Warwick, my son, the comfort of my age, 185

Thy deeds, thy plainness, and thy housekeeping,
Hath won the greatest favour of the commons,
Excepting none but good Duke Humphrey :

And, brother York, thy acts in Ireland, 190

In bringing them to civil discipline,
Thy late exploits done in the heart of France,
When thou wert regent for our sovereign,
Have made thee fear'd and honour'd of the people :

Join we together, for the public good, 195

In what we can, to bridle and suppress
The pride of Suffolk and the cardinal,
With Somerset's and Buckingham's ambition ;
And, as we may, cherish Duke Humphrey's deeds,
While they do tend the profit of the land.

War. So God help Warwick, as he loves the land,
And common profit of his country ! 201

174 [*Exeunt...*] *Exit...* Ff.

(Qq).

175 *went*] *goes* Capell.

acts] *acting* F₄.

follows him] *follows after* Anon.
conj., from (Qq).

199 *tend the*] *tend to* Capell. 'tend the
Steevens conj.

187 *Hath*] *Have* Rowe.

201 *And*] *The good and Seymour* conj.

189 *brother*] *cousin* Anon. conj., from

York. [*Aside*] And so says York, for he hath greatest cause.

Sal. Then let's make haste away, and look unto the main.

War. Unto the main! O father, Maine is lost; That Maine which by main force Warwick did win, 205 And would have kept so long as breath did last! Main chance, father, you meant; but I meant Maine, Which I will win from France, or else be slain.

[*Exeunt Warwick and Salisbury.*]

York. Anjou and Maine are given to the French; Paris is lost; the state of Normandy 210 Stands on a tickle point, now they are gone: Suffolk concluded on the articles, The peers agreed, and Henry was well pleased To change two dukedoms for a duke's fair daughter. I cannot blame them all: what is't to them? 215 'Tis thine they give away, and not their own. Pirates may make cheap pennyworths of their pillage, And purchase friends and give to courtezans, Still revelling like lords till all be gone; While as the silly owner of the goods 220

202 [*Aside*] Theobald.

And so...cause.] As in Pope. As two lines in Ff.

203 *Then.....main.*] One line in Pope. As two lines, the first ending *away*, in Ff.

make haste] om. Seymour conj., or as (Qq).

away] om. Pope.

main.] *maine*? F₂F₃F₄.

204 *Unto...lost;*] One line in Pope. As two lines, the first ending *maine*?, in Ff.

204—208 *Unto...slain.*] Put in the mar-

gin by Pope.

205 *Warwick did*] *did Warwick* Collier MS.

207 *Main chance*] Theobald (ed. 2). *Main-chance* Ff.

208 [*Exeunt W. and S.*] Exit W. and S. Manet Yorke. Ff.

209 SCENE III. Pope.

213 *was*] om. S. Walker conj.

216 *thine*] *mine* Grant White.

217 *pennyworths*] *penn'orths* Pope. *penn'orth* Capell. *pennyworth* Steevens (1778, 1785).

Weeps over them and wrings his hapless hands,
 And shakes his head and trembling stands aloof,
 While all is shared and all is borne away,
 Ready to starve and dare not touch his own :
 So York must sit and fret and bite his tongue, 225
 While his own lands are bargain'd for and sold.
 Methinks the realms of England, France and Ireland
 Bear that proportion to my flesh and blood
 As did the fatal brand Althæa burn'd
 Unto the prince's heart of Calydon. 230
 Anjou and Maine both given unto the French !
 Cold news for me, for I had hope of France,
 Even as I have of fertile England's soil.
 A day will come when York shall claim his own ;
 And therefore I will take the Nevils' parts 235
 And make a show of love to proud Duke Humphrey,
 And, when I spy advantage, claim the crown,
 For that's the golden mark I seek to hit :
 Nor shall proud Lancaster usurp my right,
 Nor hold the sceptre in his childish fist, 240
 Nor wear the diadem upon his head,
 Whose church-like humours fits not for a crown.
 Then, York, be still awhile, till time do serve :
 Watch thou and wake when others be asleep,
 To pry into the secrets of the state ; 245
 Till Henry, surfeiting in joys of love,
 With his new bride and England's dear-bought queen,

221 *hapless*] *helpless* Dyce, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

223, 224 *While...own.*] Hudson transposes these lines.

224 *starve*] F₃F₄. *sterue* F₁F₂.
dare] *dares* Theobald.

230 *Unto...Calydon*] om. Collier MS.

233 *England's soil*] *England* Anon.
conj., from (Qq).

242 *humours fits*] (Qq) Ff. *humour fits* Rowe. *humours fit* Malone.

246—248 *Till Henry, ... And Humphrey*
Till, Henry, ... Duke Humphrey
Hudson.

246 *surfeiting in*] *surfeit in* the Hammer. *surfeiteth* in Hudson conj.

247 After this Capell conjectures that a line is lost.

And Humphrey with the peers be fall'n at jars :
 Then will I raise aloft the milk-white rose,
 With whose sweet smell the air shall be perfumed ; 250
 And in my standard bear the arms of York,
 To grapple with the house of Lancaster ;
 And, force perforce, I'll make him yield the crown,
 Whose bookish rule hath pull'd fair England down. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II. *The DUKE OF GLOUCESTER'S house.*

Enter DUKE HUMPHREY and his wife ELEANOR.

Duch. Why droops my lord, like over-ripen'd corn,
 Hanging the head at Ceres' plenteous load ?
 Why doth the great Duke Humphrey knit his brows,
 As frowning at the favours of the world ?
 Why are thine eyes fix'd to the sullen earth, 5
 Gazing on that which seems to dim thy sight ?
 What seest thou there ? King Henry's diadem,
 Enchased with all the honours of the world ?
 If so, gaze on, and grovel on thy face,
 Until thy head be circled with the same. 10
 Put forth thy hand, reach at the glorious gold.
 What, is't too short ? I'll lengthen it with mine ;
 And, having both together heaved it up,
 We'll both together lift our heads to heaven,
 And never more abase our sight so low 15
 As to vouchsafe one glance unto the ground.

Glou. O Nell, sweet Nell, if thou dost love thy lord,
 Banish the canker of ambitious thoughts.

251 *in] in in F₁.**The...house.] Theobald.*SCENE II.] Capell. SCENE IV. Pope. 2 *at] with Pope.*

om. Ff.

And may that thought, when I imagine ill
 Against my king and nephew, virtuous Henry, 20
 Be my last breathing in this mortal world!
 My troublous dream this night doth make me sad.

Duch. What dream'd my lord? tell me, and I'll
 requite it

With sweet rehearsal of my morning's dream.

Glou. Methought this staff, mine office-badge in court,
 Was broke in twain; by whom I have forgot, 26
 But, as I think, it was by the cardinal;
 And on the pieces of the broken wand
 Were placed the heads of Edmund Duke of Somerset,
 And William de la Pole, first duke of Suffolk. 30
 This was my dream: what it doth bode, God knows.

Duch. Tut, this was nothing but an argument,
 That he that breaks a stick of Gloucester's grove
 Shall lose his head for his presumption.
 But list to me, my Humphrey, my sweet duke: 35
 Methought I sat in seat of majesty,
 In the cathedral church of Westminster,
 And in that chair where kings and queens are crown'd;
 Where Henry and dame Margaret kneel'd to me,
 And on my head did set the diadem. 40

Glou. Nay, Eleanor, then must I chide outright:
 Presumptuous dame, ill-nurtured Eleanor,
 Art thou not second woman in the realm,

19 *thought*] *hour* Vaughan conj.

22 *dream...doth*] Capell. *dreames...doth* Ff. *dreams...do* Rowe.

23, 24 *lord?...dream.*] Rowe. *Lord,...dream?* Ff.

25 *office-badge*] *office's badge* S. Walker conj.

31 *my*] *the* F₃F₄.

36 *seat*] *state* Vaughan conj.

38 *And*] *E'en* Lettsom conj.

are] (Qq) Hanmer. *wer* F₁F₂. *were* F₃F₄.

39 *Where*] *There* Dyce, ed. 2 (Staunton conj.).

dame] om. F₄.

42 *ill-nurtured*] *ill-nurtur'd* F₃. *ill-nurter'd* F₁F₂. *ill-natur'd* F₄.

And the protector's wife, beloved of him?
 Hast thou not worldly pleasure at command, 45
 Above the reach or compass of thy thought?
 And wilt thou still be hammering treachery,
 To tumble down thy husband and thyself
 From top of honour to disgrace's feet?
 Away from me, and let me hear no more! 50
Duch. What, what, my lord! are you so choleric
 With Eleanor, for telling but her dream?
 Next time I'll keep my dreams unto myself,
 And not be check'd.
Glou. Nay, be not angry; I am pleased again. 55

Enter Messenger.

Mess. My lord protector, 'tis his highness' pleasure
 You do prepare to ride unto Saint Alban's,
 Where as the king and queen do mean to hawk.

Glou. I go. Come, Nell, thou wilt ride with us?

Duch. Yes, my good lord, I'll follow presently. 60

[Exeunt Gloucester and Messenger.]

Follow I must; I cannot go before,
 While Gloucester bears this base and humble mind.
 Were I a man, a duke, and next of blood,
 I would remove these tedious stumbling-blocks
 And smooth my way upon their headless necks; 65
 And, being a woman, I will not be slack
 To play my part in Fortune's pageant.
 Where are you there? Sir John! nay, fear not, man,
 We are alone; here's none but thee and I.

57 *Saint*] S. F₁F₂F₃. St. F₄.

58 *Where as*] F₁F₂. *Whereas* F₃F₄.

59 *thou...us*] *thou'lt ride with us, I'm*
sure. Dyce (ed. 2), from (Qq).

thou] *thou too* Hanmer. *thou; thou*
 Vaughan conj.

60 *[Exeunt...]* Capell. Ex. Hum. F₁
 (after line 59). Ex. Hu. F₂F₃F₄
 (after line 59).

68 *there?* *Sir John*] Hanmer. *there?*
Sir John; Ff.

69 *thee*] *thou* Seymour conj.

Enter HUME.

www.libtool.com.cn

Hume. Jesus preserve your royal majesty! 70

Duch. What say'st thou? majesty! I am but grace.

Hume. But, by the grace of God, and Hume's advice,
Your grace's title shall be multiplied.

Duch. What say'st thou, man? hast thou as yet
conferr'd

With Margery Jourdain, the cunning witch, 75

With Roger Bolingbroke, the conjurer?

And will they undertake to do me good?

Hume. This they have promised, to show your high-
ness

A spirit raised from depth of under-ground,
That shall make answer to such questions 80

As by your grace shall be propounded him.

Duch. It is enough; I'll think upon the questions:
When from Saint Alban's we do make return,
We'll see these things effected to the full.

Here, Hume, take this reward; make merry, man, 85
With thy confederates in this weighty cause. [*Exit.*]

Hume. Hume must make merry with the duchess'
gold;

Marry, and shall. But, how now, Sir John Hume!

Seal up your lips, and give no words but mum:

The business asketh silent secrecy. 90

Dame Eleanor gives gold to bring the witch:

Gold cannot come amiss, were she a devil.

Yet have I gold flies from another coast;

71 *What...majesty!*] *My majesty!* why,
man, Capell, from (Qq). *What?*
say'st thou 'Majesty'? or *What say'st*
thou 'Majesty'? Vaughan conj.

75 *Jourdain*] Capell (and passim).

Jordane F₁F₂. *Jordan* F₃F₄.
76 *With Roger*] *And Roger* Pope.
84 *these*] F₁. *those* F₂F₃F₄.
89 *words but*] *words, but* Rowe.

I dare not say, from the rich cardinal,
 And from the great and new-made Duke of Suffolk, 95
 Yet I do find it so; for, to be plain,
 They, knowing Dame Eleanor's aspiring humour,
 Have hired me to undermine the duchess,
 And buz these conjurations in her brain.
 They say 'A crafty knave does need no broker;' 100
 Yet am I Suffolk and the cardinal's broker.
 Hume, if you take not heed, you shall go near
 To call them both a pair of crafty knaves.
 Well, so it stands; and thus, I fear, at last
 Hume's knavery will be the duchess' wreck, 105
 And her attainture will be Humphrey's fall:
 Sort how it will, I shall have gold for all. [Exit.

SCENE III. *The palace.*

Enter three or four Petitioners, PETER, the Armourer's man, being one.

First Petit. My masters, let's stand close: my lord protector will come this way by and by, and then we may deliver our supplications in the quill.

Sec. Petit. Marry, the Lord protect him, for he's a good man! Jesu bless him! 5

97 *Dame Eleanor's aspiring*] F₁F₂.
Dame Elianor's F₃F₄. *Eleanor's*
aspiring Pope.
 101 *Suffolk*] F₂. *Suffolke* F₁F₂. *Suffolk's*
 F₄.
 105 *wreck*] Theobald (ed. 2). *wracks*
 F₁F₂. *wrack* F₃F₄.
 SCENE III.] Capell. SCENE V. Pope.
 SCENE VII. Johnson (a misprint).

The palace.] Hanmer. An apart-
 ment in the palace. Theobald.
 ...Peter...] Theobald. om. Ff.
 3 *in the quill*] in quill Hanmer. in
quiet Jackson conj. in the coil Sing-
 er conj. in sequel Collier, ed. 2
 (Collier MS.). in the quile Jervis
 conj. in the pend Bulloch conj.

www.libtool.com *Enter* SUFFOLK and QUEEN.

Peter. Here a' comes, methinks, and the queen with him. I'll be the first, sure.

Sec. Petit. Come back, fool; this is the Duke of Suffolk, and not my lord protector. 9

Suf. How now, fellow! wouldst any thing with me?

First Petit. I pray, my lord, pardon me; I took ye for my lord protector.

Queen. [*Reading*] 'To my Lord Protector!' Are your supplications to his lordship? Let me see them: what is thine? 15

First Petit. Mine is, an't please your grace, against John Goodman, my lord cardinal's man, for keeping my house, and lands, and wife and all, from me.

Suf. Thy wife too! that's some wrong, indeed. What's yours? What's here! [*Reads*] 'Against the Duke of Suffolk, for enclosing the commons of Melford.' How now, sir knave!

Sec. Petit. Alas, sir, I am but a poor petitioner of our whole township. 24

Peter [*giving his petition*]. Against my master, Thomas Horner, for saying that the Duke of York was rightful heir to the crown.

Queen. What say'st thou? did the Duke of York say he was rightful heir to the crown? 29

6 *Peter.*] F₁F₂. 1 *Peter.* F₃. 1 *Pet.*
F₄.
13 [*Reading*] Rowe (ed. 2). om. Ff.
To] *For* Capell.
16 *an't*] Hanmer. *and't* Ff.
20 [*Reads*] Rowe. om. Ff.
21 *Melford*] *Long Melford* Theobald,

from (Qq).
25 *Peter*] F₁. *Pet.* F₂F₃F₄. 3 *Pet.*
Rowe. *Suff.* [*reads*]. Theobald.
[*giving his petition*] Capell. om.
Ff.
28 *What say'st thou? did*] *What did*
Pope. *What! did* Theobald.

Peter. That my master was? no, forsooth: my master said that he was, and that the king was an usurper.

Suf. Who is there? [*Enter Servant.*] Take this fellow in, and send for his master with a pursuivant presently: we'll hear more of your matter before the king.

[*Exit Servant with Peter.*]

Queen. And as for you, that love to be protected 35
Under the wings of our protector's grace,
Begin your suits anew, and sue to him.

[*Tears the supplications.*]

Away, base cullions! Suffolk, let them go.

All. Come, let's be gone. [*Exeunt.*]

Queen. My Lord of Suffolk, say, is this the guise, 40
Is this the fashion in the court of England?

Is this the government of Britain's isle,

And this the royalty of Albion's king?

What, shall King Henry be a pupil still

Under the surly Gloucester's governance? 45

Am I a queen in title and in style,

And must be made a subject to a duke?

I tell thee, Pole, when in the city Tours

Thou ran'st a tilt in honour of my love,

And stolest away the ladies' hearts of France, 50

I thought King Henry had resembled thee

In courage, courtship and proportion:

But all his mind is bent to holiness,

To number Ave-Maries on his beads;

30 *master was*] Warburton. *Mistress*
was F₁F₂F₃. *Mistress was* F₄.

33 [*Enter Servant.*] Ff. om. Pope.
Enter Servants. Capell.

34 [*Exit.....*] Exit. Ff. Exit Peter,
guarded. Theobald.

37 [*Tears the supplications.*] Rowe.
Tears the Supplication. Ff.

39 All.] 1 P. Capell.

[*Exeunt.*] Rowe. Exit. Ff.

40 *guise.*] Capell. *guise?* Ff.

41 *fashion in*] Rowe (ed. 2). *Fashions*
in F₁F₂F₃. *Fashion of* F₄.

46 *Am*] *And* F₃F₄.

49 *a tilt*] F₃F₄. *a-tilt* F₁F₂.

His champions are the prophets and apostles, 55
 His weapons holy saws of sacred writ,
 His study is his tilt-yard, and his loves
 Are brazen images of canonized saints.

I would the college of the cardinals
 Would choose him pope and carry him to Rome, 60
 And set the triple crown upon his head :
 That were a state fit for his holiness.

Suf. Madam, be patient : as I was cause
 Your highness came to England, so will I
 In England work your grace's full content. 65

Queen. Beside the haughty protector, have we Beaufort,
 The imperious churchman, Somerset, Buckingham,
 And grumbling York ; and not the least of these
 But can do more in England than the king.

Suf. And he of these that can do most of all 70
 Cannot do more in England than the Nevils :
 Salisbury and Warwick are no simple peers.

Queen. Not all these lords do vex me half so much
 As that proud dame, the lord protector's wife.
 She sweeps it through the court with troops of ladies,
 More like an empress than Duke Humphrey's wife : 75
 Strangers in court do take her for the queen :

She bears a duke's revenues on her back,
 And in her heart she scorns our poverty :
 Shall I not live to be avenged on her ? 80
 Contemptuous base-born callet as she is,
 She vaunted 'mongst her minions t' other day,

56 *holy*] *are Holy* F₄.

58 *images*] *image*' S. Walker conj.

59 *of the cardinals*] *of cardinals* Reed
 (1803). *now of cardinals* Seymour
 conj.

63 *cause*] *the cause* Rowe.

66 *haughty*] *haughtie* F₁. *haught* F₂F₃
 F₄. *proud* Pope.

75 *through*] *though* F₂.

79 *our*] *her* Reed (1803).

81 *callet*] Dyce. *Callot* Ff. *callat*
 Johnson.

The very train of her worst wearing gown
 Was better worth than all my father's lands,
 Till Suffolk gave two dukedoms for his daughter. 85

Suf. Madam, myself have limed a bush for her,
 And placed a quire of such enticing birds,
 That she will light to listen to the lays,
 And never mount to trouble you again.
 So, let her rest: and, madam, list to me; 90

For I am bold to counsel you in this.
 Although we fancy not the cardinal,
 Yet must we join with him and with the lords,
 Till we have brought Duke Humphrey in disgrace.
 As for the Duke of York, this late complaint 95
 Will make but little for his benefit.

So, one by one, we'll weed them all at last,
 And you yourself shall steer the happy helm.

*Sound a Sennet. Enter the KING, DUKE HUMPHREY of Gloucester,
 CARDINAL BEAUFORT, BUCKINGHAM, YORK, SOMERSET, SALISBURY,
 WARWICK, and the DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER.*

King. For my part, noble lords, I care not which;
 Or Somerset or York, all's one to me. 100

York. If York have ill demean'd himself in France,
 Then let him be deny'd the regentship.

Som. If Somerset be unworthy of the place,
 Let York be regent; I will yield to him.

War. Whether your grace be worthy, yea or no, 105

88 *the lays*] *their lays* Rowe.

92 *not*] *nor* F₂.

97 *we'll.....last*] *we will weed all the
 realm* Collier MS.

98 *helm.*] *helme.* Exit. Ff. *realm.* Theobald.

99 SCENE VI. Pope.

Sound a Sennet.] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

Duke Humphrey of Gloucester,]

Duke Humfrey, Ff.

Cardinal Beaufort,] Cardinal, Ff.

Somerset,] Hanmer. om. Ff.

the Duchess of Gloucester.] the

Duchessa. Ff.

101 *demean'd*] *demeaned* F₄.

102 *deny'd*] F₁F₂F₃. *deny'd* F₄.

Dispute not that: York is the worthier.

Car. Ambitious Warwick, let thy betters speak.

War. The cardinal's not my better in the field.

Buck. All in this presence are thy betters, Warwick.

War. Warwick may live to be the best of all. 110

Sal. Peace, son! and show some reason, Buckingham,
Why Somerset should be preferr'd in this.

Queen. Because the king, forsooth, will have it so.

Glou. Madam, the king is old enough himself
To give his censure: these are no women's matters. 115

Queen. If he be old enough, what needs your grace
To be protector of his excellence?

Glou. Madam, I am protector of the realm;
And, at his pleasure, will resign my place.

Suf. Resign it then and leave thine insolence. 120

Since thou wert king—as who is king but thou?—

The commonwealth hath daily run to wreck;

The Dauphin hath prevail'd beyond the seas;

And all the peers and nobles of the realm

Have been as bondmen to thy sovereignty. 125

Car. The commons hast thou rack'd; the clergy's bags
Are lank and lean with thy extortions.

Som. Thy sumptuous buildings and thy wife's attire
Have cost a mass of public treasury.

Buck. Thy cruelty in execution 130

Upon offenders hath exceeded law,

And left thee to the mercy of the law.

Queen. Thy sale of offices and towns in France,

106 *that: York] that York* Vaughan
conj.

108 *The] A* Collier MS.

112 *this.]* Theobald. *this? Ff.*

115 *his] this* F₄.

women's] Womens F₁F₂F₃. *Womans*

F₄.

122 *wreck]* Theobald (ed. 2). *wrack* Ff.

128 *wife's]* Rowe. *Wives* F₁. *Wives*

F₂F₃F₄.

129 *treasury]* *Treasuris* F₁. *Treasure* F₂

F₃F₄.

If they were known, as the suspect is great,
Would make thee quickly hop without thy head. 135

[Exit Gloucester. The Queen drops her fan.]
Give me my fan: what, minion! can ye not?

[She gives the Duchess a box on the ear.]

I cry you mercy, madam; was it you?

Duch. Was't I! yea, I it was, proud Frenchwoman:
Could I come near your beauty with my nails,
I'd set my ten commandments in your face. 140

King. Sweet aunt, be quiet; 'twas against her will.

Duch. Against her will! good king, look to't in time;
She'll hamper thee, and dandle thee like a baby:
Though in this place most master wear no breeches,
She shall not strike Dame Eleanor unrevenged. *[Exit.]*

Buck. Lord cardinal, I will follow Eleanor, 146
And listen after Humphrey, how he proceeds:
She's tickled now; her fume needs no spurs,
She'll gallop far enough to her destruction. *[Exit.]*

Re-enter GLOUCESTER.

Glou. Now, lords, my choler being over-blown 150
With walking once about the quadrangle,
I come to talk of commonwealth affairs.
As for your spiteful false objections,

135 *[Exit Gloucester.] Exit Humfrey.*

Ff.

The Queen...] Johnson. om. Ff.

140 *I'd]* *I'd* Pope, from (Qq). *I could*

Ff.

142 *will!* *good king,*] *will?*—*Good*

King, Johnson. *will,* *good King?*

Ff.

144 *master]* *masters* Halliwell conj.

wear] *wears* F₁. *wears* F₂. *wears*

F₃F₄.

146 *I will]* *I'll* Pope.

148 *fume]* *fury* Grant White (Dyce and
S. Walker conj.).

needs] F₁. *can needs* F₂. *can need*

F₃F₄. *needs now* Keightley. *now*

needs Id. conj.

149 *far]* F₃F₄. *farre* F₁F₂. *fast* Pope.

150 SCENE VII. Pope.

Re-enter G.] Pope. Enter Hum-
frey. Ff.

Prove them, and I lie open to the law :
 But God in mercy so deal with my soul,
 As I in duty love my king and country !
 But, to the matter that we have in hand :
 I say, my sovereign, York is meetest man
 To be your regent in the realm of France.

155

Suf. Before we make election, give me leave
 To show some reason, of no little force,
 That York is most unmeet of any man.

160

York. I'll tell thee, Suffolk, why I am unmeet :
 First, for I cannot flatter thee in pride ;
 Next, if I be appointed for the place,
 My Lord of Somerset will keep me here,
 Without discharge, money, or furniture,
 Till France be won into the Dauphin's hands :
 Last time, I danced attendance on his will
 Till Paris was besieged, famish'd, and lost.

165

170

War. That can I witness ; and a fouler fact
 Did never traitor in the land commit.

Suf. Peace, headstrong Warwick !

War. Image of pride, why should I hold my peace ?

Enter HORNER, the Armourer, and his man PETER, guarded.

Suf. Because here is a man accused of treason :
 Pray God the Duke of York excuse himself !

175

York. Doth any one accuse York for a traitor ?

King. What mean'st thou, Suffolk ? tell me, what are
 these ?

Suf. Please it your majesty, this is the man

155 *so deal] deal so Rowe.*

166 *here] there Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.
 and Long MS.).*

175 *Enter...] Theobald. Enter Armourer*

and his Man. Ff. *Enter Horner
 the Armour and his Man Peter.
 Rowe.*

That doth accuse his master of high treason : 180
 His words werè these : that Richard Duke of York
 Was rightful heir unto the English crown,
 And that your majesty was an usurper.

King. Say, man, were these thy words? 184

Hor. An't shall please your majesty, I never said nor
 thought any such matter : God is my witness, I am falsely
 accused by the villain.

Pet. By these ten bones, my lords, he did speak them
 to me in the garret one night, as we were scouring my
 Lord of York's armour. 190

York. Base dunghill villain and mechanical,
 I'll have thy head for this thy traitor's speech.
 I do beseech your royal majesty,
 Let him have all the rigour of the law. 194

Hor. Alas, my lord, hang me, if ever I spake the
 words. My accuser is my 'prentice ; and when I did
 correct him for his fault the other day, he did vow
 upon his knees he would be even with me : I have good
 witness of this ; therefore I beseech your majesty, do not
 cast away an honest man for a villain's accusation. 200

King. Uncle, what shall we say to this in law ?

Glou. This doom, my lord, if I may judge :
 Let Somerset be regent o'er the French,
 Because in York this breeds suspicion :
 And let these have a day appointed them 205
 For single combat in convenient place,
 For he hath witness of his servant's malice :
 This is the law, and this Duke Humphrey's doom.

185 *As 't*] Rowe (ed. 2). *And 't* Ff.

188 [holding up his hands. Steevens.

202 *This...judge*] *This do, my lord, if*
I may be the judge Capell. *This is*
my doom, my lord.....judge Dyce
 (ed. 2), from '(Qq). *This...judge,*

is law Vaughan conj.

my lord] *my gracious lord* Collier,
 ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

207 *For he*] *Since he* Wordsworth.

208 See note (11).

Som. I humbly thank your royal majesty.

Hor. And I accept the combat willingly. 210

Pet. Alas, my lord, I cannot fight; for God's sake, pity my case. The spite of man prevaieth against me. O Lord, have mercy upon me! I shall never be able to fight a blow. O Lord, my heart! 214

Glou. Sirrah, or you must fight, or else be hang'd.

King. Away with them to prison; and the day of combat shall be the last of the next month. Come, Somerset, we'll see thee sent away. [*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. GLOUCESTER'S garden.

Enter MARGERY JOURDAIN, HUME, SOUTHWELL, and BOLINGBROKE.

Hume. Come, my masters; the duchess, I tell you, expects performance of your promises.

Boling. Master Hume, we are therefore provided: will her ladyship behold and hear our exorcisms?

Hume. Ay, what else? fear you not her courage. 5

Boling. I have heard her reported to be a woman of an invincible spirit: but it shall be convenient, Master Hume, that you be by her aloft, while we be busy below;

212 *spite of man] sight of my master*
Capell.

man] F₁. my man F₂F₃. my master
F₄. this man Collier MS. a man
Steevens (1773, 1778, 1785). *many*
Vaughan conj.

216—218 *Away...away.]* As in Ff. As
three lines in Capell, ending *day...*
month...away.

SCENE IV.] Capell. SCENE VIII.
Pope.

Gloucester's garden.] Capell. The
Witch's cave. Theobald. A room
prepared for the pretended inchant-
ments. Hanmer. See note (III).
Enter.....] Enter Mother Jordan,
Hume, Southwell, and Bullingbrook.
Rowe. *Enter* the Witch, the two
Priests, and Bullingbrooke. Ff.

5 *you] om.* Pope.

8 *we] om.* Capell (corrected in Er-
rata).

and so, I pray you, go, in God's name, and leave us.
 [Exit Hume.] Mother Jourdain, be you prostrate and grovel
 on the earth; John Southwell, read you; and let us to
 our work. 12

Enter Duchess aloft, HUME following.

Duch. Well said, my masters; and welcome all. To
 this gear the sooner the better.

Boling. Patience, good lady; wizards know their
 times: 15

Deep night, dark night, the silent of the night,
 The time of night when Troy was set on fire;
 The time when screech-owls cry, and ban-dogs howl,
 And spirits walk, and ghosts break up their graves,
 That time best fits the work we have in hand. 20
Madam, sit you and fear not: whom we raise,
 We will make fast within a hallow'd verge.

[Here they do the ceremonies belonging, and make
 the circle; Bolingbroke or Southwell reads,
 Conjuro te, &c. It thunders and lightens
 terribly; then the Spirit riseth.]

Spir. Adsum.

M. Jourd. Asmath,

By the eternal God, whose name and power 25
 Thou tremblest at, answer that I shall ask;
 For, till thou speak, thou shalt not pass from hence.

10 you] om. Rowe.

13 Enter...] Enter Duchess above; and
 presently Hume. Dyc. Enter
 Elianor aloft. Ff.
 all] to all F₄.

To] Come, to Capell.

14 gear] Edd. geere, F₁F₂. geer, F₃F₄.
 geer; Capell.

16 silent] silence Collier, ed. 2 (Collier
 MS.), from (Qq).

19 up] ope Collier MS.

22 ...they do...] Capell. ...doe... Ff.

23 Adsum] Ad sum F₁.

24—27 Asmath.....hence.] Arranged as
 by Capell; as four lines in Ff, end-
 ing God...at...speake...hence.

24 M. Jourd.] Witch. Ff.

Asmath] Asmath Pope.

26 answer...ask] F₁. Answer that I aske
 F₂F₃F₄. tell what I ask Pope, end-
 ing the lines name...ask...hence.

Spir. Ask what thou wilt. That I had said and done!

Boling. 'First of the king: what shall of him become?'

[*Reading out of a paper.*]

Spir. The duke yet lives that Henry shall depose; so
But him outlive, and die a violent death.

[*As the Spirit speaks, Southwell writes the answer.*]

Boling. 'What fates await the Duke of Suffolk?'

Spir. By water shall he die, and take his end.

Boling. 'What shall befall the Duke of Somerset?'

Spir. Let him shun castles; 35

Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains

Than where castles mounted stand.

Have done, for more I hardly can endure.

Boling. Descend to darkness and the burning lake!

False fiend, avoid! [*Thunder and lightning. Exit Spirit.* 40

*Enter the DUKE OF YORK and the DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM with
their Guard and break in.*

York. Lay hands upon these traitors and their trash.
Beldam, I think we watch'd you at an inch.

28 *Ask...done* [] As one line in F₄; as
prose in F₁F₂F₃.

wilt. That...done [] Rowe. *wilt;*
that...done. Ff.

29 'First...become?' [] Rowe; as prose
in Ff.

of him become] *become of him* (Qq)
Capell.

[*Reading out of a paper.*] Capell.

31 [*As the Spirit.....*] Capell. As the
spirit speaks, they write the answer.
Rowe. om. Ff.

32 *What fates await*] Ff. *Tell me what
fates await* Pope. *What fate awaits*
Capell. *What fates awaiteth then*
Vaughan conj. *Tell me what fate
awaits* Wordsworth.

36 *be*] om. F₂.

36, 68 *upon the sandy plains*] *upon sandy
plains* Rowe (ed. 1). *on the sandy
plains* Pope. *on the plains* Hanmer.
on sand Capell. *On sandy plains*
Vaughan conj., reading *Let...stand*
as two lines, the first ending *be*.

37, 69 *castles mounted stand*] *a castle
mounted stands* Hanmer. *high
castles stand* Wordsworth, reading
Let...stand as two lines, the first
ending *be*.

40 *False*] *Foul* Hudson (Collier MS.).
Hence, Cartwright conj.

[*Exit Spirit.*] Ff. *Spirit descends*.
Rowe.

42 *we...inch*] *we've catch'd you in the
nick or at the nick* Daniel conj.

What, madam, are you there? the king and commonweal
 Are deeply indebted for this piece of pains:
 My lord protector will, I doubt it not, 45
 See you well guerdon'd for these good deserts.

Duch. Not half so bad as thine to England's king,
 Injurious duke, that threatest where's no cause.

Buck. True, madam, none at all: what call you this?
 Away with them! let them be clapp'd up close, 50
 And kept asunder. You, madam, shall with us.
 Stafford, take her to thee.

[*Exeunt above Duchess and Hume, guarded.*]

We'll see your trinkets here all forthcoming.

All, away! [*Exeunt guard with Jourdain, Southwell, &c.*]

York. Lord Buckingham, methinks, you watch'd her
 well: 55

A pretty plot, well chosen to build upon!
 Now, pray, my lord, let's see the devil's writ.

What have we here? [*Reads.*]

'The duke yet lives, that Henry shall depose;
 But him outlive, and die a violent death.' 60

Why, this is just

'Aio te, Æacida, Romanos vincere posse.'

Well, to the rest:

43 *commonweal*] *realm* Pope.

44 *deeply*] *deep* Rowe.

48 *threatest where's*] *F₁F₂. threaten'st where's F₃F₄. threat'st where is Pope.*

49 [showing her the Papers. Capell.

51 *asunder*] *apart* Pope.

52—54 *Stafford...away!*] As two lines, the first ending *trinkets*, Vaughan conj., reading *are all*.

52 [*Exeunt.....*] Dyce. Exit Duchess from above. Malone. *Exeunt* some to the Dut. Capell. om. Ff.

53 *all forthcoming*] *forth-coming all* Rowe. *are all forth-coming* Collier MS.

54 *All, away!*] Knight. *All away.* Ff. *Away.* Rowe. om. Pope. *All.—Away!* Malone.

[*Exeunt...*] Rowe. Exit. Ff.

55—72 *Lord...understood.*] Put in the margin by Pope, following (Qq).

56 *chosen*] *chose* Pope.

62 *te, Æacida,*] Warburton. *te Æacida* Theobald. *Æacida F₁F₂. Æacide F₃F₄. te Æacidem* Rowe.

'Tell me, what fate awaits the Duke of Suffolk?
 By water shall he die, and take his end. 65
 What shall betide the Duke of Somerset?
 Let him shun castles;
 Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains
 Than where castles mounted stand.'
 Come, come, my lords; 70
 These oracles are hardly attain'd,
 And hardly understood.
 The king is now in progress towards Saint Alban's,
 With him the husband of this lovely lady:
 Thither go these news, as fast as horse can carry them:
 A sorry breakfast for my lord protector. 76
Buck. Your grace shall give me leave, my Lord of
 York,
 To be the post, in hope of his reward.
York. At your pleasure, my good lord. Who's within
 there, ho!

Enter a Servingman.

• Invite my Lords of Salisbury and Warwick 80
 To sup with me to-morrow night. Away! [*Exeunt.*]

64 *Tell me,*] om. (Qq) Capell. *Tell me*
Ff.

66 *betide*] *befal* Capell.

70 *Come, ... lords;*] Transfer to end line
72, Anon. conj.

Come, come] *Come, come away* Capell,
reading lines 70—72 as two lines of
verse, the first ending *oracles*.

lords] *lord* Dyce (ed. 2).

71 *These oracles are*] *we'll keep these*
oracles, Wordsworth, reading *Come*
...understood as two lines, the first

ending *oracles*.

hardly] *hardily* Theobald.

75 *Thither...them:*] As in Pope; as two
lines in Ff.

go] Rowe. *goes* Ff.

them] 'em S. Walker conj.

79 *At...ho*] As in Capell. Two lines
in Ff.

At...lord.] *My lord, at your good*
pleasure. Hanmer.

ho] om. Hanmer.

www.libtoll.com
ACT II.

SCENE I. *Saint Alban's.*

*Enter the KING, QUEEN, GLOUCESTER, CARDINAL, and SUFFOLK,
with Falconers halloing.*

Queen. Believe me, lords, for flying at the brook,
I saw not better sport these seven years' day:
Yet, by your leave, the wind was very high;
And, ten to one, old Joan had not gone out.

King. But what a point, my lord, your falcon made,
And what a pitch she flew above the rest! 6
To see how God in all His creatures works!
Yea, man and birds are fain of climbing high.

Suf. No marvel, an it like your majesty,
My lord protector's hawks do tower so well; 10
They know their master loves to be aloft,
And bears his thoughts above his falcon's pitch.

Glou. My lord, 'tis but a base ignoble mind
That mounts no higher than a bird can soar.

Car. I thought as much; he would be above the
clouds. 15

Glou. Ay, my lord cardinal? how think you by that?
Were it not good your grace could fly to heaven?

King. The treasury of everlasting joy.

Car. Thy heaven is on earth; thine eyes and thoughts
Beat on a crown, the treasure of thy heart; 20
Pernicious protector, dangerous peer,

ACT II. SCENE I.] Pope. om. Ff. 15 *he would*] Ff (reading as prose).

Saint Alban's] Pope. *he'd* Pope.

Gloucester,] Protector, Ff. 20 *Beat*] *Bent* Pope.

9 *an it*] Pope. *and it* Ff.

That smooth'st it so with king and commonweal!

Glou. What, cardinal, is your priesthood grown per-
 emptory?

Tantæne animis cœlestibus iræ?

Churchmen so hot? good uncle, hide such malice; 25
 With such holiness can you do it?

Suf. No malice, sir; no more than well becomes
 So good a quarrel and so bad a peer.

Glou. As who, my lord?

Suf. Why, as you, my lord,
 An't like your lordly lord-protectorship. 30

Glou. Why, Suffolk, England knows thine insolence.

Queen. And thy ambition, Gloucester.

King. I prithee, peace, good queen,
 And whet not on these furious peers;
 For blessed are the peacemakers on earth. 35

23 *What...peremptory?*] As one line in Pope. As two lines in Ff, the first ending *Cardinall*. As prose in Theobald.

peremptory] so *peremptory* Rowe.

24, 25 *Tantæne...malice;*] As in Theobald: the first line ends *hot?* in Ff.

24 *Tantæne...iræ?*] Omitted by Pope.

25, 26 *Churchmen...do it?*] *A churchman, and so hot? good uncle, hide Such malice with such holiness. Can you do it?* Becket conj.

26 *With...it?*] Omitted by Pope. *With such holiness can you not do it?* Warburton conj. *A churchman, with such holiness can you do it?* Johnson conj. *What? with...can you not do it?* Heath conj. *With such holiness, Can you not do it?* Capell (ending the lines *hot?...holiness...it?*) *What with...can you not*

do it? Rann. *And with such holiness you well can do it.* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). *With such holiness can you do it.* Collier (ed. 1). *With such holiness you can do it.* Singer conj. *With...can you do it?* Staunton (Malone conj.), from (Q₂). *For with such holiness you can do it* Keightley. *For with such holiness well can you do it.* Dyce (ed. 2). *How with...so do it?* Vaughan conj.

29 *Why,*] *Why, faith,* Wordsworth. *you]* yourself Pope.

30 *An't]* Ff.

lord-protectorship] Capell. *Lord Protectorship* F₄. *Lords Protectorship* F₁F₂F₃.

33, 34 *good queen...peers;*] Arranged as in Ff; as one line by Malone.

34 *furious]* F₁. *too-too furious* F₂. *too-too-furious* F₃F₄.

Car. Let me be blessed for the peace I make,
Against this proud protector, with my sword!

Glou. [*Aside to Car.*] Faith, holy uncle, would 'twere
come to that!

Car. [*Aside to Glou.*] Marry, when thou darest.

Glou. [*Aside to Car.*] Make up no factious numbers
for the matter; 40

In thine own person answer thy abuse.

Car. [*Aside to Glou.*] Ay, where thou darest not peep:
an if thou darest,

This evening, on the east side of the grove.

King. How now, my lords!

Car. Believe me, cousin Gloucester,
Had not your man put up the fowl so suddenly, 45
We had had more sport. [*Aside to Glou.*] Come with thy
two-hand sword.

Glou. True, uncle.

Car. [*Aside to Glou.*] Are ye advised? the east side
of the grove?

Glou. [*Aside to Car.*] Cardinal, I am with you.

King. Why, how now, uncle Gloucester!

Glou. Talking of hawking; nothing else, my lord. 50
[*Aside to Car.*] Now, by God's mother, priest, I'll shave
your crown for this,
Or all my fence shall fail.

36 *peace*] *pieces* Vaughan conj.

38—53 The 'Asides' first indicated by
Rowe.

40 *the*] *that* Rowe.

42, 43 *Ay.....grove.*] Arranged as by
Theobald; as three lines in Ff, end-
ing *peeps....Evening...Grove.*

42 *an if*] Capell. *And if* Ff.

46 *We...sword.*] As in Rowe: two lines
in Ff.

We had had] *We'd had had* Steevens
(1778). *We'd have had* Mason
conj.

47—49 *True...you.*] Given to 'Glost.'
in Ff; corrected by Theobald.

48 *ye*] *you* Theobald.
advised] *avis'd* Capell.
of] om. Pope.

51 *Now...this.*] One line in Pope; two
lines, the first ending *priest*, in Ff.

Car. [*Aside to Glou.*] *Medice, teipsum—*
Protector, see to 't well, protect yourself.

King. The winds grow high; so do your stomachs,
lords. 55

How irksome is this music to my heart!
When such strings jar, what hope of harmony?
I pray, my lords, let me compound this strife.

Enter a Townsman of Saint Alban's, crying 'A miracle!'

Glou. What means this noise?
Fellow, what miracle dost thou proclaim? 60

Towns. A miracle! a miracle!

Suf. Come to the king and tell him what miracle.

Towns. Forsooth, a blind man at Saint Alban's shrine,
Within this half-hour, hath received his sight;
A man that ne'er saw in his life before. 65

King. Now, God be praised, that to believing souls
Gives light in darkness, comfort in despair!

*Enter the Mayor of Saint Alban's and his brethren, bearing SIMPCOX,
between two in a chair, SIMPCOX'S Wife following.*

Car. Here comes the townsmen on procession,
To present your highness with the man.

53, 54 *Medice...yourself.*] As in Theobald. As prose in Ff.

53 *Medice, teipsum—*] Edd. *Medice teipsum*, Ff. *Medice cura teipsum*. Rowe. Omitted by Pope. *Medice, teipsum*. Theobald.

55 *The...lords.*] As in Pope. As two lines in Ff.

59 SCENE II. Pope.

Enter...] Enter One of the Town, crying out, A miracle! Capell. Enter one crying a Miracle. Ff.

61, 63 *Towns.*] One. Ff.

62 *him*] om. Seymour conj.

68 *Enter...*] Rowe. Enter the Maier of Saint Albones, and his Brethren, bearing the man betweene two in a Chayre. Ff. comes] Ff. come Rowe. are Capell.

69 *To present...man*] Before your highness to present the man Pope. Come to present.....man Capell. For to ...man Keightley.

King. Great is his comfort in this earthly vale, 70
Although by his sight his sin be multiplied.

Glou. Stand by, my masters: bring him near the king;
His highness' pleasure is to talk with him.

King. Good fellow, tell us here the circumstance,
That we for thee may glorify the Lord. 75
What, hast thou been long blind and now restored?

Simp. Born blind, an't please your grace.

Wife. Ay, indeed, was he.

Suf. What woman is this?

Wife. His wife, an't like your worship. 80

Glou. Hadst thou been his mother, thou couldst have
better told.

King. Where wert thou born?

Simp. At Berwick in the north, an't like your grace.

King. Poor soul, God's goodness hath been great to
thee:

Let never day nor night unhallow'd pass, 85
But still remember what the Lord hath done.

Queen. Tell me, good fellow, camest thou here by
chance,

Or of devotion, to this holy shrine?

Simp. God knows, of pure devotion; being call'd
A hundred times and oftener, in my sleep, 90
By good Saint Alban; who said, 'Simpcox, come,
Come, offer at my shrine, and I will help thee.'

71 *Although*] *Though* Pope.

his sight] *sight* Lloyd conj.

77, 80, 83 *an't*] Hanmer. *and't* Ff.

77—82 *Born...born* f] Four lines of
verse, S. Walker conj.

80 *like*] *please* F₄.

81 *Hadst...told.*] One line in Capell;
as prose in Ff.

Hadst...couldst] *Hadst been...thou'd*
Wordsworth.

83 *Berwick*] Rowe. *Barwick* F₁F₃F₄.
Barwick F₂.

84 *Poor...thee:*] As two lines in Ff. See
note (IV).

85 *nor*] or F₃.

unhallow'd] Capell. *unhallowed* Ff.

91 *Simpcox*] Pope, ed. 2 (Theobald).
Symon F₁F₂. *Simon* F₃F₄. *Saunders*
Capell.

92 *help*] *heal* S. Walker conj.

Wife. Most true, forsooth; and many time and oft
Myself have heard a voice to call him so.

Car. What, art thou lame?

Simp. Ay, God Almighty help me!

Suf. How camest thou so?

Simp. A fall off of a tree. 96

Wife. A plum-tree, master.

Glou. How long hast thou been blind?

Simp. O, born so, master.

Glou. What, and wouldst climb a tree?

Simp. But that in all my life, when I was a youth.

Wife. Too true; and bought his climbing very dear.

Glou. Mass, thou lovedst plums well, that wouldst
venture so. 101

Simp. Alas, good master, my wife desired some dam-
sons,

And made me climb, with danger of my life.

Glou. A subtle knave! but yet it shall not serve.

Let me see thine eyes: wink now: now open them: 105
In my opinion yet thou see'st not well.

Simp. Yes, master, clear as day, I thank God and
Saint Alban.

Glou. Say'st thou me so? 'What colour is this cloak of?

Simp. Red, master; red as blood. 110

Glou. Why, that's well said. What colour is my gown
of?

Simp. Black, forsooth: coal-black as jet.

King. Why, then, thou know'st what colour jet is of?

Suf. And yet, I think, jet did he never see.

93 *time*] *a time* F₃F₄.

96 *off of*] F₁F₂ *off* F₃F₄ *from off*
Hanmer.

99 *that in all*] *that in* Rowe (ed. 1).
once in all Pope.

102 *master*] *Sir* Pope.

105 *Let me*] *Let's* Pope.

107 *master*] *om.* Hanmer.

108 *Alban*] F₃F₄. *Albon* F₂. *Albones* F₁.

110—112 *Red...jet.*] Capell ends the
lines *said...forsooth...jet.*

114 *did he*] *he did* F₃F₄.

Glou. But cloaks and gowns, before this day, a many.

Wife. Never, before this day, in all his life. 116

Glou. Tell me, sirrah, what's my name?

Simp. Alas, master, I know not.

Glou. What's his name?

Simp. I know not. 120

Glou. Nor his?

Simp. No, indeed, master.

Glou. What's thine own name?

Simp. Saunder Simpcox, an if it please you, master.

Glou. Then, Saunder, sit there, the lyingest knave in Christendom. If thou hadst been born blind, thou mightst as well have known all our names as thus to name the several colours we do wear. Sight may distinguish of colours, but suddenly to nominate them all, it is impossible. My lords, Saint Alban here hath done a miracle; and would ye not think his cunning to be great, that could restore this cripple to his legs again?

Simp. O master, that you could!

Glou. My masters of Saint Albans, have you not beadles in your town, and things called whips? 135

May. Yes, my lord, if it please your grace.

Glou. Then send for one presently.

May. Sirrah, go fetch the beadle hither straight.

[*Exit an Attendant.*]

124 *an if*] Pope. *and if* Ff.

125—132 *Then.....again*] As prose in (Qq) and Knight (Boswell conj.). See note (v).

135 *Then*] om. Pope.
sit] *sit thee* Keightley.

127 *all*] om. Steevens.
name] *know* F₄.

128 *of*] om. F₂F₃F₄.

129 *it is*] 's Steevens.

131 *and*] om. Hanmer.

131, 132 *his...great*] *it to be great cunning* Keightley.

131 *his*] (Qq) Capell. *it, Ff. that* Rowe.

132 *legs again*] Rowe. *Legges againe.* Ff. *legs?* Pope.

136 *my lord, if it*] *my Lords, if it* F₃F₄.
my good lord, if't Capell.

138 [Exit...] Capell. Exit a Messenger. Theobald. Exit. Ff.

Glou. Now fetch me a stool hither by and by. Now, sirrah, if you mean to save yourself from whipping, leap me over this stool and run away. 141

Simp. Alas, master, I am not able to stand alone: You go about to torture me in vain.

Enter a Beadle with whips.

Glou. Well, sir, we must have you find your legs. Sirrah beadle, whip him till he leap over that same stool.

Bead. I will, my lord. Come on, sirrah; off with your doublet quickly. 147

Simp. Alas, master, what shall I do? I am not able to stand. [*After the Beadle hath hit him once, he leaps over the stool and runs away; and they follow and cry, 'A miracle!'*]

King. O God, seest Thou this, and bearest so long?

Queen. It made me laugh to see the villain run. 151

Glou. Follow the knave; and take this drab away.

Wife. Alas, sir, we did it for pure need.

Glou. Let them be whipped through every market-town, till they come to Berwick, from whence they came.

[*Exeunt Wife, Beadle, Mayor, &c.*]

Car. Duke Humphrey has done a miracle to-day. 156

Suf. True; made the lame to leap and fly away.

Glou. But you have done more miracles than I; You made in a day, my lord, whole towns to fly.

139 *Now*] *New F.*

by and by] om. Pope.

[*Stool set out.* Capell.

150 *bearest*] *Ff.* *bear'st* Pope.

152 *this*] *his* Anon. conj.

153 *Alas*] *Alas, alas* Keightley.

for] *only for* Wordsworth.

154, 155 *Let...came.*] As prose in Pope;

two lines, the first ending *Towne*, in

Ff.

155 *till...from whence*] *Until...whence*

Keightley.

come.....from whence] *do come.....*

whence Capell. *be come.....whence*

Wordsworth.

[*Exeunt...*] Capell. Exit Beadle

with the Woman. Theobald. Exit

Beadle. Rowe. Exit. *Ff.*

156 *has*] *hath* Hanmer.

159 *You...fly*] *You, in a day, my lord,*

mads whole towns fly Capell.

Enter BUCKINGHAM.

King. What tidings with our cousin Buckingham?

Buck. Such as my heart doth tremble to unfold. 161
 A sort of naughty persons, lewdly bent,
 Under the countenance and confederacy
 Of Lady Eleanor, the protector's wife,
 The ringleader and head of all this rout, 165
 Have practised dangerously against your state,
 Dealing with witches and with conjurers:
 Whom we have apprehended in the fact;
 Raising up wicked spirits from under ground,
 Demanding of King Henry's life and death, 170
 And other of your highness' privy-council;
 As more at large your grace shall understand.

Car. [*Aside to Glou.*] And so, my lord protector, by this
 means
 Your lady is forthcoming yet at London.
 This news, I think, hath turn'd your weapon's edge; 175
 'Tis like, my lord, you will not keep your hour.

Glou. Ambitious churchman, leave to afflict my heart:
 Sorrow and grief have vanquish'd all my powers;
 And, vanquish'd as I am, I yield to thee,
 Or to the meanest groom. 180

King. O God, what mischiefs work the wicked ones,
 Heaping confusion on their own heads thereby!

Queen. Gloucester, see here the tainture of thy nest,
 And look thyself be faultless, thou wert best.

Glou. Madam, for myself, to heaven I do appeal, 185
 How I have loved my king and commonweal:

160 SCENE III. Pope.

173—176 [*Aside...*] Rowe.

178 *vanquish'd*] *languish'd* S. Walker
 conj. *banish'd* Vaughan conj.

182 *thereby*] om. Pope.

186 *commonweal*] *commonwealth* Rowe
 (ed. 1).

And, for my wife, I know not how it stands ;
 Sorry I am to hear what I have heard :
 Noble she is, but if she have forgot
 Honour and virtue and conversed with such 190
 As, like to pitch, defile nobility,
 I banish her my bed and company,
 And give her as a prey to law and shame,
 That hath dishonour'd Gloucester's honest name. 194
King. Well, for this night we will repose us here :
 To-morrow toward London back again,
 To look into this business thoroughly,
 And call these foul offenders to their answers,
 And poise the cause in justice' equal scales, 199
 Whose beam stands sure, whose rightful cause prevails.
 [*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *London. The DUKE OF YORK'S garden.*

Enter YORK, SALISBURY, and WARWICK.

York. Now, my good Lords of Salisbury and Warwick,
 Our simple supper ended, give me leave
 In this close walk to satisfy myself,
 In craving your opinion of my title,
 Which is infallible, to England's crown. 5

Sal. My lord, I long to hear it at full.

War. Sweet York, begin : and if thy claim be good,
 The Nevils are thy subjects to command.

199 *the cause*] *the case* Vaughan conj.

199, 200 *scales...stands...prevails.*] *scale*
...stand...prevail! Johnson conj.

200 [*Flourish.*] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

SCENE II.] Capell. SCENE IV. Pope.
 om. Ff.

London.....garden.] Capell. The
 Duke of York's Palace. Pope.

6 *at full*] *thus at full* F₃F₄. *at the full*
 Capell. *at full length* Keightley.

7 *and if*] *an if* S. Walker conj.

York. Then thus :

Edward the Third, my lords, had seven sons : 10
 The first, Edward the Black Prince, Prince of Wales ;
 The second, William of Hatfield, and the third,
 Lionel Duke of Clarence ; next to whom
 Was John of Gaunt, the Duke of Lancaster ;
 The fifth was Edmund Langley, Duke of York ; 15
 The sixth was Thomas of Woodstock, Duke of Gloucester ;
 William of Windsor was the seventh and last.
 Edward the Black Prince died before his father,
 And left behind him Richard, his only son,
 Who after Edward the Third's death reign'd as king ; 20
 Till Henry Bolingbroke, Duke of Lancaster,
 The eldest son and heir of John of Gaunt,
 Crown'd by the name of Henry the Fourth,
 Seized on the realm, deposed the rightful king,
 Sent his poor queen to France, from whence she came,
 And him to Pomfret ; where, as all you know, 26
 Harmless Richard was murder'd traitorously.

War. Father, the duke hath told the truth ;
 Thus got the house of Lancaster the crown.

York. Which now they hold by force and not by right ;
 For Richard, the first son's heir, being dead, 31
 The issue of the next son should have reign'd.

15 *Edmund*] *Edmond* F₁. *Edward* F₂
 F₃F₄.

16 *was Thomas of*] F₁F₂. *Thomas of*
 F₃F₄. *Thomas Rowe* (ed. 2). *was*
Thomas Pope.

20, 46 *the*] om. Hudson (S. Walker conj.).

20 *as*] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

26 *all you*] *you both* (Q₂) Capell. *well*
you Cartwright conj.

27 *Richard.....traitorously*] *Richard...*
traiterously F₁. *King Richard...*
traiterously F₂F₃F₄. *King Richard*

trait'rously was murther'd Pope.
Was harmless Richard murder'd
traitorously Dyce conj.
murder'd] Johnson, reading as Pope.
murthered Ff.

28 *told the truth*] *told the very truth*
 Hanmer. *surely told the truth* Ca-
 pell. *told the truth in this* Keight-
 ley.

29 *crown*] *crown of England* Vaughan
 conj., reading *Father...got* as one
 line.

Sal. But William of Hatfield died without an heir.

York. The third son, Duke of Clarence, from whose line
I claim the crown, had issue, Philippe, a daughter, 35
Who married Edmund Mortimer, Earl of March :
Edmund had issue, Roger Earl of March ;
Roger had issue, Edmund, Anne and Eleanor.

Sal. This Edmund, in the reign of Bolingbroke,
As I have read, laid claim unto the crown ; 40
And, but for Owen Glendower, had been king,
Who kept him in captivity till he died.
But to the rest.

York. His eldest sister, Anne,
My mother, being heir unto the crown,
Married Richard Earl of Cambridge ; who was son 45
To Edmund Langley, Edward the Third's fifth son.
By her I claim the kingdom : she was heir
To Roger Earl of March, who was the son
Of Edmund Mortimer, who married Philippe,
Sole daughter unto Lionel Duke of Clarence : 50
So, if the issue of the elder son
Succeed before the younger, I am king.

War. What plain proceeding is more plain than this ?
Henry doth claim the crown from John of Gaunt,
The fourth son ; York claims it from the third. 55
Till Lionel's issue fails, his should not reign :
It fails not yet, but flourishes in thee

34, 35 *The...daughter,*] As in Pope ; as three lines in Ff.

35, 49 *Philippe*] Hanmer. *Phillip* F₁.
Philip F₂F₃F₄. *Philippa* Collier MS.

43—50 *His eldest...Clarence:*] See note (vi).

51 *elder*] *eldest* F₄.

53 *proceeding is*] F₂F₃F₄. *proceedings*

is F₁. *proceedings are* Malone.

55 *York claims*] *York here claims* Pope. *but York claims* Capell. *while York claims* Dyce (ed. 2). *York doth claim* Hudson.

56 *fails, his*] *fail, he* F₄. *fail, his* Rowe (ed. 2).

57 *flourishes*] *flourisheth* F₄.

And in thy sons, fair slips of such a stock.
 Then, father Salisbury, kneel we together;
 And in this private plot be we the first 60
 That shall salute our rightful sovereign
 With honour of his birthright to the crown.

Both. Long live our sovereign Richard, England's king!

York. We thank you, lords. But I am not your king
 Till I be crown'd, and that my sword be stain'd 65
 With heart-blood of the house of Lancaster;
 And that's not suddenly to be perform'd,
 But with advice and silent secrecy.

Do you as I do in these dangerous days:
 Wink at the Duke of Suffolk's insolence, 70
 At Beaufort's pride, at Somerset's ambition,
 At Buckingham and all the crew of them,
 Till they have snared the shepherd of the flock,
 That virtuous prince, the good Duke Humphrey:
 'Tis that they seek, and they in seeking that 75
 Shall find their deaths, if York can prophesy.

Sal. My lord, break we off; we know your mind at full.

War. My heart assures me that the Earl of Warwick
 Shall one day make the Duke of York a king.

York. And, Nevil, this I do assure myself: 80
 Richard shall live to make the Earl of Warwick
 The greatest man in England but the king. [*Exeunt.*]

59 *together*] *both together* Capell, from (Qq).

64, 65 *We...stain'd*] As in Pope. As three lines, ending *Lords:...Crown'd ...stayn'd*, in Ff.

77 *My lord,...full.*] As prose in Ff. *My*

Lord, here.....full. Rowe (reading as prose). *My lord, here break we off; we know your mind.* Pope. *My lord, break off; we know your mind at full.* Capell.

www.libtool.com.cn
SCENE III. *A hall of justice.*

Sound trumpets. Enter the KING, the QUEEN, GLOUCESTER, YORK, SUFFOLK, and SALISBURY; the DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER, MARGERY JOURDAIN, SOUTHWELL, HUME, and BOLINGBROKE, under guard.

King. Stand forth, Dame Eleanor Cobham, Gloucester's wife :

In sight of God and us, your guilt is great :
 Receive the sentence of the law for sins
 Such as by God's book are adjudged to death.
 You four, from hence to prison back again ; 5
 From thence unto the place of execution :
 The witch in Smithfield shall be burn'd to ashes,
 And you three shall be strangled on the gallows.
 You, madam, for you are more nobly born,
 Despoiled of your honour in your life, 10
 Shall, after three days' open penance done,
 Live in your country here in banishment,
 With Sir John Stanley, in the Isle of Man.

Duch. Welcome is banishment ; welcome were my death.

Glou. Eleanor, the law, thou see'st, hath judged thee :
 I cannot justify whom the law condemns. 16

[Exeunt Duchess and other prisoners, guarded.]

SCENE III.] Capell. SCENE V. Pope.
 A hall.....] Capell. A house near
 Smithfield. Theobald. A room of
 State. Hanmer.
 Sound Trumpets. Enter...] Sub-
 stantially as Theobald and Capell.
 Sound Trumpets. Enter the King
 and State, with Guard, to banish the
 Duchesse. Ff.

1 *Gloucester's wife.*] As in Rowe : a
 separate line in Ff.

3 *sins*] Theobald. *sinne* F₁F₂. *sin* F₄.

3, 4 *sins...are*] *sin...is* Collier MS.

5 [to Jourd. &c. Malone.

9 [to the Dut. Malone.

14 *banishment*] *exile* Pope.
welcome were my] *welcomer my* Anon.
 conj. *welcome were* Wordsworth.

16 *the law*] *law* Pope.
 [Exeunt...guarded.] Theobald. om.
 Ff.

Mine eyes are full of tears, my heart of grief.

Ah, Humphrey, this dishonour in thine age

Will bring thy head with sorrow to the ground!

I beseech your majesty, give me leave to go; 20

Sorrow would solace and mine age would ease.

King. Stay, Humphrey Duke of Gloucester: ere thou
go,

Give up thy staff: Henry will to himself

Protector be; and God shall be my hope,

My stay, my guide and lantern to my feet: 25

And go in peace, Humphrey, no less beloved

Than when thou wert protector to thy king.

Queen. I see no reason why a king of years

Should be to be protected like a child.

God and King Henry govern England's realm. 30

Give up your staff, sir, and the king his realm.

Glou. My staff? here, noble Henry, is my staff:

As willingly do I the same resign

As e'er thy father Henry made it mine;

And even as willingly at thy feet I leave it 35

As others would ambitiously receive it.

Farewell, good king: when I am dead and gone,

May honourable peace attend thy throne! [*Exit.*]

Queen. Why, now is Henry king, and Margaret queen;

20 *I beseech*] *Beseech* Hanmer.

21 *ease*] F_1F_4 . *cease* F_2F_3 .

22—25 *Stay...feet*:] As in Pope. As five lines, ending *Gloster*,...*Staffe*,...*be*,...*guide*,...*feete*:, in Ff.

25 *lantern*] Steevens (1793). *Lanthorne* Ff.

29 *be to be...child*] *be protected like a child by peers* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

30 *God...England's realm.*] Omitted by Capell.

England's realm] *England* Anon. conj.

realm.] *Realms*: F_1F_2 . *Realm*: F_3 , F_4 . *helm*. Steevens, 1793 (Johnson conj.). *helm!*— Dyce and Staunton.

31 *the*] *to th'* Hanmer.

his realm] *his helm* Keightley conj.

32 *staff*:] *staff*; *To think I fain would keep it makes me laugh*. Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

35 *willingly*] *willing* (Qq) Pope.

And Humphrey Duke of Gloucester scarce himself, 40
That bears so shrewd a main; two pulls at once;
His lady banish'd, and a limb lopp'd off.

This staff of honour raught, there let it stand
Where it best fits to be, in Henry's hand.

Suf. Thus droops this lofty pine and hangs his
sprays;

Thus Eleanor's pride dies in her youngest days. 46

York. Lords, let him go. Please it your majesty,
This is the day appointed for the combat;
And ready are the appellant and defendant,
The armourer and his man, to enter the lists, 50
So please your highness to behold the fight.

Queen. Ay, good my lord; for purposely therefore
Left I the court, to see this quarrel tried.

King. O' God's name, see the lists and all things
fit:

Here let them end it; and God defend the right! 55

York. I never saw a fellow worse bested,
Or more afraid to fight, than is the appellant,
The servant of this armourer, my lords.

42, 43 *banish'd, ...raught,*] *banish'd;* and
a limb lopp'd off, *This.....raught.*
Vaughan conj.

off. This...raught,] *F₁.* *off This...
raught,* *F₂.* *off, This...raught,* *F₂F₄.*
off, This.....raught:— Capell. *off,*
This...wrench'd:— Capell conj.

44 *it best*] *F₁F₂.* *best it* *F₂F₄.*

46 *her*] *your* Jackson conj. *it's* quoted
by Rann.

youngest] *F₁F₂.* *younger* *F₂F₄.*
strongest Singer, ed. 2 (Anon. conj.

MS.). *proudest* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier
MS.). *haughtiest* Staunton conj.
longest Anon. conj. *highest* Kin-
near conj.

50 *the lists*] *lists* Collier MS.

54 *O'*] Capell. *A Ff. A' Theobald.*

55 *end it*] *end 't* Wordsworth.

defend] *guard* Pope. *fend* Vaughan
conj.

56 *bested*] *betid* Anon. conj. (Gent. Mag.,
LIX. p. 908).

58 *this*] *the* Rowe (ed. 2).

Enter at one door, HORNER, the Armourer, and his Neighbours, drinking to him so much that he is drunk; and he enters with a drum before him and his staff with a sand-bag fastened to it; and at the other door PETER, his man, with a drum and sand-bag, and 'Prentices drinking to him.

First Neigh. Here, neighbour Horner, I drink to you in a cup of sack: and fear not, neighbour, you shall do well enough. 61

Sec. Neigh. And here, neighbour, here's a cup of charneco.

Third Neigh. And here's a pot of good double beer, neighbour: drink, and fear not your man. 65

Hor. Let it come, i' faith, and I'll pledge you all; and a fig for Peter!

First 'Pren. Here, Peter, I drink to thee: and be not afraid.

Sec. 'Pren. Be merry, Peter, and fear not thy master: fight for credit of the 'prentices. 71

Peter. I thank you all: drink, and pray for me, I pray you; for I think I have taken my last draught in this world. Here, Robin, an if I die, I give thee my apron: and, Will, thou shalt have my hammer: and here, Tom, take all the money that I have. O Lord bless me! I pray God! for I am never able to deal with my master, he hath learnt so much fence already.

Sal. Come, leave your drinking, and fall to blows. Sirrah, what's thy name? 80

Peter. Peter, forsooth.

59 SCENE VI. Pope.

Horner] Malone. om. Ff.

Peter] Malone. om. Ff.

71 credit] F₁F₂. the credit F₃F₄.

74 an if] Capell. and if F₁F₂F₃. if

F₄.

78 fence] F₁F₂. to fence F₃F₄.

79 drinking] drinking both Collier, ed.
2 (Collier MS.), reading as verse.

Sal. Peter! what more?

Peter. Thump. 83

Sal. Thump! then see thou thump thy master well.

Hor. Masters, I am come hither, as it were, upon my man's instigation, to prove him a knave and myself an honest man: and touching the Duke of York, I will take my death, I never meant him any ill, nor the king, nor the queen: and therefore, Peter, have at thee with a downright blow! 90

York. Dispatch: this knave's tongue begins to double. Sound, trumpets, alarum to the combatants!

[*Alarum.* They fight, and Peter strikes him down.

Hor. Hold, Peter, hold! I confess, I confess treason. [Dies.

York. Take away his weapon. Fellow, thank God, and the good wine in thy master's way. 95

Peter. O God, have I overcome mine enemy in this presence? O Peter, thou hast prevailed in right!

King. Go, take hence that traitor from our sight; For by his death we do perceive his guilt: And God in justice hath reveal'd to us 100
The truth and innocence of this poor fellow,
Which he had thought to have murder'd wrongfully.
Come, fellow, follow us for thy reward.

[*Sound a flourish.* *Exeunt.*

87 *I will*] *will* Malone.

90 *blow*] *blow*, as *Bevis of Southampton* fell upon *Ascapart*. Warburton, from (Qq).

91 *this*] for *this* Keightley.

92 *Sound, trumpets*] Collier. *Sound trumpets* Ff.

alarum] *'larum* Capell.

[*Alarum.*] Capell. om. Ff.

93 [Dies.] Theobald. om. Ff.

96 *enemy*] *Enemies* F₁.

97 *right*] *the right* Hanmer.

98 *Go, take hence*] *Go, and take hence* Hanmer. *Go, take away* Capell.

102 *to have murder'd*] *to murder* Pope. *murder'd*] Steevens (1778). *murther'd* Ff.

103 [Sound a flourish.] F₁. Omitted in F₂, F₃, F₄.

www.libtool.com.cn

SCENE IV. *A street.*

Enter GLOUCESTER and his Serving-men, in mourning cloaks.

Glou. Thus sometimes hath the brightest day a cloud ;
And after summer evermore succeeds
Barren winter, with his wrathful nipping cold :
So cares and joys abound, as seasons fleet.
Sirs, what 's o' clock ?

Serv. Ten, my lord. 5

Glou. Ten is the hour that was appointed me
To watch the coming of my punish'd duchess :
Uneath may she endure the flinty streets,
To tread them with her tender-feeling feet.
Sweet Nell, ill can thy noble mind abrook 10
The abject people gazing on thy face,
With envious looks laughing at thy shame,
That erst did follow thy proud chariot-wheels,
When thou didst ride in triumph through the streets.
But, soft ! I think she comes ; and I'll prepare 15
My tear-stain'd eyes to see her miseries.

SCENE IV.] Capell. SCENE VII.

Pope.

A street.] Theobald.

Gloucester and his Serving-men,]

Duke Humfrey and his Men, Ff.

3 *Barren...wrathful nipping*] *The barren...nipping* Pope. *Bare...wrathful nipping* Capell. *The barren...wrathful* Mitford conj. *wrathful nipping*] *wrathful-nipping* S. Walker conj.

4 *abound*] *go round* Capell (Theobald conj.).

5 *o'*] Capell. *a Ff.*

Ten] *'Tis ten o'clock* Steevens conj. *'Tis almost ten* Lettsom conj., from (Qq).

11 *face,*] *face* Collier (Capell's Errata).

12 *laughing*] *F₁. still laughing F₃F₃F₄. and laughing* Hudson (Lettsom conj.).

16 *to see*] *F₁F₃F₄. so see F₂.*

Enter the DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER in a white sheet, and a taper burning in her hand; with SIR JOHN STANLEY, the Sheriff, and Officers.

Serv. So please your grace, we'll take her from the sheriff.

Glou. No, stir not, for your lives; let her pass by.

Duch. Come you, my lord, to see my open shame?
Now thou dost penance too. Look how they gaze! 20
See how the giddy multitude do point,
And nod their heads, and throw their eyes on thee!
Ah, Gloucester, hide thee from their hateful looks,
And, in thy closet pent up, rue my shame,
And ban thine enemies, both mine and thine! 25

Glou. Be patient, gentle Nell; forget this grief.

Duch. Ah, Gloucester, teach me to forget myself!
For whilst I think I am thy married wife,
And thou a prince, protector of this land,
Methinks I should not thus be led along, 30
Mail'd up in shame, with papers on my back,
And follow'd with a rabble that rejoice
To see my tears and hear my deep-fet groans.
The ruthless flint doth cut my tender feet,
And when I start, the envious people laugh, 35
And bid me be advised how I tread.
Ah, Humphrey, can I bear this shameful yoke?
Trow'st thou that e'er I'll look upon the world,
Or count them happy that enjoy the sun?
No; dark shall be my light and night my day; 40
To think upon my pomp shall be my hell.

17 Duchess of Gloucester] Duchesse Ff.
Sir John Stanley,] Theobald. om.
Ff. Capell partly adopts the stage
direction of (Qq).
25 *thine enemies*] *their enemies* F. *our*

enemies Rowe.

33 *deep-fet*] *deep-fetch'd* Pope.

39 *them...enjoy*] Rowe. *them...enjoyes*
Ff. *him...enjoys* Anon. conj. *thee*
...enjoys or *enjoyest* Vaughan conj.

Sometime I'll say, I am Duke Humphrey's wife,
 And he a prince and ruler of the land :
 Yet so he ruled, and such a prince he was,
 As he stood by whilst I, his forlorn duchess, 45
 Was made a wonder and a pointing-stock
 To every idle rascal follower.

But be thou mild and blush not at my shame,
 Nor stir at nothing till the axe of death
 Hang over thee, as, sure, it shortly will ; 50
 For Suffolk—he that can do all in all
 With her that hateth thee and hates us all—
 And York and impious Beaufort, that false priest,
 Have all limed bushes to betray thy wings,
 And, fly thou how thou canst, they'll tangle thee : 55
 But fear not thou, until thy foot be snared,
 Nor never seek prevention of thy foes.

Glou. Ah, Nell, forbear ! thou aimest all awry ;
 I must offend before I be attainted ;
 And had I twenty times so many foes, 60
 And each of them had twenty times their power,
 All these could not procure me any scathe,
 So long as I am loyal, true and crimeless.
 Wouldst have me rescue thee from this reproach ?
 Why, yet thy scandal were not wiped away, 65
 But I in danger for the breach of law.
 Thy greatest help is quiet, gentle Nell :
 I pray thee, sort thy heart to patience ;
 These few days' wonder will be quickly worn.

Enter a Herald.

Her. I summon your grace to his majesty's parliament,

45 *As*] *That* Pope.

54 *betray*] *bewray* Long MS.

69 *These few days' wonder*] *This few-*

days-wonder Hanmer.

70, 71 *I...month.*] *As* in Ff. *As* prose
 in Pope.

Holden at Bury the first of this next month. 71

Glou. And my consent ne'er ask'd herein before!
This is close dealing. Well, I will be there. [*Exit Herald.*
My Nell, I take my leave: and, master sheriff,
Let not her penance exceed the king's commission. 75

Sher. An't please your grace, here my commission stays,
And Sir John Stanley is appointed now
To take her with him to the Isle of Man.

Glou. Must you, Sir John, protect my lady here?

Stan. So am I given in charge, may't please your grace.

Glou. Entreat her not the worse in that I pray 81
You use her well: the world may laugh again;
And I may live to do you kindness if
You do it her: and so, Sir John, farewell!

Duch. What, gone, my lord, and bid me not farewell!

Glou. Witness my tears, I cannot stay to speak. 86
[*Exeunt Gloucester and Serving-men.*

Duch. Art thou gone too? all comfort go with thee!
For none abides with me: my joy is death,—
Death, at whose name I oft have been afraid,
Because I wish'd this world's eternity. 90
Stanley, I prithee, go, and take me hence;
I care not whither, for I beg no favour,
Only convey me where thou art commanded.

Stan. Why, madam, that is to the Isle of Man;
There to be used according to your state. 95

Duch. That's bad enough, for I am but reproach:

71 *this*] *the* (Qq) Capell.

73 [*Exit Herald.*] Theobald. om. Ff.

75 *exceed*] *pass* Capell conj.

76 *An't*] Hanmer. *And't* Ff.
your] *you* F₂.

79 *here*] *hence* Heath conj. *there* Hud-
son (S. Walker conj.).

83, 84 *And...farewell*] As in Pope.

The lines end *her...farewell* in Ff.

86 [*Exeunt...*] *Exeunt* G. and Servants.
Capell. *Exit* Gloster. Ff.

87 *gone too*] F₂F₃F₄. *gone to*] F₁.
gone so] Collier, ed. 2 (Collier
MS.).

89 *afear'd*] *afraid* Pope.

And shall I then be used reproachfully?

Stan. Like to a duchess, and Duke Humphrey's lady;
According to that state you shall be used.

Duch. Sheriff, farewell, and better than I fare, 100
Although thou hast been conduct of my shame.

Sher. It is my office; and, madam, pardon me.

Duch. Ay, ay, farewell; thy office is discharged.
Come, Stanley, shall we go?

Stan. Madam, your penance done, throw off this sheet,
And go we to attire you for our journey. 108

Duch. My shame will not be shifted with my sheet:
No, it will hang upon my richest robes,
And show itself, attire me how I can. 109

Go, lead the way; I long to see my prison. [Exeunt.

ACT III.

SCENE I. *The Abbey at Bury St Edmund's.*

*Sound a Sennet. Enter KING, QUEEN, CARDINAL BEAUFORT, SUFFOLK,
YORK, BUCKINGHAM, SALISBURY and WARWICK to the Parliament.*

King. I muse my Lord of Gloucester is not come:
'Tis not his wont to be the hindmost man,
Whate'er occasion keeps him from us now.

Queen. Can you not see? or will ye not observe
The strangeness of his alter'd countenance? 5
With what a majesty he bears himself,

98 *Like to*] *No*; *like* Rowe.
105 *Madam, ... sheet,*] One line in Pope;
two, the first ending *done*, in Ff.
106 *our*] *your* S. Walker conj.
ACT III. SCENE I.] Pope. om. Ff.
The Abbey...] At Bury. Theobald.

St Edmund's Bury. Hanmer. Bury.
A Room in the Abbey. Capell.
Cardinal Beaufort.] Cardinal, Ff.
See note (vii).
4 *will ye*] *will you* (Qq) Theobald.

How insolent of late he is become,
 How proud, how peremptory, and unlike himself?
 We know the time since he was mild and affable,
 And if we did but glance a far-off look, 10
 Immediately he was upon his knee,
 That all the court admired him for submission :
 But meet him now, and, be it in the morn,
 When every one will give the time of day,
 He knits his brow and shows an angry eye, 15
 And passeth by with stiff unbowed knee,
 Disdaining duty that to us belongs.
 Small curs are not regarded when they grin ;
 But great men tremble when the lion roars ;
 And Humphrey is no little man in England. 20
 First note that he is near you in descent,
 And should you fall, he is the next will mount.
 Me seemeth then it is no policy,
 Respecting what a rancorous mind he bears,
 And his advantage following your decease, 25
 That he should come about your royal person,
 Or be admitted to your highness' council.
 By flattery hath he won the commons' hearts,
 And when he please to make commotion,
 'Tis to be fear'd they all will follow him. 30
 Now 'tis the spring, and weeds are shallow-rooted ;
 Suffer them now, and they'll o'ergrow the garden,
 And choke the herbs for want of husbandry.
 The reverent care I bear unto my lord
 Made me collect these dangers in the duke. 35
 If it be fond, call it a woman's fear ;

8 *How proud, how peremptory*] *How* F₃, *himselſe* F₄, *himself!* Rowe.
peremptory Pope. *How proud, per-* 10 *And if*] *An if* Delius conj.
emptory Steevens (1793). 28 *commons'*] *common* Pope (ed. 2).
himselſe!] Johnson. *himselſe*. F₁F₂, 35 *Made*] *Makes* Hanmer.

Which fear if better reasons can supplant,
 I will subscribe and say I wrong'd the duke.
 My Lord of Suffolk, Buckingham, and York,
 Reprove my allegation, if you can ; 40
 Or else conclude my words effectual.

Suf. Well hath your highness seen into this duke ;
 And, had I first been put to speak my mind,
 I think I should have told your grace's tale.
 The duchess by his subornation, 45
 Upon my life, began her devilish practices :
 Or, if he were not privy to those faults,
 Yet, by reputing of his high descent,
 As next the king he was successive heir,
 And such high vaunts of his nobility, 50
 Did instigate the bedlam brain-sick duchess
 By wicked means to frame our sovereign's fall.
 Smooth runs the water where the brook is deep ;
 And in his simple show he harbours treason.
 The fox barks not when he would steal the lamb. 55
 No, no, my sovereign ; Gloucester is a man
 Unsounded yet and full of deep deceit.

Car. Did he not, contrary to form of law,
 Devise strange deaths for small offences done ?

York. And did he not, in his protectorship, 60
 Levy great sums of money through the realm
 For soldiers' pay in France, and never sent it ?
 By means whereof the towns each day revolted.

Buck. Tut, these are petty faults to faults unknown,
 Which time will bring to light in smooth Duke Humphrey.

39 *Lord*] *lords* Pope.

40 *allegation*] *allegations* Collier MS.

46 *life, began*] Pope. *Life began* Ff.
practices] *practise* S. Walker conj.

48 *by reputing*] *by repeating* Rowe. *the*

repeating Hanmer.

53 *deep*] *deepest* Capell, from (Qq).

54 *And...treason.*] Placed after line 57
 by Keightley.

62 *senz*] *send* Anon. conj.

King. My lords, at once: the care you have of us, 66
 To mow down thorns that would annoy our foot,
 Is worthy praise: but, shall I speak my conscience,
 Our kinsman Gloucester is as innocent
 From meaning treason to our royal person, 70
 As is the sucking lamb or harmless dove:
 The duke is virtuous, mild and too well given
 To dream on evil or to work my downfall.

Queen. Ah, what's more dangerous than this fond
 affiance!
 Seems he a dove? his feathers are but borrow'd, 75
 For he's disposed as the hateful raven:
 Is he a lamb? his skin is surely lent him,
 For he's inclined as is the ravenous wolf.
 Who cannot steal a shape that means deceit?
 Take heed, my lord; the welfare of us all 80
 Hangs on the cutting short that fraudulent man.

Enter SOMERSET.

Som. All health unto my gracious sovereign!

King. Welcome, Lord Somerset. What news from
 France?

Som. That all your interest in those territories
 Is utterly bereft you; all is lost. 85

King. Cold news, Lord Somerset: but God's will be
 done!

York. [*Aside*] Cold news for me; for I had hope of
 France

66 *once*:] *once*, Wordsworth.

68 *conscience*,] Ff. *conscience*? Pope.

76 *he's*] *he is* F₄.

77 *is*] *was* F₄.

78 *is...wolf*] Rowe. *is...Wolues* Ff. *are*

...wolves Malone. *the ravenous wolves*

Vaughan conj.

84 *your*] *our* F₄.

87 [*Aside*] Rowe.

As firmly as I hope for fertile England.
 Thus are my blossoms blasted in the bud,
 And caterpillars eat my leaves away;
 But I will remedy this gear ere long,
 Or sell my title for a glorious grave.

90

Enter GLOUCESTER.

Glou. All happiness unto my lord the king!
 Pardon, my liege, that I have stay'd so long.

Suf. Nay, Gloucester, know that thou art come too
 soon, 95

Unless thou wert more loyal than thou art:
 I do arrest thee of high treason here.

Glou. Well, Suffolk, thou shalt not see me blush,
 Nor change my countenance for this arrest:
 A heart unspotted is not easily daunted. 100

The purest spring is not so free from mud
 As I am clear from treason to my sovereign:
 Who can accuse me? wherein am I guilty?

York. 'Tis thought, my lord, that you took bribes of
 France,
 And, being protector, stay'd the soldiers' pay; 105
 By means whereof his highness hath lost France.

Glou. Is it but thought so? what are they that think it?
 I never robb'd the soldiers of their pay,
 Nor ever had one penny bribe from France.
 So help me God, as I have watch'd the night, 110
 Ay, night by night, in studying good for England!

88 *hope*] *hop'd* Rowe (ed. 1).

93 SCENE II. Pope.

98 *Suffolk, thou*] F₁. *Suffolk, yet thou*
 F₂F₃F₄. *Suffolk's duke, thou* Malone,
 from (Qq). *Suffolk, well, thou* Dyce,
 ed. 2 (S. Walker conj.).

104 *'Tis...France,*] One line in Pope;
 two, the first ending *Lord*, in Ff.

107 *Is...it?*] One line in Pope; two in
 Ff.

109 *Nor ever*] *Nor never* F₄.

That doit that e'er I wrested from the king,
 Or any groat I hoarded to my use,
 Be brought against me at my trial-day!
 No; many a pound of mine own proper store, 115
 Because I would not tax the needy commons,
 Have I dispursed to the garrisons,
 And never ask'd for restitution.

Car. It serves you well, my lord, to say so much.

Glou. I say no more than truth, so help me God! 120

York. In your protectorship you did devise
 Strange tortures for offenders never heard of,
 That England was defamed by tyranny.

Glou. Why, 'tis well known that, whiles I was pro-
 tector,

Pity was all the fault that was in me; 125

For I should melt at an offender's tears,
 And lowly words were ransom for their fault.

Unless it were a bloody murderer,
 Or foul felonious thief that fleeced poor passengers,
 I never gave them condign punishment: 130

Murder indeed, that bloody sin, I tortured
 Above the felon or what trespass else.

Suf. My lord, these faults are easy, quickly answer'd:

But mightier crimes are laid unto your charge,
 Whereof you cannot easily purge yourself. 135

I do arrest you in his highness' name;
 And here commit you to my lord cardinal
 To keep, until your further time of trial.

115 *mine*] *my* Rowe.

117 *dispursed*] *disbursed* F₄.

124 *whiles*] Ff. *while* Johnson. *whilst*
 Capell.

127 *fault*] *guilt* Vaughan conj.

128 *murderer*] Johnson. *Murtherer* Ff.

131 *Murder*] Johnson. *Murther* Ff.

133 *easy*] *easily* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier
 MS.). *very* S. Walker conj. om.
 Wordsworth.

answer'd] *answered* Wordsworth.

134 *mightier*] *weightier* Hudson (S.
 Walker conj.).

137 *you*] om. Capell.

King. My Lord of Gloucester, 'tis my special hope
That you will clear yourself from all suspect: 140
My conscience tells me you are innocent.

Glou. Ah, gracious lord, these days are dangerous:
Virtue is choked with foul ambition,
And charity chased hence by rancour's hand;
Foul subornation is predominant, 145
And equity exiled your highness' land.
I know their complot is to have my life;
And if my death might make this island happy,
And prove the period of their tyranny,
I would expend it with all willingness: 150
But mine is made the prologue to their play;
For thousands more, that yet suspect no peril,
Will not conclude their plotted tragedy.
Beaufort's red sparkling eyes blab his heart's malice,
And Suffolk's cloudy brow his stormy hate; 155
Sharp Buckingham unburthens with his tongue
The envious load that lies upon his heart;
And dogged York, that reaches at the moon,
Whose overweening arm I have pluck'd back,
By false accuse doth level at my life: 160
And you, my sovereign lady, with the rest,
Causeless have laid disgraces on my head,
And with your best endeavour have stirr'd up
My liefest liege to be mine enemy:
Ay, all of you have laid your heads together— 165
Myself had notice of your conventicles—

140 *suspect*] Capell. *suspence* Ff. *suspicion* Rowe. *suspects* Malone (Steevens).

151 *mine is*] *I am* Hudson (Lettsom conj.), from (Qq).

151, 152 *play; For thousands more,*] *play, For thousands more* Vaughan

conj.

156 *unburthens*] *unburdens* Johnson.

163 *endeavour*] *endeavours* Rowe (ed. 2).

166 *notice*] *note* Wordsworth (Anon. conj. and Vaughan conj.).

And all to make away my guiltless life.

I shall not want false witness to condemn me,

Nor store of treasons to augment my guilt;

The ancient proverb will be well effected:

'A staff is quickly found to beat a dog.'

170

Car. My liege, his railing is intolerable:

If those that care to keep your royal person

From treason's secret knife and traitors' rage

Be thus upbraided, chid and rated at,

175

And the offender granted scope of speech,

'Twill make them cool in zeal unto your grace.

Suf. Hath he not twit our sovereign lady here

With ignominious words, though clerkly couch'd,

As if she had suborned some to swear

180

False allegations to o'erthrow his state?

Queen. But I can give the loser leave to chide.

Glou. Far truer spoke than meant: I lose, indeed;

Beshrew the winners, for they play'd me false!

And well such losers may have leave to speak.

185

Buck. He'll wrest the sense and hold us here all day:

Lord cardinal, he is your prisoner.

Car. Sirs, take away the duke, and guard him sure.

Glou. Ah! thus King Henry throws away his crutch,

Before his legs be firm to bear his body.

190

Thus is the shepherd beaten from thy side,

And wolves are gnarling who shall gnaw thee first.

Ah, that my fear were false! ah, that it were!

167 *And...life.*] Omitted in Variorum
ed. (1803, 1813, 1821).

make] *take* Capell conj.

169 *treasons*] *reasons* S. Walker conj.

170 *effected*] *affected* Reed (1803).

172 *his*] *this* Anon. conj.

174 *traitors'*] Capell. *Traitors* F₁F₂.

Traitor's F₃F₄.

179—181 *couch'd,.....state* F] Capell.

coucht?...*state*. Ff.

184 *play'd*] *play* Capell.

188 *take*] *takes* F₃.

193 *my*] *may* F₃.

For, good King Henry, thy decay I fear. [*Exit, guarded.*]

King. My lords, what to your wisdoms seemeth best,
Do or undo, as if ourself were here. 196

Queen. What, will your highness leave the parliament?

King. Ay, Margaret; my heart is drown'd with grief,
Whose flood begins to flow within mine eyes,

My body round engirt with misery, 200

For what's more miserable than discontent?

Ah, uncle Humphrey! in thy face I see

The map of honour, truth and loyalty:

And yet, good Humphrey, is the hour to come

That e'er I proved thee false or fear'd thy faith. 205

What louring star now envies thy estate,

That these great lords and Margaret our queen

Do seek subversion of thy harmless life?

Thou never didst them wrong nor no man wrong;

And as the butcher takes away the calf, 210

And binds the wretch, and beats it when it strays,

Bearing it to the bloody slaughter-house,

Even so remorseless have they borne him hence;

And as the dam runs lowing up and down,

Looking the way her harmless young one went, 215

And can do nought but wail her darling's loss,

Even so myself bewails good Gloucester's case

With sad unhelpful tears, and with dimm'd eyes

Look after him and cannot do him good,

194 [*Exit, guarded.*] Theobald. Exit
Gloster. F₁. Exit Gloucester. F₂F₃
F₄.

195 SCENE III. Pope.
wisdoms] *wisdom* Rowe.

196 [*Rising.* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier
MS.).

202 *face*] *sad face* F₄.

206—208 *estate, ... life?*] Capell. *estate?*

...*Life.* Ff.

209 *Thou*] *That* Rowe.

211 *strays*] *strives* Theobald (Thirlby
conj.). *strains* Vaughan conj.

214 *dam*] *Damme* F₁F₂F₃. *Dame* F₄.

217 *bewails*] *bewail* Rowe (ed. 2).

218 *dimmi'd*] *dimn'd* Ff.

eyes] *eyes*, Rowe. *eyes*; Ff.

219 *Look*] *Looks* Vaughan conj.

So mighty are his vowed enemies. 220
 His fortunes I will weep, and 'twixt each groan
 Say 'Who's a traitor? Gloucester he is none.'

[*Exeunt all but Queen, Cardinal Beaufort, Suffolk,
 and York. Somerset remains apart.*]

Queen. Free lords, cold snow melts with the sun's
 hot beams.

Henry my lord is cold in great affairs,
 Too full of foolish pity, and Gloucester's show 225
 Beguiles him, as the mournful crocodile
 With sorrow snares relenting passengers,
 Or as the snake roll'd in a flowering bank,
 With shining checker'd slough, doth sting a child
 That for the beauty thinks it excellent. 230

Believe me, lords, were none more wise than I—
 And yet herein I judge mine own wit good—
 This Gloucester should be quickly rid the world,
 To rid us from the fear we have of him.

Car. That he should die is worthy policy; 235
 But yet we want a colour for his death:
 'Tis meet he be condemn'd by course of law.

Suf. But, in my mind, that were no policy:
 The king will labour still to save his life,
 The commons haply rise, to save his life; 240
 And yet we have but trivial argument,
 More than mistrust, that shows him worthy death.

York. So that, by this, you would not have him die.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 222 <i>Who's]</i> whose F. <i>traitor f]</i> traitor, Malone. [Exeunt...] Edd. Exit. Ff. | <i>Free lords]</i> See, lords Hanmer. <i>Fair lords</i> Dyce, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). |
| 223 <i>Queen.</i> <i>Free lords,</i>] Manent Queen, three lords. <i>Queen.</i> <i>My lords,</i> Edd. conj. <i>Free...beams.]</i> One line in Pope; two, the first ending <i>Lords,</i> in Ff. | 225 <i>and]</i> om. Pope. 228 <i>in]</i> on Capell. <i>flowering]</i> flowry Rowe. 232 <i>mine]</i> F ₁ F ₂ . my F ₃ F ₄ . 241 <i>And yet]</i> As yet Collier MS. |

Suf. Ah, York, no man alive so fain as I!

York. 'Tis York that hath more reason for his death.
But, my lord cardinal, and you, my Lord of Suffolk, 246
Say as you think, and speak it from your souls:

Were't not all one, an empty eagle were set
To guard the chicken from a hungry kite,
As place Duke Humphrey for the king's protector? 250

Queen. So the poor chicken should be sure of death.

Suf. Madam, 'tis true; and were't not madness, then,
To make the fox surveyor of the fold?
Who being accused a crafty murderer,
His guilt should be but idly posted over, 255
Because his purpose is not executed.

No; let him die, in that he is a fox,
By nature proved an enemy to the flock,
Before his chaps be stain'd with crimson blood,
As Humphrey, proved by reasons, to my liege. 260
And do not stand on quillets how to slay him:

Be it by gins, by snares, by subtlety,
Sleeping or waking, 'tis no matter how,
So he be dead; for that is good deceit
Which mates him first that first intends deceit. 265

Queen. Thrice-noble Suffolk, 'tis resolutely spoke.

Suf. Not resolute, except so much were done;
For things are often spoke and seldom meant:
But that my heart accordeth with my tongue,

245 [Aside. S. Walker conj.

more] *most* Hudson (Collier MS.).

246 *you*] om. Hanmer.

my lord of] *lord* Collier MS.

249 *the*] *a* Anon. conj.

chicken] F₁. *Chicks* F₂. *Chick* F₃,
F₄.

254 *murderer*] Johnson. *Murthorer* Ff.

260 *Humphrey,*] *Humphry's* Hanmer

(and Mason conj.).

reasons] *treasons* Hudson (Heath
conj.). *reason* Mason conj. *treason*
Wordsworth, reading as Han-
mer.

264 *good deceit*] *good conceit* Delius
conj.

266 'tis] om. Hanmer.

Seeing the deed is meritorious, 270
 And to preserve my sovereign from his foe,
 Say but the word, and I will be his priest.

Car. But I would have him dead, my Lord of Suffolk,
 Ere you can take due orders for a priest :
 Say you consent and censure well the deed, 275
 And I'll provide his executioner,
 I tender so the safety of my liege.

Suf. Here is my hand, the deed is worthy doing.

Queen. And so say I.

York. And I: and now we three have spoke it, 280
 It skills not greatly who impugns our doom.

Enter a Post.

Post. Great lords, from Ireland am I come amain,
 To signify that rebels there are up,
 And put the Englishmen unto the sword :
 Send succours, lords, and stop the rage betime, 285
 Before the wound do grow incurable ;
 For, being green, there is great hope of help.

Car. A breach that craves a quick expedient stop!
 What counsel give you in this weighty cause?

York. That Somerset be sent as regent thither: 290
 'Tis meet that lucky ruler be employ'd ;
 Witness the fortune he hath had in France.

Som. If York, with all his far-fet policy,
 Had been the regent there instead of me,
 He never would have stay'd in France so long. 295

279, 280 *Queen. And so say I.* *York.*

And I: and now] *York. And so*
say I; and now Vaughan conj.

280 *three]* om. Steevens conj.

spoke] *spoken* Hanmer.

282 SCENE IV. Pope.

286 *incurable]* *incurable* F₃F₄.

288 *quick expedient]* *quick-expedient* S.
 Walker conj.

290 *as]* F₁. a F₂F₃F₄.

291 *that]* *the* F₄.

293 *far-fet]* *far-fetch'd* Pope.

York. No, not to lose it all, as thou hast done :
 I rather would have lost my life betimes
 Than bring a burthen of dishonour home,
 By staying there so long till all were lost.
 Show me one scar character'd on thy skin : 300
 Men's flesh preserved so whole do seldom win.

Queen. Nay, then, this spark will prove a raging fire,
 If wind and fuel be brought to feed it with :
 No more, good York ; sweet Somerset, be still :
 Thy fortune, York, hadst thou been regent there, 305
 Might happily have proved far worse than his.

York. What, worse than nought ? nay, then, a shame
 take all !

Som. And, in the number, thee that wishest shame !

Car. My Lord of York, try what your fortune is.
 The uncivil kernes of Ireland are in arms, 310
 And temper clay with blood of Englishmen :
 To Ireland will you lead a band of men,
 Collected choicely, from each county some,
 And try your hap against the Irishmen ?

York. I will, my lord, so please his majesty. 315

Suf. Why, our authority is his consent,
 And what we do establish he confirms :
 Then, noble York, take thou this task in hand.

York. I am content : provide me soldiers, lords,
 Whiles I take order for mine own affairs. 320

Suf. A charge, Lord York, that I will see perform'd.
 But now return we to the false Duke Humphrey.

Car. No more of him ; for I will deal with him,

298 *burthen*] *burden* Johnson.

301 *Men's flesh preserved*] *Men flesh-*
preserved Vaughan conj.
do] *doth* Hanmer.

306 *happily*] *F.* *haply* *F₂F₃F₄.*

307 *nought*] Pope. *naught* Ff.

310, 311 *The uncivil.....Englishmen:]*
 Part of the Post's speech, Lettsom
 conj.

313 *county*] *Country* F.

That henceforth he shall trouble us no more.
 And so break off; the day is almost spent: 325
 Lord Suffolk, you and I must talk of that event.

York. My Lord of Suffolk, within fourteen days
 At Bristol I expect my soldiers;
 For there I'll ship them all for Ireland.

Suf. I'll see it truly done, my Lord of York. 330
 [Exeunt all but York.]

York. Now, York, or never, steel thy fearful thoughts,
 And change misdoubt to resolution:
 Be that thou hopest to be, or what thou art
 Resign to death; it is not worth the enjoying:
 Let pale-faced fear keep with the mean-born man, 335
 And find no harbour in a royal heart.
 Faster than spring-time showers comes thought on thought,
 And not a thought but thinks on dignity.
 My brain more busy than the labouring spider
 Weaves tedious snares to trap mine enemies. 340
 Well, nobles, well, 'tis politicly done,
 To send me packing with an host of men:
 I fear me you but warm the starved snake,
 Who, cherish'd in your breasts, will sting your hearts.
 'Twas men I lack'd, and you will give them me: 345
 I take it kindly; yet be well assured
 You put sharp weapons in a madman's hands.
 Whiles I in Ireland nourish a mighty band,
 I will stir up in England some black storm
 Shall blow ten thousand souls to heaven or hell; 350

- 326 *that event.] this.* Capell conj. *that* 333, 334 *art Resign to death] F₄ art;*
intent. Anon. conj. *that.* Vaughan *Resigne to death F₁F₂F₃.*
 conj. 334 *the] om.* Vaughan conj.
 328 *Bristol] Bristow* Ff. 339 *the] a* Capell.
 330 [Exeunt...] Exeunt. Manet Yorke. 348 *Whiles] Whilset F₄. Whilset* Rowe.
 Ff. *nourish] march* Collier MS. *rais*
 331 SCENE V. Pope. *Cartwright* conj.

And this fell tempest shall not cease to rage
 Until the golden circuit on my head,
 Like to the glorious sun's transparent beams,
 Do calm the fury of this mad-bred flaw.
 And, for a minister of my intent, 355
 I have seduced a headstrong Kentishman,
 John Cade of Ashford,
 To make commotion, as full well he can,
 Under the title of John Mortimer.
 In Ireland have I seen this stubborn Cade 360
 Oppose himself against a troop of kernes,
 And fought so long, till that his thighs with darts
 Were almost like a sharp-quill'd porpentine ;
 And, in the end being rescued, I have seen 365
 Him caper upright like a wild Morisco,
 Shaking the bloody darts as he his bells.
 Full often, like a shag-hair'd crafty kerne,
 Hath he conversed with the enemy,
 And undiscover'd come to me again,
 And given me notice of their villanies. 370
 This devil here shall be my substitute ;
 For that John Mortimer, which now is dead,
 In face, in gait, in speech, he doth resemble :
 By this I shall perceive the commons' mind,
 How they affect the house and claim of York. 375
 Say he be taken, rack'd and tortured,
 I know no pain they can inflict upon him
 Will make him say I moved him to those arms.

354 *mad-bred*] *mad-brain'd* Rowe.357 *Ashford,*] *Ashford, with a headlong crew,* Seymour conj.362 *fought*] *fight* Hanmer.363 *porpentine*] *porcupine* Rowe.364, 365 *seen Him caper...like*] *seen him Caper...like to Capell.* *seen him**Capering...like* Anon. conj.370 *given*] *give* F₄.372 *now is*] *is now* F₄.373 *gait*] Johnson. *gate* Ff.378 *arms*] *aims* Dyce conj. (with-drawn).

Say that he thrive, as 'tis great like he will,
 Why, then from Ireland come I with my strength, 380
 And reap the harvest which that rascal sow'd;
 For Humphrey being dead, as he shall be,
 And Henry put apart, the next for me. [Exit.

SCENE II. *Bury St Edmund's. A room of state.*

Enter certain Murderers, hastily.

First Mur. Run to my Lord of Suffolk; let him know
 We have dispatch'd the duke, as he commanded.

Sec. Mur. O that it were to do! What have we done?
 Didst ever hear a man so penitent?

Enter SUFFOLK.

First Mur. Here comes my lord. 5

Suf. Now, sirs, have you dispatch'd this thing?

First Mur. Ay, my good lord, he's dead.

Suf. Why, that's well said. Go, get you to my house;
 I will reward you for this venturous deed.
 The king and all the peers are here at hand. 10
 Have you laid fair the bed? Is all things well,
 According as I gave directions?

383 *the] then* Collier MS.

SCENE II.] Capell. SCENE VI.

Pope.

Bury...state.] Edd. An apartment
 in the Palace. Theobald. The same.
 Another Room. Capell.

Enter.....] Capell. Enter two or
 three running over the Stage, from
 the Murder of Duke Humfrey.
 Ff.

4, 5 *Didst.....penitent?* First Mur.

Here] First Mur. Didst...penitent?

Here Edd. conj.

5—7 *Here...dead.]* As two lines, the
 first ending *you*, in Steevens (1793).

Hanmer ends the first at *dispatch'd*.

7 *he's] 'tis done, he's* Hanmer.

11 *Is] F₁. are F₂F₃. and are F₄.* See
 note (VIII).

First Mur. 'Tis, my good lord.

Suf. Away! be gone. [*Exeunt Murderers.*]

Sound trumpets. Enter the KING, the QUEEN, CARDINAL BEAUFORT, SOMERSET, with Attendants.

King. Go, call our uncle to our presence straight; 15
Say we intend to try his grace to-day,
If he be guilty, as 'tis published.

Suf. I'll call him presently, my noble lord. [*Exit.*]

King. Lords, take your places; and, I pray you all,
Proceed no straiter 'gainst our uncle Gloucester 20
Than from true evidence of good esteem
He be approved in practice culpable.

Queen. God forbid any malice should prevail,
That faultless may condemn a nobleman!
Pray God he may acquit him of suspicion! 25

King. I thank thee, Nell; these words content me
much.

Re-enter SUFFOLK.

How now! why look'st thou pale? why tremblest thou?
Where is our uncle? what's the matter, Suffolk?

Suf. Dead in his bed, my lord; Gloucester is dead.

Queen. Marry, God forfend! 30

Car. God's secret judgement: I did dream to-night
The duke was dumb and could not speak a word.

[*The King swoons.*]

13 'Tis] *Yes* Rowe.

14 [*Exeunt Murderers.*] Theobald.
Exeunt Ff.

Sound trumpets.] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

Cardinal Beaufort.] Malone. *Cardinal, Theobald. Cardinal, Suffolke,*
Ff.

24 *faultless...a*] *may condemn a faultless* Wordsworth.

26 *thee, Nell;*] *thee* Nell, Ff. *thee: Well,* Theobald. *thee, Meg;* Capell. *thee, Margaret;* Malone. *thee well,* Clark MS. See note (ix).

27 *Re-enter S.*] *Re-enter Suffolk, hastily.* Capell. *Enter S.* Ff.

32 [*The King swoons.*] *King sounds.* F₁F₂F₃. *King swoons.* F₄.

Queen. How fares my lord? Help, lords! the king is dead.

Som. Rear up his body; wring him by the nose.

Queen. Run, go, help, help! O Henry, ope thine eyes!

Suf. He doth revive again: madam, be patient. 36

King. O heavenly God!

Queen. How fares my gracious lord?

Suf. Comfort, my sovereign! gracious Henry, comfort!

King. What, doth my Lord of Suffolk comfort me?

Came he right now to sing a raven's note, 40

Whose dismal tune bereft my vital powers;

And thinks he that the chirping of a wren,

By crying comfort from a hollow breast,

Can chase away the first-conceived sound?

Hide not thy poison with such sugar'd words; 45

Lay not thy hands on me; forbear, I say;

Their touch affrights me as a serpent's sting.

Thou baleful messenger, out of my sight!

Upon thy eye-balls murderous tyranny

Sits in grim majesty, to fright the world. 50

Look not upon me, for thine eyes are wounding:

Yet do not go away: come, basilisk,

And kill the innocent gazer with thy sight;

For in the shade of death I shall find joy;

In life but double death, now Gloucester's dead. 55

Queen. Why do you rate my Lord of Suffolk thus?

Although the duke was enemy to him,

Yet he most Christian-like laments his death:

And for myself, foe as he was to me,

Might liquid tears, or heart-offending groans, 60

Or blood-consuming sighs recall his life,

I would be blind with weeping, sick with groans,

35 [Exeunt Cardinal Beaufort and 38 *comfort*] *comfore* F₂.
Somerset. Ritson conj. 41 *tune*] *tunne* F₂.

Look pale as primrose with blood-drinking sighs,
 And all to have the noble duke alive.
 What know I how the world may deem of me? 65
 For it is known we were but hollow friends:
 It may be judged I made the duke away;
 So shall my name with slander's tongue be wounded,
 And princes' courts be fill'd with my reproach.
 This get I by his death: ay me, unhappy! 70
 To be a queen, and crown'd with infamy!
King. Ah, woe is me for Gloucester, wretched man!
Queen. Be woe for me, more wretched than he is.
 What, dost thou turn away and hide thy face?
 I am no loathsome leper; look on me. 75
 What! art thou, like the adder, waxen deaf?
 Be poisonous too and kill thy forlorn queen.
 Is all thy comfort shut in Gloucester's tomb?
 Why, then, dame Eleanor was ne'er thy joy.
 Erect his statuë and worship it, 80
 And make my image but an alehouse sign.
 Was I for this nigh wreck'd upon the sea,
 And twice by awkward wind from England's bank
 Drove back again unto my native clime?
 What boded this, but well forewarning wind 85

63 *primrose*] *primrose*' S. Walker conj.
blood-drinking] *blood-draining* A-
 non. conj.
 67 *may*] *way* F₄.
 69 *fill'd with my*] F₁F₂F₃. *fill'd with*
 F₄. *filled with* Rowe.
 70 *ay me, unhappy!*] *ah me unhappy!*
 Pope.
 76 *the adder*] *an adder* Rowe.
 78—121 *Is all...so long.*] Struck out in
 Collier MS.
 79, 100 *Eleanor*] *Etianor* Ff. *Margaret*
 Rowe. See note (ix).

80 *statuë and worship it*] Keightley.
Statue, and worship it Ff. *statue,*
and do worship to it Rowe. *statue*
then, and worship it Capell. *statua*
and worship it Dyce.
 82 *wreck'd*] *wreckt* Rowe. *wrack'd* F₁F₂
 F₃. *wrackt* F₄.
 83 *awkward wind*] *adverse winds* Pope.
 84 *clime?*] Rowe. *Clime.* Ff.
 85 *wind*] F₃F₄. *winde* F₁F₂. *winds*
 Pope.
 85—87 *this, but...shore?*] Capell. *this?*
but...Shore. Ff.

Did seem to say 'Seek not a scorpion's nest,
 Nor set no footing on this unkind shore'?
 What did I then, but cursed the gentle gusts,
 And he that loosed them forth their brazen caves;
 And bid them blow towards England's blessed shore, 90
 Or turn our stern upon a dreadful rock?
 Yet Æolus would not be a murderer,
 But left that hateful office unto thee:
 The pretty-vaulting sea refused to drown me,
 Knowing that thou wouldst have me drown'd on shore,
 With tears as salt as sea, through thy unkindness: 96
 The splitting rocks cower'd in the sinking sands,
 And would not dash me with their ragged sides,
 Because thy flinty heart, more hard than they,
 Might in thy palace perish Eleanor. 100
 As far as I could ken thy chalky cliffs,
 When from thy shore the tempest beat us back,
 I stood upon the hatches in the storm,
 And when the dusky sky began to rob
 My earnest-gaping sight of thy land's view, 105
 I took a costly jewel from my neck—
 A heart it was, bound in with diamonds—
 And threw it towards thy land: the sea received it,

87 *no*] a Rowe. *thy* Pope.

88—91 *then, but cursed...rock?* *then?*
But curst...Rocke: Ff. *then, but*
curst...rock? Hanmer.

88 *gentle*] *ungentle* Singer, ed. 2 (Anon.
 MS. conj. and Collier MS.).

89 *he*] *him* Hanmer.

forth] F₁F₂ from F₃F₄.

90 *them*] *him* Vaughan conj.

91 *stern*] *stem* Vaughan conj.

92 *murderer*] Johnson. *murtherer* Ff.

93 *But*] *He* Pope.

94—96 *The...unkindness:*] Put in the

margin by Pope.

94 *pretty-vaulting*] Dyce (S. Walker
 conj.). *pretty vaulting* Ff.

96 *sea*] *he* Vaughan conj.

97 *The...sands,*] *The sinking sands, the*
splitting rocks cow'r'd in, Johnson
 conj.

101 *thy*] *the* Pope.

102 *thy*] *the* Steevens (1793).

105 *earnest-gaping*] *earnest-gasing* A-
 non. conj.

thy] F₁. *the* F₂F₃F₄.

And so I wish'd thy body might my heart :
 And even with this I lost fair England's view, 110
 And bid mine eyes be packing with my heart,
 And call'd them blind and dusky spectacles,
 For losing ken of Albion's wished coast.
 How often have I tempted Suffolk's tongue,
 The agent of thy foul inconstancy, 115
 To sit and witch me, as Ascanius did,
 When he to madding Dido would unfold
 His father's acts commenced in burning Troy !
 Am I not witch'd like her ? or thou not false like him ?
 Ay me, I can no more ! die, Eleanor ! 120
 For Henry weeps that thou dost live so long.

Noise within. Enter WARWICK, SALISBURY, and many Commons.

War. It is reported, mighty sovereign,
 That good Duke Humphrey traitorously is murder'd
 By Suffolk and the Cardinal Beaufort's means.
 The commons, like an angry hive of bees 125
 That want their leader, scatter up and down,
 And care not who they sting in his revenge.
 Myself have calm'd their spleenful mutiny,
 Until they hear the order of his death. 129

King. That he is dead, good Warwick, 'tis too true ;
 But how he died God knows, not Henry :

116 *witch*] Theobald. *watch* Ff.

Ascanius] *Ascanius'* Vaughan conj.

119 *or thou not*] *art thou not* Hanmer.
thou Steevens conj.

120 *Ay*] *Aye* Ff. *Ah* Rowe.

Eleanor] *Elinor* Ff. *Margaret*
 Rowe. See note (ix).

121 *dost*] *didst* Rowe.

Enter...] Commons are seen pressing
 towards the Door, with Salis-

bury keeping them back : Enter
 Warwick, Capell.

Salisbury] Theobald. om. Ff.

123 *murder'd*] Johnson. *murdred* F₁.
murdered F₂. *murthered* F₃F₄.

124 *Suffolk*] *Suffolke*, F₁. *Suffolkes*, F₂.
Suffolk, F₃F₄.

127 *who...his*] *who...their* Pope. *whom*
...their Hanmer.

Enter his chamber, view his breathless corpse,
And comment then upon his sudden death.

War. That shall I do, my liege. Stay, Salisbury,
With the rude multitude till I return. [Exit. 135

King. O Thou that judgest all things, stay my thoughts,
My thoughts, that labour to persuade my soul
Some violent hands were laid on Humphrey's life!
If my suspect be false, forgive me, God;
For judgement only doth belong to Thee. 140
Fain would I go to chafe his paly lips
With twenty thousand kisses, and to drain
Upon his face an ocean of salt tears,
To tell my love unto his dumb deaf trunk,
And with my fingers feel his hand unfeeling: 145
But all in vain are these mean obsequies;
And to survey his dead and earthy image,
What were it but to make my sorrow greater?

Re-enter WARWICK and others, bearing GLOUCESTER'S body on a bed.

War. Come hither, gracious sovereign, view this body.

King. That is to see how deep my grave is made;
For with his soul fled all my worldly solace, 151
For seeing him I see my life in death.

War. As surely as my soul intends to live
With that dread King, that took our state upon him

134 *shall I] I shall* Rowe.

135 [Exit.] Warwick goes in. Theobald.
om. Ff. Exit, to an inner Room.
Capell. Warwick goes into an
inner room, and Salisbury retires.
Steevens (1793).

142 *drain] rain* Rann (Capell conj.).

146 *mean] meant* Vaughan conj.

147 *earthy] F₁. earthly F₂F₃F₄.*

149 *Re-enter.....bed.]* Edd. Bed put
forth. Ff (after line 146). Warwicke
drawes the curtaines and showes

Duke Humphrey in his bed. (Qq).
A Door is thrown open, and Gloster
discover'd dead upon his Bed:
Warwick, and Others, by him. Ca-
pell.

152 *For...life in death] For...life is
Death F₄. For.....death in life
Johnson conj. And...death in life
Capell. And...life in death* Rann.
So.....myself in death Vaughan
conj.

To free us from his father's wrathful curse, 155
 I do believe that violent hands were laid
 Upon the life of this thrice-famed duke.

Suf. A dreadful oath, sworn with a solemn tongue!
 What instance gives Lord Warwick for his vow?

War. See how the blood is settled in his face. 160
 Oft have I seen a timely-parted ghost,
 Of ashy semblance, meagre, pale and bloodless
 Being all descended to the labouring heart;
 Who, in the conflict that it holds with death,
 Attracts the same for aidance 'gainst the enemy; 165
 Which with the heart there cools and ne'er returneth
 To blush and beautify the cheek again.

But see, his face is black and full of blood,
 His eye-balls further out than when he lived,
 Staring full ghastly like a strangled man; 170
 His hair uprear'd, his nostrils stretch'd with struggling;
 His hands abroad display'd, as one that grasp'd
 And tugg'd for life and was by strength subdued:
 Look, on the sheets his hair, you see, is sticking;
 His well-proportion'd beard made rough and rugged, 175
 Like to the summer's corn by tempest lodged.
 It cannot be but he was murder'd here;
 The least of all these signs were probable.

Suf. Why, Warwick, who should do the duke to death?
 Myself and Beaufort had him in protection; 180

159 *vow f]* *vow.* F₁.

161 *ghost] coars* Roderick conj.

162 *bloodless] blood-left* Hanmer.

After this Keightley marks the omission of a line.

165 *aidance'gainst] aid against* Vaughan conj.

171 *nostrils] nostris* F₂.

174 *Look, on the sheets his]* Edd. *Looks*

on the sheets his F₁F₂. *Look on the sheets, his* F₃F₄. *Look on the sheets; his Pope.* *Look, on the sheets, his Capell's Errata.*

175 *rough] ruffe* F₁F₂F₃. *ruff* F₄.

rugged] F₁. *rugg'd* F₂F₃F₄.

177 *murder'd] muredred* F₁F₂F₃. *murdered* F₄.

179, 182 *duke] F₃F₄.* *D.* F₁F₂.

And we, I hope, sir, are no murderers.

War. But both of you were vow'd Duke Humphrey's
foes,

And you, forsooth, had the good duke to keep :
'Tis like you would not feast him like a friend ;
And 'tis well seen he found an enemy. 185

Queen. Then you, belike, suspect these noblemen
As guilty of Duke Humphrey's timeless death.

War. Who finds the heifer dead and bleeding fresh,
And sees fast by a butcher with an axe,
But will suspect 'twas he that made the slaughter? 190
Who finds the partridge in the puttock's nest,
But may imagine how the bird was dead,
Although the kite soar with unbloodied beak?
Even so suspicious is this tragedy.

Queen. Are you the butcher, Suffolk? Where's your
knife? 195

Is Beaufort term'd a kite? Where are his talons?

Suf. I wear no knife to slaughter sleeping men ;
But here's a vengeful sword, rusted with ease,
That shall be scoured in his rancorous heart
That slanders me with murder's crimson badge. 200
Say, if thou darest, proud Lord of Warwickshire,
That I am faulty in Duke Humphrey's death.

[*Exeunt Cardinal, Somerset, and others.*]

War. What dares not Warwick, if false Suffolk dare
him?

Queen. He dares not calm his contumelious spirit,

181 *sir*] *sirs* Rowe.

murderers] Johnson. *murthers*
Ff.

182 *were...foes*] F₁. *were...death* F₂.
have...death F₃F₄. See note (x).

186 *Then*] *Than* F₁.

192 *was dead*] *is dead* or *was dede'd* or

was ended Vaughan conj.

195 *your*] Ff. *the* Rowe.

200 *murder's*] Johnson. *Murthers* F₁F₂.
Murther's F₃F₄.

202 [*Exeunt.....others.*] Capell. Exit
Cardinal. (Qq). om. Ff.

204 *He dares*] *He dare* F₄.

Nor cease to be an arrogant controller, 205
 Though Suffolk dare him twenty thousand times.

War. Madam, be still; with reverence may I say;
 For every word you speak in his behalf
 Is slander to your royal dignity.

Suf. Blunt-witted lord, ignoble in demeanour! 210
 If ever lady wrong'd her lord so much,
 Thy mother took into her blameful bed
 Some stern untutor'd churl, and noble stock
 Was graft with crab-tree slip; whose fruit thou art
 And never of the Nevils' noble race. 215

War. But that the guilt of murder bucklers thee,
 And I should rob the deathsman of his fee,
 Quitting thee thereby of ten thousand shames,
 And that my sovereign's presence makes me mild,
 I would, false murderous coward, on thy knee 220
 Make thee beg pardon for thy passed speech,
 And say it was thy mother that thou meant'st,
 That thou thyself wast born in bastardy;
 And after all this fearful homage done,
 Give thee thy hire and send thy soul to hell, 225
 Pernicious blood-sucker of sleeping men!

Suf. Thou shalt be waking while I shed thy blood,
 If from this presence thou darest go with me.

War. Away even now, or I will drag thee hence:
 Unworthy though thou art, I'll cope with thee 230
 And do some service to Duke Humphrey's ghost.

[*Exeunt Suffolk and Warwick.*]

King. What stronger breastplate than a heart un-
 tainted!

Thrice is he arm'd that hath his quarrel just,

207 *say*] *say it* Capell, from (Qq).
 216 *murder*] Johnson. *murther* Ff.
 225 *send*] F₁F₄. om. F₂F₃.

231 [Exeunt...] Hanmer. Exeunt. Ff.
 232 SCENE VII. Pope.

And he but naked, though lock'd up in steel,
 Whose conscience with injustice is corrupted. 235
 www.libtool.com.cn [A noise within.]

Queen. What noise is this?

Re-enter SUFFOLK and WARWICK, with their weapons drawn.

King. Why, how now, lords! your wrathful weapons
 drawn

Here in our presence! dare you be so bold?
 Why, what tumultuous clamour have we here?

Suf. The traitorous Warwick with the men of Bury
 Set all upon me, mighty sovereign. 241

Sal. [to the Commons, entering] Sirs, stand apart; the king
 shall know your mind.

Dread lord, the commons send you word by me,
 Unless Lord Suffolk straight be done to death,
 Or banished fair England's territories, 245

They will by violence tear him from your palace,
 And torture him with grievous lingering death.
 They say, by him the good Duke Humphrey died;
 They say, in him they fear your highness' death;
 And mere instinct of love and loyalty, 250

Free from a stubborn opposite intent,
 As being thought to contradict your liking,
 Makes them thus forward in his banishment.
 They say, in care of your most royal person,
 That if your highness should intend to sleep, 255
 And charge that no man should disturb your rest

237 Re-enter...] Enter... Ff. Re-enter
 Suffolk, and Warwick. Capell.
Why...drawn] One line in Pope:
 two in Ff.

242 Enter Salisbury. Ff. Noise of a
 crowd within. Enter Salisbury.

Johnson. Noise of a crowd with-
 in. Re-enter Salisbury. Steevens
 (1793).

[to the Commons, entering] Capell.

244 *Lord's false* Malona, from (Qq).
done] put Rowe.

In pain of your dislike or pain of death,
 Yet, notwithstanding such a strait edict,
 Were there a serpent seen, with forked tongue,
 That slyly glided towards your majesty, 260
 It were but necessary you were waked,
 Lest, being suffer'd in that harmful slumber,
 The mortal worm might make the sleep eternal;
 And therefore do they cry, though you forbid,
 That they will guard you, whether you will or no, 265
 From such fell serpents as false Suffolk is,
 With whose envenomed and fatal sting,
 Your loving uncle, twenty times his worth,
 They say, is shamefully bereft of life.

Commons [*within*]. An answer from the king, my Lord
 of Salisbury! 270

Suf. 'Tis like the commons, rude unpolish'd hinds,
 Could send such message to their sovereign:
 But you, my lord, were glad to be employ'd,
 To show how quaint an orator you are:
 But all the honour Salisbury hath won 275
 Is, that he was the lord ambassador
 Sent from a sort of tinkers to the king.

Commons [*within*]. An answer from the king, or we
 will all break in!

King. Go, Salisbury, and tell them all from me,
 I thank them for their tender loving care; 280
 And had I not been cited so by them,

257 *In pain*] *On pain* Collier, ed. 2
 (Capell conj.). *In spite* Vaughan
 conj.

or pain] *on pain* Vaughan conj.
pain of death] *punishment* Words-
 worth.

258 *strait*] *strange* F₄.

259 *Were there*] *Where there is* F₄.

262 *harmful*] *harmefull* F₁. *harmlesse*
 F₂. *harmless* F₃F₄.

263 *the sleep*] *thy sleep* Vaughan conj.

265 *whether*] *where* F₁F₂F₃. *where* F₄.
 See *King John*, note (v).

278 *Commons* [*within*]. *Within*. Ff.
we will all] *we'll all* Steevens
 (1793). *we'll* Dyce conj.

Yet did I purpose as they do entreat ;
 For, sure, my thoughts do hourly prophesy
 Mischance unto my state by Suffolk's means :
 And therefore, by His majesty I swear,
 Whose far unworthy deputy I am,
 He shall not breathe infection in this air
 But three days longer, on the pain of death.

285

[Exit Salisbury.]

Queen. O Henry, let me plead for gentle Suffolk !

King. Ungentle queen, to call him gentle Suffolk !

No more, I say : if thou dost plead for him,

291

Thou wilt but add increase unto my wrath.

Had I but said, I would have kept my word,

But when I swear, it is irrevocable.

If, after three days' space, thou here be'st found

295

On any ground that I am ruler of,

The world shall not be ransom for thy life.

Come, Warwick, come, good Warwick, go with me ;

I have great matters to impart to thee.

[Exeunt all but Queen and Suffolk.]

Queen. Mischance and sorrow go along with you !

300

Heart's discontent and sour affliction

Be playfellows to keep you company !

There's two of you ; the devil make a third !

And threefold vengeance tend upon your steps !

Suf. Cease, gentle queen, these execrations,

305

And let thy Suffolk take his heavy leave.

Queen. Fie, coward woman and soft-hearted wretch !

Hast thou not spirit to curse thine enemy ?

287 breathe] breed F₃F₄.

288 [Exit...] Capell. om. Ff.

299 [Exeunt.....] Edd. Exeunt K.

Henry, Warwick, &c. Theobald.

Exit. Ff.

300 SCENE VIII. Pope.

303 make] F₁. made F₃F₄F₅.

307 coward woman] woman-coward

Becket conj.

308 enemy] Ff. enemies Capell, from

(Qq).

Suf. A plague upon them! wherefore should I curse
them?

Would curses kill, as doth the mandrake's groan, 310
I would invent as bitter-searching terms,
As curst, as harsh and horrible to hear,
Deliver'd strongly through my fixed teeth,
With full as many signs of deadly hate,
As lean-faced Envy in her loathsome cave: 315
My tongue should stumble in mine earnest words;
Mine eyes should sparkle like the beaten flint;
Mine hair be fix'd on end, as one distract;
Ay, every joint should seem to curse and ban:
And even now my burthen'd heart would break, 320
Should I not curse them. Poison be their drink!
Gall, worse than gall, the daintiest that they taste!
Their sweetest shade a grove of cypress trees!
Their chiefest prospect murdering basilisks!
Their softest touch as smart as lizards' stings! 325
Their music frightful as the serpent's hiss,
And boding screech-owls make the concert full!
All the foul terrors in dark-seated hell—

Queen. Enough, sweet Suffolk; thou torment'st thyself;
And these dread curses, like the sun 'gainst glass, 330
Or like an overcharged gun, recoil,
And turn the force of them upon thyself.

310 *Would...groan*] *Could...as do the
mandrake's groans* Lettsom conj.
from (Qq).

311 *bitter-searching*] Steevens (1793).
bitter searching Ff.

318 *on end*] (Qq) Pope (ed. 2). *an end*
Ff.
as one] *like one* Pope.

320 *burthen'd*] *burden'd* Johnson.

322 *daintiest that*] *dantiest meat* Theo-
bald. *dainties that* Id. conj. *dainti-*

est thing Hanmer, from (Qq).
daintiest cate Vaughan conj.

325 *smart*] *sharp* Keightley (Collier
MS.).

327 *concert*] Theobald. *Consort* Ff.

328 *dark-seated*] F₃F₄. *darke seated* F₁
F₂.

331 *overcharged*] *overcharg'd* F₄.

332 *turn*] Rowe. *turnes* F₁F₂. *turns*
F₃F₄.

Suf. You bade me ban, and will you bid me leave?
 Now, by the ground that I am banish'd from,
 Well could I curse away a winter's night, 335
 Though standing naked on a mountain top,
 Where biting cold would never let grass grow,
 And think it but a minute spent in sport.

Queen. O, let me entreat thee cease. Give me thy
 hand,
 That I may dew it with my mournful tears; 340
 Nor let the rain of heaven wet this place,
 To wash away my woful monuments.
 O, could this kiss be printed in thy hand,
 That thou mightst think upon these by the seal,
 Through whom a thousand sighs are breathed for thee!
 So, get thee gone, that I may know my grief; 346
 'Tis but surmised whiles thou art standing by,
 As one that surfeits thinking on a want.
 I will repeal thee, or, be well assured,
 Adventure to be banished myself: 350
 And banished I am, if but from thee.
 Go; speak not to me; even now be gone.
 O, go not yet! Even thus two friends condemn'd
 Embrace and kiss and take ten thousand leaves,
 Loather a hundred times to part than die. 355
 Yet now farewell; and farewell life with thee!

Suf. Thus is poor Suffolk ten times banished;
 Once by the king, and three times thrice by thee.
 'Tis not the land I care for, wert thou thence;

339 *O,*] In a separate line, S. Walker
 conj.

341 *place*] *pace* F₁.

342 [Kissing his hand. Johnson.

344 *upon these*] *on these lips* Hanmer.
upon her Vaughan conj.

the] *their* Lettsom conj., reading
 with Hanmer.

345 *whom*] *which* Hanmer.

347 *whiles*] *whilst* F₁.

359 *thence*] F₁. *hence* F₂F₃F₄.

A wilderness is populous enough, 360
 So Suffolk had thy heavenly company:
 For where thou art, there is the world itself,
 With every several pleasure in the world,
 And where thou art not, desolation.
 I can no more: live thou to joy thy life; 365
 Myself no joy in nought but that thou livest.

Enter VAUX.

Queen. Whither goes Vaux so fast? what news, I
 prithee?

Vaux. To signify unto his majesty
 That Cardinal Beaufort is at point of death;
 For suddenly a grievous sickness took him, 370
 That makes him gasp and stare and catch the air,
 Blaspheming God and cursing men on earth.
 Sometime he talks as if Duke Humphrey's ghost
 Were by his side; sometime he calls the king,
 And whispers to his pillow as to him 375
 The secrets of his overcharged soul:
 And I am sent to tell his majesty,
 That even now he cries aloud for him.

Queen. Go tell this heavy message to the king.

[*Exit Vaux.*]

Ay me! what is this world! what news are these! 380
 But wherefore grieve I at an hour's poor loss,
 Omitting Suffolk's exile, my soul's treasure?

366 *no joy*] to *joy* Singer, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

nought] *ought* F₃F₄.

367 SCENE IX. Pope.

Whither] *Whether* F₁.

369 *is at point*] F₁F₂. *is at the point*
 F₃F₄. 's at the point Pope.

373, 374 *Sometime...sometime*] *Sometimes...sometimes* F₄.

379 [*Exit Vaux.*] *Exit.* Ff.

380 *Ay*] *Ah* Steevens (1793).

381 *an hour's poor*] *another's* Mason
 conj. *a neighbour's* Vaughan conj.

Why only, Suffolk, mourn I not for thee,
 And with the southern clouds contend in tears,
 Theirs for the earth's increase, mine for my sorrows? 385
 Now get thee hence: the king, thou know'st, is coming;
 If thou be found by me, thou art but dead.

Suf. If I depart from thee, I cannot live;
 And in thy sight to die, what were it else
 But like a pleasant slumber in thy lap? 390
 Here could I breathe my soul into the air,
 As mild and gentle as the cradle-babe,
 Dying with mother's dug between its lips:
 Where, from thy sight, I should be raging mad,
 And cry out for thee to close up mine eyes, 395
 To have thee with thy lips to stop my mouth;
 So shouldst thou either turn my flying soul,
 Or I should breathe it so into thy body,
 And then it lived in sweet Elysium.
 To die by thee were but to die in jest; 400
 From thee to die were torture more than death:
 O, let me stay, befall what may befall!

Queen. Away! though parting be a fretful corrosive,
 It is applied to a deathful wound.
 To France, sweet Suffolk: let me hear from thee; 405
 For wheresoe'er thou art in this world's globe,
 I'll have an Iris that shall find thee out.

Suf. I go.

383—385 *thee, ...tears, ...sorrows?* [*thee?*
...teares? ...sorrows. Ff.

385 *sorrows*] *sorrow's* Vaughan conj.

390 *like*] *take* Vaughan conj.

393 *its*] F₄. *it's* F₁F₂F₃. *his* (Qq).

393, 395, 396 *lips: ...eyes, To...mouth;*
lips, ...eyes. To...mouth, or lips,
(Where...mad) And...eyes; Or...
mouth Vaughan conj.

397 *thou*] om. F₃F₄.

399 *lived*] *liv'd* F₁F₂. *lives* F₃F₄.

403 *Away!*] In a line by itself, S. Walker conj.

fretful] om. Hanmer. *fearful* S. Walker conj. (a misprint?).

corrosive] *cor'sive* Boswell (Malone conj.).

406 *wheresoe'er*] *wheresoers* F₁. *wheresoever* F₂F₃F₄.

Queen. And take my heart with thee.

Suf. A jewel, lock'd into the wofull'st cask
That ever did contain a thing of worth. 410
Even as a splitted bark, so sunder we:
This way fall I to death.

Queen. This way for me.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE III. *A bedchamber.*

Enter the KING, SALISBURY, WARWICK, to the CARDINAL in bed.

King. How fares my lord? speak, Beaufort, to thy
sovereign.

Car. If thou be'st death, I'll give thee England's
treasure,

Enough to purchase such another island,
So thou wilt let me live, and feel no pain.

King. Ah, what a sign it is of evil life, 5
Where death's approach is seen so terrible!

War. Beaufort, it is thy sovereign speaks to thee.

Car. Bring me unto my trial when you will.
Died he not in his bed? where should he die?
Can I make men live, whether they will or no? 10
O, torture me no more! I will confess.

408 *And*] *And going* Vaughan conj.
with thee] *along with thee* Hanmer.
with thee along Capell.

409 *cask*] *casket* Rowe.

412 [*Exeunt severally.*] Rowe (ed. 2).
Exeunt Ff.

SCENE III.] Capell. SCENE X. Pope.
A bedchamber.] The Cardinal's bed-
chamber, Theobald. The same.
Another Room. Capell. London.

Cardinal Beaufort's bedchamber.
Malone.

1 *sovereign*] *king* Collier MS.

4 *and feel no pain*] *but one whole year*
Theobald conj., from (Qq).

9 *bed? where should he*] *bed, where he*
should Delius conj.

10 *whether*] Johnson. *where* Ff. *where*
Pope.

Alive again? then show me where he is:
 I'll give a thousand pound to look upon him.
 He hath no eyes, the dust hath blinded them.
 Comb down his hair; look, look! it stands upright, 15
Like lime-twigs set to catch my winged soul.
 Give me some drink; and bid the apothecary
 Bring the strong poison that I bought of him.

King. O thou eternal mover of the heavens,
 Look with a gentle eye upon this wretch! 20
 O, beat away the busy meddling fiend
 That lays strong siege unto this wretch's soul,
 And from his bosom purge this black despair!

War. See, how the pangs of death do make him grin!

Sal. Disturb him not; let him pass peaceably. 25

King. Peace to his soul, if God's good pleasure be!
 Lord cardinal, if thou think'st on heaven's bliss,
 Hold up thy hand, make signal of thy hope.
 He dies, and makes no sign. O God, forgive him!

War. So bad a death argues a monstrous life. 30

King. Forbear to judge, for we are sinners all.
 Close up his eyes and draw the curtain close;
 And let us all to meditation. [Exeunt.

21 *busy meddling*] *busy-meddling* S.

Walker conj.

22 *this wretch's*] *his wretched* Capell
 conj. *this sinner's* Lettsom conj.

23 *this*] *his* Daniel conj. (reading line

23 as Capell conj.).

26 *if*] *if't* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

28 *make*] *give* Capell conj.
 (dies) Collier MS.

www.libACT IV.n

SCENE I. *The coast of Kent.*

Alarum. Fight at sea. Ordnance goes off. Enter a Captain, a Master, a Master's-Mate, WALTER WHITMORE, and others; with them SUFFOLK, and others, prisoners.

Cap. The gaudy, blabbing and remorseful day
Is crept into the bosom of the sea;
And now loud-howling wolves arouse the jades
That drag the tragic melancholy night;
Who, with their drowsy, slow and flagging wings, 5
Clip dead men's graves, and from their misty jaws
Breathe foul contagious darkness in the air.
Therefore bring forth the soldiers of our prize;
For, whilst our pinnace anchors in the Downs,
Here shall they make their ransom on the sand, 10
Or with their blood stain this discoloured shore.
Master, this prisoner freely give I thee;
And thou that art his mate, make boot of this;
The other, Walter Whitmore, is thy share.

First Gent. What is my ransom, master? let me know.

Mast. A thousand crowns, or else lay down your head. 16

Mate. And so much shall you give, or off goes yours.

ACT IV. SCENE I.] Pope. om. Ff.
The coast of Kent.] Pope. om. Ff.
Alarum...Enter...] Alarum...Enter
Lieutenant, Suffolk, and others.
Ff. Collier MS. adds 'at Dover.'
Firing heard at Sea. After that, a
Boat appears; and puts ashore a
Captain, a Master, a Master's mate
... Capell.
Walter Whitmore,] Whitmore, Rowe.
om. Ff.

1 *Cap.*] (Qq) Rowe. Lieu. Ff (and
throughout the scene).
5, 6 *wings, Clip dead men's graves]*
wings Oerspread the graves that in
their noisome arms Clip dead men's
bones Wordsworth conj.
6 *Clip]*Theobald. *Cleaps* F₁F₂. *Cleap*
F₃F₄. *Clap* Pope (ed. 2).
8 *the]* om. F₄.
11 *discoloured]* Ff. *discolour'd* Pope.
14 [pointing to Suffolk. Johnson.

Cap. What, think you much to pay two thousand
crowns,
And bear the name and port of gentlemen?
Cut both the villains' throats; for die you shall: 20
The lives of those which we have lost in fight
Be counterpoised with such a petty sum!

First Gent. I'll give it, sir; and therefore spare my
life.

Sec. Gent. And so will I, and write home for it straight.

Whit. I lost mine eye in laying the prize aboard, 25
And therefore to revenge it, shalt thou die; [To *Suf.*
And so should these, if I might have my will.

Cap. Be not so rash; take ransom, let him live.

Suf. Look on my George; I am a gentleman:
Rate me at what thou wilt, thou shalt be paid. 30

Whit. And so am I; my name is Walter Whitmore.
How now! why start'st thou? what, doth death affright?

Suf. Thy name affrights me, in whose sound is death.
A cunning man did calculate my birth,
And told me that by water I should die: 35
Yet let not this make thee be bloody-minded;

18 Cap.] *Whit.* Malone conj.
two thousand] 2000. Ff.

20 *throats*] *throat* F₂.
shall :] After this Malone supposes
a line has been lost.

21, 22 *The lives...sum*] Grant White.
The lives...sum? Knight. *The lives*
...summe. Ff. *Shall the lives...sum*?
Nicholson conj.

The lives of those...Be counterpoised
...sum] *Nor can those lives...Be*
counterpois'd...sum. Rowe. *The lives*
of those...Cannot be pois'd...sum. Cap-
pell. *The lives of those...Cannot be*
counterpois'd...sum. Malone. *The*
lives of those we have lost in fight

cannot Be counterpois'd...sum. Stee-
vens conj. *Can lives of those...Be*
counterpois'd...sum? Collier, ed. 2
(Collier MS.). *The lives of those...*
Can they be counterpois'd...sum?
Halliwell. *The lives of those we've*
lost in fight can not Be...sum. Words-
worth.

22 *Be*] *Be n't* Cartwright conj.

26 [To *Suf.*] Rowe. om. Ff.

29 *George*] ring Capell conj., from (Qq).

32 *start'st*] F₄. *startst* F₅. *starts* F₁F₂.
what, doth death] Rowe. *What doth*
death Ff. *what doth thee* Vaughan
conj.

affright] *affright thee* Delius conj.

Thy name is Gualtier, being rightly sounded.

Whit. Gualtier or Walter, which it is, I care not :
 Never yet did base dishonour blur our name,
 But with our sword we wiped away the blot ; 40
 Therefore, when merchant-like I sell revenge,
 Broke be my sword, my arms torn and defaced,
 And I proclaim'd a coward through the world !

Suf. Stay, Whitmore ; for thy prisoner is a prince,
 The Duke of Suffolk, William de la Pole. 45

Whit. The Duke of Suffolk, muffled up in rags !

Suf. Ay, but these rags are no part of the duke :
 Jove sometime went disguised, and why not I ?

Cap. But Jove was never slain, as thou shalt be.

Suf. Obscure and lowly swain, King Henry's blood, 50
 The honourable blood of Lancaster,
 Must not be shed by such a jaded groom.
 Hast thou not kiss'd thy hand and held my stirrup ?
 Bare-headed plodded by my foot-cloth mule,
 And thought thee happy when I shook my head ? 55
 How often hast thou waited at my cup,
 Fed from my trencher, kneel'd down at the board,
 When I have feasted with Queen Margaret ?
 Remember it and let it make thee crest-fall'n,
 Ay, and allay this thy abortive pride ; 60

37, 38 *Gualtier*] *Gaultier* Collier.

39 *Never*] *Ne'er* Rowe.

43 [is laying Hands on Suffolk, to bear him off. Capell.

46 *Whit.*] *Wal. Ff. Cap. Capell*, from (Qq).

48 *Jove...I f]* Pope, from (Qq). Omitted in Ff.

50 *Suf. Obscure.....blood,*] Pope, from (Qq). Continued to *Lieu.* in Ff. *lowly*] Pope, from (Qq). *lowly* Ff.

51 *The honourable*] Pope. *Suf. The*

honourable Ff.

52 *jaded*] *jady* Capell, from (Qq). *jadis* quoted by Rann.

54 *Bare-headed*] *And bare-head* Capell, from (Qq).

55 *shook my head*] *smiled on thee or stroked my beard or stroked thy head* Vaughan conj.

head f] Pope. *head. Ff.*

56 *waited*] *water'd* Vaughan conj. (with-drawn).

How in our voiding lobby hast thou stood
 And duly waited for my coming forth?
 This hand of mine hath writ in thy behalf,
 And therefore shall it charm thy riotous tongue. 64

Whit. Speak, captain, shall I stab the forlorn swain?

Cap. First let my words stab him, as he hath me.

Suf. Base slave, thy words are blunt, and so art thou.

Cap. Convey him hence and on our long-boat's side
 Strike off his head.

Suf. Thou darest not, for thy own.

Cap. Yes, Pole.

Suf. Pole!

Cap. Pool! Sir Pool! lord! 70

Ay, kennel, puddle, sink; whose filth and dirt
 Troubles the silver spring where England drinks.
 Now will I dam up this thy yawning mouth,
 For swallowing the treasure of the realm:
 Thy lips that kiss'd the queen shall sweep the ground; 75
 And thou that smiledst at good Duke Humphrey's death
 Against the senseless winds shalt grin in vain,
 Who in contempt shall hiss at thee again:
 And wedded be thou to the hags of hell,
 For daring to affy a mighty lord 80

63 *mine*] F₁. *thine* F₂F₃F₄.

64 *it*] I Vaughan conj., from (Qq).

65 *forlorn swain*] *foul tongd slaus*
 Collier MS.

swain] *swain*. F₁.

69 *thy*] *thine* Capell, from (Qq).

70 *Cap. Yes, Pole. Suf. Pole*] Added
 by Capell from (Qq).

Suf. Pole! Cap. Pool! Sir Pool!
lord] *Suf. Pole! Cap. Pole! Sir*
Pole! Lord Pole! Duke Pole! Lett-
 som conj. *Suf. Pole? Cap. Pool!*
Suf. Pool? Cap. Pool, Sir Pool,

Lord Pool. Vaughan conj.

Pool! Sir Pool! lord] *Pool, Sir*
Pool? Lord, Ff. Poole? Sir Poole?
Lord Poole? Johnson conj. *Pole,*
ay Pole; Capell. Poole; Sir Poole;
Lord Poole. Keightley.

71 *Ay*] I Ff. *Nay* Capell.

74 *swallowing*] *swallowing up* F₃F₄.

76 *Duke*] om. F₄.

77 *shalt*] F₂F₃F₄. *shall* F₁.

78 *shall...again*] *again shall hiss at thee*
 Wordsworth.

Unto the daughter of a worthless king,
 Having neither subject, wealth, nor diadem.
 By devilish policy art thou grown great,
 And, like ambitious Sylla, overgorged
 With gobbets of thy mother's bleeding heart. 85
 By thee Anjou and Maine were sold to France,
 The false revolting Normans thorough thee
 Disdain to call us lord, and Picardy
 Hath slain their governors, surprised our forts,
 And sent the ragged soldiers wounded home. 90
 The princely Warwick, and the Nevils all,
 Whose dreadful swords were never drawn in vain,
 As hating thee, are rising up in arms :
 And now the house of York, thrust from the crown
 By shameful murder of a guiltless king, 95
 And lofty proud encroaching tyranny,
 Burns with revenging fire ; whose hopeful colours
 Advance our half-faced sun, striving to shine,
 Under the which is writ 'Invitis nubibus.'
 The commons here in Kent are up in arms : 100
 And, to conclude, reproach and beggary
 Is crept into the palace of our king,
 And all by thee. Away ! convey him hence.
Suf. O that I were a god, to shoot forth thunder
 Upon these paltry, servile, abject drudges ! 105
 Small things make base men proud : this villain here,
 Being captain of a pinnace, threatens more

82 *neither*] *nor* Rowe.84 *overgorged*] *ouergorg'd* F₁. *over-*
gor'd F₂, F₃, F₄.85 *mother's bleeding*] Rowe. *Mother-*
bleeding Ff.87 *thorough*] *through* F₄.93 *are*] Rowe. *and* Ff.95 *murder*] Johnson. *murther* Ff.96 *proud encroaching*] *proud-encroach-*
ing S. Walker conj.98 *our*] *a* Rowe (ed. 2). *an* Keightley.
half-faced] *pale-faced* Vaughan
conj.102 *Is*] *Are* Hanmer.107 *threatens*] *threats* F₂.

Than Bargulus the strong Illyrian pirate.
 Drones suck not eagles' blood, but rob bee-hives:
 It is impossible that I should die 110
 By such a lowly vassal as thyself.
 Thy words move rage and not remorse in me:
 I go of message from the queen to France;
 I charge thee waft me safely cross the Channel.
Cap. Walter,— 115
Whit. Come, Suffolk, I must waft thee to thy death.
Suf. Gelidus timor occupat artus: it is thee I fear.
Whit. Thou shalt have cause to fear before I leave
 thee.

What, are ye daunted now? now will ye stoop?
First Gent. My gracious lord, entreat him, speak him
 fair. 120

Suf. Suffolk's imperial tongue is stern and rough,
 Used to command, untaught to plead for favour.
 Far be it we should honour such as these
 With humble suit: no, rather let my head
 Stoop to the block than these knees bow to any 125
 Save to the God of heaven and to my king;
 And sooner dance upon a bloody pole
 Than stand uncover'd to the vulgar groom.
 True nobility is exempt from fear:

108 *Bargulus*] *Bardylis* Hanmer.

110 *should*] *shald* F₂. *shal* Collier MS.

115, 116 *Cap. Walter,— Whit. Come,*
 Rowe (ed. 2). *Lieu. Water: W.*
Come Ff, printing as prose.

117 *Gelidus*] F₂F₃F₄. *Pine gelidus* F₁.
Pæne gelidus Theobald. *Pene*
gelidus Malone. *Pone gelidus* Mit-
 ford conj. *Jam gelidus* Words-
 worth conj.

it is] *it's* Pope. *'tis* Capell.

118, 142 *Whit.*] *Wal. Ff.*

119 *now will*] *will* F₄.

128 *the*] *this* Dyce, ed. 2 (S. Walker
 conj.).

129 *True...fear*] *Exempt from fear is*
true nobility Lloyd conj. *Exempt*
is true nobility from fear Keight-
 ley.

True] *Know true* Hanmer. *No,*
true or *All true* Anon. conj. *For*
true Wordsworth (Keightley conj.).
nobility is] *nobility's* Wordsworth.

More can I bear than you dare execute. 130

Cap. Hale him away, and let him talk no more.

Suf. Come, soldiers, show what cruelty ye can,
That this my death may never be forgot!

Great men oft die by vile bezonians:

A Roman sworder and banditto slave 135

Murder'd sweet Tully; Brutus' bastard hand

Stabb'd Julius Cæsar; savage islanders

Pompey the Great; and Suffolk dies by pirates.

[*Exeunt Whitmore and others with Suffolk.*]

Cap. And as for these whose ransom we have set,

It is our pleasure one of them depart: 140

Therefore come you with us and let him go.

[*Exeunt all but the First Gentleman.*]

Re-enter WHITMORE with SUFFOLK'S body.

Whit. There let his head and lifeless body lie,

Until the queen his mistress bury it. [*Exit.*]

First Gent. O barbarous and bloody spectacle!

His body will I bear unto the king: 145

If he revenge it not, yet will his friends;

So will the queen, that living held him dear.

[*Exit with the body.*]

132 *Come...can,*] Given to *Suf.* by *Hanmer.* Continued to *Lieu.* in *Ff.*
ye] *you* *Hanmer.*

134 *vile*] *F₄.* *vilde* *F₁F₂F₃.*

135 *banditto*] *Johnson.* *Bandetto* *Ff.*

136 *bastard*] *dastard* *Theobald* conj.
(withdrawn).

137 *Stabb'd.....islanders*] Omitted by
Rowe (ed. 2) and *Pope* (ed. 1).
islanders] *outlanders* *Vaughan* conj.

138 [*Exeunt Whitmore and others...*]
Exit Water... *F₁.* *Exit Walter...*
F₂F₃F₄. *Exit,* with *Whitmore,* and
Others. *Capell.*

140 *depart:*] *depart,* *To fetch what's due*
for him and for the rest: *Lettsom*
conj.

141 [*To 2 Gent.* *Collier MS.*]

[*Exeunt.....body.*] *Capell.* *Exit*
Lieutenant, and the rest. *Manet*
the first *Gent.* *Enter Walter* with
the *body.* *Ff.*

142 *lifeless*] *Capell.* *liveless* *F₁F₂.*
liveless *F₃F₄.*

[*throwing it down.* *Capell.*]

143 [*Exit.*] *Exit Walter.* *Ff.*

147 [*Exit...*] *Capell.* om. *Ff.*

www.libtool.com SCENE II. *Blackheath.*

Enter GEORGE BEVIS *and* JOHN HOLLAND.

Bevis. Come, and get thee a sword, though made of a lath: they have been up these two days.

Holl. They have the more need to sleep now, then.

Bevis. I tell thee, Jack Cade the clothier means to dress the commonwealth, and turn it, and set a new nap upon it. 6

Holl. So he had need, for 'tis threadbare. Well, I say it was never merry world in England since gentlemen came up.

Bevis. O miserable age! virtue is not regarded in handicrafts-men. 11

Holl. The nobility think scorn to go in leather aprons.

Bevis. Nay, more, the king's council are no good workmen. 14

Holl. True; and yet it is said, labour in thy vocation; which is as much to say as, let the magistrates be labouring men; and therefore should we be magistrates.

Bevis. Thou hast hit it; for there's no better sign of a brave mind than a hard hand.

Holl. I see them! I see them! There's Best's son, the tanner of Wingham,— 21

Bevis. He shall have the skins of our enemies, to make dog's-leather of.

SCENE II.] Pope. om. Ff.

Blackheath.] Capell. Southwark.

Pope. om. Ff.

...George Bevis...] Capell. ...Bevis

... Ff.

1, 4, &c. Bevis.] Ff. Geo. Capell.

3, 7, &c. Holl.] Hol. Ff. Joh. Capell.

7 *for*] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

8 *merry*] a *merry* F₄.

16 *to say as,*] *to say, as* F₁F₂. *as to say* F₃F₄.

Holl. And Dick the butcher,—
Bevis. Then is sin struck down like an ox, and iniquity's throat cut like a calf. 26
Holl. And Smith the weaver,—
Bevis. Argo, their thread of life is spun.
Holl. Come, come, let's fall in with them.

Drum. Enter CADE, DICK Butcher, SMITH the Weaver, and a Sawyer, with infinite numbers.

Cade. We John Cade, so termed of our supposed father,— 31

Dick. [*Aside*] Or rather, of stealing a cade of herrings.

Cade. For our enemies shall fall before us, inspired with the spirit of putting down kings and princes,—Command silence. 35

Dick. Silence!

Cade. My father was a Mortimer,—

Dick. [*Aside*] He was an honest man, and a good bricklayer.

Cade. My mother a Plantagenet,— 40

Dick. [*Aside*] I knew her well; she was a midwife.

Cade. My wife descended of the Lacies,—

Dick. [*Aside*] She was, indeed, a pedler's daughter, and sold many laces.

27 *Smith*] *Will* Capell, from (Qq).

30 *Drum.* Enter...] Ff. Collier MS. adds, 'the more the better and vproare.'

31—33 *father*,—...*inspired*] *father*, for our enemies shall fall before us;—
Dick. Or rather.....*herrings*. *Cade.* *Inspired* Tyrwhitt conj. *father*, or rather,— *Dick.* —of stealing...*herrings*. *Cade.* —for our.....*inspired* Lettsom conj.

32, &c. *Dick.*] Rowe. But. Ff.

The 'Asides' were first marked by Capell.

33 *For*] Or for Hudson (S. Walker conj.).

33, 34 *For*.....*princes*] Transferred by Capell to the end of Holland's speech, line 29.

33 *fall*] F₄. *faile* F₁F₂. *fail* F₃.

34 *princes*,—*Command*] Malone. *Princes.* *Command* Ff.

35 (Noise) Collier MS.

Smith. [*Aside*] But now of late, not able to travel with her furred pack, she washes bucks here at home. 46

Cade. Therefore am I of an honourable house.

Dick. [*Aside*] Ay, by my faith, the field is honourable; and there was he born, under a hedge, for his father had never a house but the cage. 50

Cade. Valiant I am.

Smith. [*Aside*] A' must needs; for beggary is valiant.

Cade. I am able to endure much.

Dick. [*Aside*] No question of that; for I have seen him whipped three market-days together. 55

Cade. I fear neither sword nor fire.

Smith. [*Aside*] He need not fear the sword; for his coat is of proof.

Dick. [*Aside*] But methinks he should stand in fear of fire, being burnt i' the hand for stealing of sheep. 60

Cade. Be brave, then; for your captain is brave, and vows reformation. There shall be in England seven half-penny loaves sold for a penny: the three-hooped pot shall have ten hoops; and I will make it felony to drink small beer: all the realm shall be in common; and in Cheapside shall my palfry go to grass: and when I am king, as king I will be,— 67

All. God save your majesty!

Cade. I thank you, good people: there shall be no money; all shall eat and drink on my score; and I will apparel them all in one livery, that they may agree like brothers, and worship me their lord. 72

Dick. The first thing we do, let's kill all the lawyers.

Cade. Nay, that I mean to do. Is not this a lament-

45, &c. *Smith.*] Steevens (1778).

Weauer. *Ff.* Wil. Capell.

50 *the cage*] a *cage* *F₃F₄*.

58 [*Exit.* Malone conj.

64 *I*] om. *F₃F₄*.

67 *will be,—*] Rowa. *will be Ff.*

70 *on*] upon *F₄*.

able thing, that of the skin of an innocent lamb should be made parchment? that parchment, being scribbled o'er, should undo a man? Some say the bee stings: but I say, 'tis the bee's wax; for I did but seal once to a thing, and I was never mine own man since. How now! who's there? 80

Enter some, bringing forward the Clerk of Chatham.

Smith. The clerk of Chatham: he can write and read and cast accompt.

Cade. O monstrous!

Smith. We took him setting of boys' copies.

Cade. Here's a villain! 85

Smith. Has a book in his pocket with red letters in 't.

Cade. Nay, then, he is a conjuror.

Dick. Nay, he can make obligations, and write court-hand. 89

Cade. I am sorry for 't: the man is a proper man, of mine honour; unless I find him guilty, he shall not die. Come hither, sirrah, I must examine thee: what is thy name?

Clerk. Emmanuel.

Dick. They use to write it on the top of letters: 'twill go hard with you. 96

Cade. Let me alone. Dost thou use to write thy

76, 77 *parchment? ...man?]* *parchment*;
...*man?* Pope. *Parchment*; ...*man*.
Ff

78 *'tis the]* F₁F₂. *'tis* F₃F₄.

79 *mine]* F₁. *my* F₂F₃F₄.

80 *who's]* *who is* Rowe (ed. 2).

81 *Enter some.....]* Capell. *Enter a*
Clearke. Ff. *Re-enter Smith...* Ma-

lone conj.

Chatham] Rowe (ed. 2). *Chartam*
F₁. *Chattam* F₂F₃F₄. *Charlton*
French conj.

84 *of]* F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

86 *Has]* Dyce. *Ha's* Ff. *H'as* Rowe
(ed. 2). *He 'as* Pope.

87 *he is]* *he's* Pope.

name? or hast thou a mark to thyself, like an honest plain-dealing man?

Clerk. Sir, I thank God, I have been so well brought up that I can write my name. 101

All. He hath confessed: away with him! he's a villain and a traitor.

Cade. Away with him, I say! hang him with his pen and ink-horn about his neck. [*Exit one with the Clerk.*] 105

Enter MICHAEL.

Mich. Where's our general?

Cade. Here I am, thou particular fellow.

Mich. Fly, fly, fly! Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother are hard by, with the king's forces.

Cade. Stand, villain, stand, or I'll fell thee down. He shall be encountered with a man as good as himself: he is but a knight, is a'?

Mich. No.

Cade. To equal him, I will make myself a knight presently. [*Kneels*] Rise up, Sir John Mortimer. [*Rises*] Now have at him! 116

Enter SIR HUMPHREY STAFFORD and his Brother, with drum and soldiers.

Staf. Rebellious hinds, the filth and scum of Kent,

98 *an honest*] F₂F₃F₄. *a honest* F₁.
 102 *he's*] F₁. *he is* F₂F₃F₄.
 105 [*Exit one...*] Ff. *Exeunt Some...*
Capell.
 106 *Enter.....*] Ff. *Enter Michael,*
hastily. Capell.
Where's] F₁F₂. *Where is* F₃F₄.
 115 *presently*] *here presently* Keightley.
 [*Kneels*] Collier (ed. 1). om. Ff.
 [*Rises*] Dyce.
 116 *him*] *him.* *Is there any more of*

them that be knights? *Mich. Ay,*
his brother. Cade. Then kneel down,
Dick Butcher. Rise up, Sir Dick
Butcher. Now sound up the drum.
Theobald, from (Qq).
 (Kneeling and rising) Collier MS.
 117 SCENE III. *Pope.*
Enter...] Ff.
his Brother,] young Stafford, Rowe.
William his brother, Malone.

Mark'd for the gallows, lay your weapons down ;
 Home to your cottages, forsake this groom :
 The king is merciful, if you revolt. 120

Bro. But angry, wrathful, and inclined to blood,
 If you go forward ; therefore yield, or die.

Cade. As for these silken-coated slaves, I pass not :
 It is to you, good people, that I speak,
 Over whom, in time to come, I hope to reign ; 125
 For I am rightful heir unto the crown.

Staf. Villain, thy father was a plasterer ;
 And thou thyself a shearman, art thou not ?

Cade. And Adam was a gardener.

Bro. And what of that ? 130

Cade. Marry, this : Edmund Mortimer, Earl of March,
 Married the Duke of Clarence' daughter, did he not ?

Staf. Ay, sir.

Cade. By her he had two children at one birth.

Bro. That's false. 135

Cade. Ay, there's the question ; but I say, 'tis true :
 The elder of them, being put to nurse,
 Was by a beggar-woman stolen away ;
 And, ignorant of his birth and parentage,
 Became a bricklayer when he came to age : 140
 His son am I ; deny it, if you can.

Dick. Nay, 'tis too true ; therefore he shall be king.

Smith. Sir, he made a chimney in my father's house,
 and the bricks are alive at this day to testify it ; there-
 fore deny it not. 145

120 *revolt*] *repent* Anon. conj.

121, &c. *Bro.*] Ff. Y. Staf. Rowe. W. Staf. Malone.

123 *slaves, I pass not :*] *slaves I pass not*, Vaughan conj.
not] *them* Hanmer.

130 *And what*] *What* Hudson (Dyce

conj.).

131 *Marry, this : Edmund*] *Marry, this.— Edmund Theobald. Marry, this Edmund* Ff.

132 *Clarence*] *Clarence* F₁F₂F₃. *Clarence's* F₄.

Staf. And will you credit this base drudge's words,
That speaks he knows not what?

All. Ay, marry, will we; therefore get ye gone.

Bro. Jack Cade, the Duke of York hath taught you
this.

Cade. [*Aside*] He lies, for I invented it myself. 150
Go to, sirrah, tell the king from me, that, for his father's
sake, Henry the fifth, in whose time boys went to span-
counter for French crowns, I am content he shall reign;
but I'll be protector over him. 154

Dick. And furthermore, we'll have the Lord Say's
head for selling the dukedom of Maine.

Cade. And good reason; for thereby is England
mained, and fain to go with a staff, but that my puissance
holds it up. Fellow kings, I tell you that that Lord Say
hath gelded the commonwealth, and made it an eunuch:
and more than that, he can speak French; and therefore
he is a traitor. 162

Staf. O gross and miserable ignorance!

Cade. Nay, answer, if you can: the Frenchmen are
our enemies; go to, then, I ask but this: can he that
speaks with the tongue of an enemy be a good counsel-
lor, or no? 167

All. No, no; and therefore we'll have his head.

Bro. Well, seeing gentle words will not prevail,
Assail them with the army of the king. 170

Staf. Herald, away; and throughout every town
Proclaim them traitors that are up with Cade;

146, 147 *And...what?* As in Pope.

Prose in Ff.

148 *ye*] F₁. *you* F₂F₃F₄.

150 [*Aside*] Capell. om. Ff.

151, 165 *to*] Theobald. *too* Ff.

158 *mained*] *main'd* F₁F₂F₃. *main'd*

F₄.

159 *kings*] *knight* Vaughan conj.

that that] F₁F₂. *that* F₃F₄. *that*

the Dyce conj, *that by that* Vaughan
conj.

166 *an enemy*] *the enemy* Rowe.

That those which fly before the battle ends
 May, even in their wives' and children's sight,
 Be hang'd up for example at their doors : 175
 And you that be the king's friends, follow me.

[*Exeunt the two Staffords, and soldiers.*]

Cade. And you that love the commons, follow me.
 Now show yourselves men; 'tis for liberty.
 We will not leave one lord, one gentleman :
 Spare none but such as go in clouted shoon; 180
 For they are thrifty honest men, and such
 As would, but that they dare not, take our parts.

Dick. They are all in order and march toward us.

Cade. But then are we in order when we are most
 out of order. Come, march forward. [*Exeunt.* 185

SCENE III. *Another part of Blackheath.*

*Alarums to the fight, wherein both the STAFFORDS are slain. Enter
 CADE and the rest.*

Cade. Where's Dick, the butcher of Ashford?

Dick. Here, sir.

Cade. They fell before thee like sheep and oxen, and
 thou behavedst thyself as if thou hadst been in thine
 own slaughter-house: therefore thus will I reward thee,

176 *And*] *All Collier MS.*

[*Exeunt...*] *Exeunt the two Staf-
 fords, with the Train. Theobald.
 Exit. Ff.*

179 *We will*] *We'll F₄.*

180 *shoon*] *F₂. shoon F₁F₂. shoons
 F₄.*

183 *are*] *are are F₂.*

toward F₁F₂. towards F₃F₄.

185 *forward.*] *forward, lads! Capell
 conj., reading 184, 185 as two lines*

of verse, the first ending we are.

[*Exeunt.*] *Exeunt Cade and his
 Party. Theobald. om. Ff.*

SCENE III.] *Capell.*

*Another part of Blackheath.] The
 same. Another Part of it. Capell.
 om. Ff.*

Alarums...] *Ff.*

Enter.....] *Ff. Re-enter..... Theo-
 bald.*

5 *will I*] *F₁. wil I F₂. I will F₃F₄.*

the Lent shall be as long again as it is; and thou shalt have a license to kill for a hundred lacking one. 7

Dick. I desire no more.

Cade. And, to speak truth, thou deservest no less. This monument of the victory will I bear [*putting on Sir Humphrey's brigandine*]; and the bodies shall be dragged at my horse heels till I do come to London, where we will have the mayor's sword borne before us. 13

Dick. If we mean to thrive and do good, break open the gaols and let out the prisoners. 15

Cade. Fear not that, I warrant thee. Come, let's march towards London. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *London. The palace.*

Enter the KING with a supplication, and the QUEEN with Suffolk's head, the DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM and the LORD SAY.

Queen. Oft have I heard that grief softens the mind,
And makes it fearful and degenerate;
Think therefore on revenge and cease to weep.
But who can cease to weep and look on this?
Here may his head lie on my throbbing breast: 5

6 *again*] om. Warburton.

7 *to kill for*] *for to kill* Hudson.

hundred lacking one] *hundred lacking one, a week* Malone, from (Qq).

hundred years lacking one Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

10, 11 [*putting on...brigandine*] Edd. (from Holinshed). taking off Stafford's Armour. Capell. om. Ff. Putting on Stafford's armour. Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

12 *horse*] F₁F₂. *horses* F₃F₄. *horse's* Rowe. *horse'* Capell.

14 *thrive and do good,*] *thrive, do good;*

Johnson conj. *thrive and do well*
Delius conj.

15 *gaols*] *Gaoles* F₁F₂. *Goals* F₃F₄.

SCENE IV.] Pope. om. Ff.

London. The palace.] London. A Room in the Palace. Capell. Blackheath. Pope. om. Ff.

Enter...] Ff. Enter King Henry, reading; Buckingham, and the Lord Say, with him: at a Distance, Queen Margaret, mourning over a Head. Capell.

4, 15 (Aside) Collier MS.

But where's the body that I should embrace?

Buck. What answer makes your grace to the rebels' supplication?

King. I'll send some holy bishop to entreat;
For God forbid so many simple souls 10
Should perish by the sword! And I myself,
Rather than bloody war shall cut them short,
Will parley with Jack Cade their general:
But stay, I'll read it over once again.

Queen. Ah, barbarous villains! hath this lovely face
Ruled, like a wandering planet, over me, 16
And could it not enforce them to relent,
That were unworthy to behold the same?

King. Lord Say, Jack Cade hath sworn to have thy head.

Say. Ay, but I hope your highness shall have his.

King. How now, madam! 21
Still lamenting and mourning for Suffolk's death?
I fear me, love, if that I had been dead,
Thou wouldest not have mourn'd so much for me.

Queen. No, my love, I should not mourn, but die for thee. 25

Enter a Messenger.

King. How now! what news? why comest thou in such haste?

Mess. The rebels are in Southwark; fly, my lord!

12 *shall*] *should* Rowe.

18 *same*] *same*. F₁.

21, 22 *How...death*] Steevens (1793) ends line 21 at *Still*.

22 *Still lamenting*] *Lamenting still* Pope.

and mourning for] om. Vaughan conj., reading *How...death?* as one

line.

for] om. Pope.

23 *fear me, love,*] *fears me (Loue)* Ff. *fear, my love,* Capell, from (Qq).

24 *wouldest not*] Theobald. *would'st not* F₁. *would'st not halfe* F₂F₃F₄ (*half* F₃F₄).

25 *No, my*] *My* Pope. *No,* Capell.

Jack Cade proclaims himself Lord Mortimer,
 Descended from the Duke of Clarence' house,
 And calls your grace usurper openly, 30
 And vows to crown himself in Westminster.
 His army is a ragged multitude
 Of hinds and peasants, rude and merciless :
 Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother's death
 Hath given them heart and courage to proceed : 35
 All scholars, lawyers, courtiers, gentlemen,
 They call false caterpillars and intend their death.
King. O graceless men ! they know not what they do.
Buck. My gracious lord, retire to Killingworth,
 Until a power be raised to put them down. 40
Queen. Ah, were the Duke of Suffolk now alive,
 These Kentish rebels would be soon appeased !
King. Lord Say, the traitors hate thee ;
 Therefore away with us to Killingworth.
Say. So might your grace's person be in danger. 45
 The sight of me is odious in their eyes ;
 And therefore in this city will I stay,
 And live alone as secret as I may.

Enter another Messenger.

Mess. Jack Cade hath gotten London bridge :
 The citizens fly and forsake their houses : 50

29 *Clarence*] *Clarence* F₁F₂F₃. *Clarence's* F₄.

34 *Stafford*] *Staffords* Collier MS.

39, 44 *Killingworth*] *Kenelworth* Capell.

42 *would*] F₁. *should* F₂F₃F₄.

43 *Lord...hate*] *Lord Say, thou know'st the traitor hateth* Wordsworth.

traitors hate] F₂F₃F₄. *traitors hateth*

F₁. *traitor rebel hateth* Capell.

traitor hateth Steevens (1778, 1785).

thee] *thee specially* Anon. conj.

48 *may*] *can* Capell conj.

49, 50 Malone ends the lines at *citizens...houses*.

49 *London bridge*] *London-bridge, my lord* Capell.

50 *fly*] *flye* F₁. *flye him* F₂F₃F₄ (*fly* F₄).

houses] *houses as he comes* Keightley, reading *Fly...comes* as one line.

The rascal people, thirsting after prey,
Join with the traitor, and they jointly swear
To spoil the city and your royal court.

Buck. Then linger not, my lord; away, take horse.

King. Come, Margaret; God, our hope, will succour us.

Queen. My hope is gone, now Suffolk is deceased. 56

King. Farewell, my lord: trust not the Kentish rebels.

Buck. Trust nobody, for fear you be betray'd.

Say. The trust I have is in mine innocence,
And therefore am I bold and resolute. [Exeunt. 60

SCENE V. *London. The Tower.*

Enter LORD SCALES upon the Tower, walking. Then enter two or three Citizens below.

Scales. How now! is Jack Cade slain?

First Cit. No, my lord, nor likely to be slain; for they have won the bridge, killing all those that withstand them: the lord mayor craves aid of your honour from the Tower to defend the city from the rebels. 5

Scales. Such aid as I can spare you shall command; But I am troubled here with them myself; The rebels have assay'd to win the Tower. But get you to Smithfield and gather head, And thither I will send you Matthew Goffe; 10

56 (Aside) Collier MS.

57 *the*] F₁. to F₂F₃F₄.

[to lord Say. Malone.

58 *be*] om. F₁.

SCENE V. Pope.

London. The Tower.] London. Pope.

The same. The Tower. Capell.

Enter...enter...] F₄. Enter...enters... F₁F₂F₃.

2 First Cit.] 1 Cit. Ff.

likely] like F₄.

2—5 *No...rebels.*] As prose by Pope. As five lines in Ff.

9 *to.....and gather*] F₁. *into.....and gather* F₂F₃F₄. *into...gather* Pope.

10 *I will*] *will I* F₃F₄.

Goffe] F₁F₂F₃. *Goff* F₄. *Gough* Capell.

Fight for your king, your country, and your lives;
 And so, farewell, for I must hence again. [*Exeunt.*

www.ibtool.com.cn

SCENE VI. *London. Cannon Street.*

Enter JACK CADE and the rest, and strikes his staff on London-stone.

Cade. Now is Mortimer lord of this city. And here, sitting upon London-stone, I charge and command that, of the city's cost, the pissing-conduit run nothing but claret wine this first year of our reign. And now henceforward it shall be treason for any that calls me other than Lord Mortimer. 6

Enter a Soldier, running.

Sold. Jack Cade! Jack Cade!

Cade. Knock him down there. [*They kill him.*

Smith. If this fellow be wise, he'll never call ye Jack Cade more: I think he hath a very fair warning. 10

Dick. My lord, there's an army gathered together in Smithfield.

Cade. Come, then, let's go fight with them: but first, go and set London bridge on fire; and, if you can, burn down the Tower too. Come, let's away. [*Exeunt.* 15

12 *for...again]* rebellion never thrives
 Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

SCENE VI.] Capell. om. Ff. Pope
 continues the scene.

London. Cannon Street.] Cannon
 Street. Theobald.

Enter...] Ff.

staff] sword Capell, from (Qq).

1—6 *Now.....Mortimer.*] As prose by
 Pope. As seven lines in Ff.

4 *this]* F₁. *The* F₂F₃F₄.

9 *ye]* you Rowe.

13—15 *Come.....away.*] As prose by
 Pope. As four lines in Ff.

15 [*Exeunt.*] *Exeunt omnes.* Ff.

SCENE VII. *London. Smithfield.*www.libtool.com.cn

Alarums. MATTHEW GOFFE is slain, and all the rest. Then enter
JACK CADE, with his company.

Cade. So, sirs : now go some and pull down the Savoy ;
others to the inns of court ; down with them all.

Dick. I have a suit unto your lordship.

Cade. Be it a lordship, thou shalt have it for that
word. 5

Dick. Only that the laws of England may come out
of your mouth.

Holl. [*Aside*] Mass, 'twill be sore law, then ; for he was
thrust in the mouth with a spear, and 'tis not whole yet.

Smith. [*Aside*] Nay, John, it will be stinking law ; for
his breath stinks with eating toasted cheese. 11

Cade. I have thought upon it, it shall be so. Away,
burn all the records of the realm : my mouth shall be the
parliament of England.

Holl. [*Aside*] Then we are like to have biting statutes,
unless his teeth be pulled out. 16

Cade. And henceforward all things shall be in common.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. My lord, a prize, a prize ! here 's the Lord Say,
which sold the towns in France ; he that made us pay one
and twenty fifteens, and one shilling to the pound, the last
subsidy. 21

SCENE VII.] Capell. om. Ff. Pope
continues the scene.

London. Smithfield.] Smithfield.
Theobald.

After 'all the rest' Collier MS. adds
'of his followers flye.'

2 *court*] *courts* Rowe (ed. 2).

8, 15 *Holl.*] *John.* Ff.

8, 10, 15 'Aside' marked first by Ca-
pell.

11 *eating*] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

15 *we are*] *are we* S. Walker conj.

18 SCENE VI. Pope. SCENE VIII. Han-
mer.

19 *towns*] *town* Rowe (ed. 2).

Enter GEORGE BEVIS, *with the* LORD SAY.

www.libtool.com.cn

Cade. Well, he shall be beheaded for it ten times. Ah, thou say, thou serge, nay, thou buckram lord! now art thou within point-blank of our jurisdiction regal. What canst thou answer to my majesty for giving up of Normandy unto Mounsieur Basimecu, the dauphin of France? Be it known unto thee by these presence, even the presence of Lord Mortimer, that I am the besom that must sweep the court clean of such filth as thou art. Thou hast most traitorously corrupted the youth of the realm in erecting a grammar school: and whereas, before, our forefathers had no other books but the score and the tally, thou hast caused printing to be used, and, contrary to the king, his crown and dignity, thou hast built a paper-mill. It will be proved to thy face that thou hast men about thee that usually talk of a noun and a verb, and such abominable words as no Christian ear can endure to hear. Thou hast appointed justices of peace, to call poor men before them about matters they were not able to answer. Moreover, thou hast put them in prison; and because they could not read, thou hast hanged them; when, indeed, only for that cause they have been most worthy to live. Thou dost ride in a foot-cloth, dost thou not? 43

Say. What of that?

Cade. Marry, thou oughtest not to let thy horse wear a cloak, when honest men than thou go in their hose and doublets. 47

22 *Enter* George Bevis.....] Steevens.

Enter George... Ff.

23 *serge*] Rowe. *Surge* Ff.

24 *point-blank*] *point-black* Rowe (ed. 2).

25 *giving*] *the giving* Capell conj.

26 *Mounsieur*] *Monsieur* F₄.

27 *these presence*] *these presents* F₄.

38 *peace*] *the peace* Rowe (ed. 2).

40 *they*] *thy* F₂.

43 *in*] F₁. *on* F₂F₃F₄.

Dick. And work in their shirt too; as myself, for example, that am a butcher.

Say. You men of Kent,— 50

Dick. What say you of Kent?

Say. Nothing but this; 'tis 'bona terra, mala gens.'

Cade. Away with him, away with him! he speaks Latin.

Say. Hear me but speak, and bear me where you will.

Kent, in the Commentaries Cæsar writ, 56

Is term'd the civil'st place of all this isle:

Sweet is the country, because full of riches;

The people liberal, valiant, active, wealthy;

Which makes me hope you are not void of pity. 60

I sold not Maine, I lost not Normandy,

Yet, to recover them, would lose my life.

Justice with favour have I always done;

Prayers and tears have moved me, gifts could never.

When have I aught exacted at your hands, 65

But to maintain the king, the realm, and you?

Large gifts have I bestow'd on learned clerks,

Because my book preferr'd me to the king,

And seeing ignorance is the curse of God,

Knowledge the wing wherewith we fly to heaven, 70

Unless you be possess'd with devilish spirits,

51 *What?* *Well, what* Hanmer.

Kent F₃F₄. *Kent*. F₁F₂.

52 *'tis*] om. Hanmer.

55 *where*] F₂F₄. *where's* F₁F₂.

58 *because full*] *beauteous, full* Hanmer.

bounteous, full Vaughan conj. *pleasant, full* Kinnear conj.

59 *wealthy*] *worthy* Hanmer.

60 *you are*] F₁. *thou art* F₂F₃F₄.

62 *Yet*] *Yea* Malone conj.

65 *ought*] Theobald (ed. 2). *ought* Ff.

65, 66 *hands, But to.....you?*] Rann

(Johnson conj.). *hands, Kent to...*

you, Ff. *hands, Bent to.....you?*

Steevens conj. *hands?* 'Cept to...

you? Mason conj. *hands, Kent to*

...you? Malone. *hands, Kent?*—

To.....you, Jackson conj. *hands,*

Kent, to.....you? Collier. *hands,*

Even to...you? Vaughan conj.

68 *book*] *books* Anon. conj.

You cannot but forbear to murder me :
 This tongue hath parley'd unto foreign kings
 For your behoof,—

74

Cade. Tut, when struck'st thou one blow in the field?

Say. Great men have reaching hands: oft have I struck
 Those that I never saw and struck them dead.

Geo. O monstrous coward! what, to come behind folks?

Say. These cheeks are pale for watching for your
 good.

Cade. Give him a box o' the ear and that will make
 'em red again.

81

Say. Long sitting to determine poor men's causes
 Hath made me full of sickness and diseases.

Cade. Ye shall have a hempen caudle then and the
 help of hatchet.

85

Dick. Why dost thou quiver, man?

Say. The palsy, and not fear, provokes me.

Cade. Nay, he nods at us, as who should say, I'll be
 even with you: I'll see if his head will stand steadier on a
 pole, or no. Take him away, and behead him.

90

Say. Tell me wherein have I offended most?
 Have I affected wealth or honour? speak.

Are my chests fill'd up with extorted gold?

Is my apparel sumptuous to behold?

Whom have I injured, that ye seek my death?

95

These hands are free from guiltless blood-shedding,

72 *You*] *Ye* F₄.

murder] Johnson. *murther* Ff.

74 *behoof*,—] Capell. *behoof*. Ff.

75 *Tut*] *Tut, tut* Hanmer.

struck'st] *struckest* Dyce.

77 *never*] *neve* F₂.

79 *pale* for] F₁. *pale* with F₂F₃F₄.

84 *caudle*] F₄. *candle* F₁F₃F₄.

84, 85 *the help of hatchet*] F₁. *the help*
of a hatchet F₂F₃F₄. *pap* with a

hatchet Farmer conj. *the pap* of a
hatchet Steevens (1793). *the helve* of
a hatchet Mitford conj. *the heal* of
a hatchet Brae conj.

87 *The palsy*] *It is the palsy* Dyce, ed. 2
 (Anon. conj.), from (Qq).

provokes] *provoketh* Hanmer.

91 *have I*] *I have* Rowe (ed. 1).

92 *honour*] *honours* Vaughan conj.

93 *gold*] *gifts* Wordsworth.

This breast from harbouring foul deceitful thoughts.
O, let me live!

Cade. [*Aside*] I feel remorse in myself with his words ;
but I'll bridle it : he shall die, an it be but for pleading so
well for his life. Away with him ! he has a familiar under
his tongue ; he speaks not o' God's name. Go, take him
away, I say, and strike off his head presently ; and then
break into his son-in-law's house, Sir James Cromer, and
strike off his head, and bring them both upon two poles
hither. 106

All. It shall be done.

Say. Ah, countrymen ! if when you make your prayers,
God should be so obdurate as yourselves,
How would it fare with your departed souls ? 110
And therefore yet relent, and save my life.

Cade. Away with him ! and do as I command ye.

[*Exeunt some with Lord Say.*]

The proudest peer in the realm shall not wear a head on
his shoulders, unless he pay me tribute ; there shall not a
maid be married, but she shall pay to me her maidenhead
ere they have it : men shall hold of me in capite ; and we
charge and command that their wives be as free as heart
can wish or tongue can tell.

Dick. My lord, when shall we go to Cheapside and
take up commodities upon our bills ? 120

Cade. Marry, presently.

All. O, brave !

99—101 *I feel.....life.*] Marked as

'*Aside*' first by Capell.

100 *an*] Pope. *and* Ff.

it be] *be it* F₄.

102 *speaks*] *speaks* F₂.

not] *not*, Capell.

o] Theobald. *a* Ff.

104 *James*] *William* Ritson conj.

112 [*Exeunt...*] Hanmer. om. Ff.

113 *in the*] F₁F₂ of the F₃F₄.

115 *to me*] F₁F₂ *me* F₃F₄.

her] for *her* Vaughan conj. (doubt-
fully).

Re-enter one with the heads.

www.libtool.com.cn

Cade. But is not this braver? Let them kiss one another, for they loved well when they were alive. Now part them again, lest they consult about the giving up of some more towns in France. Soldiers, defer the spoil of the city until night: for with these borne before us, instead of maces, will we ride through the streets; and at every corner have them kiss. Away! *[Exeunt.*

SCENE VIII. *Southwark.*

Alarum and retreat. Enter CADE and all his rabblement.

Cade. Up Fish Street! down Saint Magnus' Corner! kill and knock down! throw them into Thames! *[Sound a parley.]* What noise is this I hear? Dare any be so bold to sound retreat or parley, when I command them kill?

Enter BUCKINGHAM and CLIFFORD, attended.

Buck. Ay, here they be that dare and will disturb thee: Know, Cade, we come ambassadors from the king 6
Unto the commons whom thou hast misled;

123 *Re-enter...]* Enter... Ff. *Re-enter*
Rebels, with the Heads. Capell.
123—129 *But...Away !]* As prose by
Theobald. As nine lines in Ff.
123 *braver]* brave F₄.
124 *alive]* alive [Jowle them. Collier
MS.
128 *will we]* we will F₄.
and] om. F₃F₄.
129 *[Exeunt.]* Rowe. Exit. Ff.
SCENE VIII.] Capell. SCENE VII.
Pope. SCENE IX. Hammer.
Southwark.] Theobald.

Enter...] Enter againe... Ff.
1 *Magnus]* Warburton. *Magnus*
Theobald. *Magnes* Ff.
2, 3 *[Sound a parley.]* Parley sounded;
afterwards, a Retreat. Capell.
3, 4 *What...kill ?]* As prose first by
Hammer. As three lines, ending
hears?...Parley...kill ? in Ff.
5 Clifford] old Clifford Ff.
attended] Theobald. om. Ff.
Ay, here] Rowe. *I heere* F₁F₂. *I*
here F₃F₄.

And here pronounce free pardon to them all,
That will forsake thee and go home in peace.

Clif. What say ye, countrymen? will ye relent, 10
And yield to mercy whilst 'tis offer'd you;
Or let a rebel lead you to your deaths?
Who loves the king and will embrace his pardon,
Fling up his cap, and say 'God save his majesty!'
Who hateth him and honours not his father, 15
Henry the fifth, that made all France to quake,
Shake he his weapon at us and pass by.

All. God save the king! God save the king!

Cade. What, Buckingham and Clifford, are ye so brave?
And you, base peasants, do ye believe him? will you
needs be hanged with your pardons about your necks?
Hath my sword therefore broke through London gates,
that you should leave me at the White Hart in South-
wark? I thought ye would never have given out these
arms till you had recovered your ancient freedom: but
you are all recreants and dastards, and delight to live
in slavery to the nobility. Let them break your backs
with burthens, take your houses over your heads, ravish
your wives and daughters before your faces: for me, I
will make shift for one; and so, God's curse light upon
you all! 31

All. We'll follow Cade, we'll follow Cade!

Clif. Is Cade the son of Henry the Fifth,
That thus you do exclaim you'll go with him?

- | | |
|--|--|
| 10 <i>relent</i>] <i>repent</i> Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). | 23, 24 <i>Southwark</i> ?] Rowe. <i>Southwarke</i> . Ff. |
| 12 <i>rebel</i>] Singer, ed. 2 (Collier MS. and Anon. MS.). <i>rabble</i> Ff. <i>ribald</i> Vaughan conj. | 24 <i>ye</i>] <i>you</i> Rowe (ed. 2). <i>out</i>] <i>over</i> S. Walker conj. <i>up</i> Cartwright conj. |
| 20 <i>him</i> ?] Rowe. <i>him</i> , Ff. <i>'em</i> ? Theobald. <i>them</i> ? Hanmer. | 28 <i>burthens</i>] <i>burdens</i> Steevens. |
| 23 <i>White Hart</i>] <i>White-hart</i> F ₁ . <i>White-heart</i> F ₁ . <i>white-heart</i> F ₂ , F ₃ . | 32 <i>We'll...Cade</i> !] As two lines in Ff. |
| | 34 <i>him</i> ?] Rowe. <i>him</i> . Ff. |

Will he conduct you through the heart of France, 35
 And make the meanest of you earls and dukes?
 Alas, he hath no home, no place to fly to;
 Nor knows he how to live but by the spoil,
 Unless by robbing of your friends and us.
 Were 't not a shame, that whilst you live at jar, 40
 The fearful French, whom you late vanquished,
 Should make a start o'er seas and vanquish you?
 Methinks already in this civil broil
 I see them lording it in London streets,
 Crying 'Villiago!' unto all they meet. 45
 Better ten thousand base-born Cades miscarry,
 Than you should stoop unto a Frenchman's mercy.
 To France, to France, and get what you have lost;
 Spare England, for it is your native coast:
 Henry hath money, you are strong and manly; 50
 God on our side, doubt not of victory.

All. A Clifford! a Clifford! we'll follow the king and
 Clifford. 53

Cade. Was ever feather so lightly blown to and fro as
 this multitude? The name of Henry the Fifth hailes them
 to an hundred mischiefs and makes them leave me desol-
 ate. I see them lay their heads together to surprise me.
 My sword make way for me, for here is no staying.
 In despite of the devils and hell, have through the very
 midst of you! and heavens and honour be witness
 that no want of resolution in me, but only my followers'
 base and ignominious treasons, makes me betake me to
 my heels. [Exit.

- 39 *Unless*] *He gets* Keightley conj. *And* 54—58 *Was ever.....staying.*] Marked
lives Vaughan conj. 'Aside' by Dyce and Staunton.
 45 *Villiago*] *Ff. Villageois* Theobald. 60 *middest*] *midst* F₄.
Viliaco Dyce and Staunton (Capell 62 *treasons*] *treason* Dyce.
 conj.). *makes*] F₁. *make* F₂F₃F₄.
 50 *money*] *mercy* Warburton.

Buck. What, is he fled? Go some, and follow him;
 And he that brings his head unto the king 65
 Shall have a thousand crowns for his reward.

[*Exeunt some of them.*]

Follow me, soldiers: we'll devise a mean
 To reconcile you all unto the king. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IX. *Kenilworth Castle.*

Sound trumpets. Enter KING, QUEEN, and SOMERSET, on the terrace.

King. Was ever king that joy'd an earthly throne,
 And could command no more content than I?
 No sooner was I crept out of my cradle
 But I was made a king, at nine months old.
 Was never subject long'd to be a king 5
 As I do long and wish to be a subject.

Enter BUCKINGHAM and CLIFFORD.

Buck. Health and glad tidings to your majesty!

King. Why, Buckingham, is the traitor Cade surprised?

Or is he but retired to make him strong?

Enter, below, multitudes, with halters about their necks.

Clif. He is fled, my lord, and all his powers do yield;
 And humbly thus, with halters on their necks, 11
 Expect your highness' doom, of life or death.

68 [Exeunt.] Exeunt omnes. Ff.

SCENE IX.] Capell. SCENE VIII.
 Pope. SCENE X. Hanmer.
 Kenilworth Castle.] The Palace at
 Killingworth. Theobald.
 terrace] Tarras Ff.

5 long'd] long F₃F₄.

7 Clifford] Ff. old Clifford Capell.
 10 below, multitudes,] Multitudes Ff.
 below, the Soldiers of Cade's army,
 Capell.
 He is] He's Pope.

King. Then, heaven, set ope thy everlasting gates,
 To entertain my vows of thanks and praise!
 Soldiers, this day have you redeem'd your lives, 15
 And show'd how well you love your prince and country:
 Continue still in this so good a mind,
 And Henry, though he be infortunate,
 Assure yourselves, will never be unkind:
 And so, with thanks and pardon to you all, 20
 I do dismiss you to your several countries.

All. God save the king! God save the king!

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Please it your grace to be advertised
 The Duke of York is newly come from Ireland,
 And with a puissant and a mighty power 25
 Of gallowglasses and stout kernes
 Is marching hitherward in proud array,
 And still proclaimeth, as he comes along,
 His arms are only to remove from thee
 The Duke of Somerset, whom he terms a traitor. 30

King. Thus stands my state, 'twixt Cade and York
 distress'd;
 Like to a ship that, having 'scaped a tempest,
 Is straightway calm'd and boarded with a pirate:
 But now is Cade driven back, his men dispersed;

18 *he] ye* Vaughan conj. (doubtfully).
infortunate] F₁F₂. *unfortunate* F₃F₄.
importunate Vaughan conj. (doubt-
 fully).

21 *countries]* *counties* Delius conj.

22 [Exeunt. Hanmer.

25 *a mighty]* F₁F₂. *mighty* F₃F₄. *unit-
 ed* Collier MS.

26 *Of]* *Of desp'rate* Hanmer. *Of nim-
 ble* Capell. *Of savage* Dyce (ed. 2).
stout] *stout Irish* Collier, ed. 2 (Mit-

ford conj.).

kernes] *kernes*, *he* Keightley. *kernes
 supplied* Vaughan conj.

29 *arms]* *Armes* F₁. *Armies* F₂F₃F₄.
aims Singer, ed. 2 (Dyce conj. with-
 drawn).

33 *calm'd]* F₄. *calme* F₁. *claim'd* F₂.
claim'd F₃. *cramp'd* Becket conj.
chased Hudson (S. Walker conj.).

34 *dispersed]* *dispers'd* F₄. *dispiers'd* F₁
 F₂F₃.

And now is York in arms to second him. 35
 I pray thee, Buckingham, go and meet him,
 And ask him what's the reason of these arms.
 Tell him I'll send Duke Edmund to the Tower;
 And, Somerset, we will commit thee thither,
 Until his army be dismiss'd from him. 40

Som. My lord,
 I'll yield myself to prison willingly,
 Or unto death, to do my country good.

King. In any case, be not too rough in terms;
 For he is fierce and cannot brook hard language. 45

Buck. I will, my lord; and doubt not so to deal
 As all things shall redound unto your good.

King. Come, wife, let's in, and learn to govern better;
 For yet may England curse my wretched reign.

[*Flourish.* *Exeunt.*]

SCENE X. *Kent. Iden's garden.*

Enter CADE.

Cade. Fie on ambition! fie on myself, that have a
 sword, and yet am ready to famish! These five days
 have I hid me in these woods and durst not peep out,
 for all the country is laid for me; but now am I so

36 *I pray...go*] *Go, I pray thee, Buck-
 ingham, Staunton conj.
 go and meet him*] Ff. *go and meet
 with him Rowe. to go and meet
 him Malone. go forth and meet him
 Steevens (1793). then go and meet
 him Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). go
 thou and meet him Dyce (ed. 2).*

49 *For*] *Or Hudson (Seymour conj.).*

[*Flourish.*] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

SCENE X.] Steevens. SCENE IX.
 Pope. SCENE XI. Hammer. ACT V.
 SCENE I. Capell.

Kent. Iden's garden.] Capell. A
 Garden in Kent. Pope.

Cade] F₁F₂. Jack Cade F₂F₄.

1 *ambition*] F₂F₃F₄. *Ambitions* F₁.

3 *these*] *those* Capell conj.

4 *so*] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

hungry that if I might have a lease of my life for a thousand years I could stay no longer. Wherefore, on a brick wall have I climbed into this garden, to see if I can eat grass, or pick a sallet another while, which is not amiss to cool a man's stomach this hot weather. And I think this word 'sallet' was born to do me good: for many a time, but for a sallet, my brain-pan had been cleft with a brown bill; and many a time, when I have been dry and bravely marching, it hath served me instead of a quart pot to drink in; and now the word 'sallet' must serve me to feed on. 15

Enter IDEN.

Iden. Lord, who would live turmoiled in the court,
 And may enjoy such quiet walks as these?
 This small inheritance my father left me
 Contenteth me, and worth a monarchy.
 I seek not to wax great by others' waning, 20
 Or gather wealth, I care not with what envy:
 Sufficeth that I have maintains my state,
 And sends the poor well pleased from my gate.

Cade. Here's the lord of the soil come to seize me
 for a stray, for entering his fee-simple without leave. Ah,
 villain, thou wilt betray me, and get a thousand crowns

- | | |
|--|--|
| 6 <i>on</i>] <i>o'er</i> Hanmer. | 19 <i>Contenteth</i>] <i>Contents</i> Hudson, reading as Malone. |
| 8 <i>grass</i>] <i>grapes</i> Vaughan conj. | <i>and</i>] <i>and's</i> Rowe. <i>and is</i> Malone in Vaughan conj. |
| 11 <i>brain-pan</i>] <i>brain-pain</i> Rowe (ed. 2). | 20 <i>waning</i>] <i>waining</i> Rowe (ed. 2). <i>warning</i> Ff. |
| 13 <i>and bravely</i>] <i>and toil'd</i> by Lettsom conj. <i>and barely</i> Vaughan conj. <i>and heavily</i> Dyce conj. <i>and breathless</i> Kinnear conj. <i>as hay</i> by Wordsworth conj. | 21 <i>I care not with</i>] <i>not caring with</i> Wordsworth. |
| 16 <i>Enter Iden.</i>] Ff. <i>Enter Iden</i> , with Servants. Steevens, from (Qq). See note (xi). | 24, 25 <i>Here's...leave.</i>] Marked 'Aside' by Dyce and Staunton. |
| 17 <i>these f</i>] <i>these</i> , F ₄ . | 25 <i>Ah,</i>] <i>Ah</i> F ₃ F ₄ . <i>A</i> F ₁ F ₂ . |
| | 26 <i>a thousand</i>] <i>a 1000</i> . Ff. |

of the king by carrying my head to him : but I'll make thee eat iron like an ostrich, and swallow my sword like a great pin, ere thou and I part.

Iden. Why, rude companion, whatso'er thou be, 30
I know thee not; why then should I betray thee?

Is't not enough to break into my garden,
And, like a thief, to come to rob my grounds,
Climbing my walls in spite of me the owner,
But thou wilt brave me with these saucy terms? 35

Cade. Brave thee! ay, by the best blood that ever was
broached, and beard thee too. Look on me well: I have
eat no meat these five days; yet, come thou and thy
five men, and if I do not leave you all as dead as a
door-nail, I pray God I may never eat grass more. 40

Iden. Nay, it shall ne'er be said, while England stands,
That Alexander Iden, an esquire of Kent,
Took odds to combat a poor famish'd man.
Oppose thy steadfast-gazing eyes to mine,
See if thou canst outface me with thy looks: 45
Set limb to limb, and thou art far the lesser;
Thy hand is but a finger to my fist,
Thy leg a stick compared with this truncheon;
My foot shall fight with all the strength thou hast;
And if mine arm be heaved in the air, 50
Thy grave is digg'd already in the earth.
As for words, whose greatness answers words,

27 *by*] for Steevens.

35 [Enter five Servants. Anon. conj.

36 *ay*,] om. Pope.

39 *five men*] (Qq) Ff. *fine men* Collier,
ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

all] om. Rowe.

42 *an esquire*] 'esquire Capell.

44 *steadfast-gazing*] Capell. *stedfast*
gazing Ff.

52, 53 *As...what*] *As for more words, let*

this my sword report (Whose greatness
answers words) *what* Hanmer.

52 *As for words*] *As for more words*
Rowe. *As for mere words* Mason
conj. *But as for words* Dyce, ed. 2
(Anon. conj.). *And as for words*
Keightley. *As for thy words* Perring
conj.

words...words,] *words*—(whose...
words f) Becket conj.

Let this my sword report what speech forbears. 53

Cade. By my valour, the most complete champion that ever I heard! Steel, if thou turn the edge, or cut not out the burly-boned clown in chines of beef ere thou sleep in thy sheath, I beseech God on my knees thou mayst be turned to hobnails. [Here they fight. Cade falls.]

O, I am slain! famine and no other hath slain me: let ten thousand devils come against me, and give me but the ten meals I have lost, and I'd defy them all. Wither, garden; and be henceforth a burying-place to all that do dwell in this house, because the unconquered soul of Cade is fled.

Iden. Is 't Cade that I have slain, that monstrous traitor? 65

Sword, I will hallow thee for this thy deed,
And hang thee o'er my tomb when I am dead:
Ne'er shall this blood be wiped from thy point;
But thou shalt wear it as a herald's coat,
To emblaze the honour that thy master got. 70

Cade. Iden, farewell, and be proud of thy victory. Tell Kent from me, she hath lost her best man, and exhort all the world to be cowards; for I, that never feared any, am vanquished by famine, not by valour. [Dies.]

Iden. How much thou wrong'st me, heaven be my judge. 75

Die, damned wretch, the curse of her that bare thee;
And as I thrust thy body in with my sword,
So wish I, I might thrust thy soul to hell.
Hence will I drag thee headlong by the heels

55 *the edge*] *thine edge* F₄.

56 *chines*] *chaines* F₂.

57 *God*] Malone, from (Qq). *Ioue* Ff.

58 [Here they fight.] Ff.

Cade falls.] Capell. om. Ff.

67 *thee*] *thou* Jackson conj.

70 *that*] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄. *which* Rowe.

77 *in*] om. Dyce, ed. 2 (Lloyd conj.).

79 *headlong*] *endlong* Vaughan conj.

Unto a dunghill which shall be thy grave,
 And there cut off thy most ungracious head;
 Which I will bear in triumph to the king,
 Leaving thy trunk for crows to feed upon.

80

[Exit.]

ACT V.

SCENE I. *Fields between Dartford and Blackheath.*

Enter YORK, and his army of Irish, with drum and colours.

York. From Ireland thus comes York to claim his right,
 And pluck the crown from feeble Henry's head:
 Ring, bells, aloud; burn, bonfires, clear and bright,
 To entertain great England's lawful king.
 Ah! sancta majestas, who would not buy thee dear? 5
 Let them obey that know not how to rule;
 This hand was made to handle nought but gold.
 I cannot give due action to my words,
 Except a sword or sceptre balance it:
 A sceptre shall it have, have I a soul, 10
 On which I'll toss the flower-de-luce of France.

81 *off*] of F₄.

83 [Exit.] Ff. Exit, dragging out the Body. Capell. Exeunt, Iden dragging out the body, and Servants. Dyce.

ACT V. SCENE I.] Pope. ACT V.

SCENE II. Capell. om. Ff.

Fields...Blackheath.] Malone. In the Fields near London. Pope. Fields near Saint Alban's. Capell. Enter...] Ff. Two Camps pitch'd, the King's, and Duke of York's; on either Side, one. Enter York,

attended. Capell.

5 *sancta majestas*] *majesty* Pope. *santa maestá* Capell conj., from (Qq).

6 *them...know*] Rowe. *them...knowes* F₁F₂. *them...knows* F₃F₄. *him...knows* Capell conj.

8 *I cannot*] *It cannot* Delius conj.

10 *soul*] F₃F₄. *soule* F₁F₂. *sword* Johnson conj.

11 *toss*] *boss* Vaughan conj. *flower-de-luce*] *Fleure-de-Luce* F₁F₂. *Floure-de-Luce* F₃F₄.

VOL. V.

16

Enter BUCKINGHAM.

Whom have we here? Buckingham, to disturb me?
The king hath sent him, sure: I must dissemble.

Buck. York, if thou meanest well, I greet thee well.

York. Humphrey of Buckingham, I accept thy greeting.
Art thou a messenger, or come of pleasure? 16

Buck. A messenger from Henry, our dread liege,
To know the reason of these arms in peace;
Or why thou, being a subject as I am,
Against thy oath and true allegiance sworn, 20
Should raise so great a power without his leave,
Or dare to bring thy force so near the court.

York. [*Aside*] Scarce can I speak, my choler is so
great:

O, I could hew up rocks and fight with flint,
I am so angry at these abject terms; 25

And now, like Ajax Telamonius,
On sheep or oxen could I spend my fury.

I am far better born than is the king,
More like a king, more kingly in my thoughts:
But I must make fair weather yet a while, 30

Till Henry be more weak and I more strong.—
Buckingham, I prithee, pardon me,

That I have given no answer all this while;
My mind was troubled with deep melancholy.

The cause why I have brought this army hither 35
Is to remove proud Somerset from the king,
Seditious to his grace and to the state.

12 *me f] me!* Vaughan conj.

21 *Should] Should'st* Theobald.

leave,] Johnson. *leaves?* Ff.

22 *court.*] Capell. *Court?* Ff.

23—31 *Scarce...strong.*] Marked 'Aside'

by Rowe.

27 *or oxen]* and *oxen* Capell.

32 *Buckingham]* F₁. O *Buckingham*
F₂F₃F₄

Buck. That is too much presumption on thy part :
But if thy arms be to no other end,
The king hath yielded unto thy demand : 40
The Duke of Somerset is in the Tower.

York. Upon thine honour, is he prisoner ?

Buck. Upon mine honour, he is prisoner.

York. Then, Buckingham, I do dismiss my powers.
Soldiers, I thank you all ; disperse yourselves ; 45
Meet me to-morrow in Saint George's field,
You shall have pay and every thing you wish.
And let my sovereign, virtuous Henry,
Command my eldest son, nay, all my sons,
As pledges of my fealty and love ; 50
I'll send them all as willing as I live :
Lands, goods, horse, armour, any thing I have,
Is his to use, so Somerset may die.

Buck. York, I commend this kind submission :
We twain will go into his highness' tent. 55

Enter KING and Attendants.

King. Buckingham, doth York intend no harm to us,
That thus he marcheth with thee arm in arm ?

York. In all submission and humility
York doth present himself unto your highness.

King. Then what intends these forces thou dost bring ?

York. To heave the traitor Somerset from hence, 61
And fight against that monstrous rebel Cade,
Who since I heard to be discomfited.

39 *arms*] *aims* Collier conj.

43 *prisoner.*] F₁F₄. *prisoner?* F₂F₃.

49 *son*] om. F₄.

55 [Exit. Hammer.

58 SCENE II.] Pope. Scene changes to
the King's Pavilion. Theobald.

Enter...] Ff. Enter... Re-enter

Buckingham and York, attended.
Theobald.

60 *intends*] F₁F₂F₃. *intend* F₄.

61 *heave*] (Qq) F₁F₂. *have* F₃F₄.

63 *Who*] F₁. *Whom* F₂F₃F₄.
heard] *hear* Capell.

Enter IDEN, with CADE'S head.
www.libtool.com.cn

Iden. If one so rude and of so mean condition
May pass into the presence of a king, 65
Lo, I present your grace a traitor's head,
The head of Cade, whom I in combat slew.

King. The head of Cade! Great God, how just art
Thou!

O, let me view his visage, being dead,
That living wrought me such exceeding trouble. 70
Tell me, my friend, art thou the man that slew him?

Iden. I was, an't like your majesty.

King. How art thou call'd? and what is thy degree?

Iden. Alexander Iden, that's my name;
A poor esquire of Kent, that loves his king. 75

Buck. So please it you, my lord, 'twere not amiss
He were created knight for his good service.

King. Iden, kneel down. [*He kneels.*] Rise up a knight.
We give thee for reward a thousand marks,
And will that thou henceforth attend on us. 80

Iden. May Iden live to merit such a bounty,
And never live but true unto his liege! [*Rises.*]

65 *pass*] *press* S. Walker conj.

71 *art thou*] *wast thou* Capell conj. *wert thou* Vaughan conj.

72 *I was*] *I am* Hudson. *I was the man* Vaughan conj.
an't] Ff.

74 *Alexander...name*] *My name is Alexander Iden, sir* Capell conj.

Alexander Iden] *Ev'n Alexander Iden* Hanmer. *Iden, Alexander Iden* Edd. conj. *Call'd Alexander Iden* Vaughan conj.
name ; *name, my liege* ; Keightley.

75 *loves his*] F₁. *loves the* F₂. *love the* F₃F₄.

76 *it*] om. F₄.

77 *his*] *this* S. Walker conj.

78 *down.* [*He kneels.*] *Rise*] Johnson. *down, rise* Ff. *down*; *and rise thou* Hanmer. *down.* [*He kneels.*] *Iden, rise* Dyce, ed. 2 [*Lettsom* conj.]. *down,* [*he kneels*]; *and now rise up* Vaughan conj.
a knight] *Sir Alexander* Vaughan conj.

82 [*Rises.*] Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

Enter QUEEN and SOMERSET.
www.libtool.com.cn

King. See, Buckingham, Somerset comes with the queen :

Go, bid her hide him quickly from the duke.

Queen. For thousand Yorks he shall not hide his head,
But boldly stand and front him to his face. 86

York. How now! is Somerset at liberty?

Then, York, unloose thy long-imprison'd thoughts,
And let thy tongue be equal with thy heart.
Shall I endure the sight of Somerset? 90

False king! why hast thou broken faith with me,
Knowing how hardly I can brook abuse?

King did I call thee? no, thou art not king,

Not fit to govern and rule multitudes,
Which darest not, no, nor canst not rule a traitor. 95

That head of thine doth not become a crown ;

Thy hand is made to grasp a palmer's staff,

And not to grace an awful princely sceptre.

That gold must round engirt these brows of mine,

Whose smile and frown, like to Achilles' spear, 100

Is able with the change to kill and cure.

Here is a hand to hold a sceptre up,

And with the same to act controlling laws.

Give place : by heaven, thou shalt rule no more

O'er him whom heaven created for thy ruler. 105

83 SCENE III. Pope.

See.....Somerset] See, Buckingham!

see who Capell conj.

88 *long-imprison'd] long imprison'd*

Theobald. long imprisoned Ff.

93 *not] F₁. no F₂F₃F₄.*

94 *govern and rule] rule and govern*

Hudson (S. Walker conj.).

95 *darest] dar'st F₁. durst F₂F₃F₄.*

99 *these] F₁. the F₂F₃F₄.*

100 *smile and frown] frown and smile*
Delius conj.

like to] F₁. like F₂F₃F₄.

103 *to act] to enact Capell conj. coact*

Vaughan conj.

Som. O monstrous traitor! I arrest thee, York,
Of capital treason 'gainst the king and crown:
Obey, audacious traitor; kneel for grace.

York. Wouldst have me kneel? first let me ask of
these,

If they can brook I bow a knee to man. 110

Sirrah, call in my sons to be my bail: *[Exit Attendant.]*

I know, ere they will have me go to ward,
They'll pawn their swords for my enfranchisement.

Queen. Call hither Clifford; bid him come amain,
To say if that the bastard boys of York 115
Shall be the surety for their traitor father.

[Exit Buckingham.]

York. O blood-bespotted Neapolitan,
Outcast of Naples, England's bloody scourge!
The sons of York, thy betters in their birth,
Shall be their father's bail; and bane to those 120
That for my surety will refuse the boys!

Enter EDWARD and RICHARD.

See where they come: I'll warrant they'll make it good.

Enter CLIFFORD and his Son.

Queen. And here comes Clifford to deny their bail.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 109—111 Theobald (Warburton) reads in this order: <i>Sirrah.....bail;</i> <i>Wouldst...man.</i> | <i>[Exit...] Capell. om. Ff.</i> 112 <i>have] let F₂F₃F₄.</i> 113 <i>for] F₂F₃F₄. of F₁.</i> |
| 109 <i>me kneel?] my knees? Vaughan conj.</i> <i>these] Theobald. three Id. conj.</i> <i>thee Ff. them Hanmer.</i> [pointing to his Troops, and Attendants. Capell. | 116 <i>[Exit Buckingham.] Capell. om.</i> Ff. Exit an Attendant. Dyce. 120 <i>bail] F₂F₄. baile F₁F₂.</i> <i>bane] bale Theobald.</i> |
| 110 <i>brook I...man.] brook; I...man!</i> F ₄ . | 121 <i>boys/] Dyce. Boyes. F₁F₂F₃. Boys</i> F ₄ . |
| 111 <i>sons] sonne F₁.</i> <i>bail] F₂F₄. bale F₁. baile F₂.</i> | 122 Enter...] Ff. 123 Enter.....Son.] Enter Clifford. Ff Druma. Enter, from one Side, the |

Clif. Health and all happiness to my lord the king!

[*Kneels.*

York. I thank thee, Clifford: say, what news with thee? 125

Nay, do not fright us with an angry look:
We are thy sovereign, Clifford, kneel again;
For thy mistaking so, we pardon thee.

Clif. This is my king, York, I do not mistake;
But thou mistakest me much to think I do: 130
To Bedlam with him! is the man grown mad?

King. Ay, Clifford; a bedlam and ambitious humour
Makes him oppose himself against his king.

Clif. He is a traitor; let him to the Tower,
And chop away that factious pate of his. 135

Queen. He is arrested, but will not obey;
His sons, he says, shall give their words for him.

York. Will you not, sons?

Edw. Ay, noble father, if our words will serve.

Rich. And if words will not, then our weapons shall.

Clif. Why, what a brood of traitors have we here! 141

York. Look in a glass, and call thy image so:

I am thy king, and thou a false-heart traitor.

Call hither to the stake my two brave bears,

That with the very shaking of their chains 145

They may astonish these fell-lurking curs:

Bid Salisbury and Warwick come to me.

Lords Edward and Richard, Sons
to York; and, from the other, Old
Clifford and his Son; Forces with
them both. Capell, from (Qq), after
line 123.

124 &c. *Clif.*] o. C. Capell.

124 *my*] *the* F₄.

[*Kneels.*] Johnson.

125 *I*] *We* (Qq) Capell.

126 *us*] F₁. *me* F₂F₃F₄.

130 *mistakes*] F₂F₃F₄. *mistakes* F₁.

135 *chop*] F₁. *crop* F₂F₃F₄.

137 *sons*] *son* F₄.

139 *Edw.*] F₁F₂. *Edm.* F₃F₄.

143 *thy*] F₁F₂. *the* F₃F₄.

146 *fell-lurking*] *fell-barking* Roderick
conj. *fell-lurching* Hudson (Heath
conj.). *fell-looking* Collier, ed. 2
(Collier MS.). *fell lurking* Capell.

Enter the EARLS OF WARWICK and SALISBURY.

Clif. Are these thy bears? we'll bait thy bears to death,

And manacle the bear-ward in their chains,
If thou darest bring them to the baiting place. 150

Rich. Oft have I seen a hot o'erweening cur
Run back and bite, because he was withheld;
Who, being suffer'd with the bear's fell paw,
Hath clapp'd his tail between his legs and cried:
And such a piece of service will you do, 155
If you oppose yourselves to match Lord Warwick.

Clif. Hence, heap of wrath, foul indigested lump,
As crooked in thy manners as thy shape!

York. Nay, we shall heat you thoroughly anon. 159

Clif. Take heed, lest by your heat you burn yourselves.

King. Why, Warwick, hath thy knee forgot to bow?
Old Salisbury, shame to thy silver hair,
Thou mad misleader of thy brain-sick son!
What, wilt thou on thy death-bed play the ruffian,
And seek for sorrow with thy spectacles? 165
O, where is faith? O, where is loyalty?
If it be banish'd from the frosty head,
Where shall it find a harbour in the earth?
Wilt thou go dig a grave to find out war,

148 SCENE IV. Pope.

Enter...] Drums. Enter S., and
W., with Forces. Capell.

bait] F₃F₄. *bate* F₁. *baite* F₂.

149 *bear-ward*] Pope. *Berard* F₁F₂.
Bearard F₃F₄.

150 *baiting*] F₃F₄. *bayting* F₁F₂.

152 *Run*] *Turn* Hanmer.

153 *being*] *having* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier
MS.).

suffer'd with...paw,] *suffer'd, with...*

paw Vaughan conj.

with] *within* Keightley conj.

154 *between*] *betwixt* F₄.

156 *oppose*] F₁F₂. *suppose* F₃F₄.

157 *Clif.*] y. C. (i.e. Young Clifford).
Capell.

169 *go...to*] *for...go* or *to...go* Vaughan
conj.

dig...war] *find out war to dig a
grave* Roderick conj.

And shame thine honourable age with blood? 170

Why art thou old, and want'st experience?

Or wherefore dost abuse it, if thou hast it?

For shame! in duty bend thy knee to me,

That bows unto the grave with mickle age.

Sal. My lord, I have consider'd with myself 175

The title of this most renowned duke;

And in my conscience do repute his grace

The rightful heir to England's royal seat.

King. Hast thou not sworn allegiance unto me?

Sal. I have. 180

King. Canst thou dispense with heaven for such an oath?

Sal. It is great sin to swear unto a sin,

But greater sin to keep a sinful oath.

Who can be bound by any solemn vow

To do a murderous deed, to rob a man, 185

To force a spotless virgin's chastity,

To reave the orphan of his patrimony,

To wring the widow from her custom'd right,

And have no other reason for this wrong

But that he was bound by a solemn oath? 190

Queen. A subtle traitor needs no sophister.

King. Call Buckingham, and bid him arm himself.

York. Call Buckingham, and all the friends thou hast,
I am resolved for death or dignity.

Clif. The first I warrant thee, if dreams prove true. 195

War. You were best to go to bed and dream again,

170 *shame*] *stain* Dyce, ed. 2 (S. Walker conj.).

174 *mickle*] F₁. *milckie* F₂. *milky* F₃ F₄.

175 *consider'd*] Pope. *considered* Ff.

181 *an oath*] *a vow* Capell.

185—187 *deed, ... man, ... chastity, ...*

patrimony,] *deed? ... man? ... chastity? ... patrimony?* Vaughan conj.

189 *this*] *his* F₄.

194 *or*] Rowe (ed. 2). *and* Ff.

195, 198, 208 *Clif.*] Old *Clif.* Ff.

196 *to go*] *go* Rowe.

To keep thee from the tempest of the field.

Clif. I am resolved to bear a greater storm
Than any thou canst conjure up to-day;
And that I'll write upon thy burgonet,
Might I but know thee by thy household badge. 200

War. Now, by my father's badge, old Nevil's crest,
The rampant bear chain'd to the ragged staff,
This day I'll wear aloft my burgonet,
As on a mountain top the cedar shows 205
That keeps his leaves in spite of any storm,
Even to affright thee with the view thereof.

Clif. And from thy burgonet I'll rend thy bear,
And tread it under foot with all contempt,
Despite the bear-ward that protects the bear. 210

Y. Clif. And so to arms, victorious father,
To quell the rebels and their complices.

Rich. Fie! charity, for shame! speak not in spite,
For you shall sup with Jesu Christ to-night.

Y. Clif. Foul stigmatic, that's more than thou canst
tell.

Rich. If not in heaven, you'll surely sup in hell. 216
[*Exeunt severally.*]

201 *household*] Malone, from (Qq).
housed F₁. *houses* F₂F₃F₄.

202 *Now, by*] *Known by* Vaughan
conj.

badge] *age* Capell, from (Qq).

203 *ragged*] *rugged* Warburton.

207 *to*] Rowe (ed. 2). *io* F₁. *so* F₂F₃
F₄.

210 *bear-ward*] Pope. *Bearard* Ff.

211 *And so...father*] *And so, renowned*
sovereign, to arms Capell conj., from

(Qq), continuing the speech to
Clifford.

to arms] *to arms, to arms* Anon-
conj.

victorious] F₁. *victorious noble* F₂
F₃F₄. *my victorious* Keightley.

father] *sovereign* Vaughan conj.

212 *the rebels*] *these traitors* (Qq) Ca-
pell.

216 [*Exeunt severally.*] Theobald.
Exeunt. Ff.

SCENE II. *Saint Alban's.**Alarums to the battle. Enter WARWICK.*

War. Clifford of Cumberland, 'tis Warwick calls :
 And if thou dost not hide thee from the bear,
 Now, when the angry trumpet sounds alarum,
 And dead men's cries do fill the empty air,
 Clifford, I say, come forth and fight with me : 5
 Proud northern lord, Clifford of Cumberland,
 Warwick is hoarse with calling thee to arms.

Enter YORK.

How now, my noble lord! what, all a-foot?
York. The deadly-handed Clifford slew my steed,
 But match to match I have encounter'd him, 10
 And made a prey for carrion kites and crows
 Even of the bonny beast he loved so well.

Enter CLIFFORD.

War. Of one or both of us the time is come.
York. Hold, Warwick, seek thee out some other chase,
 For I myself must hunt this deer to death. 15
War. Then, nobly, York; 'tis for a crown thou fight'st.
 As I intend, Clifford, to thrive to-day,
 It grieves my soul to leave thee unassail'd. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.] Steevens. SCENE V.
 Pope. SCENE III.] Capell.
 Saint Alban's.] Capell. The Battle
 at St. Albans. Pope.
 Alarums to the battle.] (Qq). om.
 Ff. Alarums, as of a Battle join'd.
 Excursions. Capell. (Trumpets and
 battle) Collier MS.

2 *And if*] *An if* Capell conj.
 4 *dead men's cries*] (Qq) Ff. *dy'ng*
mens cries Rowe. *dy'ng cries* Rode-
 rick conj. *deaf'ning cries* Vaughan
 conj.
 8 *noble*] om. Johnson.
 11 *carrion kites*] *Carrion, Kytes* F₄.

Clif. What seest thou in me, York? why dost thou
pause?

York. With thy brave bearing should I be in love,
But that thou art so fast mine enemy. 21

Clif. Nor should thy prowess want praise and esteem
But that 'tis shown ignobly and in treason.

York. So let it help me now against thy sword,
As I in justice and true right express it. 25

Clif. My soul and body on the action both!

York. A dreadful lay! Address thee instantly.

[*They fight, and Clifford falls.*]

Clif. La fin couronne les œuvres. [Dies.

York. Thus war hath given thee peace, for thou art
still.

Peace with his soul, heaven, if it be thy will! [*Exit.* 30

Enter young CLIFFORD.

Y. Clif. Shame and confusion! all is on the rout;
Fear frames disorder, and disorder wounds
Where it should guard. O war, thou son of hell,
Whom angry heavens do make their minister,
Throw in the frozen bosoms of our part 35
Hot coals of vengeance! Let no soldier fly.
He that is truly dedicate to war
Hath no self-love, nor he that loves himself
Hath not essentially but by circumstance

19 *What...pause?*] As in Pope. Two lines, the first ending *Yorks?* in Ff.

24 *now*] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

27 *lay*] F₁F₂. *day* F₃F₄.

[*They...falls.*] *fight*; and... Capell. *Fight*. Pope. Omitted in Ff.

28 *couronne les œuvres*] *Corrone les eumenes* F₁. *Corronne les oeuvres* F₂ F₃F₄.

[Dies.] F₂F₃F₄. om. F₁.

30 [*Exit.*] Pope.

31 *Enter...*] Alarums. *Enter...* Capell. *Y. Clif.*] *Clif.* Ff.

confusion! all] Pope. *confusion all* Ff.

36 *soldier*] *souldier* F₁. *souldiers* F₂F₃ F₄.

38 *nor*] for Pope.

The name of valour. [*Seeing his dead father*] O, let the vile
world end. 40

And the promised flames of the last day
Knit earth and heaven together!

Now let the general trumpet blow his blast,
Particularities and petty sounds
To cease! Wast thou ordain'd, dear father, 45

To lose thy youth in peace, and to achieve
The silver livery of advised age,
And, in thy reverence and thy chair-days, thus
To die in ruffian battle? Even at this sight

My heart is turn'd to stone: and while 'tis mine, 50
It shall be stony. York not our old men spares;

No more will I their babes: tears virginal
Shall be to me even as the dew to fire,
And beauty that the tyrant oft reclaims
Shall to my flaming wrath be oil and flax. 55

Henceforth I will not have to do with pity:
Meet I an infant of the house of York,
Into as many gobbets will I cut it
As wild Medea young Absyrtus did:
In cruelty will I seek out my fame. 60

Come, thou new ruin of old Clifford's house:
As did Æneas old Anchises bear,
So bear I thee upon my manly shoulders;
But then Æneas bare a living load,

40 [*Seeing his dead father*] Theobald.
om. Ff.

41 *promised*] *promised* Delius conj.

42 *earth and heaven*] *heaven and earth*
Staunton.

together] *together in one blase*
Vaughan conj.

45 *To cease*] *To-cease* Porson conj. MS.
ordain'd] F₁. *ordained* F₂F₃F₄.

dear] *deere* F₁. *O deere* F₂. *O dear*
F₃F₄.

(*to the bodie*) Collier MS.

48 *and thy*] *and in thy* Capell (corrected
in Errata).

59 *Absyrtus*] Theobald. *Absirtis* Ff.
Absirtus Rowe.

61 [*taking up the Body*. Capell.

Nothing so heavy as these woes of mine.

65

www.libtool.com.cn

[*Exit, bearing off his father.*]

Enter RICHARD *and* SOMERSET *to fight.* SOMERSET *is killed.*

Rich. So, lie thou there;
 For underneath an alehouse' paltry sign,
 The Castle in Saint Alban's, Somerset
 Hath made the wizard famous in his death.
 Sword, hold thy temper; heart, be wrathful still: 70
 Priests pray for enemies, but princes kill. [*Exit.*]

Fight. Excursions. Enter KING, QUEEN, *and others.*

Queen. Away, my lord! you are slow; for shame,
 away!

King. Can we outrun the heavens? good Margaret,
 stay.

Queen. What are you made of? you'll nor fight nor
 fly:

Now is it manhood, wisdom and defence, 75
 To give the enemy way, and to secure us
 By what we can, which can no more but fly.

[*Alarum afar off.*]

If you be ta'en, we then should see the bottom
 Of all our fortunes: but if we haply scape,
 As well we may, if not through your neglect, 80
 We shall to London get, where you are loved,

65 [*Exit...father.*] Pope. *Exit.* Rowe. om. Ff.

66 *Enter...*] Alarums. *Enter...* Capell. Somerset is killed.] Rowe. Omitted in Ff.

there] there, fulfilling prophecy Vaughan conj. See note (XII).

67 *For] Fall'n* Johnson conj.

an alehouse' paltry] a paltry alehouse Anon. conj., from (Qq).

71 [*Exit.*] Theobald. om. Ff.

72 SCENE VI. Pope.

Fight.] Alarums again. Capell.

74 *nor fight] F₁F₂. not fight F₃F₄.*

78 *should] shall* Johnson.

80 *we] me* Rowe (ed. 2).

And where this breach now in our fortunes made
May readily be stopp'd.

www.libtool.com.cn

Re-enter young CLIFFORD.

Y. Clif. But that my heart's on future mischief set,
I would speak blasphemy ere bid you fly : 85
But fly you must ; incurable discomfit
Reigns in the hearts of all our present parts.
Away, for your relief ! and we will live
To see their day and them our fortune give :
Away, my lord, away ! [Exeunt. 90

SCENE III. *Fields near St Alban's.*

*Alarum. Retreat. Enter YORK, RICHARD, WARWICK, and Soldiers,
with drum and colours.*

York. Of Salisbury, who can report of him,
That winter lion, who in rage forgets
Aged contusions and all brush of time,
And, like a gallant in the brow of youth,

82 *where] were* F₂.

84 *Re-enter young C.] Dyce. Enter C.
Ff. Other Alarums. Enter young
C. Capell.*

Y. Clif.] Clif Ff.

heart's] F₁F₂. hearts F₁F₄.

86 *incurable] incurable* Pope (ed. 2).
discomfit] discomfite Ff. *discomfort*
Capell conj.

87 *parts] pow'rs* Hanmer. *party* War-
burton. *friends* Collier MS. *part*
Dyce, ed. 2 (S. Walker conj.).

89 *them] then* F₄.

SCENE III.] STEEVENS. SCENE VII

Pope. SCENE IV. Capell. Theobald
continues the scene.

Fields...] Malone. *Fields without
the Town. Capell.*

1 *Of] Old* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.),
from (Qq).

3 *Aged] Age's* Vaughan conj.
all brush] all bruise Warburton.
abuse Cartwright conj.

of] F₁F₂. off F₃F₄.

4 *brow] blow* Johnson conj. *bruise*
Becket conj. *bloom* Collier, ed. 2
(Collier MS.). *glow* Anon. conj.
prime Cartwright conj.

Repairs him with occasion? This happy day 5
 Is not itself, nor have we won one foot,
 If Salisbury be lost.

Rich. My noble father,
 Three times to-day I help him to his horse,
 Three times bestrid him; thrice I led him off,
 Persuaded him from any further act: 10
 But still, where danger was, still there I met him;
 And like rich hangings in a homely house,
 So was his will in his old feeble body.
 But, noble as he is, look where he comes.

Enter SALISBURY.

Sal. Now, by my sword, well hast thou fought to-day;
 By the mass, so did we all. I thank you, Richard: 16
 God knows how long it is I have to live;
 And it hath pleased him that three times to-day
 You have defended me from imminent death.
 Well, lords, we have not got that which we have: 20
 'Tis not enough our foes are this time fled,
 Being opposites of such repairing nature.

York. I know our safety is to follow them;
 For, as I hear, the king is fled to London,
 To call a present court of parliament. 25
 Let us pursue him ere the writs go forth.
 What says Lord Warwick? shall we after them?

War. After them! nay, before them, if we can.
 Now, by my faith, lords, 'twas a glorious day:

- | | |
|---|--|
| 5 occasion ?] Capell. <i>Occasion.</i> Ff. | 16 <i>By the]</i> <i>By' th'</i> F ₁ F ₂ F ₃ . <i>By th'</i> F ₄ . |
| 8 <i>holp]</i> <i>holpe</i> F ₁ . <i>hope</i> F ₂ F ₃ F ₄ . | 19 <i>imminent]</i> F ₁ F ₂ . <i>eminent</i> F ₃ F ₄ . |
| 11 <i>still there]</i> <i>there</i> Vaughan conj. | 20 <i>have]</i> <i>crave</i> Cartwright conj. |
| 12 a] F ₁ F ₂ . an F ₃ F ₄ . | 27 <i>them ?]</i> F ₂ F ₃ F ₄ . <i>them</i> : F ₁ . |
| 14 <i>as he is, look]</i> <i>as he is</i> ,— <i>Look</i> Delius conj. | 29 <i>faith]</i> (Qq) Malone. <i>hand</i> Ff. |

Saint Alban's battle won by famous York 30
 Shall be eternized in all age to come.
 Sound drums and trumpets, and to London all:
 And more such days as these to us befall! [*Exeunt.*]

31 *be] we be* F₃F₄.

Drum F₃F₄.

32 *drums]* (Qq) Hanmer. *Drumme* F₁F₂. 33 *these] this* Hanmer.

NOTES.

NOTE I.

i. 1. 62. This passage, which is printed as prose in the Quartos, is arranged and read by Capell thus :

‘And girt thee with the sword.—
Cousin of York, we here discharge your grace
From being regent in the parts of France,
’Till term of eighteen months be full expir’d.—
Thanks, uncle Winchester, Gloster, York, and Buckingham,
Somerset, Salisbury, and Warwick, thanks :
We thank you &c.’

NOTE II.

i. 3. 208. Theobald inserts here two lines from the old play :

‘*K. Hen.* Then be it so : My Lord of Somerset,
We make your Grace Regent over the French.’

We have omitted them, agreeing with Capell, Malone, Mr Knight, Mr Collier, and Mr Grant White, that their insertion is not absolutely necessary. Besides Shakespeare would hardly have left so lame a line as the second unaltered. It is possible that some such line as the following may have dropped out :

‘*King.* Then be it so : this is King Henry’s doom.’

www.libtNotes III.en

I. 4. At the commencement of this scene Rowe, and Pope in his first edition, inserted the stage direction 'Flourish' which belongs to the end of the previous scene. Pope, in his second edition, omitted it altogether, and Theobald restored it to its right place.

NOTE IV.

II. 1. 84. Having recorded up to this point throughout the scene all the cases in which the arrangement of the lines in the Folios is defective, we have thought it unnecessary to do so any more, except where there is any doubt as to what the true arrangement should be. The restoration of the metre is, in almost all instances, due to Pope.

NOTE V.

II. 1. 125—132. In the first Folio this passage stands as follows :

'Then *Saunder*, sit there,
 The lying'st Knaue in Christendome.
 If thou hadst beene borne blinde,
 Thou might'st as well haue knowne all our Names,
 As thus to name the seuerall Colours we doe weare.
 Sight may distinguish of Colours :
 But suddenly to nominate them all,
 It is impossible.
 My Lords, Saint *Albons* here hath done a Miracle :
 And would ye not thinke it, Cunning to be great,
 That could restore this Cripple to his Legges againe.'

Pope alters the first four lines thus :

'*Saunder*, sit there, the lyingst knave in christendom.
 If thou hadst been born blind,
 Thou might'st as well know all our names, as thus
 To know the several colours we do wear.'

The following is Hanmer's reading of the first six lines :

'Then, *Saunders*, sit thou there, the lying'st knave
 In christendom. If thou hadst been born blind,
 Thou might'st as well know all our names, as thus
 To know the several colours we do wear.
 Sight may distinguish colours : true, but suddenly
 To nominate them all, it is impossible.'

In the rest of the scene several arbitrary changes have been made by different editors for the sake of the metre.

NOTE VI.

II. 2. 43—50. The first Folio has the whole passage thus :

'His eldest Sister, *Anne*,
 My Mother, being Heire vnto the Crowne,
 Married *Richard*, Earle of Cambridge,
 Who was to *Edmond Langley*,
Edward the thirds fift Sonnes Sonne ;
 By her I clayme the Kingdome :
 She was Heire to *Roger*, Earle of March,
 Who was the Sonne of *Edmond Mortimer*,
 Who married *Phillip*, sole Daughter
 Vnto *Lionel*, Duke of Clarence.'

The later Folios follow the first, except that in the seventh line they read 'She then was' for 'She was.'

Rowe read, 'Who was son to Edmond Langley,' but made no other change ; and Pope followed him.

Theobald read :

'Who was the son to Edmond Langley,
 Edward the Third's fifth son'—

and arranged the following lines as they are found in our text.

Hanmer :

'Who was the son of Edmund Langley,
 Edward the Third's fifth son's son, and by her
 I claim the kingdom, for she then was heir
 To Roger &c.'

It was Capell who arranged the earlier lines of the speech as we have given them. Steevens, as usual, adopted his arrangement without acknowledging the obligation.

Mr Collier, in his first edition, read :

‘Married Richard, earl of Cambridge ; who was
To Edmond Langley Edward the third’s fifth son, son.’

NOTE VII.

III. 1. We retain here Salisbury and Warwick among the persons who enter to the parliament, because they are found both in the Folios and Quartos. In the latter their ‘exeunt’ is also marked. Capell was the first to omit them because they do not speak throughout the scene.

NOTE VIII.

III. 2. 11. The murderer’s answer ‘*Tis*, which Rowe changed to *Yes* without authority, shows that we ought to retain the *Is* of the first Folio notwithstanding the grammatical inaccuracy. In the Quartos the murderer says, ‘All things *is* hansome now my Lord.’

NOTE IX.

III. 2. 26. We have left ‘Nell’ in the text as the mistake is, in all probability, Shakespeare’s own. He was thinking of the Duchess of Gloucester. Oddly enough neither Rowe nor Pope discovered the blunder. Shakespeare again wrote ‘Eliador’ or ‘Elinor’ for ‘Margaret’ in the 79th, the 100th, and 120th lines of this scene. In *Henry V.* v. 1. 75, the author has made a similar mistake and written ‘Doll’ for ‘Nell.’ See also note VII on *The Two Gentlemen of Verona*.

NOTE X.

III. 2. 182. This is a striking example of the way in which corrections were made in the successive Folios ; i.e. by mere guess-work, without reference to the first. The true reading escaped the notice of all editors before Capell.

www.libtool.com.cn NOTE XI.

iv. 10. 16. By comparing this scene as it stands in the Quartos with that of the Folios it will appear that Shakespeare, in remodelling it, intended that Iden should be alone when he encountered Cade, as his first speech is evidently a soliloquy; and after he has killed Cade he disposes of the body with his own hands. Shakespeare omitted, however, to strike out the reference to the 'five men' in line 39.

Steevens who brought the servants on the stage forgot to send them off it. The mistake remained uncorrected down to Mr Dyce's first edition.

Another example of Shakespeare's incomplete alteration of the Quarto has been pointed out by Malone at v. 1. 56.

NOTE XII.

v. 2. 66. Malone, referring to the corresponding passage of the Quartos, supposes that a line has been omitted, to the following effect:

'Behold, the prophecy is come to pass;
For &c.'

www.libtool.com.cn

THE THIRD PART
OF
KING HENRY VI.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ¹.

KING HENRY the Sixth.
EDWARD, PRINCE OF WALES, his son.
LEWIS XI. KING OF FRANCE.
DUKE OF SOMERSET.
DUKE OF EXETER.
EARL OF OXFORD.
EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND.
EARL OF WESTMORELAND.
LORD CLIFFORD.
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, Duke of York.
EDWARD, Earl of March, afterwards King Edward IV.,
EDMUND, Earl of Rutland,
GEORGE, afterwards Duke of Clarence,
RICHARD, afterwards Duke of Gloucester,
DUKE OF NORFOLK. } his sons.
MARQUESS OF MONTAGUE.
EARL OF WARWICK.
EARL OF PEMBROKE.
LORD HASTINGS.
LORD STAFFORD.
SIR JOHN MORTIMER, } uncles to the Duke of York.
SIR HUGH MORTIMER, }
HENRY, Earl of Richmond, a youth.
LORD RIVERS, brother to Lady Grey.
SIR WILLIAM STANLEY.
SIR JOHN MONTGOMERY.
SIR JOHN SOMERVILLE.
Tutor to Rutland. Mayor of York.
Lieutenant of the Tower. A Nobleman.
Two Keepers. A Huntsman.
A Son that has killed his father.
A Father that has killed his son.

QUEEN MARGARET.
LADY GREY, afterwards Queen to Edward IV.
BONA, sister to the French Queen.

Soldiers, Attendants, Messengers, Watchmen, &c.

SCENE: *England and France.*

¹ DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.] First given, imperfectly, by Rowe.

THE THIRD PART
OF
KING HENRY VI.

ACT I.

SCENE I. *London. The Parliament-house.*

Alarum. Enter the DUKE OF YORK, EDWARD, RICHARD, NORFOLK,
MONTAGUE, WARWICK, and Soldiers.

War. I wonder how the king escaped our hands.

York. While we pursued the horsemen of the north,
He slyly stole away and left his men :
Whereat the great Lord of Northumberland,
Whose warlike ears could never brook retreat, 5
Cheer'd up the drooping army ; and himself,
Lord Clifford and Lord Stafford, all a-breast,

ACT I. SCENE I.] Actus Primus.
Scena Prima. Ff.
London.] Theobald.
The Parliament-house.] Capell. Be-
fore the Parliament-House. Han-
mer.
Alarum. Enter the Duke of York
...] *Alarum.* Enter Plantagenet...
Ff. Drums. Enter Soldiers of

York's Party, as breaking in : Then,
Enter the Duke of York.....and
Others, with white Roses in their
Hats. Capell, partly following (Qq).
Richard,] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.
1 hands.] hands! Theobald. hands?
Ff.
5 ears] *pace* Vaughan conj.

Charged our main battle's front, and breaking in
Were by the swords of common soldiers slain.

Edu. Lord Stafford's father, Duke of Buckingham, 10
Is either slain or wounded dangerously ;
I cleft his beaver with a downright blow :
That this is true, father, behold his blood.

Mont. And, brother, here's the Earl of Wiltshire's
blood,
Whom I encounter'd as the battles join'd. 15

Rich. Speak thou for me and tell them what I did.
[*Throwing down the Duke of Somerset's head.*]

York. Richard hath best deserved of all my sons.
But is your grace dead, my Lord of Somerset ?

Norf. Such hope have all the line of John of Gaunt !

Rich. Thus do I hope to shake King Henry's head.

War. And so do I. Victorious Prince of York, 21
Before I see thee seated in that throne
Which now the house of Lancaster usurps,
I vow by heaven these eyes shall never close.
This is the palace of the fearful king, 25
And this the regal seat : possess it, York ;
For this is thine, and not King Henry's heirs'.

York. Assist me, then, sweet Warwick, and I will ;
For hither we have broken in by force.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 11 <i>dangerously</i>] (Qq) Theobald. <i>dan-</i> <i>gerous</i> Ff. | (head) Collier MS. |
| 13 [Showing his bloody sword. Capell. | 19 <i>hope</i>] <i>end</i> Capell. <i>hap</i> Dyce, ed. 2 (Anon. apud Rann conj.). |
| 14 [To Warwick, showing his. Capell. To York, showing his. Malone. | <i>Gaunt</i>] Theobald. <i>Gaunt</i> Ff. |
| 16 [Throwing down...head.] Theobald. Shewing...head. Hanmer. | 20 <i>shake</i>] Ff. <i>shape</i> (Qq). |
| 18, 19 <i>But is your...Gaunt</i>] <i>Norf.</i> <i>Is</i> <i>his...Gaunt</i> ! Hanmer. | 21 <i>I. Victorious...York,</i>] Theobald. <i>I,</i> <i>victorious...Yorke.</i> Ff. |
| 18 <i>But is your</i>] <i>Is his</i> Pope. <i>Is your</i> Capell. <i>What, is your</i> Malone, from (Qq). <i>What, 's your</i> Steevens conj. <i>What, Is your</i> Lettsom conj. | [shake it. Collier MS. 22 <i>that</i>] F ₁ F ₂ . <i>the</i> F ₂ F ₄ . 27 <i>this is</i>] <i>it is</i> Capell. <i>heirs'</i>] Warburton. <i>Heires</i> F ₁ F ₂ . <i>Heirs</i> F ₂ F ₄ . <i>heir's</i> Hanmer. 29 <i>we have</i>] <i>are we</i> Capell, from (Qq). |

Norf. We'll all assist you; he that flies shall die. 30

York. Thanks, gentle Norfolk: stay by me, my lords;
And, soldiers, stay and lodge by me this night. [*They go up.*]

War. And when the king comes, offer him no violence,
Unless he seek to thrust you out perforce.

York. The queen this day here holds her parliament,
But little thinks we shall be of her council: 36
By words or blows here let us win our right.

Rich. Arm'd as we are, let's stay within this house.

War. The bloody parliament shall this be call'd,
Unless Plantagenet, Duke of York, be king, 40
And bashful Henry deposed, whose cowardice
Hath made us by-words to our enemies.

York. Then leave me not, my lords; be resolute:
I mean to take possession of my right.

War. Neither the king, nor he that loves him best,
The proudest he that holds up Lancaster, 46
Dares stir a wing, if Warwick shake his bells.
I'll plant Plantagenet, root him up who dares:
Resolve thee, Richard; claim the English crown.

Flourish. Enter KING HENRY, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND,
WESTMORELAND, EXETER, and the rest.

K. Hen. My lords, look where the sturdy rebel sits,

32 [*They go up.*] Omitted by Capell.
(Take the Throne) Collier MS.

34 *thrust you out perforce*] *thrust you
out by force* Rowe. *put us out by
force* Capell, from (Qq).

[To the Soldiers, who retire. Capell.

36 *council*] Pope. *counsails* F₁F₂. *coun-
sell* F₃. *Counsel* F₄.

41 *Henry*] *Harry* Hanmer.
deposed] *be deposed* (Qq).

43 *not, my lords; be*] *not, my lords, be*
Rowe. *not, my Lords be* Ff.

48 *dares*] *dare* Rowe.

[putting him in the Throne. Capell.

49 [*Warwick leads York to the throne,
who seats him.* Johnson.

50 SCENE II. Pope.

Flourish.] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

Enter...and the rest.] Ff. *Enter...
and others, at the further end of the
stage.* Johnson. *Flourish. Enter...
and Others, with red Roses in their
Hats.* Capell, partly following (Qq).

Even in the chair of state : belike he means, 51
 Back'd by the power of Warwick, that false peer,
 To aspire unto the crown and reign as king.
 Earl of Northumberland, he slew thy father,
 And thine, Lord Clifford ; and you both have vow'd re-
 venge 55

On him, his sons, his favourites and his friends.

North. If I be not, heavens be revenged on me !

Clif. The hope thereof makes Clifford mourn in steel.

West. What, shall we suffer this? let's pluck him down :
 My heart for anger burns ; I cannot brook it. 60

K. Hen. Be patient, gentle Earl of Westmoreland.

Clif. Patience is for poltroons, such as he :
 He durst not sit there, had your father lived.
 My gracious lord, here in the parliament
 Let us assail the family of York. 65

North. Well hast thou spoken, cousin : be it so.

K. Hen. Ah, know you not the city favours them,
 And they have troops of soldiers at their beck ?

Exe. But when the duke is slain, they'll quickly fly.

K. Hen. Far be the thought of this from Henry's heart,
 To make a shambles of the parliament-house ! 71
 Cousin of Exeter, frowns, words and threats
 Shall be the war that Henry means to use.

55 *you both have vow'd*] *you have both*
vow'd F₄. *you vow'd* Pope. *you*
have vow'd Collier MS. *both have*
vow'd Collier conj. *you both vow'd*
 Vaughan conj.

55, 56 *vow'd revenge On...favourites and*
his friends.] *vow'd Revenge on...his*
favourers. Capell. *vow'd Revenge*
on him, his favourers, and his friends.
 Rann.

57 *heavens be*] *heavens, be* Capell.

62 *poltroons, such as he*] *Poultroones,*

such as he F₁. *Poultroones, and such*
is he F₂F₃. *Poltroons, and such is*
he F₄. *poltroons, and such as he*
 Capell.

66 *spoken, cousin: be*] *spoken, cousin, be*
 Theobald. *spoken, Cousin be* Ff.

69 *Exe.*] Theobald, from (Qq). Westm.
 Ff.

70 *the thought of this from*] *it from the*
thoughts of (Qq) Capell.

73 [To the Duke. Rowe (ed. 2). They
 advance to the Duke. Johnson.

Thou factious Duke of York, descend my throne,
 And kneel for grace and mercy at my feet ; 75
 I am thy sovereign.

York. I am thine.

Exe. For shame, come down : he made thee Duke of
 York.

York. 'Twas my inheritance, as the earldom was.

Exe. Thy father was a traitor to the crown.

War. Exeter, thou art a traitor to the crown, 80
 In following this usurping Henry.

Clif. Whom should he follow but his natural king ?

War. True, Clifford ; and that's Richard Duke of York.

K. Hen. And shall I stand, and thou sit in my throne ?

York. It must and shall be so : content thyself. 85

War. Be Duke of Lancaster ; let him be king.

West. He is both king and Duke of Lancaster ;
 And that the Lord of Westmoreland shall maintain.

War. And Warwick shall disprove it. You forget
 That we are those which chased you from the field, 90
 And slew your fathers, and with colours spread
 March'd through the city to the palace gates.

North. Yes, Warwick, I remember it to my grief ;
 And, by his soul, thou and thy house shall rue it.

West. Plantagenet, of thee and these thy sons, 95
 Thy kinsmen and thy friends, I'll have more lives
 Than drops of blood were in my father's veins.

Clif. Urge it no more ; lest that, instead of words,
 I send thee, Warwick, such a messenger

76 *thy*] *my* F₂.

I am thine] *Henry, I am thine* Rowe.
Thou'rt deceiv'd, I'm thine Theo-
 bald, from (Qq).

78 *'Twas*] (Qq) Pope. *It was* Ff.
earldom was] *kingdom is* (Qq) Theo-

bald.

83 *and that's*] F₂F₃F₄. *that's* F₁. *and*
that is (Qq). *that is* Collier.

93 *Yes*] *No* (Qq) Theobald.

remember it] *remember 't* Capell.

As shall revenge his death before I stir. 100

War. Poor Clifford! how I scorn his worthless threats!

York. Will you we show our title to the crown?

If not, our swords shall plead it in the field.

K. Hen. What title hast thou, traitor, to the crown?

Thy father was, as thou art, Duke of York; 105

Thy grandfather, Roger Mortimer, Earl of March:

I am the son of Henry the Fifth,

Who made the Dauphin and the French to stoop,

And seized upon their towns and provinces.

War. Talk not of France, sith thou hast lost it all.

K. Hen. The lord protector lost it, and not I: 111

When I was crown'd I was but nine months old.

Rich. You are old enough now, and yet, methinks, you
lose.

Father, tear the crown from the usurper's head.

Edw. Sweet father, do so; set it on your head. 115

Mont. Good brother, as thou lovest and honourest arms,
Let's fight it out and not stand cavilling thus.

Rich. Sound drums and trumpets, and the king will fly.

York. Sons, peace!

K. Hen. Peace, thou! and give King Henry leave to
speak. 120

War. Plantagenet shall speak first: hear him, lords;

And be you silent and attentive too,

For he that interrupts him shall not live.

105 *Thy*] (Qq) Rowe. *My Ff.*
father] *uncle* Capell conj.

113 *You...lose.*] One line in Pope. Two
in Ff.

and yet] *yet* Hanmer.

lose] F₂F₃F₄. *loose* F₁.

114 *Father, tear the crown*] *Tear the
crown, father* Hanmer.

116 *Good.....arms,*] One line in Pope.

Two in Ff.

[To *War.* Capell. To *York.* Ma-
lone.

120 *K. Hen.*] North. (Qq) Lettsom
conj.

to speak] om. Vaughan conj.

123 After this line Lettsom supposes a
speech of York is lost.

- K. Hen.* Think'st thou that I will leave my kingly throne,
Wherein my grandsire and my father sat? 125
No: first shall war unpeople this my realm;
Ay, and their colours, often borne in France,
And now in England to our heart's great sorrow,
Shall be my winding-sheet. Why faint you, lords?
My title's good, and better far than his. 130
War. Prove it, Henry, and thou shalt be king.
K. Hen. Henry the Fourth by conquest got the crown.
York. 'Twas by rebellion against his king.
K. Hen. [*Aside*] I know not what to say; my title's weak.
Tell me, may not a king adopt an heir? 135
York. What then?
K. Hen. An if he may, then am I lawful king;
For Richard, in the view of many lords,
Resign'd the crown to Henry the Fourth,
Whose heir my father was, and I am his. 140
York. He rose against him, being his sovereign,
And made him to resign his crown perforce.
War. Suppose, my lords, he did it unconstrain'd,
Think you 'twere prejudicial to his crown?
Exe. No; for he could not so resign his crown 145
But that the next heir should succeed and reign.
K. Hen. Art thou against us, Duke of Exeter?
Exe. His is the right, and therefore pardon me.
York. Why whisper you, my lords, and answer not?
Exe. My conscience tells me he is lawful king. 150
K. Hen. [*Aside*] All will revolt from me, and turn to him.

131 *Prove it*] F₁. *But prove it* F₂F₃F₄.
Prove it so Keightley.

134, 151 [*Aside*] First marked by Capell.

137 *An if*] Capell. *And if* F₁F₂. *If* F₃F₄.

142 *his*] *the* (Qq) Capell.

144 *his crown*] *his son* Johnson conj.
the crown (Qq) Capell. *his line*
Vaughan conj. *the throne* Wordsworth.

150 [to the Lords, Capell.

North. Plantagenet, for all the claim thou lay'st,
Think not that Henry shall be so deposed.

War. Deposed he shall be, in despite of all. 154

North. Thou art deceived: 'tis not thy southern power,
Of Essex, Norfolk, Suffolk, nor of Kent,
Which makes thee thus presumptuous and proud,
Can set the duke up in despite of me.

Clif. King Henry, be thy title right or wrong,
Lord Clifford vows to fight in thy defence: 160
May that ground gape and swallow me alive,
Where I shall kneel to him that slew my father!

K. Hen. O Clifford, how thy words revive my heart!

York. Henry of Lancaster, resign thy crown.
What mutter you, or what conspire you, lords? 165

War. Do right unto this princely Duke of York,
Or I will fill the house with armed men,
And over the chair of state, where now he sits,
Write up his title with usurping blood.

[*He stamps with his foot, and the Soldiers show themselves.*]

K. Hen. My Lord of Warwick, hear me but one word:
Let me for this my life-time reign as king. 171

York. Confirm the crown to me and to mine heirs,
And thou shalt reign in quiet while thou livest.

King. I am content: Richard Plantagenet,
Enjoy the kingdom after my decease. 175

Clif. What wrong is this unto the prince your son!

War. What good is this to England and himself!

West. Base, fearful and despairing Henry!

153 so] om. F₄.

154 all] thee (Qq) Theobald.

155 Thou.....power,] One line in Pope.
Two in Ff.

164 thy] the Singer, ed. 2 (Anon. MS.).
my Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

168 over] F₁. ore F₂. o're F₃F₄.

170 hear me] (Qq) F₂F₄. hears F₁F₂.

171 for this my life-time] F₁. for this
time F₂F₃F₄. for the time present
Hanmer.

for...king] but reign in quiet, while
I live (Qq) Theobald.

Clif. How hast thou injured both thyself and us!

West. I cannot stay to hear these articles. 180

North. Nor I. www.libtool.com.cn

Clif. Come, cousin, let us tell the queen these news.

West. Farewell, faint-hearted and degenerate king,
In whose cold blood no spark of honour bides.

North. Be thou a prey unto the house of York, 185
And die in bands for this unmanly deed!

Clif. In dreadful war mayst thou be overcome,
Or live in peace abandon'd and despis'd!

[*Exeunt North., Clif., and West.*]

War. Turn this way, Henry, and regard them not.

Exe. They seek revenge and therefore will not yield.

K. Hen. Ah, Exeter!

War. Why should you sigh, my lord?

K. Hen. Not for myself, Lord Warwick, but my son,
Whom I unnaturally shall disinherit.

But be it as it may: I here entail
The crown to thee and to thine heirs for ever; 195

Conditionally, that here thou take an oath

To cease this civil war, and, whilst I live,

To honour me as thy king and sovereign,

And neither by treason nor hostility

To seek to put me down and reign thyself. 200

York. This oath I willingly take and will perform.

War. Long live King Henry! Plantagenet, embrace
him.

K. Hen. And long live thou and these thy forward
sons!

188 [Exeunt...] Rowe. om. Ff.

189 SCENE III.] Pope.

191 War.] York. Lettsom conj.

192 Lord Warwick] Plantagenet Lettsom conj.

194 [To York. Collier MS.

196 *thou*] *you* F₂F₄.

198 *king*] *true king* Hanmer.

199 *And*] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

201 [coming from the Throne. Capell.

York. Now York and Lancaster are reconciled. 204

Exe. Accursed be he that seeks to make them foes!
www.libtool.com.cn [*Sennet. Here they come down.*]

York. Farewell, my gracious lord; I'll to my castle.

War. And I'll keep London with my soldiers.

Norf. And I to Norfolk with my followers.

Mont. And I unto the sea from whence I came.

[*Exeunt York and his Sons, Warwick, Norfolk, Montague, their Soldiers, and Attendants.*]

K. Hen. And I, with grief and sorrow, to the court.

Enter QUEEN MARGARET and the PRINCE OF WALES.

Exe. Here comes the queen, whose looks bewray her
 anger: 211

I'll steal away.

K. Hen. Exeter, so will I.

Q. Mar. Nay, go not from me; I will follow thee.

K. Hen. Be patient, gentle queen, and I will stay.

Q. Mar. Who can be patient in such extremes? 215

Ah, wretched man! would I had died a maid,

And never seen thee, never borne thee son,

Seeing thou hast proved so unnatural a father!

Hath he deserved to lose his birthright thus?

Hadst thou but loved him half so well as I, 220

Or felt that pain which I did for him once,

Or nourish'd him as I did with my blood,

Thou wouldst have left thy dearest heart-blood there,

205 [*Sennet...*] *Senet...* F₁. *Sonet...*
 F₂F₃F₄. *Tucket...* *Hanmer.* *Flourish*
; and the Lords come forward.
Capell.

209 [*Exeunt...*] *Capell.* om. *Ff.* *Exe.*
Rowe. *Exeunt York, Warwick,*
Norfolk, and Montague. *Theobald.*

211 [*Enter...*] *Enter the Queen and the*
Prince of Wales. *Rowe.* *Enter the*

Queene. Ff.

Here.....anger:] One line in *Pope.*
 Two in *Ff.*

212 *Exeter, so will I] Ff. So Exeter*
will I Pope.

[*Going. Rowe.*

219 *lose] loose F₁.*

220 *well] much F₄.*

223 *there] om. Wordsworth.*

Rather than have made that savage duke thine heir,
And disinherited thine only son. 225

Prince. Father, you cannot disinherit me :
If you be king, why should not I succeed?

K. Hen. Pardon me, Margaret ; pardon me, sweet son :
The Earl of Warwick and the duke enforced me.

Q. Mar. Enforced thee ! art thou king, and wilt be
forced ? 230

I shame to hear thee speak. Ah, timorous wretch !
Thou hast undone thyself, thy son, and me ;
And given unto the house of York such head,
As thou shalt reign but by their sufferance.
To entail him and his heirs unto the crown, 235
What is it, but to make thy sepulchre,
And creep into it far before thy time ?

Warwick is chancellor and the lord of Calais ;
Stern Falconbridge commands the narrow seas ;
The duke is made protector of the realm ; 240
And yet shalt thou be safe ? such safety finds
The trembling lamb environed with wolves.

Had I been there, which am a silly woman,
The soldiers should have toss'd me on their pikes,
Before I would have granted to that act. 245

But thou preferr'st thy life before thine honour :
And seeing thou dost, I here divorce myself
Both from thy table, Henry, and thy bed,
Until that act of parliament be repeal'd,
Whereby my son is disinherited. 250

The northern lords that have forsworn thy colours
Will follow mine, if once they see them spread ;
And spread they shall be, to thy foul disgrace

224 *have*] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

225 *and his*] *and*'s Pope.

245 *granted*] *assented* Keightley conj.

253 *thy*] *the* Keightley conj.

And utter ruin of the house of York.

Thus do I leave thee. Come, son, let's away; 255
Our army is ready; come, we'll after them.

K. Hen. Stay, gentle Margaret, and hear me speak.

Q. Mar. Thou hast spoke too much already: get thee gone.

K. Hen. Gentle son Edward, thou wilt stay with me?

Q. Mar. Ay, to be murder'd by his enemies. 260

Prince. When I return with victory from the field
I'll see your grace: till then I'll follow her.

Q. Mar. Come, son, away; we may not linger thus.

[*Exeunt Queen Margaret and the Prince.*]

K. Hen. Poor queen! how love to me and to her son
Hath made her break out into terms of rage! 265

Revenge may she be on that hateful duke,

Whose haughty spirit, winged with desire,

Will cost my crown, and like an empty eagle

Tire on the flesh of me and of my son!

The loss of those three lords torments my heart: 270

I'll write unto them and entreat them fair.

Come, cousin, you shall be the messenger.

Exe. And I, I hope, shall reconcile them all. [*Exeunt.*]

256 *army is]* *army's* Pope.

259 *with]* F₃F₃F₄. om. F₁. by S. Walker conj.

260 *murder'd]* Johnson. *murther'd* Ff.

261 *from]* (Qq) F₃F₃F₄. to F₁.

263 [*Exeunt.....*] *Exeunt* Queen and Prince. Rowe. om. Ff.

264 *Poor...son]* One line in Pope. Two

in Ff.

268 *cost]* *truss* Hammer. *coast* Warburton. *cote* Steevens conj. *court* Jackson conj. *souse* Dyce conj. See note (viii).

273 *I, I hope,]* F₁. *I hope,* F₃F₃F₄. as *I hope,* Pope.

[*Exeunt.*] Pope. Exit. Ff.

SCENE II. *Sandal Castle.**Enter* RICHARD, EDWARD, *and* MONTAGUE.*Rich.* Brother, though I be youngest, give me leave.*Edw.* No, I can better play the orator.*Mont.* But I have reasons strong and forcible.*Enter the* DUKE OF YORK.*York.* Why, how now, sons and brother! at a strife?
What is your quarrel? how began it first? 5*Edw.* No quarrel, but a slight contention.*York.* About what?*Rich.* About that which concerns your grace and us;
The crown of England, father, which is yours.*York.* Mine, boy? not till King Henry be dead. 10*Rich.* Your right depends not on his life or death.*Edw.* Now you are heir, therefore enjoy it now:
By giving the house of Lancaster leave to breathe,
It will outrun you, father, in the end. 14*York.* I took an oath that he should quietly reign.*Edw.* But for a kingdom any oath may be broken:
I would break a thousand oaths to reign one year.*Rich.* No; God forbid your grace should be forsworn.*York.* I shall be, if I claim by open war.SCENE II.] Capell. SCENE IV. Pope.
om. Ff.Sandal Castle.] Changes to Sandal-
Castle, in Yorkshire. Pope. Sandal-
Castle near Wakefield, in Yorkshire.
Theobald.Enter...] F₂F₃F₄. Flourish. Enter...
F₁.4 brother] F₁F₂. Brothers F₃F₄. cousin

Capell.

6 *slight*] *sweet* (Qq) Theobald.8 *About that which*] *That* Vaughan
conj., reading *About what?...us*; as
one line.10 *till*] F₁F₂. *untill* F₃. *until* F₄.16 *any*] *an* Dyce (ed. 2).17 *I would*] *I'd* Pope.

Rich. I'll prove the contrary, if you'll hear me speak.

York. Thou canst not, son; it is impossible. 21

Rich. An oath is of no moment, being not took

Before a true and lawful magistrate,

That hath authority over him that swears:

Henry had none, but did usurp the place; 25

Then, seeing 'twas he that made you to depose,

Your oath, my lord, is vain and frivolous.

Therefore, to arms! And, father, do but think

How sweet a thing it is to wear a crown;

Within whose circuit is Elysium, 30

And all that poets feign of bliss and joy.

Why do we linger thus? I cannot rest

Until the white rose that I wear be dyed

Even in the lukewarm blood of Henry's heart.

York. Richard, enough; I will be king, or die. 35

Brother, thou shalt to London presently,

And whet on Warwick to this enterprise.

Thou, Richard, shalt to the Duke of Norfolk,

And tell him privily of our intent.

You, Edward, shall unto my Lord Cobham, 40

With whom the Kentishmen will willingly rise:

In them I trust; for they are soldiers,

Witty, courteous, liberal, full of spirit.

While you are thus employ'd, what resteth more,

But that I seek occasion how to rise, 45

21 *it is*] 'tis F₃F₄.

24 *over*] o'er Pope.

36 *Brother*] *Cousin* Capell, from (Qq).

38 *shalt*] *shall* Rowe (ed. 2).

to the Duke of Norfolk] F₁F₂F₃.
be Duke of Norfolk F₄. *go to the Duke of Norfolk* Rowe. *to th' Duke of Norfolk* go Pope. *unto the Duke of Norfolk* Steevens (1793). *straight to the Duke of Norfolk* Vaughan

conj.

40 *Lord Cobham*] *Lord of Cobham* Hammer.

43 *Witty, courteous*] *Wealthy and courteous* Theobald. *Witty, and courteous* Capell. *Stout, witty, courteous* Lettsom conj. *Courteous, witty* Keightley.

45 *rise,*] *rise?* F₃F₄.

And yet the king not privy to my drift,
Nor any of the house of Lancaster?

Enter a Messenger.

But, stay: what news? Why comest thou in such post?

Mess. The queen with all the northern earls and lords
Intend here to besiege you in your castle: 50
She is hard by with twenty thousand men;
And therefore fortify your hold, my lord.

York. Ay, with my sword. What! think'st thou that
we fear them?

Edward and Richard, you shall stay with me;
My brother Montague shall post to London: 55
Let noble Warwick, Cobham, and the rest,
Whom we have left protectors of the king,
With powerful policy strengthen themselves,
And trust not simple Henry nor his oaths.

Mont. Brother, I go; I'll win them, fear it not: 60
And thus most humbly I do take my leave. [*Exit.*

Enter SIR JOHN MORTIMER and SIR HUGH MORTIMER.

York. Sir John and Sir Hugh Mortimer, mine uncles,
You are come to Sandal in a happy hour;
The army of the queen mean to besiege us.

Sir John. She shall not need; we'll meet her in the
field. 65

46 *And yet]* *As yet* Hanmer.

47 *Lancaster ?]* Johnson. *Lancaster.*
Ff.

48 *Enter a Messenger.]* (Qq) Theobald.
Enter Gabriel. Ff.

49 *Mess.]* Mes. Capell. Gabriel. Ff.
The queen...lords] One line in Pope.
Two in Ff.

50 *Intend]* Ff. *Intends* Pope.

53 *Ay...them ?]* One line in Pope. Two
in Ff.

55 *brother]* *cousin* Capell, from (Qq).

60 *Brother]* *Cousin* Capell, from (Qq).

61 [*Exit.]* *Exit* Mountague. Ff.

62 *Enter...]* Rowe. *Enter* Mortimer,
and his Brother. Ff.
uncles.] uncles! Capell.

64 *mean]* *means* F₁F₂. *means* F₃F₄.

York. What, with five thousand men?

Rich. Ay, with five hundred, father, for a need:
A woman's general; what should we fear?

[*A march afar off.*]

Edw. I hear their drums: let's set our men in order,
And issue forth and bid them battle straight. 70

York. Five men to twenty! though the odds be great,
I doubt not, uncle, of our victory.
Many a battle have I won in France,
When as the enemy hath been ten to one:
Why should I not now have the like success? 75

[*Alarum. Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *Field of battle betwixt Sandal Castle and Wakefield.*

Alarums. Enter RUTLAND and his Tutor.

Rut. Ah, whither shall I fly to 'scape their hands?
Ah, tutor, look where bloody Clifford comes!

Enter CLIFFORD and Soldiers.

Clif. Chaplain, away! thy priesthood saves thy life.
As for the brat of this accursed duke,
Whose father slew my father, he shall die. 5

Tut. And I, my lord, will bear him company.

66 *What...men?* [*What, with five thousand?* or *What, twenty thousand with five thousand men?* Vaughan conj.

69 *I hear.....order,*] One line in Pope. Two in Ff.

75 [*Alarum. Exeunt.*] Theobald. *Alarum. Exit. Ff.*

SCENE III.] Capell. SCENE V. Pope. Field...] Theobald.

Alarums.] Alarums. (Qq). Alarums, as a Battle join'd. Excursions, and Parties flying. Capell.

Enter...] Ff.

1 *whither]* *whether* Warburton.

3 *Enter.....and Soldiers.] Theobald. Enter Clifford. Ff.*

4 *accursed]* *accused* Ff.

5 *Whose]* *His* Capell.

Clif. Soldiers, away with him!

Tut. Ah, Clifford, murder not this innocent child,
Lest thou be hated both of God and man!

[*Exit, dragged off by Soldiers.*]

Clif. How now! is he dead already? or is it fear 10
That makes him close his eyes? I'll open them.

Rut. So looks the pent-up lion o'er the wretch
That trembles under his devouring paws;
And so he walks, insulting o'er his prey,
And so he comes, to rend his limbs asunder. 15
Ah, gentle Clifford, kill me with thy sword,
And not with such a cruel threatening look.
Sweet Clifford, hear me speak before I die.

I am too mean a subject for thy wrath:
Be thou revenged on men, and let me live. 20

Clif. In vain thou speak'st, poor boy; my father's
blood
Hath stopp'd the passage where thy words should enter.

Rut. Then let my father's blood open it again:
He is a man, and, Clifford, cope with him.

Clif. Had I thy brethren here, their lives and thine
Were not revenge sufficient for me; 26
No, if I digg'd up thy forefathers' graves,
And hung their rotten coffins up in chains,
It could not slake mine ire, nor ease my heart.
The sight of any of the house of York 30

7 *away with him*] Ff. *away, and drag him hence perforce* (Qq) Theobald. *away with him! away with him* Vaughan conj.

8 *murder*] Johnson. *murther* Ff.

9 [*Exit...*] Theobald. *Exit.* Ff.

10, 11 *How.....them.*] Arranged as by Pope. As three lines in Ff, ending *alreadie?...eyes?...them.*

12 *o'er*] on Vaughan conj.

13 *devouring*] *destroying* Jackson conj. *paws*] *jaws* Delius conj.

21, 22 [*In vain...enter.*] As in Pope. As three lines in Ff, ending *Boy:...passage...enter.*

23 *open it*] *open't* Pope.

30 *of the*] *of the F₂*.

Is as a fury to torment my soul;
 And till I root out their accursed line
 And leave not one alive, I live in hell.

Therefore—

[*Lifting his hand.*

Rut. O, let me pray before I take my death! 35
 To thee I pray; sweet Clifford, pity me!

Clif. Such pity as my rapier's point affords.

Rut. I never did thee harm: why wilt thou slay me?

Clif. Thy father hath.

Rut. But 'twas ere I was born.
 Thou hast one son; for his sake pity me, 40
 Lest in revenge thereof, sith God is just,
 He be as miserably slain as I.

Ah, let me live in prison all my days;
 And when I give occasion of offence,
 Then let me die, for now thou hast no cause. 45

Clif. No cause!

Thy father slew my father; therefore, die. [*Stabs him.*

Rut. Di faciant laudis summa sit ista tuæ! [*Dies.*

Clif. Plantagenet! I come, Plantagenet!
 And this thy son's blood cleaving to my blade 50
 Shall rust upon my weapon, till thy blood,
 Congeal'd with this, do make me wipe off both. [*Exit.*

SCENE IV. *Another part of the field.*

Alarum. Enter RICHARD, Duke of York.

York. The army of the queen hath got the field:

34 [*Lifting his hand.*] Johnson. om.
 Ff.

47 [*Stabs him.*] Rowe. om. Ff.

48 [*Dies.*] Theobald. om. Ff.

52 *this* his Anon. conj.

SCENE IV.] Capell. SCENE VI. Pope.
 om. Ff. Theobald continues the
 Scene.

Another...] A field of Battle. Ham-
 mer.

My uncles both are slain in rescuing me ;
 And all my followers to the eager foe
 Turn back and fly, like ships before the wind,
 Or lambs pursued by hunger-starved wolves. 5
 My sons, God knows what hath bechanced them :
 But this I know, they have demean'd themselves
 Like men born to renown by life or death.
 Three times did Richard make a lane to me,
 And thrice cried 'Courage, father! fight it out!' 10
 And full as oft came Edward to my side,
 With purple falchion, painted to the hilt
 In blood of those that had encounter'd him :
 And when the hardiest warriors did retire,
 Richard cried, 'Charge! and give no foot of ground!' 15
 And cried, 'A crown, or else a glorious tomb!
 A sceptre, or an earthly sepulchre!'
 With this, we charged again: but, out, alas!
 We bodged again; as I have seen a swan
 With bootless labour swim against the tide 20
 And spend her strength with over-matching waves.

[A short alarum within.]

Ah, hark! the fatal followers do pursue;
 And I am faint, and cannot fly their fury:
 And were I strong, I would not shun their fury:
 The sands are number'd that make up my life; 25
 Here must I stay, and here my life must end.

16 *And cried*] *Ned cried* Collier conj. *Edward* Lettsom conj. *He cried* Kinnear conj. A line lost before this, referring to Edward. Edd. conj.

17 *earthly*] *early* Vaughan conj. *earthy* Id. conj. (withdrawn).

19 *bodged*] *budged* Johnson conj. *botch'd* Collier conj.

25 *make*] *makes* F.

Enter QUEEN MARGARET, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND, *the young Prince, and Soldiers.*

Come, bloody Clifford, rough Northumberland,
I dare your quenchless fury to more rage:
I am your butt, and I abide your shot.

North. Yield to our mercy, proud Plantagenet. 30

Clif. Ay, to such mercy as his ruthless arm,
With downright payment, show'd unto my father.
Now Phaëthon hath tumbled from his car,
And made an evening at the noontide prick.

York. My ashes, as the phoenix, may bring forth 35
A bird that will revenge upon you all:
And in that hope I throw mine eyes to heaven,
Scorning what'er you can afflict me with.

Why come you not? what! multitudes, and fear?

Clif. So cowards fight when they can fly no further;
So doves do peck the falcon's piercing talons; 41
So desperate thieves, all hopeless of their lives,
Breathe out invectives 'gainst the officers.

York. O Clifford, but bethink thee once again,
And in thy thought o'er-run my former time; 45
And, if thou canst for blushing, view this face,
And bite thy tongue, that slanders him with cowardice
Whose frown hath made thee faint and fly ere this!

Clif. I will not bandy with thee word for word,
But buckle with thee blows, twice two for one. 50

27 *Enter Queen Margaret...*] *Enter the*
Queene... Ff.
the young Prince,] om. Capell.

28 *your] you F.*

33 *Phaëthon] Phaeton Ff.*

35 *phoenix] phoenix' Edd. conj.*

36 *upon] it on Vaughan conj., from*

(Qq).

50 *buckle] (Qq) Theobald. buckler Ff.*
thee blows,] thee, blows Vaughan
conj.

[*assailing him. Capell. draws John-*
son. om. Ff.

Q. Mar. Hold, valiant Clifford! for a thousand causes
I would prolong awhile the traitor's life.
Wrath makes him deaf: speak thou, Northumberland.

North. Hold, Clifford! do not honour him so much
To prick thy finger, though to wound his heart: 55
What valour were it, when a cur doth grin,
For one to thrust his hand between his teeth,
When he might spurn him with his foot away?
It is war's prize to take all vantages;
And ten to one is no impeach of valour. 60

[*They lay hands on York, who struggles.*]

Clif. Ay, ay, so strives the woodcock with the gin.

North. So doth the cony struggle in the net.

York. So triumph thieves upon their conquer'd booty;
So true men yield, with robbers so o'er-match'd.

North. What would your grace have done unto him
now? 65

Q. Mar. Brave warriors, Clifford and Northumberland,
Come, make him stand upon this molehill here,
That raught at mountains with outstretched arms,
Yet parted but the shadow with his hand.
What! was it you that would be England's king? 70
Was't you that revell'd in our parliament,
And made a preachment of your high descent?
Where are your mess of sons to back you now?
The wanton Edward, and the lusty George?
And where's that valiant crook-back prodigy, 75
Dicky your boy, that with his grumbling voice

59 *prize*] *praise* Warburton.

60 [They lay.....] Johnson. om. Ff.
joins with Cl. Capell.

62 *cony*] F₃F₄. *Connis* F₁. *Conny* F₂.
[In the struggle York is taken
prisoner. Theobald.

64 *yield, with robbers*] *yeeld with Rob-*

bers, F₁.

[falls his Sword. Capell.

68 *raught*] F₁F₂. *caught* F₃F₄.

72 *made*] *mad* F₂.

73 *back*] *bail* Theobald conj.

75 *crook-back*] *crookt-backt* Theobald,
from (Qq).

Was wont to cheer his dad in mutinies?
 Or, with the rest, where is your darling Rutland?
 Look, York: I stain'd this napkin with the blood
 That valiant Clifford, with his rapier's point, 80
 Made issue from the bosom of the boy;
 And if thine eyes can water for his death,
 I give thee this to dry thy cheeks withal.
 Alas, poor York! but that I hate thee deadly,
 I should lament thy miserable state. 85
 I prithee, grieve, to make me merry, York.
 What, hath thy fiery heart so parch'd thine entrails
 That not a tear can fall for Rutland's death?
 Why art thou patient, man? thou shouldst be mad;
 And I, to make thee mad, do mock thee thus. 90
 Stamp, rave, and fret, that I may sing and dance.
 Thou wouldst be fee'd, I see, to make me sport:
 York cannot speak, unless he wear a crown.
 A crown for York! and, lords, bow low to him:
 Hold you his hands, whilst I do set it on. 95
 [*Putting a paper crown on his head.*]
 Ay, marry, sir, now looks he like a king!
 Ay, this is he that took King Henry's chair;
 And this is he was his adopted heir.
 But how is it that great Plantagenet
 Is crown'd so soon, and broke his solemn oath? 100
 As I bethink me, you should not be king
 Till our King Henry had shook hands with death.
 And will you pale your head in Henry's glory,

79 Napkin. Collier MS.

82 *And if*] *An if* Delius conj.83 [Throwing it to him. Collier (ed. 2).
(Throwe it) Collier MS.88 *for*] to F₄.91 *Stamp...dance.*] Malone, after (Qq),
makes this line follow *merry, York*,
line 86.

93 (paper Crowne) Collier MS.

94 [they give her a paper Crown.
Capell.

95 [Putting...] Rowe. om. Ff.

96 *sir*] *sirs* Lettsom conj.98 *his*] *is* F₂.100 *and broke*] *hath broke* Hanmer.
his] *your* F₄.

And rob his temples of the diadem,
Now in his life, against your holy oath? 105

O, 'tis a fault too unpardonable!

Off with the crown; and, with the crown, his head;

And, whilst we breathe, take time to do him dead.

Clif. That is my office, for my father's sake.

Q. Mar. Nay, stay; let's hear the orisons he makes.

York. She-wolf of France, but worse than wolves of

France, 111

Whose tongue more poisons than the adder's tooth!

How ill-beseeming is it in thy sex

To triumph, like an Amazonian trull,

Upon their woes whom fortune captivates! 115

But that thy face is, visard-like, unchanging,

Made impudent with use of evil deeds,

I would assay, proud queen, to make thee blush.

To tell thee whence thou camest, of whom derived,

Were shame enough to shame thee, wert thou not

shameless. 120

Thy father bears the type of King of Naples,

Of both the Sicils and Jerusalem,

Yet not so wealthy as an English yeoman.

Hath that poor monarch taught thee to insult?

It needs not, nor it boots thee not, proud queen, 125

Unless the adage must be verified,

That beggars mounted run their horse to death.

'Tis beauty that doth oft make women proud;

But, God He knows, thy share thereof is small:

'Tis virtue that doth make them most admired; 130

105 *his...your*] *this...the* F₄.

109 *sake*] *death* (Qq) Capell.

110 *hear*] *here* F₄.

111 *She-wolf.....wolves of France,*] One

line in Pope. Two in Ff.

112 *tooth*] *doth* Vaughan conj.

117 *deeds,*] *deedes.* F₁.

118 *assay*] *essay* Collier (ed. 2).

120 *Were...shameless.*] One line in Pope.

Two in Ff.

thou] om. S. Walker conj.

121 *type*] *style* Lloyd conj.

The contrary doth make thee wonder'd at:
 'Tis government that makes them seem divine;
 The want thereof makes thee abominable:
 Thou art as opposite to every good
 As the Antipodes are unto us, 135
 Or as the south to the septentrion.
O tiger's heart wrapp'd in a woman's hide!
 How couldst thou drain the life-blood of the child,
 To bid the father wipe his eyes withal,
 And yet be seen to bear a woman's face? 140
 Women are soft, mild, pitiful and flexible;
 Thou stern, obdurate, flinty, rough, remorseless.
 Bid'st thou me rage? why, now thou hast thy wish:
 Wouldst have me weep? why, now thou hast thy will:
 For raging wind blows up incessant showers, 145
 And when the rage allays, the rain begins.
 These tears are my sweet Rutland's obsequies:
 And every drop cries vengeance for his death,
 'Gainst thee, fell Clifford, and thee, false Frenchwoman.

North. Beshrew me, but his passion moves me so 150
 That hardly can I check my eyes from tears.

York. That face of his the hungry cannibals
 Would not have touch'd, would not have stain'd with
 blood:

137 *tiger's]* *Tyger's* Rowe. *Tygers* (Qq).
Tygres F₁F₂. *Tigres* F₃F₄. *tygress'*
 Capell.

141 *and]* om. S. Walker conj.

148 *for]* to F₄.

149 *and]* om. Collier conj.

150 *passion moves]* Edd. *passions*
move F₂F₃F₄. *passions moues* F₁.

151 *my]* F₁F₂. *mine* F₃F₄.

152, 153 *That...blood:]* As in Warbur-
 ton, from (Qq). As three lines in
 Ff, ending *his...toucht...blood*.

153 *Would.....blood:]* *Would not have*

touch'd those roses, new in bloom,
The mountain beasts would not have
stain'd with blood S. Walker conj.
Would not have touch'd, the roses
juiced with blood Perring conj.
Would not have touch'd, nor tigers
of Hyrcania *Would not have stain'd*
the rose's tuft (or tufts) with blood
 Vaughan conj.

Would ... would] *Would ... could*
 Kinnear conj.
with blood] F₁. *the roses just with*
blood F₂F₃F₄. *the roses juic'd with*

But you are more inhuman, more inexorable,
 O, ten times more, than tigers of Hyrcania. 155
 See, ruthless queen, a hapless father's tears:
 This cloth thou dip'dst in blood of my sweet boy,
 And I with tears do wash the blood away.
 Keep thou the napkin, and go boast of this:
 And if thou tell'st the heavy story right, 160
 Upon my soul, the hearers will shed tears;
 Yea, even my foes will shed fast-falling tears,
 And say 'Alas, it was a piteous deed!'
 There, take the crown, and, with the crown, my curse;
 And in thy need such comfort come to thee 165
 As now I reap at thy too cruel hand!

Hard-hearted Clifford, take me from the world:
 My soul to heaven, my blood upon your heads!

North. Had he been slaughter-man to all my kin,
 I should not for my life but weep with him, 170
 To see how inly sorrow gripes his soul.

Q. Mar. What, weeping-ripe, my Lord Northumber-
 land?

Think but upon the wrong he did us all,
 And that will quickly dry thy melting tears. 174

Clif. Here's for my oath, here's for my father's death.
 [Stabbing him,

Q. Mar. And here's to right our gentle-hearted king.
 [Stabbing him.

York. Open Thy gate of mercy, gracious God!

- Blood Theobald. the roses just i'* 164 [Giving back the paper-crown.
ik' bud Hanmer. the rose's hues Dyce.
with blood Collier MS. the rose 169 *to all*] of all Capell, from (Qq).
just blown with blood Vaughan conj. 170 *should*] could Capell, from (Qq).
 (doubtfully). 172 *weeping-rips*] Theobald. *weeping*
rips Ff.
 154 *But you are*] *You're* Hanmer.
 159 [He gives back the handkerchief. 175 [Stabbing him.] Pope.
 Johnson. 176 [Stabbing him.] Rowe.

My soul flies through these wounds to seek out Thee. [*Dies.*
Q. Mar. Off with his head, and set it on York gates;
 So York may overlook the town of York. [*Flourish. Exeunt.*

ACT II.

SCENE I. *A plain near Mortimer's Cross in Herefordshire.*

A march. Enter EDWARD, RICHARD, and their power.

Edw. I wonder how our princely father 'scaped,
 Or whether he be 'scaped away or no
 From Clifford's and Northumberland's pursuit:
 Had he been ta'en, we should have heard the news;
 Had he been slain, we should have heard the news; 5
 Or had he 'scaped, methinks we should have heard
 The happy tidings of his good escape.

How fares my brother? why is he so sad?

Rich. I cannot joy, until I be resolved
 Where our right valiant father is become. 10
 I saw him in the battle range about;
 And watch'd him how he singled Clifford forth.
 Methought he bore him in the thickest troop
 As doth a lion in a herd of neat;
 Or as a bear, encompass'd round with dogs, 15
 Who having pinch'd a few and made them cry,
 The rest stand all aloof, and bark at him.

178 [*Dies.*] Rowe.

180 [*Flourish. Exeunt.*] *Flourish. Exit.*

*F*₁. *Exeunt. F*₂*F*₃*F*₄.

ACT II. SCENE I.] Rowe. om. *Ff.*

A plain...] Malone. Near Mortimer's Cross in Wales. Theobald.

The Marches of Wales. Hanmer.

A plain in Herefordshire. Capell.

A march.] *Ff.* Drums. Capell.

Enter...] *Ff.*

3 *and]* *and from F*₄.

4 *should]* *would F*₄.

So fared our father with his enemies ;
 So fled his enemies my warlike father :
 Methinks, 'tis prize enough to be his son. 20

See how the morning opes her golden gates,
 And takes her farewell of the glorious sun !
 How well resembles it the prime of youth,
 Trimm'd like a younker prancing to his love !

Edw. Dazzle mine eyes, or do I see three suns? 25

Rich. Three glorious suns, each one a perfect sun ;
 Not separated with the racking clouds,
 But sever'd in a pale clear-shining sky.
 See, see ! they join, embrace, and seem to kiss,
 As if they vow'd some league inviolable : 30
 Now are they but one lamp, one light, one sun.
 In this the heaven figures some event.

Edw. 'Tis wondrous strange, the like yet never heard of.
 I think it cites us, brother, to the field,
 That we, the sons of brave Plantagenet, 35
 Each one already blazing by our meeds,
 Should notwithstanding join our lights together,
 And over-shine the earth as this the world.
 Whate'er it bodes, henceforward will I bear
 Upon my target three fair-shining suns. 40

Rich. Nay, bear three daughters : by your leave I speak
 it,
 You love the breeder better than the male.

20 *prize*] *pride* (Qq) Warburton. *praise*
 S. Walker conj.

21 *See how*] *Edw.* See how Hanmer,
 from (Qq).

25 *Edw.*] om. Hanmer.

27 *racking*] *wracking* Upton conj. (with-
 drawn).

28 *clear-shining*] *clear shining* Pope.

32 *heaven figures*] *heavens doth figure*

(Qq). *heavens figure* Collier MS.

33 *'Tis...of.*] One line in Pope. Two
 in Ff.

36 *meeds*] *deeds* Johnson conj.

40 *fair-shining*] Edd. *faire shining*
 F₁F₂. *fair shining* F₃F₄.

41 *Nay...it.*] One line in Pope. Two
 in Ff.

Enter a Messenger.

But what art thou, whose heavy looks foretell
Some dreadful story hanging on thy tongue?

Mess. Ah, one that was a woful looker-on 45
When as the noble Duke of York was slain,
Your princely father and my loving lord!

Edw. O, speak no more, for I have heard too much.

Rich. Say how he died, for I will hear it all.

Mess. Environed he was with many foes, 50
And stood against them, as the hope of Troy
Against the Greeks that would have enter'd Troy.
But Hercules himself must yield to odds;
And many strokes, though with a little axe,
Hew down and fell the hardest-timber'd oak. 55

By many hands your father was subdued;
But only slaughter'd by the ireful arm
Of unrelenting Clifford and the queen,

Who crown'd the gracious duke in high despite,
Laugh'd in his face; and when with grief he wept, 60
The ruthless queen gave him to dry his cheeks
A napkin steeped in the harmless blood

Of sweet young Rutland, by rough Clifford slain:
And after many scorns, many foul taunts,

They took his head, and on the gates of York 65
They set the same; and there it doth remain,
The saddest spectacle that e'er I view'd.

Edw. Sweet Duke of York, our prop to lean upon,

43 *Enter a Messenger.*] Rowe. Enter one blowing. Ff. Collier MS. adds 'in haste'. Enter a Messenger in haste. Collier (ed. 2).

55 *Hew...fell*] Pope. *Hewes...fells* Ff. 60 *face* ;] *face*, Vaughan conj.

61 *The ruthless queen gave*] — *The ruthless queen!* — gave Vaughan conj. *cheeks*] *Cheekes* F₁. *Cheeks* F₂. *Cheek* F₃F₄.

62 *steeped*] *steep'd* F₄.

Now thou art gone, we have no staff, no stay.
 O Clifford, boisterous Clifford! thou hast slain 70
 The flower of Europe for his chivalry;
 And treacherously hast thou vanquish'd him,
 For hand to hand he would have vanquish'd thee.
 Now my soul's palace is become a prison:
 Ah, would she break from hence, that this my body 75
 Might in the ground be closed up in rest!
 For never henceforth shall I joy again,
 Never, O never, shall I see more joy!

Rich. I cannot weep; for all my body's moisture
 Scarce serves to quench my furnace-burning heart: 80
 Nor can my tongue unload my heart's great burthen;
 For selfsame wind that I should speak withal
 Is kindling coals that fires all my breast,
 And burns me up with flames that tears would quench.
 To weep is to make less the depth of grief: 85
 Tears then for babes; blows and revenge for me!
 Richard, I bear thy name; I'll venge thy death,
 Or die renowned by attempting it.

Edw. His name that valiant duke hath left with
 thee;
 His dukedom and his chair with me is left. 90

Rich. Nay, if thou be that princely eagle's bird,
 Show thy descent by gazing 'gainst the sun:
 For chair and dukedom, throne and kingdom say;
 Either that is thine, or else thou wert not his.

77, 78 Lettsom would omit one of these lines.

80 *heart*] *heat* Vaughan conj.

81 *burthen*] *Ff. burden* Johnson.

82 *selfsame*] *th' self-same* Hanmer.

83, 84 *coals...fires...burns*] *coales...fires...burnes* F₁F₂ *coals...fires up...*

...burns F₃F₄ *coals...fire up...*

burn Rowe. *coals...fire...burn* Capell. *coal...fires...burns* Edd. conj.

94 *Either that is*] *Ff. Either that's* Pope. *Either they're* Hanmer. *Either seat is* Vaughan conj.

March. Enter WARWICK, MARQUESS OF MONTAGUE, and their army.

www.libtool.com.cn

War. How now, fair lords! What fare? what news
abroad? 95

Rich. Great Lord of Warwick, if we should recount
Our baleful news, and at each word's deliverance
Stab poniards in our flesh till all were told,
The words would add more anguish than the wounds.
O valiant lord, the Duke of York is slain! 100

Edw. O Warwick, Warwick! that Plantagenet,
Which held thee dearly as his soul's redemption,
Is by the stern Lord Clifford done to death.

War. Ten days ago I drown'd these news in tears;
And now, to add more measure to your woes, 105
I come to tell you things sith then befall'n.
After the bloody fray at Wakefield fought,
Where your brave father breathed his latest gasp,
Tidings, as swiftly as the posts could run,
Were brought me of your loss and his depart. 110
I, then in London, keeper of the king,
Muster'd my soldiers, gather'd flocks of friends,
And very well appointed, as I thought,
March'd toward Saint Alban's to intercept the queen,
Bearing the king in my behalf along; 115
For by my scouts I was advertised,
That she was coming with a full intent

95 SCENE II. Warburton. See note (1).

March.] Ff. Drums. Capell.

Marquess of Montague,] Marquesse

Mountacute, Ff (Marquess F₄).

fare] faire F₁.

96 recount] F₃F₄. recompt F₂. tecompt
F₁.

98 our] your Vaughan conj.

99 than] to Vaughan conj.

101 O] Ah (Qq) Capell.

106 sith] since (Qq) Capell.

112 gather'd] Rowe. gathered Ff.

113 And.....thought,] (Qq) Steevens
(1773). Omitted in Ff.

114 toward] towards Rowe.

To dash our late decree in parliament,
 Touching King Henry's oath and your succession.
 Short tale to make, we at Saint Alban's met, 120
 Our battles join'd, and both sides fiercely fought :
 But whether 'twas the coldness of the king,
 Who look'd full gently on his warlike queen,
 That robb'd my soldiers of their heated spleen ;
 Or whether 'twas report of her success ; 125
 Or more than common fear of Clifford's rigour,
 Who thunders to his captives blood and death,
 I cannot judge : but, to conclude with truth,
 Their weapons like to lightning came and went ;
 Our soldiers', like the night-owl's lazy flight, 130
 Or like an idle thresher with a flail,
 Fell gently down, as if they struck their friends.
 I cheer'd them up with justice of our cause,
 With promise of high pay and great rewards :
 But all in vain ; they had no heart to fight, 135
 And we in them no hope to win the day ;
 So that we fled ; the king unto the queen ;
 Lord George your brother, Norfolk and myself,
 In haste, post-haste, are come to join with you ;
 For in the marches here we heard you were, 140
 Making another head to fight again.

Edw. Where is the Duke of Norfolk, gentle Warwick ?
 And when came George from Burgundy to England ?

War. Some six miles off the duke is with the soldiers ;
 And for your brother, he was lately sent 145

124 *heated*] *hated* Warburton.

127 *captives blood*] *Captiuues, Blood* Ff.
captives—blood Capell.

130 *soldiers*] Capell. *souldiers* Ff.

131 *an idle*] (Qq) Capell. *a lazy* Ff.

133 *our cause*] Ff. *the cause* (Qq) Ca-

pell.

134 *rewards*] F₁. *Reward* F₂F₃F₄.

138 *brother,*] F₁F₂. *Brother* F₃F₄.

144 *the soldiers*] *his power* (Qq) Theobald.

From your kind aunt, Duchess of Burgundy,
With aid of soldiers to this needful war.

Rich. 'Twas odds, belike, when valiant Warwick fled:
Oft have I heard his praises in pursuit,
But ne'er till now his scandal of retire. 150

War. Nor now my scandal, Richard, dost thou hear;
For thou shalt know this strong right hand of mine
Can pluck the diadem from faint Henry's head,
And wring the awful sceptre from his fist,
Were he as famous and as bold in war, 155
As he is famed for mildness, peace, and prayer.

Rich. I know it well, Lord Warwick; blame me not:
'Tis love I bear thy glories makes me speak.
But in this troublous time what's to be done?
Shall we go throw away our coats of steel, 160
And wrap our bodies in black mourning gowns,
Numbering our Ave-Maries with our beads?
Or shall we on the helmets of our foes
Tell our devotion with revengeful arms?
If for the last, say ay, and to it, lords. 165

War. Why, therefore Warwick came to seek you out;
And therefore comes my brother Montague.
Attend me, lords. The proud insulting queen,
With Clifford and the haught Northumberland,
And of their feather many moe proud birds, 170
Have wrought the easy-melting king like wax.
He swore consent to your succession,
His oath enrolled in the parliament;
And now to London all the crew are gone,
To frustrate both his oath and what beside 175
May make against the house of Lancaster.
Their power, I think, is thirty thousand strong:
Now, if the help of Norfolk and myself,

158 *makes*] *make* F.

170 *moe*] *Ff. more* Rowe.

With all the friends that thou, brave Earl of March,
 Amongst the loving Welshmen canst procure, 180
 Will but amount to five and twenty thousand,
 Why, Via! to London will we march amain,
 And once again bestride our foaming steeds,
 And once again cry 'Charge upon our foes!'
 But never once again turn back and fly. 185

Rich. Ay, now methinks I hear great Warwick speak:
 Ne'er may he live to see a sunshine day,
 That cries 'Retire,' if Warwick bid him stay.

Edw. Lord Warwick, on thy shoulder will I lean;
 And when thou fail'st—as God forbid the hour!— 190
 Must Edward fall, which peril heaven forbend!

War. No longer Earl of March, but Duke of York:
 The next degree is England's royal throne;
 For King of England shalt thou be proclaim'd
 In every borough as we pass along; 195
 And he that throws not up his cap for joy
 Shall for the fault make forfeit of his head.
 King Edward, valiant Richard, Montague,
 Stay we no longer, dreaming of renown,
 But sound the trumpets, and about our task. 200

Rich. Then, Clifford, were thy heart as hard as steel,
 As thou hast shown it flinty by thy deeds,
 I come to pierce it, or to give thee mine.

Edw. Then strike up drums: God and Saint George
 for us!

180 *Amongst*] *Ff.* *Among* (Qq) Capell.

182 *to London.....march amain*] (Qq)
 Theobald. *to London...march Ff.*
straight to London...march Han-
mer.

184 *our foes*] *the foe* (Qq) Capell.

188 *if Warwick bid*] *when Warwick bids*
 (Qq) Capell.

189 *shoulder*] *shouldier F.*

190 *fail'st*] *fall'st* Steevens (1793).
faints (Qq).

191 *which*] *with F.*

193 *throne*] *king* (Qq) Capell.

196 *throws*] *casts* (Qq) Capell.

198 *Richard, Montague*] Rowe. *Richard*
Mountague Ff.

Enter a Messenger.

War. How now! what news? 205

Mess. The Duke of Norfolk sends you word by me,
The queen is coming with a puissant host;
And craves your company for speedy counsel.

War. Why then it sorts, brave warriors, let's away.
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *Before York.*

Flourish. *Enter* KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, the PRINCE OF WALES,
CLIFFORD, and NORTHUMBERLAND, with drum and trumpets.

Q. Mar. Welcome, my lord, to this brave town of
York.

Yonder's the head of that arch-enemy
That sought to be encompass'd with your crown:
Doth not the object cheer your heart, my lord?

K. Hen. Ay, as the rocks cheer them that fear their
wreck: 5

To see this sight, it irks my very soul.
Withhold revenge, dear God! 'tis not my fault,
Nor wittingly have I infringed my vow.

209 *sorts, brave warriors, let's]* F₁F₂
sorts, brave warriors let's F₃F₄.
sorts; brave warriors, let's Theobald.
sorts, brave warriors: let's Capell.

[*Exeunt.*] *Exeunt Omnes.* Ff.

SCENE II.] Capell. SCENE III.

Pope.

Flourish.] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

Enter.....] Enter the King, the
Queene, Clifford, Northum- and

Yong Prince, with Drumme and
Trumpettes. F₁. *Enter...*Northum-
berland and Yong...Trumpetes. F₂.
*Enter...*Northumberland and young
...Trumpets. F₃. *Enter...*Northum-
berland, and young.....Drum and
Trumpets. F₄.

2 *Yonder's]* F₃F₄. *Yonders* F₁F₂.

5 *wreck]* Theobald (ed. 2). *wrack* Ff.

8 *Nor]* *Not* Reed (1803).

wittingly] *willingly* S. Walker conj.

Clif. My gracious liege, this too much lenity
 And harmful pity must be laid aside. 10
 To whom do lions cast their gentle looks?
 Not to the beast that would usurp their den.
 Whose hand is that the forest bear doth lick?
 Not his that spoils her young before her face.
 Who 'scapes the lurking serpent's mortal sting? 15
 Not he that sets his foot upon her back.
 The smallest worm will turn being trodden on,
 And doves will peck in safeguard of their brood.
 Ambitious York did level at thy crown,
 Thou smiling while he knit his angry brows: 20
 He, but a duke, would have his son a king,
 And raise his issue, like a loving sire;
 Thou, being a king, blest with a goodly son,
 Didst yield consent to disinherit him,
 Which argued thee a most unloving father. 25
 Unreasonable creatures feed their young;
 And though man's face be fearful to their eyes,
 Yet, in protection of their tender ones,
 Who hath not seen them, even with those wings
 Which sometime they have used with fearful flight, 30
 Make war with him that climb'd unto their nest,
 Offering their own lives in their young's defence?
 For shame, my liege, make them your precedent!
 Were it not pity that this goodly boy
 Should lose his birthright by his father's fault, 35
 And long hereafter say unto his child,
 'What my great-grandfather and grandsire got

10 *harmful*] *harmless* Rowe.20 *smiling*] *smilling* F₂.30 *sometime*] *sometimes* F₄.*with*] *in* (Qq) Capell.*fearful*] *dreadful* Vaughan conj.33 *precedent*] Johnson. *President* Ff.35 *lose*] F₃F₄. *loose* F₁F₂.37 *great-grandfather*] Capell. *great*
Grandfather Ff.*grandsire*] F₁F₂. *my grandsire* F₃F₄.

My careless father fondly gave away' ?
 Ah, what a shame were this ! Look on the boy ;
 And let his manly face, which promiseth 40
 Successful fortune, steel thy melting heart
 To hold thine own, and leave thine own with him.

K. Hen. Full well hath Clifford play'd the orator,
 Inferring arguments of mighty force.
 But, Clifford, tell me, didst thou never hear 45
 That things ill-got had ever bad success ?

And happy always was it for that son
 Whose father for his hoarding went to hell ?
 I'll leave my son my virtuous deeds behind ;
 And would my father had left me no more ! 50
 For all the rest is held at such a rate

As brings a thousand-fold more care to keep
 Than in possession any jot of pleasure.
 Ah, cousin York ! would thy best friends did know
 How it doth grieve me that thy head is here ! 55

Q. Mar. My lord, cheer up your spirits : our foes are
 nigh,
 And this soft courage makes your followers faint.
 You promised knighthood to our forward son :
 Unsheathe your sword, and dub him presently.
 Edward, kneel down. 60

K. Hen. Edward Plantagenet, arise a knight ;
 And learn this lesson, draw thy sword in right.

Prince. My gracious father, by your kingly leave,
 I'll draw it as apparent to the crown,

39 *were*] *was* Rowe.

41 *steel*] *steale* F₁F₂F₃. *steal* F₄.

42 *with him*] *to him* Hanmer.

46 *ill-got had ever*] *ill-gotten have had*
 Hanmer.

success ?] Theobald. *successes*. Ff.

47 *And happy*] *Unhappy* Nicholson

conj.

48 *hell* ?] (Qq) Theobald. *hell* : Ff.

53 *Than...pleasure*] *Than may the pre-*
sent profit countervail (Qq) Rann.

57 *courage*] *carriage* Collier, ed. 2 (Ma-
 son conj.).

And in that quarrel use it to the death. 65

Clif. Why, that is spoken like a toward prince.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Royal commanders, be in readiness :
For with a band of thirty thousand men
Comes Warwick, backing of the Duke of York ;
And in the towns, as they do march along, 70
Proclaims him king, and many fly to him :
Darraign your battle, for they are at hand.

Clif. I would your highness would depart the field :
The queen hath best success when you are absent.

Q. Mar. Ay, good my lord, and leave us to our
fortune. 75

K. Hen. Why, that's my fortune too ; therefore I'll
stay.

North. Be it with resolution then to fight.

Prince. My royal father, cheer these noble lords,
And hearten those that fight in your defence :
Unsheathe your sword, good father ; cry 'Saint George !'

March. *Enter EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD, WARWICK, NORFOLK,
MONTAGUE, and Soldiers.*

Edw. Now, perjured Henry ! wilt thou kneel for
grace, 81
And set thy diadem upon my head ;
Or bide the mortal fortune of the field ?

Q. Mar. Go, rate thy minions, proud insulting boy !
Becomes it thee to be thus bold in terms 85

72 for they are] F₁. they are F₂F₃F₄.
they are near Rowe.

81 SCENE IV. Pope.

March.] Ff. Drums. Capell.

Enter.....George.....] Enter...Clarence... Ff.

81—83 grace,...head ;...field?] Rowe.
grace?...head?...field. Ff.

Before thy sovereign and thy lawful king?

Edw. I am his king, and he should bow his knee;
I was adopted heir by his consent:

Since when, his oath is broke; for, as I hear,
You, that are king, though he do wear the crown, 90
Have caused him, by new act of parliament,
To blot out me, and put his own son in.

Clif. And reason too:

Who should succeed the father but the son? 94

Rich. Are you there, butcher? O, I cannot speak!

Clif. Ay, crook-back, here I stand to answer thee,
Or any he the proudest of thy sort.

Rich. 'Twas you that kill'd young Rutland, was it
not?

Clif. Ay, and old York, and yet not satisfied.

Rich. For God's sake, lords, give signal to the fight.

War. What say'st thou, Henry, wilt thou yield the
crown? 101

Q. Mar. Why, how now, long-tongued Warwick! dare
you speak?

When you and I met at Saint Alban's last,
Your legs did better service than your hands. 104

War. Then 'twas my turn to fly, and now 'tis thine.

Clif. You said so much before, and yet you fled.

War. 'Twas not your valour, Clifford, drove me thence.

North. No, nor your manhood that durst make you
stay.

Rich. Northumberland, I hold thee reverently.

Break off the parley; for scarce I can refrain 110

89 *Since when*] F₁F₂F₄. *Cl.* *Since when* F₁. *George.* *Since when* (Qq).
See note (11).

93 *And reason too*] *And reason too to put his own son in* Vaughan conj.

95 *Are you*] *Art thou* Capell.

101 *What...crown*] One line in Pope.
Two in Ff.

110 *parley*] *parle* Reed (1803).
for] om. Hanmer.

The execution of my big-swoln heart
Upon that Clifford, that cruel child-killer.

Clif. I slew thy father, call'st thou him a child?

Rich. Ay, like a dastard and a treacherous coward,
As thou didst kill our tender brother Rutland; 115
But ere sunset I'll make thee curse the deed.

K. Hen. Have done with words, my lords, and hear
me speak.

Q. Mar. Defy them then, or else hold close thy lips.

K. Hen. I prithee, give no limits to my tongue:
I am a king, and privileged to speak. 120

Clif. My liege, the wound that bred this meeting
here

Cannot be cured by words; therefore be still.

Rich. Then, executioner, unsheathe thy sword:
By Him that made us all, I am resolved
That Clifford's manhood lies upon his tongue. 125

Edw. Say, Henry, shall I have my right, or no?
A thousand men have broke their fasts to-day,
That ne'er shall dine unless thou yield the crown.

War. If thou deny, their blood upon thy head;
For York in justice puts his armour on. 130

Prince. If that be right which Warwick says is right,
There is no wrong, but every thing is right.

Rich. Whoever got thee, there thy mother stands;
For, well I wot, thou hast thy mother's tongue.

Q. Mar. But thou art neither like thy sire nor dam;
But like a foul mis-shapen stigmatic, 136
Mark'd by the destinies to be avoided,

112 *Clifford*] *Clifford there* Capell, from
(Qq).

116 *sunset*] F₁F₂. *sun set* F₃F₄.

121 *wound*] *wounds* S. Walker conj.

123 *executioner, unsheathe*] *execution*

erunsheath F₄. *execution, reunsheath*
Rowe.

126 *no ?*] Pope. *no*: Ff.

133 *Rich.*] (Qq) Pope. *War.* Ff.

As venom toads, or lizards' dreadful stings.

Rich. Iron of Naples hid with English gilt,
 Whose father bears the title of a king,— 140
 As if a channel should be call'd the sea,—
 Shamest thou not, knowing whence thou art extraught,
 To let thy tongue detect thy base-born heart?

Edw. A wisp of straw were worth a thousand crowns,
 To make this shameless callet know herself. 145
 Helen of Greece was fairer far than thou,
 Although thy husband may be Menelaus;
 And ne'er was Agamemnon's brother wrong'd
 By that false woman, as this king by thee.
 His father revell'd in the heart of France, 150
 And tamed the king, and made the dauphin stoop;
 And had he match'd according to his state,
 He might have kept that glory to this day;
 But when he took a beggar to his bed,
 And graced thy poor sire with his bridal-day, 155
 Even then that sunshine brew'd a shower for him,
 That wash'd his father's fortunes forth of France,
 And heap'd sedition on his crown at home.
 For what hath broach'd this tumult but thy pride?
 Hadst thou been meek, our title still had slept; 160
 And we, in pity of the gentle king,
 Had slipp'd our claim until another age.

Geo. But when we saw our sunshine made thy spring,
 And that thy summer bred us no increase,
 We set the axe to thy usurping root; 165
 And though the edge hath something hit ourselves,
 Yet, know thou, since we have begun to strike,

138 *venom*] *F*₄. *venome* *F*₁*F*₂*F*₃. *venom-*
ous Rowe. *venom'd* (*Q*₂) Capell.
 140, 141 *king,—As...sea,—]* *king As...*
sea, Vaughan conj.

141 *channel*] *kennel* Roderick conj.
 143 *heart f]* Theobald. *heart. Ff.*
 147 *Although...Menelaus;]* (*Although...*
Menelaus,) Vaughan conj.

We'll never leave till we have hewn thee down,
Or bathed thy growing with our heated bloods.

Edw. And, in this resolution, I defy thee; 170

Not willing any longer conference,
Since thou deniest the gentle king to speak.
Sound trumpets! let our bloody colours wave!
And either victory, or else a grave.

Q. Mar. Stay, Edward. 175

Edw. No, wrangling woman, we'll no longer stay:
These words will cost ten thousand lives this day.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *A field of battle between Towton and Saxton,
in Yorkshire.*

Alarum. Excursions. Enter WARWICK.

War. Forspent with toil, as runners with a race,
I lay me down a little while to breathe;
For strokes received, and many blows repaid,
Have robb'd my strong-knit sinews of their strength,
And spite of spite needs must I rest awhile. 5

Enter EDWARD, running.

Edw. Smile, gentle heaven! or strike, ungentle death!
For this world frowns, and Edward's sun is clouded.

169 *thy] thee* F₁.
heated] hated Vaughan conj.

171 *longer] further* Capell.

172 *deniest] (Qq) Warburton. denied'st*
F₁F₂. *deni'dst* F₃F₄.

174 *else a] welcome* Collier MS.

176 *we'll] I'll* (Qq) Capell.

177 *These] Thy* (Qq) Capell.

this day] to-day (Qq) Capell.

[*Exeunt.*] *Exeunt omnes.* Ff.

SCENE III.] Capell. SCENE V. Pope.

A field...] Malone. A field of Battel
at Ferri-bridge in Yorkshire. Theo-
bald.

1 *Forspent] Fore-spent* Ff. *Sore spent*
(Qq) Rann.

War. How now, my lord! what hap? what hope of good?

www.libtool.com.cn

Enter GEORGE.

Geo. Our hap is loss, our hope but sad despair;
Our ranks are broke, and ruin follows us: 10
What counsel give you? whither shall we fly?

Edw. Bootless is flight, they follow us with wings;
And weak we are and cannot shun pursuit.

Enter RICHARD.

Rich. Ah, Warwick, why hast thou withdrawn thyself?
Thy brother's blood the thirsty earth hath drunk, 15
Broach'd with the steely point of Clifford's lance;
And in the very pangs of death he cried,
Like to a dismal clangor heard from far,
'Warwick, revenge! brother, revenge my death!'
So, underneath the belly of their steeds, 20
That stain'd their fetlocks in his smoking blood,
The noble gentleman gave up the ghost.

War. Then let the earth be drunken with our blood:
I'll kill my horse, because I will not fly.
Why stand we like soft-hearted women here, 25
Wailing our losses, whiles the foe doth rage;
And look upon, as if the tragedy
Were play'd in jest by counterfeiting actors?
Here on my knee I vow to God above,
I'll never pause again, never stand still, 30

9 *Enter* George.] Capell. *Enter* Clarence. Ff.

Our] *Out* F₂.

11 *whither*] F₂. *whether* F₁F₃F₄.

20 *belly*] *bellies* Collier MS.

their] *his* Rowe.

26 *whiles*] *while* Capell.

27 *look upon*] *looking on* Rann (Capell conj.).

28 *counterfeiting*] F₃F₄. *counterfetting* F₁F₂.

actors] Pope. *Actors*. Ff.

29 (kneeles) Collier MS.

Till either death hath closed these eyes of mine,
Or fortune given me measure of revenge.

Edw. O Warwick, I do bend my knee with thine;
And in this vow do chain my soul to thine!
And, ere my knee rise from the earth's cold face, 35
I throw my hands, mine eyes, my heart to Thee,
Thou setter up and plucker down of kings,
Beseeching Thee, if with Thy will it stands
That to my foes this body must be prey,
Yet that Thy brazen gates of heaven may ope, 40
And give sweet passage to my sinful soul!
Now, lords, take leave until we meet again,
Where'er it be, in heaven or in earth.

Rich. Brother, give me thy hand; and, gentle War-
wick,
Let me embrace thee in my weary arms: 45
I, that did never weep, now melt with woe
That winter should cut off our spring-time so.

War. Away, away! Once more, sweet lords, farewell.

Geo. Yet let us all together to our troops,
And give them leave to fly that will not stay; 50
And call them pillars that will stand to us;
And, if we thrive, promise them such rewards
As victors wear at the Olympian games:
This may plant courage in their quailing breasts;
For yet is hope of life and victory. 55
Forslow no longer, make we hence amain. [*Exeunt.*]

32 *given*] *give* Johnson.

34 *to thine*] *with thine* Warburton.
(kneels) Collier MS.

40 *Thy*] *the* Dyce, ed. 2 (Long MS. and
Collier MS.).

43 *in earth*] F_1F_2 . *in the earth* F_3F_4 .
on earth Pope.

44 *Brother..... Warwick,*] One line in

Pope. Two in Ff.

48 *Away...farewell.*] One line in (Qq)
Pope. Two in Ff.

49 *all together*] Rowe. *altogether* Ff.

53 *wear*] *wore* Collier MS. *were* Collier
(ed. 2).

56 *Forslow*] *Foreslow* F_1F_2 . *Fore-slow*
 F_3F_4 .

www.librioon.com.cn SCENE IV. *Another part of the field.*

Excursions. Enter RICHARD and CLIFFORD.

Rich. Now, Clifford, I have singled thee alone:
Suppose this arm is for the Duke of York,
And this for Rutland; both bound to revenge,
Wert thou environ'd with a brazen wall.

Clif. Now, Richard, I am with thee here alone: 5
This is the hand that stabb'd thy father York;
And this the hand that slew thy brother Rutland;
And here's the heart that triumphs in their death,
And cheers these hands that slew thy sire and brother
To execute the like upon thyself; 10
And so, have at thee!

[They fight. Warwick comes; Clifford flies.

Rich. Nay, Warwick, single out some other chase;
For I myself will hunt this wolf to death. *[Exeunt.*

SCENE V. *Another part of the field.*

Alarum. Enter KING HENRY alone.

King. This battle fares like to the morning's war,
When dying clouds contend with growing light,
What time the shepherd, blowing of his nails,
Can neither call it perfect day nor night.

SCENE IV.] Capell. Pope continues
the scene. om. Ff.

Another...] Steevens. The same.

Another Part of it. Capell.

Excursions. Enter...] Ff.

8 *death*] *deaths* (Qq) Dyce (ed. 2).

11 [They fight.....] Ff. They fight.

Enter Warwick, as joining Rich-
ard;... Capell.

SCENE V.] Capell. SCENE VI. Pope.

Another...] Steevens. The same.

Another Part. Capell.

Alarum. Enter...] Ff.

Now sways it this way, like a mighty sea 5
 Forced by the tide to combat with the wind ;
 Now sways it that way, like the selfsame sea
 Forced to retire by fury of the wind :
 Sometime the flood prevails, and then the wind ;
 Now one the better, then another best ; 10
 Both tugging to be victors, breast to breast,
 Yet neither conqueror nor conquered :
 So is the equal poise of this fell war.
 Here on this molehill will I sit me down.
 To whom God will, there be the victory ! 15
 For Margaret my queen, and Clifford too,
 Have chid me from the battle ; swearing both
 They prosper best of all when I am thence.
 Would I were dead ! if God's good will were so ;
 For what is in this world but grief and woe ? 20
 O God ! methinks it were a happy life,
 To be no better than a homely swain ;
 To sit upon a hill, as I do now,
 To carve out dials quaintly, point by point,
 Thereby to see the minutes how they run, 25
 How many make the hour full complete ;
 How many hours bring about the day ;
 How many days will finish up the year ;
 How many years a mortal man may live.
 When this is known, then to divide the times : 30
 So many hours must I tend my flock ;
 So many hours must I take my rest ;
 So many hours must I contemplate ;

5 *a mighty*] Fl. *the self-same* Rowe
(ed. 2).

9 *then*] *than* F₁.

10 *another*] *the other* Daniel conj.

15 *there*] *theirs* Capell conj.

20 *woe*] F₄. *Woe*. F₁F₂F₃.

26 *make*] Hanmer. *makes* Ff.

27 *bring*] *brings* F₁.

30 *times*] *time* Theobald.

So many hours must I sport myself;
 So many days my ewes have been with young; 35
 So many weeks ere the poor fools will ean;
 So many years ere I shall shear the fleece:
 So minutes, hours, days, months, and years,
 Pass'd over to the end they were created,
 Would bring white hairs unto a quiet grave. 40
 Ah, what a life were this! how sweet! how lovely!
 Gives not the hawthorn-bush a sweeter shade
 To shepherds looking on their silly sheep,
 Than doth a rich embroider'd canopy
 To kings that fear their subjects' treachery? 45
 O, yes, it doth; a thousand-fold it doth.
 And to conclude, the shepherd's homely curds,
 His cold thin drink out of his leather bottle,
 His wonted sleep under a fresh tree's shade,
 All which secure and sweetly he enjoys, 50
 Is far beyond a prince's delicates,
 His viands sparkling in a golden cup,
 His body couched in a curious bed,
 When care, mistrust, and treason waits on him.

Alarum. Enter a Son that has killed his father, dragging in the body.

Son. Ill blows the wind that profits nobody. 55

36 *weeks] dayes* F₂. *days* F₄.
ean] F₃F₄. Eans F₁F₂. *yeane* Theo-
 bald. After this S. Walker con-
 jectures that a line is lost.

37 *years] months* Rowe.
fleece:] fleece: So many years ere I
shall eat the flesh: Vaughan conj.

38 *months] weeks, months* Rowe.

44 *rich embroider'd] rich-embroider'd* S.
 Walker conj.

54 *treason waits] F₁F₂. treasons waits*

F₃F₄. *treasons wait* Rowe (ed. 2).
treason wait Steevens (1793).

55 SCENE VII. Pope.

Alarum.] Ff. Alarums. Capell.
Enter.....body.] Capell. Enter a
Sonne that hath kill'd his Father,
at one doore: and a Father that
hath kill'd his Sonne at another
doore. Ff (had kill'd F₄). Enter...
Father. Theobald. Enter a Son,
bearing his Father. Hanmer.

This man, whom hand to hand I slew in fight,
 May be possessed with some store of crowns;
 And I, that haply take them from him now,
 May yet ere night yield both my life and them
 To some man else, as this dead man doth me. 60
 Who's this? O God! it is my father's face;
 Whom in this conflict I unwares have kill'd.
 O heavy times, begetting such events!
 From London by the king was I press'd forth;
 My father, being the Earl of Warwick's man, 65
 Came on the part of York, press'd by his master;
 And I, who at his hands received my life,
 Have by my hands of life bereaved him.
 Pardon me, God, I knew not what I did!
 And pardon, father, for I knew not thee! 70
 My tears shall wipe away these bloody marks;
 And no more words till they have flow'd their fill.
K. Hen. O piteous spectacle! O bloody times!
 Whiles lions war and battle for their dens,
 Poor harmless lambs abide their enmity. 75
 Weep, wretched man, I'll aid thee tear for tear;
 And let our hearts and eyes, like civil war,
 Be blind with tears, and break o'ercharged with grief.

Enter a Father that has killed his son, bringing in the body.

Fath. Thou that so stoutly hast resisted me,
 Give me thy gold, if thou hast any gold; 80

60 *dead man doth me*] *dead man to me*
 Hanmer. *dead doth to me* Words-
 worth.
 [going to rifle him. Capell.
 62 *I unwares have*] *unawares I've*
 Wordsworth.
unwares] *unawares* F₁. *un'wares*

Hanmer. *unware* Vaughan conj.
 74 *Whiles*] *Whilst* (Qq) Capell.
 77 *like*] *make* Vaughan conj.
 79 *Enter.....body.*] Capell. *Enter*
Father, bearing of his Sonne. Ff.
hast] F₃F₄. *hath* F₁F₂.

For I have bought it with an hundred blows.

But let me see: is this our foeman's face?

Ah, no, no, no, it is mine only son!

Ah, boy, if any life be left in thee,

Throw up thine eye! see, see what showers arise, 85

Blown with the windy tempest of my heart,

Upon thy wounds, that kill mine eye and heart!

O, pity, God, this miserable age!

What stratagems, how fell, how butcherly,

Erroneous, mutinous and unnatural, 90

This deadly quarrel daily doth beget!

O boy, thy father gave thee life too soon,

And hath bereft thee of thy life too late!

K. Hen. Woe above woe! grief more than common
grief!

O that my death would stay these ruthless deeds! 95

O, pity, pity, gentle heaven, pity!

The red rose and the white are on his face,

The fatal colours of our striving houses:

The one his purple blood right well resembles;

The other his pale cheeks, methinks, presenteth: 100

Wither one rose, and let the other flourish;

If you contend, a thousand lives must wither.

Son. How will my mother for a father's death

Take on with me and ne'er be satisfied!

Fath. How will my wife for slaughter of my son 105

Shed seas of tears and ne'er be satisfied!

82 *our*] *a* Collier MS.

83 *mine*] *my* F₄.

87 *kill*] Rowe (ed. 2). *kill*s F₁F₂. *kill*s
F₃F₄.

89 *stratagems, ...butcherly,*] Pope. *Stratagems?* *how fell?* *how Butcherly?*
Ff (*Stragems* F₁F₂).

90 *Erroneous*] *Erreoneous* F₁.

92, 93 *soon...late*] *late...soon* (Qq) Hammer. See note (III).

93 *hath*] *death* Bulloch conj.

95 *ruthful*] *ruefull* F₃. *rueful* F₄.

99 *his*] *is* F₄.

100 *cheeks*] *cheek* Rowe (ed. 2).

presenteth] *present* Steevens (1793).

102 *with*] *perish* (Qq) Lettsom conj.

K. Hen. How will the country for these woful chances
Misthink the king and not be satisfied!

Son. Was ever son so rued a father's death?

Fath. Was ever father so bemoan'd his son? 110

K. Hen. Was ever king so grieved for subjects' woe?
Much is your sorrow; mine ten times so much.

Son. I'll bear thee hence, where I may weep my fill.
[Exit with the body.]

Fath. These arms of mine shall be thy winding-sheet;
My heart, sweet boy, shall be thy sepulchre, 115
For from my heart thine image ne'er shall go;
My sighing breast shall be thy funeral bell;
And so obsequious will thy father be,
Even for the loss of thee, having no more,
As Priam was for all his valiant sons. 120
I'll bear thee hence; and let them fight that will,
For I have murdered where I should not kill.

[Exit with the body.]

K. Hen. Sad-hearted men, much overgone with care,
Here sits a king more woful than you are.

*Alarums. Excursions. Enter QUEEN MARGARET, the PRINCE, and
EXETER.*

Prince. Fly, father, fly! for all your friends are fled,
And Warwick rages like a chafed bull: 126
Away! for death doth hold us in pursuit.

107 *these*] the F₃F₄.

110 *his son*] a son Reed (1803).

113 [Exit with the body.] Capell. Exit.
Theobald. om. Ff.

119 *Even*] Capell. *Men* F₁F₂F₃. *Man*,
F₄. *Sad* Rowe. *Mere* Mitford conj.
Son, Delius (Mitford conj.). *E'en*
Collier MS. *'Fore men* or *To men*
Keightley conj. *Mang'd* Bulloch

conj. *Main* Anon. conj.

122 *murdered*] (Q₁Q₃). *murthered* F₁F₂
F₄. *murther'd* F₃.

[Exit with the body.] Capell. Exit.
Ff.

125 SCENE VIII. Pope.

Alarums...Queen Margaret...] *Ala-*
rums...the Queen... Ff.

Q. Mar. Mount you, my lord; towards Berwick post

www.libtcmain.cn

Edward and Richard, like a brace of greyhounds

Having the fearful flying hare in sight, 130

With fiery eyes sparkling for very wrath,

And bloody steel grasp'd in their ireful hands,

Are at our backs; and therefore hence amain.

Exe. Away! for vengeance comes along with them:

Nay, stay not to expostulate, make speed; 135

Or else come after: I'll away before.

K. Hen. Nay, take me with thee, good sweet Exeter:

Not that I fear to stay, but love to go

Whither the queen intends. Forward; away! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *Another part of the field.*

A loud alarm. Enter CLIFFORD, wounded.

Clif. Here burns my candle out; ay, here it dies,

Which, whiles it lasted, gave King Henry light.

O Lancaster, I fear thy overthrow

More than my body's parting with my soul!

My love and fear glued many friends to thee; 5

And, now I fall, thy tough commixture melts.

128 *Berwick*] *Barwicke* F₁F₂. *Barwick*
F₃F₄.

130 *fearful flying*] *fearful-flying* Vaugh-
an conj.

139 *Whither*] *Whether* F₁.
SCENE VI.] Capell. SCENE IX. Pope.
Another...] Dyce. The same. Ca-
pell.

A loud...] Ff.

2 *whiles*] *while* Pope.

3 *O*] *Ah* (Qq) Capell.

thy] *thine* (Qq) Capell.

5 [falling. Rowe.

6 *fall, thy*] Rowe. *fall. Thy* Ff.
thy] *that* Rann. *the* Keightley
(Johnson conj.)

commixture melts] (Qq) Steevens
(1778, 1785). *Commixtures melts*
F₁. *Commixtures melt* F₂F₃F₄.

6, 7 *melts. Impairing...York,*] (Qq).
melt. Impairing.....York, Capell.
melts, Impairing...Yorks; Ff (*York;*
F₃F₄).

6 After this S. Walker conjectures
that a line is lost.

Impairing Henry, strengthening misproud York,
 The common people swarm like summer flies;
 And whither fly the gnats but to the sun?
 And who shines now but Henry's enemies? 10
 O Phœbus, hadst thou never given consent
 That Phaëthon should check thy fiery steeds,
 Thy burning car never had scorch'd the earth!
 And, Henry, hadst thou sway'd as kings should do,
 Or as thy father and his father did, 15
 Giving no ground unto the house of York,
 They never then had sprung like summer flies;
 I and ten thousand in this luckless realm
 Had left no mourning widows for our death;
 And thou this day hadst kept thy chair in peace. 20
 For what doth cherish weeds but gentle air?
 And what makes robbers bold but too much lenity?
 Bootless are complaints, and cureless are my wounds;
 No way to fly, nor strength to hold out flight:
 The foe is merciless, and will not pity; 25
 For at their hands I have deserved no pity.
 The air hath got into my deadly wounds,
 And much effuse of blood doth make me faint.
 Come, York and Richard, Warwick and the rest;
 I stabb'd your fathers' bosoms, split my breast. [*He faints.*]

8 *The...flies;*] (Qq) Theobald. Omitted in Ff.
 9 *whither*] F₂F₄ *whether* F₁F₃.
 10 *shines*] *shine* Dyce (ed. 2).
enemies] Ff. *enemy* (Qq) Capell.
 11 *given*] *gave* F₄.
 12 *Phaëthon*] *Phaeton* Ff.
steeds] F₁F₄ *sted*s F₂F₃.
 13 *never had*] *had never* (Qq) Pope.
 15 *Or as*] *And as* (Qq) Capell.
 17 *They.....flies;*] Omitted in (Qq) Ca-

pell.
 19 *our*] *their* Long MS.
death] *deaths* (Qq) Capell.
 21 *weeds*] *words* Pope (ed. 2).
 22 *too much*] om. Dyce conj., from (Qq).
 24 *out flight*] *our flight* Warburton. *out fight* Johnson conj.
 26 *For...I have*] *And...I have* (Qq) Capell. *Nor...have* I S. Walker conj.
 30 *bosoms*] *bosom* Rowe (ed. 2).
 [*He faints.*] Rowe. om. Ff.

Alarum and retreat. Enter EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD, MONTAGUE,
WARWICK, and Soldiers.

Edw. Now breathe we, lords: good fortune bids us
pause, 31

And smooth the frowns of war with peaceful looks.
Some troops pursue the bloody-minded queen,
That led calm Henry, though he were a king,
As doth a sail, fill'd with a fretting gust, 35
Command an argosy to stem the waves.

But think you, lords, that Clifford fled with them?

War. No, 'tis impossible he should escape;
For, though before his face I speak the words,
Your brother Richard mark'd him for the grave: 40
And wheresoe'er he is, he's surely dead.

[*Clifford groans, and dies.*]

Edw. Whose soul is that which takes her heavy leave?

Rich. A deadly groan, like life and death's departing.

Edw. See who it is: and, now the battle's ended,
If friend or foe, let him be gently used. 45

Rich. Revoke that doom of mercy, for 'tis Clifford;
Who not contented that he lopp'd the branch
In hewing Rutland when his leaves put forth,
But set his murdering knife unto the root
From whence that tender spray did sweetly spring, 50

31 *Alarum and retreat.*] Ff. Drums.
Capell.

Enter...] Enter Edward, Warwicke,
Richard, and Soldiers, Montague, &
Clarence. Ff.

39 *words*] (Qq) F₁. *word* F₂F₃F₄.

41 [*Clifford groans, and dies.*] Steevens,
from (Qq). Clifford grones. Ff.

42—45 *Edw. Whose...leave?* Rich. *A
deadly...departing.* Edw. *See who
it is; and now...used.*] Arranged as

in (Qq) Capell. Rich. *Whose...it is.*
Ed. *And now...used.* Ff.

42 *her*] F₃F₄. *hir* F₁F₂.

43 *life and death's*] *life in death* Han-
mer. *life and breath's* Capell conj.
life and breath Lettsom conj.

45 [*Cl. dies.* Collier MS.

49 *But set his*] *Set his fell* Hanmer.
Yet set his Lettsom conj.
murdering] *murd'ring* Johnson.
murth'ring Ff.

I mean our princely father, Duke of York.

War. From off the gates of York fetch down the head,

Your father's head, which Clifford placed there;

Instead whereof let this supply the room:

Measure for measure must be answered. 55

Edw. Bring forth that fatal screech-owl to our house,
That nothing sung but death to us and ours:

Now death shall stop his dismal threatening sound,

And his ill-boding tongue no more shall speak.

War. I think his understanding is bereft. 60

Speak, Clifford, dost thou know who speaks to thee?

Dark cloudy death o'er shades his beams of life,

And he nor sees, nor hears us what we say.

Rich. O, would he did! and so perhaps he doth: 65

'Tis but his policy to counterfeit,

Because he would avoid such bitter taunts

Which in the time of death he gave our father.

Geo. If so thou think'st, vex him with eager words.

Rich. Clifford, ask mercy and obtain no grace.

Edw. Clifford, repent in bootless penitence. 70

War. Clifford, devise excuses for thy faults.

Geo. While we devise fell tortures for thy faults.

Rich. Thou didst love York, and I am son to York.

Edw. Thou pitied'st Rutland; I will pity thee.

Geo. Where's Captain Margaret, to fence you now?

War. They mock thee, Clifford: swear as thou wast
wont. 76

54 *this*] *his* (Qq) F₄.

59 [Attendants bring the Body forward.

Capell.

60 *his*] *is* F₁.

66 *such*] *those* Dyce conj.

67 *Which*] Ff. *As* Pope, from (Qq).

68 *If...words.*] One line in Pope. Two in Ff.

69 [Pull him to and fro. Collier MS.

72 *for*] of Rowe (ed. 2).

76 *They...wont.*] One line in (Qq) Pope.

Two in Ff.

Rich. What, not an oath? nay, then the world goes hard,

When Clifford cannot spare his friends an oath.
I know by that he's dead; and, by my soul,
If this right hand would buy two hours' life, 80
That I in all despite might rail at him,
This hand should chop it off, and with the issuing blood
Stifle the villain, whose unstanched thirst
York and young Rutland could not satisfy.

War. Ay, but he's dead: off with the traitor's head,
And rear it in the place your father's stands. 88
And now to London with triumphant march,
There to be crowned England's royal king:
From whence shall Warwick cut the sea to France,
And ask the Lady Bona for thy queen: 90
So shalt thou sinew both these lands together;
And, having France thy friend, thou shalt not dread
The scatter'd foe that hopes to rise again;
For though they cannot greatly sting to hurt,
Yet look to have them buzz to offend thine ears. 95
First will I see the coronation;
And then to Brittany I'll cross the sea,
To effect this marriage, so it please my lord.

Edw. Even as thou wilt, sweet Warwick, let it be;
For in thy shoulder do I build my seat, 100
And never will I undertake the thing
Wherein thy counsel and consent is wanting.

77 *then*] om. F₃F₄.

80 *If...hours'*] *Would this right hand buy but an hour's* Capell, from (Qq).
two] F₁. *but two* F₂F₃F₄.

82 *This hand should*] *I'd* Capell, from (Qq).

with] om. Vaughan conj.

84 *Rutland*] *Rutland's* Vaughan conj.

85 *off*] *Of* F₁.

86 *stands*] F₁F₄. *stand* F₂F₃.

90 *Bona*] *Boua* F₂.

91 *sinew*] F₄. *sinow* F₁F₂F₃.

92 *shalt*] *need'st* Capell conj., from (Qq).

96 *the*] *thy* Capell conj.

100 *in*] F₁. *on* F₂F₃F₄.

Richard, I will create thee Duke of Gloucester,
 And George, of Clarence: Warwick, as ourself,
 Shall do and undo as him pleaseth best. 106

Rich. Let me be Duke of Clarence, George of Gloucester;

For Gloucester's dukedom is too ominous.

War. Tut, that's a foolish observation:

Richard, be Duke of Gloucester. Now to London,
 To see these honours in possession. [*Exeunt.* 110

ACT III.

SCENE I. *A forest in the north of England.*

Enter two Keepers, with cross-bows in their hands.

First Keep. Under this thick-grown brake we'll
 shroud ourselves;

For through this laund anon the deer will come;
 And in this covert will we make our stand,
 Culling the principal of all the deer.

Sec. Keep. I'll stay above the hill, so both may shoot.

First Keep. That cannot be; the noise of thy cross-
 bow 6

Will scare the herd, and so my shoot is lost.

106 [*Aside to Warwick. Anon. conj.*
 ACT III. SCENE I.] Rowe. om. Ff.
 A forest...] Hanmer. A Wood in
 Lancashire. Theobald.
 Enter two Keepers.....] Malone.
 Enter two Keepers with bow and
 arrows. (Qq). Enter Sinklo, and
 Humfrey... Ff. See note (iv).
 1 First Keep.] Malone. Sink. Ff (and

throughout the scene).
thick-grown] Pope. *thicke growne*
 Ff.
 2 *laund]* Ff. *lawn* Capell.
 3 *make] take* Capell conj.
 5 *Sec. Keep.]* Malone. Hum. Ff (and
 throughout the scene).
 7 *scare]* F₃F₄. *scarre* F₁F₂.

Here stand we both, and aim we at the best :
 And, for the time shall not seem tedious,
 I'll tell thee what befel me on a day 10
 In this self-place where now we mean to stand.

Sec. Keep. Here comes a man ; let's stay till he be
 past.

Enter KING HENRY, disguised, with a prayer-book.

K. Hen. From Scotland am I stol'n, even of pure love,
 To greet mine own land with my wishful sight.
 No, Harry, Harry, 'tis no land of thine ; 15
 Thy place is fill'd, thy sceptre wrung from thee,
 Thy balm wash'd off wherewith thou wast anointed :
 No bending knee will call thee Cæsar now,
 No humble suitors press to speak for right,
 No, not a man comes for redress of thee ; 20
 For how can I help them, and not myself?

First Keep. Ay, here's a deer whose skin's a keeper's
 fee :

This is the quondam king ; let's seize upon him.

K. Hen. Let me embrace thee, sour adversity,
 For wise men say it is the wisest course. 25

Sec. Keep. Why linger we ? let us lay hands upon
 him.

First Keep. Forbear awhile ; we'll hear a little more.

K. Hen. My queen and son are gone to France for
 aid ;

12 (stand backe) Collier MS.

13 Enter...] Malone. Enter the King
 with a Prayer booke. Ff. Collier
 MS. adds 'disguised as a Church-
 man'. Enter King Henrie disguise.
 (Qq) Capell.

14 *To greet...sight.] and thus disguis'd*
to greet my native land. (Qq) Rann.

17 *wast*] F₃F₄. *was* F₁F₂.

19 *press*] F₄. *presse* F₃. *press* F₁F₂.

20 *of thee*] F₁F₂F₃. *to thee* F₄.

24 *thee, sour adversity*] Singer, ed. 2
 (Dyce conj.). *the sower Adversaries*
 Ff. *these sour adversities* Pope. *these*
sour adversaries Clarke's Concord-
 ance. *the sour adversities* Delius.

And, as I hear, the great commanding Warwick
 Is thither gone, to crave the French king's sister 30
 To wife for Edward: if this news be true,
 Poor queen and son, your labour is but lost;
 For Warwick is a subtle orator,
 And Lewis a prince soon won with moving words.
 By this account then Margaret may win him; 35
 For she's a woman to be pitied much:
 Her sighs will make a battery in his breast;
 Her tears will pierce into a marble heart;
 The tiger will be mild whiles she doth mourn;
 And Nero will be tainted with remorse, 40
 To hear and see her plaints, her brinish tears.
 Ay, but she's come to beg, Warwick, to give;
 She, on his left side, craving aid for Henry,
 He, on his right, asking a wife for Edward.
 She weeps, and says her Henry is deposed; 45
 He smiles, and says his Edward is install'd;
 That she, poor wretch, for grief can speak no more;
 Whiles Warwick tells his title, smooths the wrong,
 Inferreth arguments of mighty strength,
 And in conclusion wins the king from her, 50
 With promise of his sister, and what else,
 To strengthen and support King Edward's place.
 O Margaret, thus 'twill be; and thou, poor soul,
 Art then forsaken, as thou went'st forlorn!

Sec. Keep. Say, what art thou that talk'st of kings
 and queens? 55

29 *great commanding*] *great-command-*
ing S. Walker conj.

39 *whiles*] *while* Pope.

40 *And Nero will*] *And Nero would*
 Pope. *A Nero will* Steevens conj.

48 *Whiles*] *While* Pope.
title] *tale* Grey conj.

51 *what else*] *ought else* Collier MS.

53 *O Margaret*] *Margaret* Malone.

54 (forward) Collier MS.

55 *thou that talk'st*] Rowe. *thou that*
talkes (Qq). *thou talk'st* Ff. *thou,*
talkest Collier.

K. Hen. More than I seem, and less than I was born
to :

A man at least, for less I should not be ;
And men may talk of kings, and why not I ?

Sec. Keep. Ay, but thou talk'st as if thou wert a
king.

K. Hen. Why, so I am, in mind ; and that's enough.

Sec. Keep. But, if thou be a king, where is thy
crown ? 61

K. Hen. My crown is in my heart, not on my head ;
Not deck'd with diamonds and Indian stones,
Nor to be seen : my crown is call'd content :
A crown it is that seldom kings enjoy. 65

Sec. Keep. Well, if you be a king crown'd with
content,

Your crown content and you must be contented
To go along with us ; for, as we think,
You are the king King Edward hath deposed ;
And we his subjects sworn in all allegiance 70
Will apprehend you as his enemy.

K. Hen. But did you never swear, and break an
oath ?

Sec. Keep. No, never such an oath ; nor will not now.

K. Hen. Where did you dwell when I was King of
England ?

Sec. Keep. Here in this country, where we now
remain. 75

K. Hen. I was anointed king at nine months old ;
My father and my grandfather were kings,
And you were sworn true subjects unto me :

60 *and that's enough*] *though not in shew*
(Qq) Rann.

63 *Indian*] *India* F₄.

64 *Nor*] *Not* F₄.

72 *oath*] Rowe (ed. 2). *Oath*. Ff.

73 *nor*] *and* Pope.

74 *King*] F₄. *K.* F₁F₂F₃.

And tell me, then, have you not broke your oaths?

First Keep. No; 80

For we were subjects but while you were king.

K. Hen. Why, am I dead? do I not breathe a man?

Ah, simple men, you know not what you swear!

Look, as I blow this feather from my face,

And as the air blows it to me again, 85

Obeying with my wind when I do blow,

And yielding to another when it blows,

Commanded always by the greater gust;

Such is the lightness of you common men.

But do not break your oaths; for of that sin 90

My mild entreaty shall not make you guilty.

Go where you will, the king shall be commanded;

And be you kings, command, and I'll obey.

First Keep. We are true subjects to the king, King Edward.

K. Hen. So would you be again to Henry, 95

If he were seated as King Edward is.

First Keep. We charge you, in God's name, and the king's,

To go with us unto the officers.

K. Hen. In God's name, lead; your king's name be obey'd:

And what God will, that let your king perform; 100

And what he will, I humbly yield unto. [*Exeunt.*]

80, 81 *No*; *For we...king.*] As in Steevens (1793). One line in Ff. *No, we...king.* Pope.

81 *king*] *a King* F₄.

82 *a man*] *amain* Vaughan conj.

83 *swear*] *sware* Delius conj.

90 *oaths*] *Oathes* F₁. *Oathe* F₂. *Oath* F₃F₄.

94 *We...Edward.*] One line in Pope. Two, the first ending *the king*, in Ff.

97 *you*] *you now* or *you then* Anon. conj.

and the king's] *and in the king's* Rowe.

100 *that*] *then* Reed (1803).

www.libtool.com.cn
SCENE II. London. The palace.

Enter KING EDWARD, GLOUCESTER, CLARENCE, and LADY GREY.

K. Edw. Brother of Gloucester, at Saint Alban's field
This lady's husband, Sir Richard Grey, was slain,
His lands then seized on by the conqueror:
Her suit is now to repossess those lands;
Which we in justice cannot well deny, 5
Because in quarrel of the house of York
The worthy gentleman did lose his life.

Glou. Your highness shall do well to grant her suit;
It were dishonour to deny it her.

K. Edw. It were no less; but yet I'll make a pause.

Glou. [*Aside to Clar.*] Yea, is it so? 11
I see the lady hath a thing to grant,
Before the king will grant her humble suit.

Clar. [*Aside to Glou.*] He knows the game: how true
he keeps the wind!

Glou. [*Aside to Clar.*] Silence! 15

K. Edw. Widow, we will consider of your suit;
And come some other time to know our mind.

L. Grey. Right gracious lord, I cannot brook delay:
May it please your highness to resolve me now;
And what your pleasure is, shall satisfy me. 20

| | |
|--|--|
| SCENE II.] Pope. | <i>Grey]</i> Ff. <i>Gray</i> (Qq) Rowe. |
| London. The palace.] The Palace. | 3 <i>lands</i>] (Qq) Capell. <i>land</i> Ff. |
| Theobald. The King's Palace in | 11, 15, 25, 28 [<i>Aside to Clar.</i>] Capell. |
| London. Hanmer. | <i>Aside.</i> Johnson. |
| Lady Grey.] Capell. Lady Gray. | 14, 24, 27 [<i>Aside to Glou.</i>] Capell. |
| (Qq) Ff. Collier MS. adds 'crowned | <i>Aside.</i> Johnson. |
| in state'. | 18 L. Grey.] Wid. Ff (and throughout |
| 2 <i>Richard</i>] (Qq) Ff. <i>John</i> Pope (from | the scene). |
| Hall). | |

Glou. [*Aside to Clar.*] Ay, widow? then I'll warrant
you all your lands,
An if what pleases him shall pleasure you.

Fight closer, or, good faith, you'll catch a blow.

Clar. [*Aside to Glou.*] I fear her not, unless she chance
to fall.

Glou. [*Aside to Clar.*] God forbid that! for he'll take
vantages. 25

K. Edw. How many children hast thou, widow? tell
me.

Clar. [*Aside to Glou.*] I think he means to beg a child
of her.

Glou. [*Aside to Clar.*] Nay, whip me then: he'll rather
give her two.

L. Grey. Three, my most gracious lord.

Glou. [*Aside to Clar.*] You shall have four, if you'll be
ruled by him. 30

K. Edw. 'Twere pity they should lose their father's
lands.

L. Grey. Be pitiful, dread lord, and grant it then.

K. Edw. Lords, give us leave: I'll try this widow's
wit.

Glou. [*Aside to Clar.*] Ay, good leave have you; for
you will have leave,
Till youth take leave and leave you to the crutch. 35

[*Glou. and Clar. retire.*]

K. Edw. Now tell me, madam, do you love your
children?

21, 30, 34, 57 [*Aside to Clar.*] Edd.

Aside. Johnson and Capell.

21 *all*] om. Cartwright conj.

22 *An if*] Theobald. *And if* Ff.

pleasure you] F₁. *please you* F₂, F₃, F₄.

please you too Collier MS.

25 *that*] om. F₄.

28 *whip me then*] (Qq) Pope. *then whip*

me Ff.

31 *lands*] (Qq) Ff. *land* Capell.

32 *it then*] Ff. *it them* (Qq). *'em then*
Hanmer.

35 [*Glou. and Clar. retire.*] G. and C. retire
to the other side. Johnson. om. Ff.

36 *children ?*] *children.* F₄.

(To her alone) Collier MS.

- L. Grey.* Ay, full as dearly as I love myself.
- K. Edw.* And would you not do much to do them good?
www.libtool.com.cn
- L. Grey.* To do them good, I would sustain some harm.
- K. Edw.* Then get your husband's lands, to do them good. 40
- L. Grey.* Therefore I came unto your majesty.
- K. Edw.* I'll tell you how these lands are to be got.
- L. Grey.* So shall you bind me to your highness' service.
- K. Edw.* What service wilt thou do me, if I give them? 44
- L. Grey.* What you command, that rests in me to do.
- K. Edw.* But you will take exceptions to my boon.
- L. Grey.* No, gracious lord, except I cannot do it.
- K. Edw.* Ay, but thou canst do what I mean to ask.
- L. Grey.* Why, then I will do what your grace commands.
- Glou.* [*Aside to Clar.*] He plies her hard; and much rain wears the marble. 50
- Clar.* [*Aside to Glou.*] As red as fire! nay, then her wax must melt.
- L. Grey.* Why stops my lord? shall I not hear my task?
- K. Edw.* An easy task; 'tis but to love a king.
- L. Grey.* That's soon perform'd, because I am a subject.
- K. Edw.* Why, then, thy husband's lands I freely give thee. 55

38 *good f*] *good*. F₄.46 *boon*.] *boon*? Theobald.50, 82, 107 [*Aside to Clar.*] Dyce. *Aside*.
Capell.51, 83, 108 [*Aside to Glou.*] Dyce. *Aside*.
Capell.51 *must*] F₁F₂. *will* F₃F₄.

L. Grey. I take my leave with many thousand thanks.

Glou. [*Aside to Clar.*] The match is made; she seals
it with a curtsy.

K. Edw. But stay thee, 'tis the fruits of love I mean.

L. Grey. The fruits of love I mean, my loving liege.

K. Edw. Ay, but, I fear me, in another sense. 60

What love, think'st thou, I sue so much to get?

L. Grey. My love till death, my humble thanks, my
prayers;

That love which virtue begs and virtue grants.

K. Edw. No, by my troth, I did not mean such love.

L. Grey. Why, then you mean not as I thought you
did. 65

K. Edw. But now you partly may perceive my mind.

L. Grey. My mind will never grant what I perceive
Your highness aims at, if I aim aright.

K. Edw. To tell thee plain, I aim to lie with thee.

L. Grey. To tell you plain, I had rather lie in prison.

K. Edw. Why, then thou shalt not have thy hus-
band's lands. 71

L. Grey. Why, then mine honesty shall be my dower;
For by that loss I will not purchase them.

K. Edw. Therein thou wrong'st thy children mightily.

L. Grey. Herein your highness wrongs both them and
me. 75

But, mighty lord, this merry inclination

Accords not with the sadness of my suit:

Please you dismiss me, either with 'ay' or 'no.'

K. Edw. Ay, if thou wilt say 'ay' to my request;

No, if thou dost say 'no' to my demand. 80

56 *thanks*] F₂F₄. *thanks* F₁. *thanks*
F₂.

57 *curt'sy*] *Cursis* F₁. *Curtis* F₂F₃F₄.

68 *aims*] om. F₄.

70 *I had*] *I'd* Pope.

74 *Therein*] *Ff.* *Herein* (Qq) Capell.

78 *either*] or Pope.

L. Grey. Then, no, my lord. My suit is at an end.

Glou. [*Aside to Clar.*] The widow likes him not, she
knits her brows.

Clar. [*Aside to Glou.*] He is the bluntest wooer in
Christendom.

K. Edw. [*Aside*] Her looks do argue her replete with
modesty;

Her words do show her wit incomparable; 85

All her perfections challenge sovereignty:

One way or other, she is for a king;

And she shall be my love, or else my queen.—

Say that King Edward take thee for his queen?

L. Grey. 'Tis better said than done, my gracious lord:
I am a subject fit to jest withal, 91

But far unfit to be a sovereign.

K. Edw. Sweet widow, by my state I swear to thee,
I speak no more than what my soul intends;

And that is, to enjoy thee for my love. 95

L. Grey. And that is more than I will yield unto:

I know I am too mean to be your queen,

And yet too good to be your concubine.

K. Edw. You cavil, widow: I did mean, my queen.

L. Grey. 'Twill grieve your grace my sons should call
you father. 100

K. Edw. No more than when my daughters call thee
mother.

Thou art a widow, and thou hast some children;

And, by God's mother, I, being but a bachelor,

Have other some: why, 'tis a happy thing

82 *she*] *shes* F₂.

83 *the*] *thes* F₂.

84—88 [*Aside*] Johnson.

84, 85 *do*] *doth* F₁.

97 *mean*] *bad* Vaughan conj.

100 *should*] *shall* F₄.

101 *No...mother.*] One line in Pope.

Two lines, the first ending
daughters, in Fl.

my] *thy* Reed (1803).

104 *other some*] F₄. *other-some* F₁F₂F₃.

To be the father unto many sons. 105

Answer no more, for thou shalt be my queen.

Glou. [*Aside to Clar.*] The ghostly father now hath done his shrift.

Clar. [*Aside to Glou.*] When he was made a shriver, 'twas for shift.

K. Edw. Brothers, you muse what chat we two have had.

Glou. The widow likes it not, for she looks very sad.

K. Edw. You 'ld think it strange if I should marry her. 111

Clar. To whom, my lord?

K. Edw. Why, Clarence, to myself.

Glou. That would be ten days' wonder at the least.

Clar. That's a day longer than a wonder lasts.

Glou. By so much is the wonder in extremes. 115

K. Edw. Well, jest on, brothers: I can tell you both, Her suit is granted for her husband's lands.

Enter a Nobleman.

Nob. My gracious lord, Henry your foe is taken, And brought your prisoner to your palace gate.

K. Edw. See that he be convey'd unto the Tower: And go we, brothers, to the man that took him, 121 To question of his apprehension.

Widow, go you along. Lords, use her honourably.

[*Exeunt all but Gloucester.*]

Glou. Ay, Edward will use women honourably. Would he were wasted, marrow, bones and all, 125

108 'twas for shift] F₁F₂. 'twas for a shift F₃. it was for a shift F₄.

Capell. a prisoner Id. conj.

110 very sad] vexed Vaughan conj.

123 honourably] (Qq) F₂F₃F₄. honourable F₁.

very] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

[*Exeunt...*] *Exeunt.* Manet Richard. Ff.

(coming forward) Collier MS.

112 whom] (Qq) F₂F₃F₄. who F₁.

124 SCENE III. Pope.

119 your prisoner] Ff. as prisoner (Qq)

That from his loins no hopeful branch may spring,
 To cross me from the golden time I look for!
 And yet, between my soul's desire and me—
 The lustful Edward's title buried—
 Is Clarence, Henry, and his son young Edward, 130
 And all the unlook'd for issue of their bodies,
 To take their rooms, ere I can place myself:
 A cold premeditation for my purpose!
 Why, then, I do but dream on sovereignty;
 Like one that stands upon a promontory, 135
 And spies a far-off shore where he would tread,
 Wishing his foot were equal with his eye,
 And chides the sea that sunders him from thence,
 Saying, he'll lade it dry to have his way:
 So do I wish the crown, being so far off; 140
 And so I chide the means that keeps me from it;
 And so I say, I'll cut the causes off,
 Flattering me with impossibilities.
 My eye's too quick, my heart o'erweens too much,
 Unless my hand and strength could equal them. 145
 Well, say there is no kingdom then for Richard;
 What other pleasure can the world afford?
 I'll make my heaven in a lady's lap,
 And deck my body in gay ornaments,
 And witch sweet ladies with my words and looks. 150
 O miserable thought! and more unlikely
 Than to accomplish twenty golden crowns!
 Why, love forswore me in my mother's womb.
 And, for I should not deal in her soft laws,

139 *lade*] *lay* or *ladle* Keightley conj.

141 *keeps*] F₃F₄. *keeps* F₁F₂. *keep*
 Rowe (ed. 2).
me] om. F₄.

143 *Flattering...impossibilities*] *Flatt'r-*

ing my mind with things impossible
 Pope.

144 *eye's*] F₃F₄. *Eyes* F₁F₂.

150 *witch*] Capell. *'witch* Ff.

She did corrupt frail nature with some bribe, 155
 To shrink mine arm up like a wither'd shrub ;
 To make an envious mountain on my back,
 Where sits deformity to mock my body ;
 To shape my legs of an unequal size ;
 To disproportion me in every part, 160
 Like to a chaos, or an unlick'd bear-whelp
 That carries no impression like the dam.
 And am I then a man to be beloved ?
 O monstrous fault, to harbour such a thought !
 Then, since this earth affords no joy to me, 165
 But to command, to check, to o'erbear such
 As are of better person than myself,
 I'll make my heaven to dream upon the crown,
 And, whiles I live, to account this world but hell,
 Until my mis-shaped trunk that bears this head 170
 Be round impaled with a glorious crown.
 And yet I know not how to get the crown,
 For many lives stand between me and home :
 And I,—like one lost in a thorny wood,
 That rends the thorns and is rent with the thorns, 175
 Seeking a way and straying from the way ;
 Not knowing how to find the open air,
 But toiling desperately to find it out,—

156 *up like*] *like* F₄. *like to* Rowe.

shrub] *shrimpe* (Qq).

161 *an*] F₁F₂. om. F₃F₄.

163 *be*] om. F₄.

168 *make*] *mak't* Capell conj.

169, 182 *whiles*] *while* Pope.

169 *to*] om. Vaughan conj.

170 *Until my...head*] F₁F₂. *Untill this
...head* F₃F₄. *Until the.....head*
Pope. *Until the head of this mis-
shapen trunk* Thirlby conj. *Until
my mis-shap'd trunk bear'st, that*

this head (sic) Theobald conj. (with-
drawn). *Until the head this mis-
shap'd trunk doth bear* Hanmer.
*Until my head, that this mis-shap'd
trunk bears* Dyce, ed. 2 (Steevens
conj.). *Until...that bear, this head*
Bulloch conj. *Until this head, my
mis-shap'd trunk that bears* Kinnear
conj.

171 *Be round*] *Bear it* Vaughan conj.

172 *the crown*] *a crown* Johnson (1771).

175 *rends*] Pope. *rents* Ff.

Torment myself to catch the English crown :
 And from that torment I will free myself, 180
 Or hew my way out with a bloody axe.
 Why, I can smile, and murder whiles I smile,
 And cry 'Content' to that which grieves my heart,
 And wet my cheeks with artificial tears,
 And frame my face to all occasions. 185
 I'll drown more sailors than the mermaid shall ;
 I'll slay more gazers than the basilisk ;
 I'll play the orator as well as Nestor,
 Deceive more silyly than Ulysses could,
 And, like a Sinon, take another Troy. 190
 I can add colours to the chameleon,
 Change shapes with Proteus for advantages,
 And set the murderous Machiavel to school.
 Can I do this, and cannot get a crown ?
 Tut, were it farther off, I'll pluck it down. [*Exit.* 195

SCENE III. *France. The KING's palace.*

Flourish. Enter LEWIS the French King, his sister BONA, his Admiral, called BOURBON: PRINCE EDWARD, QUEEN MARGARET, and the EARL OF OXFORD. LEWIS sits, and riseth up again.

K. Lew. Fair Queen of England, worthy Margaret,

182 *murder*] Johnson. *murther* Ff.
 186 *mermaid shall*] *mermaids all* Anon.
 conj. *mermaids shall* Vaughan
 conj.
 191 *to] ev'n* to Pope.
 193 *the murderous Machiavel] th' aspir-*
ing Catiline (Qq) Warburton.
murderous] *murdr'ous* Johnson.
murtherous Ff.
Machiavel] Pope. *Machevill* F₁F₂
 F₃. *Matchevil* F₄.
 195 *farther*] *further* Steevens (1778).
I'll] Ile F₁F₂. *I'le* F₃F₄. *I'd*

Collier MS.
 SCENE III.] Capell. SCENE II. Rowa.
 SCENE IV. Pope.
 France.] Pope.
 The King's palace.] A Room in some
 Palace. Capell.
 Flourish. Enter...] Ff (French om.
 F₄). Flourish. Enter Lewis the
 French King, and Lady Bona, at-
 tended: King takes his State. Then,
 Enter Queen Margaret, Prince Ed-
 ward her Son, and the Earl of Ox-
 ford. Capell.

Sit down with us: it ill befits thy state
 And birth, that thou shouldst stand while Lewis doth
 sit.

Q. Mar. No, mighty King of France: now Margaret
 Must strike her sail and learn a while to serve 5
 Where kings command. I was, I must confess,
 Great Albion's queen in former golden days:
 But now mischance hath trod my title down,
 And with dishonour laid me on the ground;
 Where I must take like seat unto my fortune, 10
 And to my humble seat conform myself.

K. Lew. Why, say, fair queen, whence springs this
 deep despair?

Q. Mar. From such a cause as fills mine eyes with
 tears,
 And stops my tongue, while heart is drown'd in cares.

K. Lew. Whate'er it be, be thou still like thyself, 15
 And sit thee by our side: [*Seats her by him*] yield not thy
 neck

To fortune's yoke, but let thy dauntless mind
 Still ride in triumph over all mischance.
 Be plain, Queen Margaret, and tell thy grief;
 It shall be eased, if France can yield relief. 20

Q. Mar. Those gracious words revive my drooping
 thoughts,
 And give my tongue-tied sorrows leave to speak.
 Now, therefore, be it known to noble Lewis,

3 *while...doth sit*] *whiles...sits* Rowe.
while...sits Pope.

5 *a while*] Ff. *awhile* Singer.

7 *former*] om. F₄.

11 *seat*] *state* Dyce, ed. 2 (S. Walker
 conj.).

14 *while*] *whose* Vaughan conj.

heart is] *my heart's* Rowe (ed. 2).

16—18 *And...mischance.*] As in Theobald. Four lines in Ff, ending *side*
...yoake...triumph...mischance. Four
 in Pope, ending *side...neck...mind...mischance.*

21 *Those...thoughts,*] One line in Rowe.
 Two in Ff.

That Henry, sole possessor of my love,
 Is of a king become a banish'd man, 25
 And forced to live in Scotland a forlorn;
 While proud ambitious Edward Duke of York
 Usurps the regal title, and the seat
 Of England's true-anointed lawful king.
 This is the cause that I, poor Margaret, 30
 With this my son, Prince Edward, Henry's heir,
 Am come to crave thy just and lawful aid;
 And if thou fail us, all our hope is done:
 Scotland hath will to help, but cannot help;
 Our people and our peers are both misled, 35
 Our treasure seized, our soldiers put to flight,
 And, as thou seest, ourselves in heavy plight.

K. Lew. Renowned queen, with patience calm the
 storm,

While we bethink a means to break it off.

Q. Mar. The more we stay, the stronger grows our
 foe. 40

K. Lew. The more I stay, the more I'll succour thee.

Q. Mar. O, but impatience waiteth on true sorrow.
 And see where comes the breeder of my sorrow!

Enter WARWICK.

K. Lew. What's he approacheth boldly to our pre-
 sence?

Q. Mar. Our Earl of Warwick, Edward's greatest
 friend. 45

26 *a forlorn*] *all forlorn* Collier MS.

29 *true-anointed*] Theobald. *true a-*
noynted Ff.

33 *And if*] *An if* S. Walker conj.

38 *Renowned...storm,*] One line in Rowe.
 Two in Ff.

42 *waiteth.....sorrow*] *waiting ruses to-*

morrow Hanmer (Warburton).

44 SCENE V. Pope.

Enter Warwick.] Ff. *Enter Warwick,*
attended. Capell.

45 *Our*] *The* Collier MS. *Proud* Vaugh-
 an conj.

K. Lew. Welcome, brave Warwick! What brings thee
to France? [*He descends. She ariseth.*]

Q. Mar. Ay, now begins a second storm to rise;
For this is he that moves both wind and tide.

War. From worthy Edward, king of Albion,
My lord and sovereign, and thy vowed friend, 50
I come, in kindness and unfeigned love,
First, to do greetings to thy royal person;
And then to crave a league of amity;
And lastly, to confirm that amity
With nuptial knot, if thou vouchsafe to grant 55
That virtuous Lady Bona, thy fair sister,
To England's king in lawful marriage.

Q. Mar. [*Aside*] If that go forward, Henry's hope is
done.

War. [*To Bona*] And, gracious madam, in our king's
behalf,
I am commanded, with your leave and favour, 60
Humbly to kiss your hand, and with my tongue
To tell the passion of my sovereign's heart;
Where fame, late entering at his heedful ears,
Hath placed thy beauty's image and thy virtue.

Q. Mar. King Lewis and Lady Bona, hear me speak,
Before you answer Warwick. His demand 66
Springs not from Edward's well-meant honest love,
But from deceit bred by necessity;
For how can tyrants safely govern home,
Unless abroad they purchase great alliance? 70

46 *Warwick!* *Warwick!* [coming from
his State.] Capell.
brings] *beings* F₂.

[*He descends...*] Ff. Mar. rises.
Capell.

58 [*Aside*] Marked first by Capell.

59 [*To Bona*] Speaking to Bona. Ff.
And.....behalf,] One line in Pope.
Two in Ff.

61 *your*] *you* F₂.

64 *beauty's*] *beautsous* Lettsom conj.
virtue] *virtue's* Hanmer.

To prove him tyrant this reason may suffice,
 That Henry liveth still; but were he dead,
 Yet here Prince Edward stands, King Henry's son.
 Look, therefore, Lewis, that by this league and marriage
 Thou draw not on thy danger and dishonour; 75
 For though usurpers sway the rule a while,
 Yet heavens are just, and time suppresseth wrongs.

War. Injurious Margaret!

Prince. And why not queen?

War. Because thy father Henry did usurp;
 And thou no more art prince than she is queen. 80

Oxf. Then Warwick disannuls great John of Gaunt,
 Which did subdue the greatest part of Spain;
 And, after John of Gaunt, Henry the Fourth,
 Whose wisdom was a mirror to the wisest;
 And, after that wise prince, Henry the Fifth, 85
 Who by his prowess conquered all France:
 From these our Henry lineally descends.

War. Oxford, how haps it, in this smooth discourse,
 You told not how Henry the Sixth hath lost
 All that which Henry the Fifth had gotten? 90
 Methinks these peers of France should smile at that.
 But for the rest, you tell a pedigree
 Of threescore and two years; a silly time
 To make prescription for a kingdom's worth.

Oxf. Why, Warwick, canst thou speak against thy
 liege, 95

Whom thou obeyed'st thirty and six years,
 And not bewray thy treason with a blush?

War. Can Oxford, that did ever fence the right,
 Now buckler falsehood with a pedigree?

74 *that*] om. Hanmer.

75 *thy*] *thee* Johnson.

76 *a while*] Ff. *awhile* Singer.

78 *Prince.*] Edw. Ff.

90 *gotten* ?] Theobald. *gotten*: Ff.

95 *thy*] *my* F.

For shame! leave Henry, and call Edward king. 100

Oxf. Call him my king by whose injurious doom
My elder brother, the Lord Aubrey Vere,
Was done to death? and more than so, my father,
Even in the downfall of his mellow'd years,
When nature brought him to the door of death? 105
No, Warwick, no; while life upholds this arm,
This arm upholds the house of Lancaster.

War. And I the house of York.

K. Lew. Queen Margaret, Prince Edward, and Oxford,
Vouchsafe, at our request, to stand aside, 110
While I use further conference with Warwick.

[*They stand aloof.*]

Q. Mar. Heavens grant that Warwick's words bewitch
him not!

K. Lew. Now, Warwick, tell me, even upon thy con-
science,

Is Edward your true king? for I were loath
To link with him that were not lawful chosen. 115

War. Thereon I pawn my credit and mine honour.

K. Lew. But is he gracious in the people's eye?

War. The more that Henry was unfortunate.

K. Lew. Then further, all dissembling set aside,
Tell me for truth the measure of his love 120
Unto our sister Bona.

War. Such it seems

As may beseem a monarch like himself.
Myself have often heard him say and swear
That this his love was an eternal plant,

105 *death?*] *Death*; F₄.

109 *Oxford*] *Lord Oxford* Hanmer.

111 *further*] *farther* F₄.

[*They stand aloof.*] Ff. Retiring
with *Oxf.* and the Prince. Capell
(after line 112).

112 (*aside*) Collier MS.

115 *were not lawful chosen*] *is not law-
ful heir* (Qq) Rann.

117 *eye*] F₁F₂. *eyes* F₃F₄.

124 *an eternal*] (Qq) Warburton. *an
externall* F₁F₂. *an external* F₃F₄.
a perennial Hanmer.

Whereof the root was fix'd in virtue's ground, 125
 The leaves and fruit maintain'd with beauty's sun,
 Exempt from envy, but not from disdain,
 Unless the Lady Bona quit his pain.

K. Lew. Now, sister, let us hear your firm resolve.

Bona. Your grant, or your denial, shall be mine: 130
 [To War.] Yet I confess that often ere this day,
 When I have heard your king's desert recounted,
 Mine ear hath tempted judgement to desire.

K. Lew. Then, Warwick, thus: our sister shall be
 Edward's;

And now forthwith shall articles be drawn 135
 Touching the jointure that your king must make,
 Which with her dowry shall be counterpoised.
 Draw near, Queen Margaret, and be a witness
 That Bona shall be wife to the English king.

Prince. To Edward, but not to the English king. 140

Q. Mar. Deceitful Warwick! it was thy device
 By this alliance to make void my suit:
 Before thy coming Lewis was Henry's friend.

K. Lew. And still is friend to him and Margaret: 145
 But if your title to the crown be weak,
 As may appear by Edward's good success,
 Then 'tis but reason that I be released
 From giving aid which late I promised.
 Yet shall you have all kindness at my hand
 That your estate requires and mine can yield. 150

War. Henry now lives in Scotland at his ease,
 Where having nothing, nothing can he lose.
 And as for you yourself, our quondam queen,

130 *denial*] *denyall* F₁. *deny* F₂F₃F₄.

131 [To War.] Speaks to War. Ff.

133 *tempted*] *temper'd* Vaughan conj.

134 *Then... Edward's* ;] One line in

Pope. Two in Ff.

thus] F₁. *this* F₂F₃F₄.

140 Prince.] Pr. Edw. Ff.

You have a father able to maintain you ;
And better 'twere you troubled him than France. 155

Q. Mar. Peace, impudent and shameless Warwick,
peace,

Proud setter up and puller down of kings !
I will not hence, till, with my talk and tears,
Both full of truth, I make King Lewis behold
Thy sly conveyance, and thy lord's false love ; 160
For both of you are birds of selfsame feather.

[*Post blows a horn within.*]

K. Lew. Warwick, this is some post to us or thee.

Enter a Post.

Post. [*To War.*] My lord ambassador, these letters are
for you,

Sent from your brother, Marquess Montague :

[*To Lewis*] These from our king unto your majesty : 165

[*To Margaret*] And, madam, these for you ; from whom I
know not. [*They all read their letters.*]

Oxf. I like it well that our fair queen and mistress
Smiles at her news, while Warwick frowns at his.

Prince. Nay, mark how Lewis stamps, as he were
nettled :

I hope all's for the best. 170

K. Lew. Warwick, what are thy news ? and yours, fair
queen ?

- | | | |
|-----|--|---|
| 154 | <i>able</i>] <i>liable</i> Vaughan conj. | in Ff. |
| 155 | ' <i>twere</i>] <i>it were</i> Rowe. | [<i>To War.</i>] Speaks to Warwick. Ff. |
| 166 | <i>Warwick, peace</i>] F ₂ F ₃ F ₄ . <i>Warwick,</i> F ₁ . | 166 <i>And...not.</i>] One line in Theobald. Two in Ff. |
| 157 | <i>Proud.....kings</i> !] om. Cartwright conj. | 169 <i>Prince.</i>] Prince Ed. F ₁ . Prince Edw. F ₂ . Prin. Edw. F ₃ F ₄ . |
| 161 | [<i>Post blows...</i>] <i>Post blowing...</i> Ff (after line 160). | 169, 170 <i>Nay...best.</i>] As verse in Rowe. Prose in Ff. |
| 163 | SCENE VI. Pope. <i>My...you,</i>] One line in Pope. Two | 171 <i>Warwick...queen?</i>] One line in Pope. Two in Ff. |

Q. Mar. Mine, such as fill my heart with unhop'd joys.

War. Mine, full of sorrow and heart's discontent.

K. Lew. What! has your king married the Lady Grey?
And now, to soothe your forgery and his, 175
Sends me a paper to persuade me patience?

Is this the alliance that he seeks with France?

Dare he presume to scorn us in this manner?

Q. Mar. I told your majesty as much before:
This proveth Edward's love and Warwick's honesty. 180

War. King Lewis, I here protest, in sight of heaven,
And by the hope I have of heavenly bliss,
That I am clear from this misdeed of Edward's,
No more my king, for he dishonours me,
But most himself, if he could see his shame. 185

Did I forget that by the house of York

My father came untimely to his death?

Did I let pass the abuse done to my niece?

Did I impale him with the regal crown?

Did I put Henry from his native right? 190

And am I guerdon'd at the last with shame?

Shame on himself! for my desert is honour:

And to repair my honour lost for him,

I here renounce him and return to Henry.

My noble queen, let former grudges pass, 195

And henceforth I am thy true servitor:

I will revenge his wrong to Lady Bona,

And replant Henry in his former state.

Q. Mar. Warwick, these words have turn'd my hate to
love;

And I forgive and quite forget old faults, 200

And joy that thou becomest King Henry's friend.

172 *fill*] *fills* F₄.

199 *Warwick...love;*] One line in Pope.

175 *soothe*] *sooth* Ff. *smooth* Rann

Two in Ff.

(Heath conj.).

War. So much his friend, ay, his unfeigned friend,
 That, if King Lewis vouchsafe to furnish us
 With some few bands of chosen soldiers,
 I'll undertake to land them on our coast, 205
 And force the tyrant from his seat by war.
 'Tis not his new-made bride shall succour him :
 And as for Clarence, as my letters tell me,
 He's very likely now to fall from him,
 For matching more for wanton lust than honour, 210
 Or than for strength and safety of our country.

Bona. Dear brother, how shall Bona be revenged
 But by thy help to this distressed queen ?

Q. Mar. Renowned prince, how shall poor Henry live,
 Unless thou rescue him from foul despair? 215

Bona. My quarrel and this English queen's are one.

War. And mine, fair Lady Bona, joins with yours.

K. Lew. And mine with hers, and thine, and Margaret's.
 Therefore at last I firmly am resolved
 You shall have aid. 220

Q. Mar. Let me give humble thanks for all at once.

K. Lew. Then, England's messenger, return in post,
 And tell false Edward, thy supposed king,
 That Lewis of France is sending over masquers,
 To revel it with him and his new bride : 225
 Thou seest what's past, go fear thy king withal.

Bona. Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower shortly,
 I'll wear the willow garland for his sake.

Q. Mar. Tell him, my mourning weeds are laid aside,
 And I am ready to put armour on. 230

War. Tell him from me that he hath done me wrong,
 And therefore I'll uncrown him ere't be long.
 There's thy reward : be gone. [Exit Post.

213 *thy help to] the help of Capell.*

228 *I'U] (Qq) Capell. I Ff.*

227 *hope] hopes F.*

K. Lew. But, Warwick,
 Thou and Oxford, with five thousand men,
 Shall cross the seas, and bid false Edward battle; 235
 And, as occasion serves, this noble queen
 And prince shall follow with a fresh supply.
 Yet, ere thou go, but answer me one doubt,
 What pledge have we of thy firm loyalty?

War. This shall assure my constant loyalty, 240
 That if our queen and this young prince agree,
 I'll join mine eldest daughter and my joy
 To him forthwith in holy wedlock bands.

Q. Mar. Yes, I agree, and thank you for your motion.
 Son Edward, she is fair and virtuous, 245
 Therefore delay not, give thy hand to Warwick;
 And, with thy hand, thy faith irrevocable,
 That only Warwick's daughter shall be thine.

Prince. Yes, I accept her, for she well deserves it;
 And here, to pledge my vow, I give my hand. 250

[*He gives his hand to Warwick.*]

K. Lew. Why stay we now? These soldiers shall be
 levied,

And thou, Lord Bourbon, our high admiral,
 Shalt waft them over with our royal fleet.
 I long till Edward fall by war's mischance,
 For mocking marriage with a dame of France. 255

[*Exeunt all but Warwick.*]

- | | | |
|----------|---|--------------------------|
| 233, 234 | <i>But, Warwick, Thou and... men]</i> <i>But Warwick, Thyself and... men</i> Theobald. <i>But Warwick, thou Thyself and...men</i> Hamer. <i>But, Warwick, thou And...men</i> Steevens (1793). <i>But, Warwick, thou And... warlike men</i> Collier MS. <i>But, Warwick, Thou and Lord...men</i> Keightley. <i>But, Warwick, thou And ...men of mine</i> Anon. conj. As an | Alexandrine. Anon. conj. |
| 235 | <i>Shall]</i> <i>Shalt</i> Vaughan conj. | |
| 242 | <i>mine eldest]</i> (Qq) Ff. <i>my younger</i> Theobald (from Holinshed). | |
| 249 | Prince.] Prin. Ed. F ₁ F ₃ F ₄ . Pri. Ed. F ₂ . | |
| 253 | <i>Shalt]</i> F ₂ F ₃ F ₄ . <i>Shall</i> F ₁ . | |
| 255 | [<i>Exeunt...</i>] <i>Exeunt.</i> Manet Warwick. Ff. | |

War. I came from Edward as ambassador,
 But I return his sworn and mortal foe :
 Matter of marriage was the charge he gave me,
 But dreadful war shall answer his demand.
 Had he none else to make a stale but me? 260
 Then none but I shall turn his jest to sorrow.
 I was the chief that raised him to the crown,
 And I'll be chief to bring him down again :
 Not that I pity Henry's misery,
 But seek revenge on Edward's mockery. [*Exit.* 265

ACT IV.

SCENE I. *London. The palace.*

Enter GLOUCESTER, CLARENCE, SOMERSET, and MONTAGUE.

Glou. Now tell me, brother Clarence, what think you
 Of this new marriage with the Lady Grey?
 Hath not our brother made a worthy choice?

Clar. Alas, you know, 'tis far from hence to France ;
 How could he stay till Warwick made return? 5

Som. My lords, forbear this talk ; here comes the king.

Glou. And his well-chosen bride.

Clar. I mind to tell him plainly what I think.

ACT IV. SCENE I.] Rowe. om. Ff.
 London. The palace.] London. A
 Room in the Palace. Capell. Eng-
 land. Pope. The Palace in England.
 Theobald.

Enter Gloucester.....] Enter Rich-
 ard... Ff.
 and Montague.] Mountague, and
 others. Capell.

Flourish. Enter KING EDWARD, attended; LADY GREY, as Queen;
 PEMBROKE, STAFFORD, HASTINGS, and others.

K. Edw. Now, brother of Clarence, how like you our
 choice,

That you stand pensive, as half malcontent? 10

Clar. As well as Lewis of France, or the Earl of
 Warwick,

Which are so weak of courage and in judgement
 That they'll take no offence at our abuse.

K. Edw. Suppose they take offence without a cause,
 They are but Lewis and Warwick: I am Edward, 15
 Your king and Warwick's, and must have my will.

Glou. And shall have your will, because our king:
 Yet hasty marriage seldom proveth well.

K. Edw. Yea, brother Richard, are you offended too?

Glou. Not I: 20

No, God forbid that I should wish them sever'd
 Whom God hath join'd together; ay, and 'twere pity
 To sunder them that yoke so well together.

K. Edw. Setting your scorns and your mislike aside,
 Tell me some reason why the Lady Grey 25

9 Flourish. Enter...] Flourish. Enter King Edward, Lady Grey, Pembroke, Stafford, Hastings: foure stand on one side, and foure on the other. Ff (Pembroke, F₂ Pembroke, F₃F₄), after line 6. attended Capell.

as Queen] Rowe.

and others] and divers others Capell.

Now.....choice,] One line in Pope, omitting *of*. Two in Ff.

11 *As..... Warwick,*] One line in Pope. Two in Ff.

13 *our*] *your* Capell conj.

17 *And shall*] *And you shall* Rowe. *Ay, and shall* Dyce, ed. 2 (S. Walker conj.). *Marry, and shall* S. Walker conj.

king:] King? F₄.

19 *Yea*] F₁. *Yes* F₂F₃F₄.

20—23 *Not...together.*] Arranged as in Capell. See note (v).

22 *Whom God.....together*] *God hath join'd* Vaughan conj., reading *Not I...pity* as two lines, the first ending *wish*.

Should not become my wife and England's queen.
 And you too, Somerset and Montague,
 Speak freely what you think.

Clar. Then this is mine opinion: that King Lewis
 Becomes your enemy, for mocking him 30
 About the marriage of the Lady Bona.

Glou. And Warwick, doing what you gave in charge,
 Is now dishonoured by this new marriage.

K. Edw. What if both Lewis and Warwick be appeased
 By such invention as I can devise? 35

Mont. Yet, to have join'd with France in such alliance
 Would more have strengthen'd this our commonwealth
 'Gainst foreign storms than any home-bred marriage.

Hast. Why, knows not Montague that of itself
 England is safe, if true within itself? 40

Mont. But the safer when 'tis back'd with France.

Hast. 'Tis better using France than trusting France:
 Let us be back'd with God and with the seas,
 Which He hath given for fence impregnable,
 And with their helps only defend ourselves; 45
 In them and in ourselves our safety lies.

Clar. For this one speech Lord Hastings well deserves
 To have the heir of the Lord Hungerford.

K. Edw. Ay, what of that? it was my will and grant;
 And for this once my will shall stand for law. 50

Glou. And yet methinks your grace hath not done
 well,
 To give the heir and daughter of Lord Scales

26 *queen.*] Hanmer. *Queens?* Ff.

29—31 *Then...Bona.*] Arranged as by
 Pope. As four lines in Ff, ending
opinion:.....Enemis,...Marriage.....
Bona.

29 *mine*] F₁F₂. *my* F₃F₄.

33 *new*] om. Anon. conj.

41 *But*] F₁. *Yes, but* F₂F₃F₄. *But then*
 S. Walker conj. *Ay, but* Keightley.
But yet Anon. conj. *But all* Vaughan
 conj.

safer] *safter* F₂.

42 *using*] *losing* Vaughan conj.

45 *only*] *alone* Pope.

Unto the brother of your loving bride ;
 She better would have fitted me or Clarence :
 But in your bride you bury brotherhood. 55

Clar. Or else you would not have bestow'd the heir
 Of the Lord Bonville on your new wife's son,
 And leave your brothers to go speed elsewhere.

K. Edw. Alas, poor Clarence ! is it for a wife
 That thou art malcontent ? I will provide thee. 60

Clar. In choosing for yourself, you show'd your judge-
 ment,

Which being shallow, you shall give me leave
 To play the broker in mine own behalf ;
 And to that end I shortly mind to leave you.

K. Edw. Leave me, or tarry, Edward will be king.
 And not be tied unto his brother's will. 66

Q. Eliz. My lords, before it pleased his majesty
 To raise my state to title of a queen,
 Do me but right, and you must all confess
 That I was not ignoble of descent ; 70
 And meaner than myself have had like fortune.
 But as this title honours me and mine,
 So your dislike, to whom I would be pleasing,
 Doth cloud my joys with danger and with sorrow.

K. Edw. My love, forbear to fawn upon their frowns :
 What danger or what sorrow can befall thee, 76
 So long as Edward is thy constant friend,
 And their true sovereign, whom they must obey ?
 Nay, whom they shall obey, and love thee too,
 Unless they seek for hatred at my hands ; 80
 Which if they do, yet will I keep thee safe,

57 *wife's*] Rowe. *Wives* Ff.

61 *In.....judgement,*] One line in Pope.
 Two in Ff.

63 *broker*] F₁F₂. *Brother* F₃F₄.

66 *brother's*] Rowe. *Brothers* Ff. *bro-*
thers' Anon. conj.

73, 74 *dislike...Doth*] Edd. *dislikes...*
Doth Ff. *dislikes...Do* Rowe.

And they shall feel the vengeance of my wrath.

Glou. I hear, yet say not much, but think the more.
[*Aside.*]

Enter a Post.

K. Edw. Now, messenger, what letters or what news
From France? 85

Post. My sovereign liege, no letters; and few words,
But such as I, without your special pardon,
Dare not relate.

K. Edw. Go to, we pardon thee: therefore, in brief,
Tell me their words as near as thou canst guess them.
What answer makes King Lewis unto our letters? 91

Post. At my depart, these were his very words:
'Go tell false Edward, thy supposed king,
That Lewis of France is sending over masquers
To revel it with him and his new bride.' 95

K. Edw. Is Lewis so brave? belike he thinks me Henry.
But what said Lady Bona to my marriage?

Post. These were her words, utter'd with mild disdain:
'Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower shortly,
I'll wear the willow garland for his sake.' 100

K. Edw. I blame not her, she could say little less;
She had the wrong. But what said Henry's queen?
For I have heard that she was there in place.

83 [*Aside.*] Johnson. om. Ff.

84 SCENE II. Pope.

Enter a Post.] Ff. *Enter Messenger.* Capell.

84, 85 *Now...France?*] As verse first by Capell. As prose in Ff.

84 *messenger*] *post* Collier conj.

86 *sovereign*] om. Capell, reading *From France...words* as one line.

89—91 *Go to...letters?*] Arranged as by Capell. As four lines in Ff, ending

thee:...words...them...Letters?

89 *to*] Pope. *too* Ff.

89, 90 *therefore, in brief, Tell me*] *Therefore, in briefs, tell me* F₁. *Therefore, in briefs, tell* F₂F₃F₄ (*brief* F₃F₄).
So tell Pope.

91 *unto*] *to* Pope.

93 *thy*] (Qq) Rowe. *the* Ff.

103 *For I have*] F₁. *For I* F₂. *For so* I F₃F₄.

Post. 'Tell him,' quoth she, 'my mourning weeds are done,

And I am ready to put armour on.' 105

K. Edw. Belike she minds to play the Amazon.
But what said Warwick to these injuries?

Post. He, more incensed against your majesty
Than all the rest, discharged me with these words:
'Tell him from me that he hath done me wrong, 110
And therefore I'll uncrown him ere 't be long.'

K. Edw. Ha! durst the traitor breathe out so proud
words?

Well, I will arm me, being thus forewarn'd:
They shall have wars and pay for their presumption.
But say, is Warwick friends with Margaret? 115

Post. Ay, gracious sovereign; they are so link'd in
friendship,

That young Prince Edward marries Warwick's daughter.

Clar. Belike the elder; Clarence will have the younger.
Now, brother king, farewell, and sit you fast,
For I will hence to Warwick's other daughter; 120
That, though I want a kingdom, yet in marriage
I may not prove inferior to yourself.

You that love me and Warwick, follow me.

[*Exit Clarence, and Somerset follows.*]

Glou. [*Aside*] Not I:

104 *Tell...done,*] One line in Pope. Two in Ff.

done] *doff'd* Capell conj.

106 *minds*] means F.

116 *Ay...friendship,*] One line in Pope. Two in Ff.

they are] *they're* Pope.

117 *That*] *The Rowe* (ed. 2).

Edward] *Edwards* F.

Warwick's] *Warwicke* F.

118 *Belike...younger.*] One line in Pope. Two in Ff.

elder...younger] (Qq) Ff. *younger...elder* Theobald.

124 [*Aside*] *Rowe*.

124—126 *Not I...crown.*] Arranged as by Capell. In Ff line 125 ends at *matter*. As two lines, the first ending *matter*, in Pope.

My thoughts aim at a further matter; I 125
 Stay not for the love of Edward, but the crown.

K. Edw. Clarence and Somerset both gone to Warwick!
 Yet am I arm'd against the worst can happen;
 And haste is needful in this desperate case.
 Pembroke and Stafford, you in our behalf 130
 Go levy men, and make prepare for war;
 They are already, or quickly will be landed:
 Myself in person will straight follow you.

[*Exeunt Pembroke and Stafford.*]

But, ere I go, Hastings and Montague,
 Resolve my doubt. You twain, of all the rest, 135
 Are near to Warwick by blood and by alliance:
 Tell me if you love Warwick more than me;
 If it be so, then both depart to him;
 I rather wish you foes than hollow friends:
 But if you mind to hold your true obedience, 140
 Give me assurance with some friendly vow,
 That I may never have you in suspect.

Mont. So God help Montague as he proves true!

Hast. And Hastings as he favours Edward's cause!

K. Edw. Now, brother Richard, will you stand by us?

Glou. Ay, in despite of all that shall withstand you.

K. Edw. Why, so! then am I sure of victory. 147

Now therefore let us hence; and lose no hour,
 Till we meet Warwick with his foreign power. [*Exeunt.*]

125 *I]* om. Vaughan conj., dividing the lines as Pope.

126 *the love]* love Pope.

128 *am I]* *I am* F.

arm'd] *warn'd* Vaughan conj.

happen;] *happen?* Vaughan conj. (withdrawn).

132 *quickly will]* *will soon* Pope.

137 *me;]* *me?* Pope.

www.lib3.cn
SCENE II. A plain in Warwickshire.

Enter WARWICK and OXFORD, with French soldiers.

War. Trust me, my lord, all hitherto goes well;
The common people by numbers swarm to us.

Enter CLARENCE and SOMERSET.

But see where Somerset and Clarence comes!
Speak suddenly, my lords, are we all friends?

Clar. Fear not that, my lord. 5

War. Then, gentle Clarence, welcome unto Warwick;
And welcome, Somerset: I hold it cowardice
To rest mistrustful where a noble heart
Hath pawn'd an open hand in sign of love;
Else might I think that Clarence, Edward's brother, 10
Were but a feigned friend to our proceedings:
But welcome, sweet Clarence; my daughter shall be thine.
And now what rests but, in night's coverture,
Thy brother being carelessly encamp'd,
His soldiers lurking in the towns about, 15
And but attended by a simple guard,
We may surprise and take him at our pleasure?

SCENE II.] Capell. SCENE III. Pope.
om. Ff.

A plain...] Capell. In Warwick-
shire. Theobald. om. Ff.

Enter...Oxford...] Enter...Oxford in
England...Ff. Collier MS. has 'with
French and English forces'. Enter
...Oxford, with French and other
Forces. Collier (ed. 2).

2 by numbers swarm] swarm by num-
bers Pope.

3 comes] come Rowe.

5 *Fear*] *Oh! fear* Hanmer.

12 *But*] om. Vaughan conj.

sweet Clarence] *friend* Pope. *Clarence* Capell.

13—17 *rests but...pleasure*] *rests, but in...pleasure?* Pope. *rests? but...pleasure, Ff.*

13 *coverture*] *overture* Warburton. See note (vi).

15 *towns*] Theobald (Thirlby conj.).
Towns F₁F₂ *Town* F₃F₄

Our scouts have found the adventure very easy :
 That as Ulysses and stout Diomede
 With sleight and manhood stole to Rhesus' tents, 20
 And brought from thence the Thracian fatal steeds,
 So we, well cover'd with the night's black mantle,
 At unawares may beat down Edward's guard,
 And seize himself; I say not, slaughter him,
 For I intend but only to surprise him. 25
 You that will follow me to this attempt,
 Applaud the name of Henry with your leader.

[*They all cry, 'Henry!'*

Why, then, let's on our way in silent sort :
 For Warwick and his friends, God and Saint George !
 [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *Edward's camp, near Warwick.*

Enter three Watchmen, to guard the KING's tent.

First Watch. Come on, my masters, each man take
 his stand :

The king by this is set him down to sleep.

Second Watch. What, will he not to bed ?

First Watch. Why, no; for he hath made a solemn vow,
 Never to lie and take his natural rest, 5
 Till Warwick or himself be quite suppress'd.

Second Watch. To-morrow then belike shall be the day,
 If Warwick be so near as men report.

20 *sleight*] *slight* Rowe.

• *Rhesus'*] *Theseus* F₄.

28 *to*] *in* Capell.

SCENE III.] Capell. SCENE IV. Pope.

Theobald continues the scene. om.

Ff.

Edward's camp...] Capell.

Enter...] Ff.

three] F₁F₂ the F₃F₄.

2 *is*] *has* Rowe (ed. 2).

set him] *setting* Vaughan conj.

Third Watch. But say, I pray, what nobleman is that,
That with the king here resteth in his tent? 10

First Watch. 'Tis the Lord Hastings, the king's chief-
est friend.

Third Watch. O, is it so? But why commands the king
That his chief followers lodge in towns about him,
While he himself keeps in the cold field?

Second Watch. 'Tis the more honour, because more
dangerous. 15

Third Watch. Ay, but give me worship and quietness;
I like it better than a dangerous honour.
If Warwick knew in what estate he stands,
'Tis to be doubted he would waken him.

First Watch. Unless our halberds did shut up his
passage. 20

Second Watch. Ay, wherefore else guard we his royal
tent,

But to defend his person from night-foes?

*Enter WARWICK, CLARENCE, OXFORD, SOMERSET, and French soldiers,
silent all.*

War. This is his tent; and see where stand his guard.
Courage, my masters! honour now or never!
But follow me, and Edward shall be ours. 25

First Watch. Who goes there?

Second Watch. Stay, or thou diest!

[*Warwick and the rest cry all, 'Warwick! Warwick!'
and set upon the Guard, who fly, crying, 'Arm!
arm!' Warwick and the rest following them.*]

14 *keeps*] F₃F₄. *keepes* F₁F₂. *keepeth*
Theobald. *keeps here* Hanmer.
keeps out Vaughan conj.
field] *field here* Keightley.

15 *more dangerous*] F₁F₂. *the more
dangerous* F₃F₄. *dangerous* Han-
mer.

21 *we his*] *we this* F₃F₄.

23 *Enter...*] Ff.

(Whisper) Collier MS.

stand] F₁F₂. *stands* F₃F₄.

27 [*Warwick...*] Ff.

'Arm! arm!'] Arms, Arms, F₄.

The drum playing and trumpet sounding, re-enter WARWICK, SOMERSET, and the rest, bringing the KING out in his gown, sitting in a chair. RICHARD and HASTINGS fly over the stage.

Som. What are they that fly there?

War. Richard and Hastings: let them go; here is
The duke.

K. Edw. The duke! Why, Warwick, when we parted,
Thou call'dst me king.

War. Ay, but the case is alter'd: 31
When you disgraced me in my embassy,
Then I degraded you from being king,
And come now to create you Duke of York.
Alas! how should you govern any kingdom, 35
That know not how to use ambassadors,
Nor how to be contented with one wife,
Nor how to use your brothers brotherly,
Nor how to study for the people's welfare,
Nor how to shroud yourself from enemies? 40

K. Edw. Yea, brother of Clarence, art thou here too?
Nay, then I see that Edward needs must down.
Yet, Warwick, in despite of all mischance,
Of thee thyself and all thy complices,
Edward will always bear himself as king: 45

- | | |
|---|---|
| The drum...sounding] Ff. | 31 <i>king.] king?</i> Rowe. |
| re-enter...] Capell. Enter... Ff. | 32 <i>embassy]</i> Ff. <i>embassy</i> (Qq) Capell. |
| his gown,] a Gown, F ₃ F ₄ . | |
| fly] F ₄ . flies F ₁ F ₂ F ₃ . | 34 <i>now to create]</i> to new create Johnson conj. |
| 29, 30 <i>Richard...duke.]</i> Arranged as by Pope. As prose in Ff. | 41 <i>Yea, brother...art...too?</i>] As in Steevens. Two lines in Ff. <i>Brother of Clarence, and art thou here too?</i> Pope. |
| 29 <i>here is]</i> <i>here's</i> Capell, reading as one line <i>Richard...duke.</i> | <i>Yea, brother of Clarence, and art thou here too?</i> Capell. |
| 30 <i>The duke.....parted,]</i> As in Pope. Two lines in Ff. | 42 <i>needs must]</i> <i>must needs</i> Rowe. |
| <i>parted]</i> Ff. <i>parted last</i> Capell, from (Qq). | |

Though fortune's malice overthrow my state,
My mind exceeds the compass of her wheel.

War. Then, for his mind, be Edward England's king :
[*Takes off his crown.*]

But Henry now shall wear the English crown,
And be true king indeed, thou but the shadow. 50

My Lord of Somerset, at my request,
See that forthwith Duke Edward be convey'd
Unto my brother, Archbishop of York.
When I have fought with Pembroke and his fellows,
I'll follow you, and tell what answer 55

Lewis and the Lady Bona send to him.
Now, for a while farewell, good Duke of York.

[*They lead him out forcibly.*]

K. Edw. What fates impose, that men must needs
abide ;

It boots not to resist both wind and tide. [*Exit, guarded.*]

Oxf. What now remains, my lords, for us to do, 60
But march to London with our soldiers ?

War. Ay, that's the first thing that we have to do ;
To free king Henry from imprisonment,
And see him seated in the regal throne. [*Exeunt.*]

50 *the shadow*] *a shadow* F₃F₄.

55 *what answer*] *you what reply* Pope.
his grace what answer Capell. *him*
then what answer Keightley. *the*
duke what answer Anon. conj. *him*
there what answer Dyce (ed. 2).

56 *the*] om. Pope.

send] *sent* Rowe (ed. 2).

57 *a while*] F₃F₄. *a-while* F₁F₂.
[*They lead...*] Ff.

59 [*Exit, guarded.*] Exeunt. Ff. *Exit*,
led off forcibly ; Somerset with *him*.
Capell.

64 [*Exeunt.*] Rowe. *Exit*. Ff.

www.libtool.com.cn
SCENE IV. *London. The palace.*

Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH *and* RIVERS.

Riv. Madam, what makes you in this sudden change?

Q. Eliz. Why, brother Rivers, are you yet to learn
What late misfortune is befall'n King Edward?

Riv. What! loss of some pitch'd battle against War-
wick?

Q. Eliz. No, but the loss of his own royal person. 5

Riv. Then is my sovereign slain?

Q. Eliz. Ay, almost slain, for he is taken prisoner,
Either betray'd by falsehood of his guard,
Or by his foe surprised at unawares:
And, as I further have to understand, 10
Is new committed to the Bishop of York,
Fell Warwick's brother and, by that our foe.

Riv. These news I must confess are full of grief;
Yet, gracious madam, bear it as you may:
Warwick may lose, that now hath won the day. 15

Q. Eliz. Till then fair hope must hinder life's decay.
And I the rather wean me from despair
For love of Edward's offspring in my womb:

SCENE IV.] Capell. SCENE V. Pope.

om. Ff.

London.] Capell.

The palace.] Theobald.

Enter.....] Malona. Enter Rivers,
and Lady Gray. Ff (the Lady F₃F₄).

Enter Rivers and the Queen. Theo-
bald.

1 *you in*] *in you* Collier MS.

2 *Q. Eliz.*] Gray. Ff (and throughout

the scene).

3 *is*] *has* Rowe.

4 *What... Warwick?*] One line in Pope.

Two in Ff.

What?] *What* F₁. *What*, F₂. *What?*

F₃F₄.

11 *new*] *now* Rowe.

16 *lif's*] Rowe. *lives* Ff.

17 *wean*] Rowe. *wains* F₁F₂. *wain*

F₃F₄.

This is it that makes me bridle passion,
 And bear with mildness my misfortune's cross ; 20
 Ay, ay, for this I draw in many a tear
 And stop the rising of blood-sucking sighs,
 Lest with my sighs or tears I blast or drown
 King Edward's fruit, true heir to the English crown. 24
Riv. But, madam, where is Warwick then become ?
Q. Eliz. I am inform'd that he comes towards London,
 To set the crown once more on Henry's head :
 Guess thou the rest ; King Edward's friends must down,
 But, to prevent the tyrant's violence,—
 For trust not him that hath once broken faith,— 30
 I'll hence forthwith unto the sanctuary,
 To save at least the heir of Edward's right :
 There shall I rest secure from force and fraud.
 Come, therefore, let us fly while we may fly :
 If Warwick take us we are sure to die. [*Exeunt.* 35

SCENE V. *A park near Middleham Castle in Yorkshire.*

Enter GLOUCESTER, LORD HASTINGS, SIR WILLIAM STANLEY, and others.

Glou. Now, my Lord Hastings and Sir William Stanley,
 Leave off to wonder why I drew you hither,
 Into this chiefest thicket of the park.

19 *is it...passion*] F₁. *is it...my passion*
 F₂F₃. *is...my passion* F₄. *is it...*
in my passion Rowe. *is 't...in my*
passion Pope. *is it, makes...passion*
 Vaughan conj.
 20 *misfortune's*] Pope. *misfortunes* F₁
 F₂F₃. *misfortune* F₄.
 25 *But.....become* f] One line in Pope.
 Two in Ff.
 26 *inform'd*] *informed* Theobald.

28 *friends*] F₁F₄. *friend* F₂F₃.
 34 *while we may fly*] om. F₄.
 SCENE V.] Capell. SCENE VI. Pope.
 om. Ff.
 A park...] Theobald. In Yorkshire.
 Pope.
 Enter Gloucester...] Enter Richard
 ... Ff.
 Stanley, and others.] Capell. Stan-
 ley. Ff.

Thus stands the case: you know our king, my brother,
 Is prisoner to the bishop here, at whose hands 5
 He hath good usage and great liberty,
 And, often but attended with weak guard,
 Comes hunting this way to disport himself.
 I have advertised him by secret means,
 That if about this hour he make this way 10
 Under the colour of his usual game,
 He shall here find his friends with horse and men
 To set him free from his captivity.

Enter KING EDWARD and a Huntsman with him.

Hunt. This way, my lord; for this way lies the game.

K. Edw. Nay, this way, man: see where the hunts-
 men stand. 15

Now, brother of Gloucester, Lord Hastings, and the rest,
 Stand you thus close, to steal the bishop's deer?

Glou. Brother, the time and case requireth haste:
 Your horse stands ready at the park-corner.

K. Edw. But whither shall we then?

Hast. To Lynn, my lord,
 And ship from thence to Flanders. 21

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>4 <i>stands</i>] <i>stand</i> F₁. <i>our</i>] <i>your</i> F₄. 5 <i>here</i>] om. Pope. 8 <i>Comes</i>] <i>Come</i> F₁. 14 <i>Enter...him.</i>] Ff. <i>This...game.</i>] One line in Pope. Two in Ff. 15 <i>Nay...stand.</i>] One line in Pope. Two in Ff. 16 <i>brother...Hastings</i>] <i>brother Glóster,</i> <i>Hastings</i> Pope. <i>brother of Gloster,</i> <i>Hastings</i> Collier MS. 19 <i>Your horse</i>] <i>Your horses</i> or <i>Our horses</i> Vaughan conj.</p> | <p><i>ready</i>] <i>ready here</i> Hanmer. <i>park-corner</i>] <i>park-corner for you</i> Cap- pell. 20 <i>whither</i>] <i>whether</i> F₁. 20, 21 <i>To...Flanders.</i>] As in Ff. One line in Steevens (1778). <i>lord, And...Flanders.</i>] <i>lord. K. Edw.</i> <i>And...Flanders?</i> Cartwright conj. 21 <i>ship</i>] <i>shipt</i> F₁. <i>ship</i> so quoted by S. Walker. <i>shipp'd</i> Vaughan conj. <i>ship't</i> Furnivall conj. <i>Flanders</i>] <i>Flanders; as I guess</i> Vaughan conj.</p> |
|---|---|

Glou. Well guess'd, believe me ; for that was my meaning.

K. Edw. Stanley, I will requite thy forwardness.

Glou. But wherefore stay we ? 'tis no time to talk.

K. Edw. Huntsman, what say'st thou ? wilt thou go along ? 25

Hunt. Better do so than tarry and be hang'd.

Glou. Come then, away ; let's ha' no more ado.

K. Edw. Bishop, farewell : shield thee from Warwick's frown ;

And pray that I may repossess the crown. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VI. *London. The Tower.*

Flourish. Enter KING HENRY, CLARENCE, WARWICK, SOMERSET, young RICHMOND, OXFORD, MONTAGUE, and Lieutenant of the Tower.

K. Hen. Master lieutenant, now that God and friends
Have shaken Edward from the regal seat,
And turn'd my captive state to liberty,
My fear to hope, my sorrows unto joys,
At our enlargement what are thy due fees ? 5

Lieu. Subjects may challenge nothing of their sovereigns ;
But if an humble prayer may prevail,
I then crave pardon of your majesty.

22 *Glou.*] *K. Edw.* Lettsom conj.

25 *Huntsman...along ?*] One line in Pope. Two in Ff.

27 *ha'*] Rowe. *ha* Ff. *have* Malone.

28 *Bishop.....frown ;*] One line in Pope. Two in Ff.

SCENE VI.] Capell. SCENE VII. Pope. om. Ff.

London.] Pope.

The Tower.] Theobald.

Flourish.] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

Henry] Henry the sixth F₁. Henry the Sixth F₂F₃F₄.

Richmond] Rowe. Henry Ff.

of the Tower] Rowe. om. Ff.

1 *Master*] Capell. *M.* Ff. *Mr.* Rowe.

K. Hen. For what, lieutenant? for well using me?
 Nay, be thou sure I'll well requite thy kindness, 10
 For that it made my imprisonment a pleasure;
 Ay, such a pleasure as incaged birds
 Conceive, when after many moody thoughts,
 At last, by notes of household harmony,
 They quite forget their loss of liberty. 15
 But, Warwick, after God, thou set'st me free,
 And chiefly therefore I thank God and thee;
 He was the author, thou the instrument.
 Therefore, that I may conquer fortune's spite
 By living low, where fortune cannot hurt me, 20
 And that the people of this blessed land
 May not be punish'd with my thwarting stars,
 Warwick, although my head still wear the crown,
 I here resign my government to thee,
 For thou art fortunate in all thy deeds. 25

War. Your grace hath still been famed for virtuous;
 And now may seem as wise as virtuous,
 By spying and avoiding fortune's malice,
 For few men rightly temper with the stars:
 Yet in this one thing let me blame your grace, 30
 For choosing me when Clarence is in place.

Clar. No, Warwick, thou art worthy of the sway,
 To whom the heavens in thy nativity
 Adjudged an olive branch and laurel crown,
 As likely to be blest in peace and war; 35
 And therefore I yield thee my free consent.

War. And I choose Clarence only for protector.

K. Hen. Warwick and Clarence, give me both your
 hands:

11 *my*] om. Pope.

imprisonment] '*prisonment* Anon.

and Lettsom conj.

Now join your hands, and with your hands your hearts,
That no dissension hinder government : 40

I make you both protectors of this land,
While I myself will lead a private life,
And in devotion spend my latter days,
To sin's rebuke and my Creator's praise. 44

War. What answers Clarence to his sovereign's will?

Clar. That he consents, if Warwick yield consent ;
For on thy fortune I repose myself.

War. Why, then, though loath, yet must I be content:
We'll yoke together, like a double shadow
To Henry's body, and supply his place ; 50
I mean, in bearing weight of government,
While he enjoys the honour and his ease.

And, Clarence, now then it is more than needful
Forthwith that Edward be pronounced a traitor,
And all his lands and goods be confiscate. 55

Clar. What else? and that succession be determined.

War. Ay, therein Clarence shall not want his part.

K. Hen. But, with the first of all your chief affairs,
Let me entreat, for I command no more,
That Margaret your queen and my son Edward 60
Be sent for, to return from France with speed ;
For, till I see them here, by doubtful fear
My joy of liberty is half eclipsed.

Clar. It shall be done, my sovereign, with all speed.

K. Hen. My Lord of Somerset, what youth is that,
Of whom you seem to have so tender care?

Som. My liege, it is young Henry, earl of Richmond.

53 *Clarence, now] Clarence now, now F₄.
it is] is it F₃.*

55 *be confiscate] Malone. confiscate F₁.
confiscated F₂F₃F₄.*

56 *and that...determined.] As one line,*

S. Walker conj.

58 *But, with the first] Capell. But with
the first, Ff.
your] our F₄.*

60 *your] our Collier MS.*

K. Hen. Come hither, England's hope. [*Lays his hand on his head*] If secret powers
Suggest but truth to my divining thoughts,
This pretty lad will prove our country's bliss. 70
His looks are full of peaceful majesty,
His head by nature framed to wear a crown,
His hand to wield a sceptre, and himself
Likely in time to bless a regal throne.
Make much of him, my lords, for this is he 75
Must help you more than you are hurt by me.

Enter a Post.

War. What news, my friend?

Post. That Edward is escaped from your brother,
And fled, as he hears since, to Burgundy.

War. Unsavoury news! but how made he escape? 80

Post. He was convey'd by Richard duke of Gloucester
And the Lord Hastings, who attended him
In secret ambush on the forest side,
And from the bishop's huntsmen rescued him;
For hunting was his daily exercise. 85

War. My brother was too careless of his charge.
But let us hence, my sovereign, to provide
A salve for any sore that may betide.

[*Exeunt all but Somerset, Richmond, and Oxford.*]

Som. My lord, I like not of this flight of Edward's;
For doubtless Burgundy will yield him help, 90
And we shall have more wars before 't be long.
As Henry's late presaging prophecy

68, 69 *Come...thoughts,*] As in Pope. As
three lines in Ff, ending *Hope...truth*
...thoughts.

70 *This...our*] *Thou, pretty boy, shalt*
prove this (Qq) Rann.

76 *are*] art F₂.

77 *Enter...*] Ff. *Enter a Messenger.*
Capell.

War.] om. Boswell.

88 [*Exeunt...*] *Exeunt. Manet Somers-*
set, Richmond, and Oxford. Ff (*Ma-*
nent F₂).

Did glad my heart with hope of this young Richmond,
 So doth my heart misgive me, in these conflicts
 What may befall him, to his harm and ours : 95
 Therefore, Lord Oxford, to prevent the worst,
 Forthwith we'll send him hence to Brittany,
 Till storms be past of civil enmity.

Oxf. Ay, for if Edward repossess the crown,
 'Tis like that Richmond with the rest shall down. 100

Som. It shall be so ; he shall to Brittany.
 Come, therefore, let's about it speedily. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII. *Before York.*

Flourish. Enter KING EDWARD, GLOUCESTER, HASTINGS, and
 Soldiers.

K. Edw. Now, brother Richard, Lord Hastings, and
 the rest,
 Yet thus far fortune maketh us amends,
 And says that once more I shall interchange
 My waned state for Henry's regal crown.
 Well have we pass'd and now repass'd the seas, 5
 And brought desired help from Burgundy :
 What then remains, we being thus arrived
 From Ravenspurgh haven before the gates of York,
 But that we enter, as into our dukedom ?

Glou. The gates made fast ! Brother, I like not this ;

SCENE VII.] Capell. SCENE VIII.
 Pope. om. Ff.
 Before York.] Capell. Changes to
 York. Pope.
 Flourish.] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.
 Enter King Edward, Gloucester...]
 Enter Edward, Richard... Ff. Enter
 ...forreign Souldiors. Collier MS.

1 *Lord*] om. Pope.
 4 *waned*] Steevens (1793). *wained* Ff.
 8 *Ravenspurgh*] F₂F₃F₄. *Rauenspurre*
 F₁.
haven] om. Pope.
before] 'fore Steevens conj.
 10 *The...this* ;] One line in Pope. Two
 in Ff.

For many men that stumble at the threshold 11
 Are well foretold that danger lurks within.

K. Edw. Tush, man, abodements must not now af-
 fright us :

By fair or foul means we must enter in,
 For hither will our friends repair to us. 15

Hast. My liege, I'll knock once more to summon them.

Enter, on the walls, the Mayor of York and his Brethren.

May. My lords, we were forewarned of your coming,
 And shut the gates for safety of ourselves ;
 For now we owe allegiance unto Henry.

K. Edw. But, master mayor, if Henry be your king,
 Yet Edward at the least is Duke of York. 21

May. True, my good lord ; I know you for no less.

K. Edw. Why, and I challenge nothing but my duke-
 dom,
 As being well content with that alone.

Glou. [*Aside*] But when the fox hath once got in his
 nose, 25
 He'll soon find means to make the body follow.

Hast. Why, master mayor, why stand you in a doubt ?
 Open the gates ; we are King Henry's friends.

May. Ay, say you so ? the gates shall then be open'd.
 [*They descend.*]

Glou. A wise stout captain, and soon persuaded ! 30

Hast. The good old man would fain that all were well,

17 his Brethren.] Ff. others. Capell.
 Aldermen. Dyce.

My lords...coming,] One line in Pope.
 Two in Ff.

23 *Why, and*] *Why, then* Wordsworth.

25 [*Aside*] Rowe (ed. 2). om. Ff.

29 [*They descend.*] He descends. Ff.

Exit, from above. Capell.

30 *A wise*] *I'faith, a wise* Keightley.
captain] *captain he* Collier, ed. 2
 (Collier MS.). *captain* Delius conj.
captain, faith Cartwright conj.
soon persuaded] *persuaded soon*
 Pope.

So 'twere not 'long of him; but being enter'd,
 I doubt not, I, but we shall soon persuade
 Both him and all his brothers unto reason.

Enter the Mayor and two Aldermen, below.

K. Edw. So, master mayor: these gates must not be
 shut 35
 But in the night or in the time of war.
 What! fear not, man, but yield me up the keys;
[Takes his keys.]
 For Edward will defend the town and thee,
 And all those friends that deign to follow me.

March. Enter MONTGOMERY, with drum and soldiers.

Glou. Brother, this is Sir John Montgomery, 40
 Our trusty friend, unless I be deceived.

K. Edw. Welcome, Sir John! But why come you in
 arms?

Montg. To help King Edward in his time of storm,
 As every loyal subject ought to do. 44

K. Edw. Thanks, good Montgomery; but we now forget
 Our title to the crown, and only claim
 Our dukedom till God please to send the rest.

Montg. Then fare you well, for I will hence again:
 I came to serve a king, and not a duke.
 Drummer, strike up, and let us march away. 50

[The drum begins to march.]

32 'long] long Ff.

35 Enter.....below.] Enter the Maior,
 and two Aldermen. Ff. Re-enter
 Mayor, below; Attendants with him.
 Capell.

39 deign] F₂F₄. deins F₁F₂.

45—47 Thanks...rest.] As in Pope. As
 four lines in Ff, ending *Mountgomerie*
 ...*crowne...dukedom...rest.*

46 Our] the F₂F₄.

50 [The.....to march.] Ff. The.....a
 March. Rowe.

K. Edw. Nay, stay, Sir John, a while, and we'll debate
By what safe means the crown may be recover'd.

Montg. What talk you of debating? in few words,
If you'll not here proclaim yourself our king,
I'll leave you to your fortune, and be gone 55
To keep them back that come to succour you:
Why shall we fight, if you pretend no title?

Glou. Why, brother, wherefore stand you on nice
points?

K. Edw. When we grow stronger, then we'll make
our claim:

Till then, 'tis wisdom to conceal our meaning. 60

Hast. Away with scrupulous wit! now arms must rule.

Glou. And fearless minds climb soonest unto crowns.
Brother, we will proclaim you out of hand;
The bruit thereof will bring you many friends.

K. Edw. Then be it as you will; for 'tis my right, 65
And Henry but usurps the diadem.

Montg. Ay, now my sovereign speaketh like himself;
And now will I be Edward's champion.

Hast. Sound trumpet; Edward shall be here pro-
claim'd:

Come, fellow-soldier, make thou proclamation. 70

[*Flourish.*

Sold. Edward the Fourth, by the grace of God, king
of England and France, and lord of Ireland, &c.

Montg. And whosoe'er gainsays King Edward's right,
By this I challenge him to single fight.

[*Throws down his gauntlet.*

All. Long live Edward the Fourth! 75

51 *a while*] *awhile* Variorum (1813).

we'll] *well* F₄.

57 *shall*] *should* (Qq) Capell.

59 *When.....claim*:] One line in Pope.

Two in Ff.

61 *wit*!] Capell. *Wit*, Ff.

70 [giving him a Paper. Capell.

[*Flourish.*] Rowe. *Flourish*. Sound.

Ff.

71 *Sold.*] Sol. [reads. Capell.

K. Edw. Thanks, brave Montgomery; and thanks unto
 you all:
 If fortune serve me, I'll requite this kindness.
 Now, for this night, let's harbour here in York;
 And when the morning sun shall raise his car
 Above the border of this horizon, 80
 We'll forward towards Warwick and his mates;
 For well I wot that Henry is no soldier.
 Ah, froward Clarence! how evil it beseems thee,
 To flatter Henry and forsake thy brother!
 Yet, as we may, we'll meet both thee and Warwick. 85
 Come on, brave soldiers: doubt not of the day,
 And, that once gotten, doubt not of large pay. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VIII. *London. The palace.*

Flourish. Enter KING HENRY, WARWICK, MONTAGUE, CLARENCE,
 EXETER, and OXFORD.

War. What counsel, lords? Edward from Belgia,
 With hasty Germans and blunt Hollanders,
 Hath pass'd in safety through the narrow seas,
 And with his troops doth march amain to London;
 And many giddy people flock to him. 5

76 *Thanks...all:]* As in Steevens. Two lines in Ff.

and] om. Lettsom conj.

unto you all] to all Pope. *to you all* Steevens (1773).

78 *in]* F₁F₂F₃ at F₄.

83 *how]* om. Pope.

SCENE VIII.] Capell. SCENE IX. Pope. om. Ff.

London.] Changes again to London. Pope.

The palace.] A Room in the Palace. Capell. The Bishop's palace. Wright

conj. (see v. 1. 45).

Flourish.] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

Enter King Henry,] Rowe. *Enter the King,* Ff.

Exeter, and Oxford.] Capell. Oxford, and Somerset. Ff. See note (vii).

1—6 *War. What...him.* K. Hen. *Let's...again.]* Ff. King. *What.....him.*

War. Let's...again. Johnson conj.

War. What...him. Oxf. *Let's...again.* Malone.

2 *hasty]* *lusty* S. Walker conj. *hardy* Cartwright conj.

K. Hen. Let's levy men, and beat him back again.

Clar. A little fire is quickly trodden out ;
Which, being suffer'd, rivers cannot quench.

War. In Warwickshire I have true-hearted friends,
Not mutinous in peace, yet bold in war ; 10
Those will I muster up : and thou, son Clarence,
Shalt stir up in Suffolk, Norfolk and in Kent,
The knights and gentlemen to come with thee :
Thou, brother Montague, in Buckingham,
Northampton and in Leicestershire, shalt find 15
Men well inclined to hear what thou command'st :
And thou, brave Oxford, wondrous well beloved,
In Oxfordshire shalt muster up thy friends.
My sovereign, with the loving citizens,
Like to his island girt in with the ocean, 20
Or modest Dian circled with her nymphs,
Shall rest in London till we come to him.
Fair lords, take leave and stand not to reply.
Farewell, my sovereign. 24

K. Hen. Farewell, my Hector, and my Troy's true hope.

Clar. In sign of truth, I kiss your highness' hand.

K. Hen. Well-minded Clarence, be thou fortunate !

Mont. Comfort, my lord ; and so I take my leave.

Oxf. And thus I seal my truth, and bid adieu.

K. Hen. Sweet Oxford, and my loving Montague, 30
And all at once, once more a happy farewell.

War. Farewell, sweet lords : let's meet at Coventry.

[*Exeunt all but King Henry and Exeter.*]

K. Hen. Here at the palace will I rest a while.
Cousin of Exeter, what thinks your lordship ?

12 *Shalt*] *Shall* Collier (ed. 2).

up] om. Pope.

14 *in*] and *F₃F₄*.

15, 18 *shalt*] *shall* Collier (ed. 2).

20 *in*] om. *F₃F₄*.

29 [kissing Henry's hand. Johnson.

32 [*Exeunt...*] *Exeunt*. *Ff.* *Exeunt*

War. *Cl.* *Oxf.* and *Mou.* *Capell.*

33 *a while*] *awhile* Dyce.

Methinks the power that Edward hath in field 35
Should not be able to encounter mine.

Exe. The doubt is that he will seduce the rest.

K. Hen. That's not my fear; my meed hath got me
fame :

I have not stopp'd mine ears to their demands,
Nor posted off their suits with slow delays; 40
My pity hath been balm to heal their wounds,
My mildness hath allay'd their swelling griefs,
My mercy dried their water-flowing tears;
I have not been desirous of their wealth,
Nor much oppress'd them with great subsidies, 45
Nor forward of revenge, though they much err'd:
Then why should they love Edward more than me?
No, Exeter, these graces challenge grace:
And when the lion fawns upon the lamb,
The lamb will never cease to follow him. 50

[*Shout within, 'A Lancaster! A Lancaster!'*]

Exe. Hark, hark, my lord! what shouts are these?

Enter KING EDWARD, GLOUCESTER, and Soldiers.

K. Edw. Seize on the shame-faced Henry, bear him
hence;

And once again proclaim us king of England.

You are the fount that makes small brooks to flow :

38 *Should*] *Shall* Capell (corrected in Errata).

38 *meed*] *deed* Warburton. *mind* Collier MS. *heed* Bailey conj.

40 *off*] of F₃F₄.

43 *water-flowing tears*] *water-flowing eyes* Rann (Capell conj.). *bitter-flowing tears* Collier MS. *wet o'er-flowing tears* Vaughan conj.

45 *Nor much*] *And much* Vaughan

conj.

much] *e'er* or *have I* Keightley conj.

50 'A Lancaster! A Lancaster!'] A York! A York! Dyce, ed. 2 (Johnson conj.

51 *lord*] *sovereign lord* Wordsworth.

52 *Enter.....*] *Enter Edward and his Souldiers.* Ff. Gloucester,] Hanmer.

54 *makes*] *make* F₃F₄.

Now stops thy spring; my sea shall suck them dry, 55
And swell so much the higher by their ebb.

Hence with him to the Tower; let him not speak.

[*Exeunt some with King Henry.*]

And, lords, towards Coventry bend we our course,
Where peremptory Warwick now remains:
The sun shines hot; and, if we use delay, 60
Cold biting winter mars our hoped-for hay.

Glou. Away betimes, before his forces join,
And take the great-grown traitor unawares:
Brave warriors, march amain towards Coventry. [*Exeunt.*]

ACT V.

SCENE I. Coventry.

Enter WARWICK, the Mayor of Coventry, two Messengers, and others upon the walls.

War. Where is the post that came from valiant Oxford?
How far hence is thy lord, mine honest fellow?

First Mess. By this at Dunsmore, marching hitherward.

War. How far off is our brother Montague?
Where is the post that came from Montague? 5

Second Mess. By this at Daintry, with a puissant troop.

55 *Now.....my*] *Now, stops thy spring,*
my Vaughan conj.

57 [*Exeunt.....*] Steevens (1778). Exit
with King Henry. Ff. Henry born
off. Capell.

60, 61 *The sun.....hay.*] Transferred to
follow Gloucester's speech, Lettsom

conj.

- 61 *hoped-for hay*] *hop'd-for Hay* F₁F₂F₃.
hop'd for Hay F₄. *hops for hais*
(Qq). *hope for aye* Malone conj.

ACT V. SCENE I.] Pope.

Coventry.] Before the Town of
Coventry. Theobald.

Enter SIR JOHN SOMERVILE.

*War. w. Say, Somerville, what says my loving son?
And, by thy guess, how nigh is Clarence now?*

*Som. At Southam I did leave him with his forces,
And do expect him here some two hours hence.* 10

[Drum heard.

War. Then Clarence is at hand; I hear his drum.

*Som. It is not his, my lord; here Southam lies:
The drum your honour hears marcheth from Warwick.*

War. Who should that be? belike, unlook'd-for friends.

Som. They are at hand, and you shall quickly know.

March. Flourish. Enter KING EDWARD, GLOUCESTER, and Soldiers.

K. Edw. Go, trumpet, to the walls, and sound a parle.

Glou. See how the surly Warwick mans the wall!

*War. O unbid spite! is sportful Edward come?
Where slept our scouts, or how are they seduced,
That we could hear no news of his repair?* 20

*K. Edw. Now, Warwick, wilt thou ope the city gates,
Speak gentle words and humbly bend thy knee,
Call Edward king and at his hands beg mercy?
And he shall pardon thee these outrages.*

*War. Nay, rather, wilt thou draw thy forces hence,
Confess who set thee up and pluck'd thee down,
Call Warwick patron and be penitent? 26
And thou shalt still remain the Duke of York.*

Sir John Somervila.] Capell. Somerville. Ff.

10 [Drum heard.] Capell. om. Ff.

12 here] hears F₂.

13 your] you F₂.

16 King E., Gloucester,] Edward, Richard, Ff.

and] om. F₃F₄.

20 repayr?] Rowe. repaysre. F₁F₂ re-

pair. F₃F₄.

22, 23 knee,...mercy?] knee?...mercy, Steevens. knee,...mercy, Capell

23, 24 mercy?...outrages.] Pope. mercy, ...outrages? Ff.

26, 27 down,...penitent?] down?...penitent, Steevens.

27, 28 penitent?...York.] Pope. penitent,...York. Ff.

Glou. I thought, at least, he would have said the king ;
Or did he make the jest against his will? 30

War. Is not a dukedom, sir, a goodly gift?

Glou. Ay, by my faith, for a poor earl to give :
I'll do thee service for so good a gift.

War. 'Twas I that gave the kingdom to thy brother.

K. Edw. Why then 'tis mine, if but by Warwick's gift.

War. Thou art no Atlas for so great a weight : 36
And, weakling, Warwick takes his gift again ;
And Henry is my king, Warwick his subject.

K. Edw. But Warwick's king is Edward's prisoner :
And, gallant Warwick, do but answer this : 40
What is the body when the head is off?

Glou. Alas, that Warwick had no more forecast,
But, whiles he thought to steal the single ten,
The king was silyly finger'd from the deck !
You left poor Henry at the bishop's palace, 45
And, ten to one, you'll meet him in the Tower.

K. Edw. 'Tis even so ; yet you are Warwick still.

Glou. Come, Warwick, take the time ; kneel down,
kneel down :
Nay, when? strike now, or else the iron cools.

War. I had rather chop this hand off at a blow, 50
And with the other fling it at thy face,
Than bear so low a sail, to strike to thee.

K. Edw. Sail how thou canst, have wind and tide thy
friend,
This hand, fast wound about thy coal-black hair,
Shall, whiles thy head is warm and new cut off, 55
Write in the dust this sentence with thy blood,

43, 55 *whiles*] *while* Pope.

44 *deck*] *pack* Warburton conj. (with-
drawn). See note (VIII).

48 *Come.....down.*] One line in Pope.

Two in Ff.

50 *I had*] *I'd* Pope.

53 *Sail...friend,*] As in Pope. Two
lines, the first ending *canst*, in Ff.

'Wind-changing Warwick now can change no more.'

www.libtool.com.cn

Enter OXFORD, with drum and colours.

War. O cheerful colours! see where Oxford comes!

Oxf. Oxford, Oxford, for Lancaster!

[He and his forces enter the city.]

Glou. The gates are open, let us enter too. 60

K. Edw. So other foes may set upon our backs.

Stand we in good array; for they no doubt

Will issue out again and bid us battle:

If not, the city being but of small defence,

We'll quickly rouse the traitors in the same. 65

War. O, welcome, Oxford! for we want thy help.

Enter MONTAGUE, with drum and colours.

Mont. Montague, Montague, for Lancaster!

[He and his forces enter the city.]

Glou. Thou and thy brother both shall buy this treason
Even with the dearest blood your bodies bear.

K. Edw. The harder match'd, the greater victory: 70
My mind presageth happy gain and conquest.

Enter SOMERSET, with drum and colours.

Som. Somerset, Somerset, for Lancaster!

[He and his forces enter the city.]

Glou. Two of thy name, both Dukes of Somerset,

58, 67, 72, 76 with drum and colours.]

Ff. with drum and souldiers. (Qq).

with forces, drum and colours.

Dyce.

58 SCENE II. Pope.

59 [He.....city.] Capell. Exit. (Qq).

om. Ff.

64 *but*] om. Pope.

defence] *fence* S. Walker conj.

67, 72 [He.....city.] Malone. He too

enters the city. Capell. Exit. (Qq).

om. Ff.

68 *buy*] 'by Grant White, from *abis*

(Q₁).

Have sold their lives unto the house of York ;
 And thou shalt be the third, if this sword hold. 75

www.libtool.com.cn

Enter CLARENCE, with drum and colours.

War. And lo, where George of Clarence sweeps along,
 Of force enough to bid his brother battle ;
 With whom an upright zeal to right prevails
 More than the nature of a brother's love !
 Come, Clarence, come ; thou wilt, if Warwick call. 80

Clar. Father of Warwick, know you what this means ?

[Taking his red rose out of his hat.

Look here, I throw my infamy at thee :
 I will not rinate my father's house,
 Who gave his blood to lime the stones together,
 And set up Lancaster. Why, trow'st thou, Warwick, 85
 That Clarence is so harsh, so blunt, unnatural,
 To bend the fatal instruments of war
 Against his brother and his lawful king ?
 Perhaps thou wilt object my holy oath :
 To keep that oath were more impiety 80
 Than Jephthah's, when he sacrificed his daughter.
 I am so sorry for my trespass made
 That, to deserve well at my brother's hands,
 I here proclaim myself thy mortal foe,

78 *whom an*] Rowe. *whom, an* F₂F₃F₄.
whom, in F₁.

79 [Glou. and Clar. whisper. Collier,
 from (Qq).

81 [Taking...hat.] Capell. ▲ Parley is
 sounded ; Richard and Clarence
 whisper together ; and then Clarence
 takes his red Rose out of his Hat,
 and throws it at Warwick. Theobald,
 from (Qq), after line 80.

85 *trow'st*] Pope. *trowest* Ff.

86 *That Clarence is*] Clarence Steevens
 conj.

so harsh, so blunt] Ff. *so harsh* (Qq).
so harsh, so blind Collier conj. *so
 harsh or so blunt* Mitford conj.

blunt, unnatural] *blunt-unnatural*
 S. Walker conj. *brute-unnatural*
 Anon. conj.

88 *king?*] Rowe (ed. 2). *King*. Ff.

91 *Jephthah's*] *Jepthah's* Rowe (ed. 2).
Iepthah F₁F₂. *Jepthah* F₃F₄.

With resolution, wheresoe'er I meet thee— 95
 As I will meet thee, if thou stir abroad—
 To plague thee for thy foul misleading me.
 And so, proud-hearted Warwick, I defy thee,
 And to my brother turn my blushing cheeks.
 Pardon me, Edward, I will make amends: 100
 And, Richard, do not frown upon my faults,
 For I will henceforth be no more unconstant.

K. Edw. Now welcome more, and ten times more
 beloved,

Than if thou never hadst deserved our hate.

Glo. Welcome, good Clarence; this is brother-like.

War. O passing traitor, perjured and unjust! 106

K. Edw. What, Warwick, wilt thou leave the town,
 and fight?

Or shall we beat the stones about thine ears?

War. Alas, I am not coop'd here for defence!

I will away towards Barnet presently, 110

And bid thee battle, Edward, if thou darest.

K. Edw. Yes, Warwick, Edward dares, and leads the
 way.

Lords, to the field; Saint George and victory!

*[Exeunt King Edward and his company. March.
 Warwick and his company follow.]*

SCENE II. A field of battle near Barnet.

*Alarum and excursions. Enter KING EDWARD, bringing forth
 WARWICK wounded.*

K. Edw. So, lie thou there: die thou, and die our fear;

104 *our*] *my* Rowe (ed. 1).

107 *What...fight?*] As in Pope. Two
 lines, the first ending *Warwicke*,
 in Ff.

113 *[Exeunt...]* Exeunt. March. War-

wicke and his companie followes.
 Ff.

SCENE II.] Capell. SCENE III. Pope.
 A field...] Theobald. Barnet. Pope.
 King Edward...] Edward... Ff.

For Warwick was a bug that fear'd us all.
 Now, Montague, sit fast; I seek for thee,
 That Warwick's bones may keep thine company. [Exit.

War. Ah, who is nigh? come to me, friend or foe, 5
 And tell me, who is victor, York or Warwick?
 Why ask I that? my mangled body shows,
 My blood, my want of strength, my sick heart shows,
 That I must yield my body to the earth
 And, by my fall, the conquest to my foe. 10
 Thus yields the cedar to the axe's edge,
 Whose arms gave shelter to the princely eagle,
 Under whose shade the ramping lion slept,
 Whose top-branch overpeer'd Jove's spreading tree,
 And kept low shrubs from winter's powerful wind. 15
 These eyes, that now are dimm'd with death's black
 veil,

Have been as piercing as the mid-day sun,
 To search the secret treasons of the world:
 The wrinkles in my brows, now fill'd with blood,
 Were liken'd oft to kingly sepulchres; 20
 For who lived king, but I could dig his grave?
 And who durst smile when Warwick bent his brow?
 Lo, now my glory smear'd in dust and blood!
 My parks, my walks, my manors that I had,
 Even now forsake me, and of all my lands 25
 Is nothing left me but my body's length.
 Why, what is pomp, rule, reign, but earth and dust?
 And, live we how we can, yet die we must.

2 *fear'd*] *scar'd* Rowe (ed. 2).

6 *me, who*] Theobald. *me who* Ff.

7 *that* ? *my mangled body shows,*] *that*
my...shows? Vaughan conj. *that?*
my body mangled, Wordsworth.

11 *yields.....edge*] *to the axe's edge the*

cedar yields Steevens conj.

20 *likened*] *lik'ned* Ff.

22 *bent*] *ben* F₂.

24 *manors that*] *manors,—that* Vaughan
 conj.

Enter OXFORD and SOMERSET.

Som. Ah, Warwick, Warwick! wert thou as we are,
We might recover all our loss again: 30

The queen from France hath brought a puissant power:
Even now we heard the news: ah, couldst thou fly!

War. Why, then I would not fly. Ah, Montague,
If thou be there, sweet brother, take my hand,
And with thy lips keep in my soul a while! 35
Thou lovest me not; for, brother, if thou didst,
Thy tears would wash this cold congealed blood,
That glues my lips and will not let me speak.
Come quickly, Montague, or I am dead.

Som. Ah, Warwick! Montague hath breathed his last;
And to the latest gasp cried out for Warwick, 41
And said 'Commend me to my valiant brother.'
And more he would have said, and more he spoke,
Which sounded like a clamour in a vault,
That mought not be distinguish'd; but at last 45
I well might hear, delivered with a groan,
'O, farewell, Warwick!'

War. Sweet rest his soul! Fly, lords, and save your-
selves;
For Warwick bids you all farewell, to meet in heaven.

[*Dies.*

Oxf. Away, away, to meet the queen's great power!
[*Here they bear away his body. Exeunt.*

35 *a while*] *awhile* Knight and Collier.

41 *latest*] *last* F₄.
for] *on* Capell.

44 *Which...vault*] (*Which...vault*) Ca-
pell conj.
clamour] (Qq) Warburton. *cannon*
Ff.

45 *mought*] Ff. *could* (Qq) Capell.

might Pope.

46 *delivered*] Ff. *deliver'd* Pope.

47—49 'O.....*heaven.*] Vaughan would
end the lines *soul!*... *Warwick...*
heaven.

48 *Sweet...yourselves;*] As in Capell. As
two lines, the first ending *soule:* in
Ff. See note (ix).

SCENE III. *Another part of the field.*

Flourish. Enter KING EDWARD in triumph; with GLOUCESTER,
CLARENCE, and the rest.

K. Edw. Thus far our fortune keeps an upward course,
And we are graced with wreaths of victory.
But, in the midst of this bright-shining day,
I spy a black, suspicious, threatening cloud,
That will encounter with our glorious sun, 5
Ere he attain his easeful western bed :

I mean, my lords, those powers that the queen
Hath raised in Gallia have arrived our coast,
And, as we hear, march on to fight with us.

Clar. A little gale will soon disperse that cloud, 10
And blow it to the source from whence it came :
The very beams will dry those vapours up,
For every cloud engenders not a storm.

Glo. The queen is valued thirty thousand strong,
And Somerset, with Oxford, fled to her : 15
If she have time to breathe, be well assured
Her faction will be full as strong as ours.

K. Edw. We are advertised by our loving friends
That they do hold their course toward Tewksbury :
We, having now the best at Barnet field, 20
Will thither straight, for willingness rids way ;
And, as we march, our strength will be augmented
In every county as we go along.
Strike up the drum ; cry ' Courage ! ' and away. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.] Capell. SCENE IV.

Pope.

Another...] Theobald.

Gloucester,] Richard, Ff.

19 toward] Ff. towards (Qq) Capell.

www.litclass.com.cn SCENE IV. *Plains near Tewksbury.*

March. Enter QUEEN MARGARET, PRINCE EDWARD, SOMERSET, OXFORD, and Soldiers.

Q. Mar. Great lords, wise men ne'er sit and wail their
 loss,
 But cheerly seek how to redress their harms.
 What though the mast be now blown overboard,
 The cable broke, the holding-anchor lost,
 And half our sailors swallow'd in the flood? 5
 Yet lives our pilot still. Is't meet that he
 Should leave the helm, and like a fearful lad
 With tearful eyes add water to the sea,
 And give more strength to that which hath too much,
 Whiles, in his moan, the ship splits on the rock, 10
 Which industry and courage might have saved?
 Ah, what a shame! ah, what a fault were this!
 Say Warwick was our anchor; what of that?
 And Montague our topmast; what of him?
 Our slaughter'd friends the tackles; what of these? 15
 Why, is not Oxford here another anchor?
 And Somerset another goodly mast?
 The friends of France our shrouds and tacklings?
 And, though unskilful, why not Ned and I
 For once allow'd the skilful pilot's charge? 20
 We will not from the helm to sit and weep,

SCENE IV.] Capell. SCENE V. Pope.

Plains...] Theobald. Tewksbury.

Pope.

Queen Margaret,] Capell. the
 Queene, Ff.

Prince Edward,] Malone. young
 Edward, Ff.

10 *Whiles*] *While* Pope.

15 *slaughter'd*] F₄. *slaught'ered* F₁F₂F₃.

16 *here*] F₄. *here*, F₁F₂F₃.

18 *The...our*] *Our...our* or *These...our*
 S. Walker conj. *Our...the* Cart-
 wright conj.

tacklings] *tacklings still* Pope. *tack-
 ling still* Johnson.

But keep our course, though the rough wind say no,
 From shelves and rocks that threaten us with wreck.
 As good to chide the waves as speak them fair.
 And what is Edward but a ruthless sea? 25
 What Clarence but a quicksand of deceit?
 And Richard but a ragged fatal rock?
 All these the enemies to our poor bark.
 Say you can swim; alas, 'tis but a while!
 Tread on the sand; why, there you quickly sink: 30
 Bestride the rock; the tide will wash you off,
 Or else you famish; that's a threefold death.
 This speak I, lords, to let you understand,
 If case some one of you would fly from us,
 That there's no hoped-for mercy with the brothers, 35
 More than with ruthless waves, with sands and rocks.
 Why, courage then! what cannot be avoided
 'Twere childish weakness to lament or fear.

Prince. Methinks a woman of this valiant spirit
 Should, if a coward heard her speak these words, 40
 Infuse his breast with magnanimity,
 And make him, naked, foil a man at arms.
 I speak not this as doubting any here;
 For did I but suspect a fearful man,
 He should have leave to go away betimes, 45
 Lest in our need he might infect another,
 And make him of like spirit to himself.
 If any such be here—as God forbid!—
 Let him depart before we need his help.

Oxf. Women and children of so high a courage, 50
 And warriors faint! why, 'twere perpetual shame.

23 *wreck*] Theobald (ed. 2). *Wrack* Ff.

27 *ragged*] Rowe. *raged* Ff.

29 *a while*] *awhile* Knight.

34 *If case*] *In case* F₄.

35 *hoped-for*] *hop'd-for* Ff. *hope for*
 Anon. conj.

O brave young prince! thy famous grandfather
Doth live again in thee: long mayst thou live
To bear his image and renew his glories!

Som. And he that will not fight for such a hope, 55
Go home to bed, and like the owl by day,
If he arise, be mock'd and wonder'd at.

Q. Mar. Thanks, gentle Somerset; sweet Oxford,
thanks.

Prince. And take his thanks that yet hath nothing else.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Prepare you, lords, for Edward is at hand, 60
Ready to fight; therefore be resolute.

Oxf. I thought no less: it is his policy
To haste thus fast, to find us unprovided.

Som. But he's deceived; we are in readiness. 64

Q. Mar. This cheers my heart, to see your forwardness.

Oxf. Here pitch our battle; hence we will not budge.

*Flourish and March. Enter KING EDWARD, GLOUCESTER, CLARENCE,
and Soldiers.*

K. Edw. Brave followers, yonder stands the thorny
wood,
Which, by the heavens' assistance and your strength,
Must by the roots be hewn up yet ere night.
I need not add more fuel to your fire, 70
For well I wot ye blaze to burn them out:
Give signal to the fight, and to it, lords!

67 SCENE VI. Pope.

Flourish and March.] F₁. Martch.

F₂. March. F₃F₄.

Enter King Edward, Gloucester...]

Enter Edward, Richard... Ff. En-

ter...soldiers, on the other side of
the stage. Johnson. Enter at a dis-
tance King Edward and forces,
marching. Capell.

72 [he, and his, draw off. Capell.

Q. Mar. Lords, knights, and gentlemen, what I should

My tears gainsay; for every word I speak,
 Ye see, I drink the water of mine eyes. 75
 Therefore, no more but this: Henry, your sovereign,
 Is prisoner to the foe; his state usurp'd,
 His realm a slaughter-house, his subjects slain,
 His statutes cancell'd, and his treasure spent;
 And yonder is the wolf that makes this spoil. 80
 You fight in justice: then, in God's name, lords,
 Be valiant, and give signal to the fight.

[*Alarum: Retreat: Excursions. Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *Another part of the field.*

Flourish. Enter KING EDWARD, GLOUCESTER, CLARENCE, and soldiers; with QUEEN MARGARET, OXFORD, and SOMERSET, prisoners.

K. Edw. Now here a period of tumultuous broils.
 Away with Oxford to Hames Castle straight:
 For Somerset, off with his guilty head.
 Go, bear them hence; I will not hear them speak. 4

Oxf. For my part, I'll not trouble thee with words.

Som. Nor I, but stoop with patience to my fortune.

[*Exeunt Oxford and Somerset, guarded.*]

Q. Mar. So part we sadly in this troublous world,

73 *I should] should I* F₃F₄.

75 *mine eyes*] (Qq) Capell. *my eye* Ff.

82 *fight] battle* Pope.

SCENE V.] Capell. Pope continues the scene.

Another.....] The same. Another part of them (i.e. the plains). Capell.

Flourish.] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

Enter...prisoners.] Capell. Enter

Edward, Richard, Queene, Clarence, Oxford, Somerset. Ff. See note (x).

1 *Now here]* F₁. *Now here's* F₂F₃F₄. *Lo, here* Capell, from (Qq).

2 *Hames*] (Qq) Ff. *Hammes* Rowe. *Holmes* Hanmer. *Hammes'* Capell. *Ham's* Delius.

6 [*Exeunt...guarded.*] Capell. *Exeunt.* Ff.

To meet with joy in sweet Jerusalem.

K. Edw. Is proclamation made, that who finds Edward
Shall have a high reward, and he his life? 10

Glo. It is: and lo, where youthful Edward comes!

Enter Soldiers, with PRINCE EDWARD.

K. Edw. Bring forth the gallant, let us hear him speak.
What! can so young a thorn begin to prick?
Edward, what satisfaction canst thou make
For bearing arms, for stirring up my subjects, 15
And all the trouble thou hast turn'd me to?

Prince. Speak like a subject, proud ambitious York!
Suppose that I am now my father's mouth;
Resign thy chair, and where I stand kneel thou,
Whilst I propose the selfsame words to thee, 20
Which, traitor, thou wouldst have me answer to.

Q. Mar. Ah, that thy father had been so resolved!

Glo. That you might still have worn the petticoat,
And ne'er have stol'n the breech from Lancaster.

Prince. Let Æsop fable in a winter's night; 25
His currish riddles sort not with this place.

Glo. By heaven, brat, I'll plague ye for that word.

Q. Mar. Ay, thou wast born to be a plague to men.

Glo. For God's sake, take away this captive scold.

Prince. Nay, take away this scolding crook-back rather.

K. Edw. Peace, wilful boy, or I will charm your tongue.

Clar. Untutor'd lad, thou art too malapert. 32

Prince. I know my duty; you are all undutiful:
Lascivious Edward, and thou perjured George,

12 *Enter...*] *Enter Soldiers, with the Prince. Capell. Enter the Prince. Ff.*
[*K. Edward sits. Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).*

16 *the trouble*] *trouble F.*
17 *ambitious*] *ambitions F.*
26 *sort*] *Rowe. sorts (Qq) Ff.*
27 *ye*] *you (Qq) Capell.*
33 *all*] *om. Pope.*

And thou mis-shapen Dick, I tell ye all 35

I am your better, traitors as ye are:

And thou usurpst my father's right and mine.

K. Edw. Take that, thou likeness of this railer here.

[Stabs him.

Glou. Sprawl'st thou? take that, to end thy agony.

[Stabs him.

Clar. And there's for twitting me with perjury. 40

[Stabs him.

Q. Mar. O, kill me too!

Glou. Marry, and shall. [Offers to kill her.

K. Edw. Hold, Richard, hold; for we have done too much.

Glou. Why should she live, to fill the world with words?

K. Edw. What, doth she swoon? use means for her recovery. 45

Glou. Clarence, excuse me to the king my brother; I'll hence to London on a serious matter: Ere ye come there, be sure to hear some news.

Clar. What? what?

Glou. The Tower, the Tower. [Exit. 50

Q. Mar. O Ned, sweet Ned! speak to thy mother, boy! Canst thou not speak? O traitors! murderers! They that stabb'd Cæsar shed no blood at all, Did not offend, nor were not worthy blame,

38, 39 *K. Edw. Take that, thou...here.*

40 [Stabs him.] *Clar. stabs him. Ff.*

Glou. Sprawl'st thou?.....agony.]

44 *fill] file Jackson conj.*

Edw. Take that, the.....here. Rich.

45 *swoon] F₄. swowns F₁F₂. swoun F₃.*

Sprawl'st thou.....agony. Ff. Glo.

48 *some] more Capell, from (Qq).*

Take that, thou...here. K. Edw. And

50 *The Tower, the Tower.] Capell.*

take thou that, to end thy agony.

Tower, the Tower. Ff. The Tower,

Pope.

man, the Tower!—I'll root 'em out.

38 *thou] (Q₃) Rowe. the (Q₁Q₂) Ff.*

Theobald, from (Qq). The Tower,

[Stabs him.] Ff.

man, Tower! Steevens.

39 *[Stabs him.] Rich. stabs him. Ff.*

52 *murderers] F₄. Murtherers F₁F₂F₃.*

If this foul deed were by to equal it: 55
 He was a man; this, in respect, a child:
 And men ne'er spend their fury on a child.
 What's worse than murderer, that I may name it?
 No, no, my heart will burst, an if I speak:
 And I will speak, that so my heart may burst. 60
 Butchers and villains! bloody cannibals!
 How sweet a plant have you untimely cropp'd!
 You have no children, butchers! if you had,
 The thought of them would have stirr'd up remorse:
 But if you ever chance to have a child, 65
 Look in his youth to have him so cut off,
 As, deathsmen, you have rid this sweet young prince!
K. Edw. Away with her; go, bear her hence perforce.
Q. Mar. Nay, never bear me hence, dispatch me here;
 Here sheathe thy sword, I'll pardon thee my death: 70
 What, wilt thou not? then, Clarence, do it thou.
Clar. By heaven, I will not do thee so much ease.
Q. Mar. Good Clarence, do; sweet Clarence, do thou
 do it.
Clar. Didst thou not hear me swear I would not do it?
Q. Mar. Ay, but thou usest to forswear thyself: 75
 'Twas sin before, but now 'tis charity.
 What, wilt thou not? Where is that devil's butcher,
 Hard-favour'd Richard? Richard, where art thou?
 Thou art not here: murder is thy alms-deed;
 Petitioners for blood thou ne'er put'st back. 80
K. Edw. Away, I say; I charge ye, bear her hence.

55 *deed*] *dead* Collier (ed. 2), a misprint.*equal*] *sequel* Collier MS. *rival*
Cartwright conj.58 *murderer*] Johnson. *Murtherer* F₁
F₂F₃. *Murther* F₄.59 *an if*] Hanmer. *and if* Ff.73 *do it*] *it* F₄.

77, 78 See note (xi).

78, 79 *thou? Thou...here:] thou, Thou*
...here? Dyce conj.79 *here:] here?* Vaughan conj.
murder] Johnson. *Murther* Ff.80 *Petitioners*] F₁. *Petitioner* F₂F₃F₄.
put'st] F₁. *pull'st* F₂F₃. *pull'st* F₄.

Q. Mar. So come to you and yours, as to this prince!
 [Exit, led out forcibly.]

K. Edw. Where's Richard gone?

Clar. To London, all in post; and, as I guess,
 To make a bloody supper in the Tower. 85

K. Edw. He's sudden, if a thing comes in his head.
 Now march we hence: discharge the common sort
 With pay and thanks, and let's away to London,
 And see our gentle queen how well she fares:
 By this, I hope, she hath a son for me. [Exeunt. 90

SCENE VI. *London. The Tower.*

Enter KING HENRY and GLOUCESTER, with the Lieutenant, on the walls.

Glou. Good day, my lord. What, at your book so hard?

K. Hen. Ay, my good lord:—my lord, I should say
 rather;

'Tis sin to flatter; 'good' was little better:
 'Good Gloucester' and 'good devil' were alike,
 And both preposterous; therefore, not 'good lord.' 5

Glou. Sirrah, leave us to ourselves: we must confer.
 [Exit Lieutenant.]

K. Hen. So flies the reckless shepherd from the wolf;

82 [Exit.....forcibly.] Capell. Exit
 Queene. Ff.

85 *Tower.*] *Tower?* F₄.

90 [Exeunt.] Rowe. Exit. Ff.

SCENE VI.] Capell. SCENE VII.
 Pope.

London. The Tower.] The Tower
 of London. Pope. A Room in the
 Tower. Capell. See note (XII).

Enter...] Enter Henry the sixth, and
 Richard,... Ff. King Henry is seen
 sitting at his Book, the Lieutenant
 attending. Enter Gloster. Capell.

6 *Sirrah*] F₄. *Sirra* F₁. *Sirra* F₂
 F₃.

[Exit...] Rowe. om. Ff.

7 *reckless*] Hanmer. *wreaklesse* F₁F₂.
wreakless F₃F₄.

So first the harmless sheep doth yield his fleece,
And next his throat unto the butcher's knife.

What scene of death hath Roscius now to act? 10

Glou. Suspicion always haunts the guilty mind;
The thief doth fear each bush an officer.

K. Hen. The bird that hath been limed in a bush,
With trembling wings misdoubteth every bush;
And I, the hapless male to one sweet bird, 15

Have now the fatal object in my eye,
Where my poor young was limed, was caught and kill'd.

Glou. Why, what a peevish fool was that of Crete,
That taught his son the office of a fowl!
And yet, for all his wings, the fool was drown'd. 20

K. Hen. I, Dædalus; my poor boy, Icarus;
Thy father, Minos, that denied our course;
The sun that sear'd the wings of my sweet boy
Thy brother Edward, and thyself the sea
Whose envious gulf did swallow up his life. 25

Ah, kill me with thy weapon, not with words!
My breast can better brook thy dagger's point,
Than can my ears that tragic history.

But wherefore dost thou come? is't for my life?

Glou. Think'st thou I am an executioner? 30

K. Hen. A persecutor, I am sure, thou art:
If murdering innocents be executing,
Why, then thou art an executioner.

Glou. Thy son I kill'd for his presumption.

8 *sheep*] *stock* Rowe. Corrected first
by Capell.
10 *Roscius*] Pope. *Rossius* Ff. *Richard*
Hanmer (Warburton).
now] om. F₄.
15 *male*] *mate* of So quoted by Mason.
mate to Kinnear conj.

17 *limed*] *lim'd* F₁F₄. *limb'd* F₂F₃.
20 *fool*] *fowl* Dyce, ed. 2 (Seymour
conj.), from (Qq).
21 *boy*] *son* (Qq) Capell.
32 *murdering*] *murdr'ring* Johnson.
murthering Ff.
33 *executioner.*] *Executioner* ? F₄.

K. Hen. Hadst thou been kill'd when first thou didst
 presume, 35
 Thou hadst not lived to kill a son of mine.
 And thus I prophesy, that many a thousand,
 Which now mistrust no parcel of my fear,
 And many an old man's sigh and many a widow's,
 And many an orphan's water-standing eye— 40
 Men for their sons, wives for their husbands,
 And orphans for their parents' timeless death—
 Shall rue the hour that ever thou wast born.
 The owl shriek'd at thy birth,—an evil sign;
 The night-crow cried, aboding luckless time; 45
 Dogs howl'd, and hideous tempest shook down trees;
 The raven rook'd her on the chimney's top,
 And chattering pies in dismal discords sung.
 Thy mother felt more than a mother's pain,
 And yet brought forth less than a mother's hope, 50
 To wit, an indigested and deformed lump,
 Not like the fruit of such a goodly tree.

35 *didst*] *did* F₂.

39 *And many*] *In many* Vaughan conj.

41 *Men.....husbands,]* *Wives for their husbands, fathers for their sons,* Anon. conj., from (Qq).

sons,...husbands,] *sonnes,...husbands,* F₁. *sonnes,.....husbands fate,* F₂. *sons,...husbands fate,* F₃F₄. *sons,...husbands' fate,* Warburton. *sons,...husband's fate,* Johnson (a misprint). *sons',...husbands',* Knight. *sons,...husbands mourning,* Keightley. *sons, and for their husbands wives,* Kinneare conj.

42 *And orphans]* F₂F₃F₄. *Orphans* F₁.

45 *aboding...time]* *aboding...tune* (Qq). *a boding...tune* Theobald.

46 *and]* *an* Hanmer.

tempest] *tempests* (Qq) Capell.

47 *rook'd her]* *croak'd hoarse* Warburton. *rock'd her* Johnson conj. *croak'd her* Capell. *ruck'd her* Steevens conj. *reek'd her* Anon. conj. *roop'd high* Bubier conj. *roosted* or *crooked* Anon. conj. (Gent. Mag., 1789).

48 *discords]* *discord* (Qq) Grant White.

51 *To wit, an...lump,]* F₁. *To wit, an indigested deformed lump* F₂F₃. *To wit, an indigested deform'd lump* F₄. *To wit, an undigested deformed lump* Capell, from (Qq). *To wit, an indigest deformed lump* Malone. *To wit, An indigested and deformed lump* Dyce, ed. 1 (in two lines). *To wit,]* om. Dyce, ed. 2 (Capell conj.).

Teeth hadst thou in thy head when thou wast born,
 To signify thou camest to bite the world:
 And, if the rest be true which I have heard, 55
 Thou camest—

Glou. I'll hear no more: die, prophet, in thy speech:
 [Stabs him.]

For this, amongst the rest, was I ordain'd.

K. Hen. Ay, and for much more slaughter after this.
 O, God forgive my sins, and pardon thee! [Dies. 60

Glou. What, will the aspiring blood of Lancaster
 Sink in the ground? I thought it would have mounted.
 See how my sword weeps for the poor king's death!
 O, may such purple tears be always shed
 From those that wish the downfall of our house! 65
 If any spark of life be yet remaining,
 Down, down to hell; and say I sent thee thither:

[Stabs him again.]

I, that have neither pity, love, nor fear.
 Indeed, 'tis true that Henry told me of;
 For I have often heard my mother say 70
 I came into the world with my legs forward:
 Had I not reason, think ye, to make haste,
 And seek their ruin that usurp'd our right?
 The midwife wonder'd, and the women cried
 'O, Jesus bless us, he is born with teeth!' 75
 And so I was; which plainly signified
 That I should snarl and bite and play the dog.
 Then, since the heavens have shaped my body so,
 Let hell make crook'd my mind to answer it.

56 *Thou camest—*] *Thou cam'st—* Ff.

Thou cam'st into the world (Qq).

*Thou cam'st into the world with thy
 legs forward.* Theobald. *Thou cam'st
 into the world with thy feet foremost
 (or forward)* Vaughan conj.

57 *I'll.....speech:]* One line in Pope.

Two in Ff.

60 *O, God!* O! *God* Hanmer. *O God*
 Ff. *O God,* Rowe.

79 After this line, Theobald inserts from
 (Qq) *I had no father, I am like no
 father.*

I have no brother, I am like no brother ; 80
 And this word 'love,' which greybeards call divine,
 Be resident in men like one another,
 And not in me : I am myself alone.
 Clarence, beware ; thou keep'st me from the light :
 But I will sort a pitchy day for thee ; 85
 For I will buz abroad such prophecies
 That Edward shall be fearful of his life,
 And then, to purge his fear, I'll be thy death.
 King Henry and the prince his son are gone :
 Clarence, thy turn is next, and then the rest, 90
 Counting myself but bad till I be best.
 I'll throw thy body in another room,
 And triumph, Henry, in thy day of doom.

[Exit, with the body.]

SCENE VII. *London. The palace.*

Flourish. Enter KING EDWARD, QUEEN ELIZABETH, CLARENCE, GLOUCESTER, HASTINGS, a Nurse with the young Prince, and Attendants.

K. Edw. Once more we sit in England's royal throne,
 Re-purchased with the blood of enemies.
 What valiant foemen, like to autumn's corn,
 Have we mow'd down in tops of all their pride !

84 *keep'st*] F₃F₄. *keep'st* F₁F₂.

93 *thy*] the Pope.

[Exit, with the body.] Capell. Exit.

Ff.

SCENE VII.] Capell. SCENE VIII.

Pope.

London...] The Palace in London.

Theobald. The same. A Room of

State in the Palace. Capell.

Flourish.] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

a Nurse with the young Prince,]

Edd., from (Qq). Nurse, Ff.

King Edward is seen sitting in his

Throne ; The Queen, with the infant

Prince in her Arms, Clarence,

and Others, by him : to them, Gloucester.

Capell.

1 *in*] on Rowe.

4 *tops*] top Rowe

Three Dukes of Somerset, threefold renown'd 5
 For hardy and undoubted champions;
 Two Cliffords, as the father and the son;
 And two Northumberlands; two braver men
 Ne'er spurr'd their coursers at the trumpet's sound;
 With them, the two brave bears, Warwick and Montague,
 That in their chains fetter'd the kingly lion, 11
 And made the forest tremble when they roar'd.
 Thus have we swept suspicion from our seat,
 And made our footstool of security.

Come hither, Bess, and let me kiss my boy. 15
 Young Ned, for thee, thine uncles and myself
 Have in our armours watch'd the winter's night,
 Went all afoot in summer's scalding heat,
 That thou mightst repossess the crown in peace:
 And of our labours thou shalt reap the gain. 20

Glou. [*Aside*] I'll blast his harvest, if your head were
 laid;

For yet I am not look'd on in the world.
 This shoulder was ordain'd so thick to heave;
 And heave it shall some weight, or break my back:
 Work thou the way,—and thou shalt execute. 25

K. Edw. Clarence and Gloucester, love my lovely
 queen;
 And kiss your princely nephew, brothers both.

- 5 *renown'd*] Rowe. *renownd* (Q₁Q₂).
renownd (Q₃). *Renowns*, F₁F₂. *Re-*
nown, F₃F₄.
 6 *undoubted*] *redoubted* Capell conj.
undaunted Anon. conj.
 10 *With them,*] In a separate line, S.
 Walker conj.
 14 [*Enter Gloster behind.* Collier (Col-
 lier MS.).
 15 *kiss*] *kifs* F₂.
 17 *winter's*] *Winters* F₁. *Winter* F₂F₃F₄.
 20 *gain*] *grain* Collier conj.
 21—25 [*Aside.*] Rowe.
 25 *and*] See note (XIII).
thou shalt] (Qq) Capell. *that shalt*
 F₁F₂. *that shall* F₃F₄. *this shall*
 Johnson conj.
execute.] *execute...* [*Aside.* Keight-
 ley.
 [*Pointing to his head.* Hanmer.
 27 *kiss*] F₄. *kis* F₁F₂. *kiss* F₃. See
 note (XIII).

Clar. The duty that I owe unto your majesty
I seal upon the lips of this sweet babe.

Q. Eliz. Thanks, noble Clarence; worthy brother,
thanks. 30

Glou. And, that I love the tree from whence thou
sprang'st,

Witness the loving kiss I give the fruit.

[*Aside*] To say the truth, so Judas kiss'd his master,
And cried, 'all hail!' when as he meant all harm.

K. Edw. Now am I seated as my soul delights, 35
Having my country's peace and brothers' loves.

Clar. What will your grace have done with Margaret?
Reignier, her father, to the King of France
Hath pawn'd the Sicils and Jerusalem,
And hither have they sent it for her ransom. 40

K. Edw. Away with her, and waft her hence to France.
And now what rests but that we spend the time
With stately triumphs, mirthful comic shows,
Such as befits the pleasure of the court?
Sound drums and trumpets! farewell sour annoy! 45
For here, I hope, begins our lasting joy. [*Exeunt.*]

28 *unto*] om. F₃F₄.

30 *Q. Eliz.*] Queen. (Qq) Theobald.
Cla. F₁. *Clar.* F₂. King. F₃F₄.
See note (xiv).

Thanks] F₃F₄. *Thanks* F₁. *Thankes*
F₂.

33, 34 [*Aside*] Rowe.

38 *Reignier*] Rowe. *Ranard* (Q₁Q₂).
Reynard (Q₃) Ff.

42 [rising. Capell.

44 *befits the pleasure of the*] Ff. *befits*
the pleasures of the (Qq). *befit the*
pleasure of the Pope. befit the plea-
tures of a Capell. befit the pleasures
of the Steevens (1778).
court!] Rowe. *Court.* Ff.

46 [*Exeunt.*] *Exeunt omnes.* Ff.

NOTES.

NOTE I.

II. 1. 95. Pope and Hanmer make no new scene here, although they evidently intended to do so, as the next scene is marked as Scene III. In Theobald, as usual, the scenes are not numbered.

NOTE II.

II. 2. 89. In this passage the lines 89—92 are given to 'Cla.' in the first Folio, and to 'George' in the Quartos; but it is evident that Shakespeare, by altering 'his brother' in line 92 to 'me,' intended the whole to be spoken by Edward. This is another instance of Shakespeare's haste in remodelling the older plays.

NOTE III.

II. 5. 92, 93. Capell follows Hanmer in adopting the reading of the Quartos. We retain the reading of the Folios, because the alteration merely transfers the difficulty of explanation from one line to another.

NOTE IV.

III. 1. As Sinklo is certainly the name of an Actor, who is mentioned in the stage directions in the *Taming of the Shrew* (Ind. i. 86), and in *Henry IV.* Pt. II. (Act v. Sc. 4), there is great probability that Humfrey is the name of another Actor, perhaps, as Malone suggests, Humfrey Jeaffes. Neither of these is mentioned in the list of 'Principall Actors' prefixed to the first Folio.

NOTE V.
www.libtool.com.cn

iv. 1. 20—23. The following is the arrangement of these lines in the Folios:

‘Not I: no:
God forbid, that I should wish them seuer’d,
Whom God hath ioyn’d together:
I, and ’twere pittie, to sunder them,
That yoake so well together.’

Pope reads:

‘Not I; no: God forbid that I should wish
Them severed whom God hath join’d together.
Pity to sunder them, that yoak so well.’

NOTE VI.

iv. 2. 13. The reading ‘overture’ first appears in Warburton’s edition, being probably a misprint. Johnson adopts it, but suggests the true reading ‘coverture,’ without giving any indication that this was the reading in all the Folios and in all the editions before Warburton’s. We give this as one of the many instances of the carelessness with which Johnson’s work was done.

NOTE VII.

iv. 8. In the Folios, Somerset is introduced in the stage direction, though he had gone with young Richmond into Brittany. The mistake arose from the Quartos in which Scene VI. and Scene VIII. form but one.

NOTE VIII.

v. 1. 44. This conjecture of Warburton’s, which as he does not mention it in his edition we have marked ‘withdrawn,’ is found in a series of unpublished letters from Theobald to Warburton recently¹ added to the treasures of the British Museum. The first of these letters is dated Feb. 10, 1729, and the last Sep. 4, 1736. That in which

¹ Written in 1864.

allusion is made to the passage in question is dated March 10, 1732. Theobald rejects Warburton's suggestion, for, he says, 'Deck' is 'a county dialect, meaning the same thing. Among the MSS. recently acquired by the Museum is a series of letters from Hanmer to Warburton beginning Dec. 24, 1735, and ending May 25, 1739. In a letter dated July 27, 1737, Hanmer mentions his conjectural reading 'truss' for 'cost' (l. 1. 268) which he afterwards inserted in the text of his edition. He defends it thus: 'when a hawk raiseth a fowl aloft and soaring upwards with it at length seizeth it in the air, she is said to *truss* the fowl, which I imagine is the word which the poor desponding king was made here to apply to his crown.'

NOTE IX.

v. 2. 48. The first Folio, which the later Folios copy *verbatim* but not *literatim*, reads as follows:

'Oh farewell *Warwicks*.

Warw. Sweet rest his Soule:

Flye Lords, and saue your selues,

For *Warwicks* bids you all farewell, to meet in Heauen.'

Pope reads:

'O farewel Warwick.

War. Sweetly rest his soul!

Fly lords and save your selves, for Warwick bids

You all farewel, to meet again in heaven.'

Capell:

'O, farewel, Warwick!

War. Sweet rest his soul!—Fly, lords, and save yourselves;

For Warwick bids farewel, to meet in heaven.'

Rann:

'O, farewel, Warwick!

War. Sweet rest his soul!—

Fly, lords, and save yourselves; Warwick bids you

All farewel—to meet in heaven.'

In his edition of 1778 Steevens followed Pope's arrangement; restoring, however, 'Sweet' for 'Sweetly' and omitting 'again.'

Steevens in later editions gives :

'O, farewell, Warwick !

War. Sweet rest to his soul!—

Fly, lords, and save yourselves; for Warwick bids

You all farewell to meet again in heaven.'

The arrangement which we have adopted is exactly that of the Quartos. Mr Collier was the first of modern editors to introduce it in his text.

NOTE X.

v. 5. We have adhered in the stage directions as nearly as possible to the Folios, which throughout the play mark no division of the scenes, except at the end of an Act. Rowe first omitted the *Exeunt*. Theobald, who also continued the scene, gave *Alarm. Retreat. Excursions. Both Parties go out. Re-enter King Edward, &c.*

Capell first made a new scene here and, altering the relative position of the stage directions, gave *Exeunt both the Armies. Scene v. Alarums; Excursions; afterwards a Retreat. Then, Enter, as from Conquest, King Edward, &c.*

Capell's arrangement has, as usual, been followed by subsequent editors.

NOTE XI.

v. 5. 77, 78.

'Where is that devil's butcher,
Hard-favour'd Richard? Richard, where art thou?'

The reading we have given in the text is that of Steevens (1778), which appears to be nearest the corresponding passage of the Quartos.

The first Folio has :

'Where is that diuels butcher *Richard?*
Hard fauor'd *Richard?* *Richard,* where art thou?'

The second Folio :

'Where is that divels butcher *Richard*
Hard favor'd *Richard?* *Richard,* where art thou?'

The third and fourth put a comma after the first '*Richard,*' the third reading 'devils,' the fourth 'devil's.' Rowe follows the Folios.

Pope has:

www.libtool.com.cn 'where is that Devil's butcher,
Richard? hard-favour'd Richard, where art thou?'

Theobald:

'where is that Devil-butcher,
Richard? hard-favour'd Richard, where art thou?'

Capell:

'Where is that butcher, Richard?
Hard-favour'd Richard? Richard, where art thou?'

NOTE XII.

v. 6. We have retained the stage direction of the Folios 'on the walls' instead of adopting Capell's alteration 'a Room in the Tower', as it seems likely that the mistake lies in the expression 'another room' (l. 92) which was retained from the older play, the author forgetting that he had changed the scene to the walls.

NOTE XIII.

v. 7. 25. The copy of the first Folio belonging to Lord Ellesmere has in this place 'add' for 'and.' In line 27, the same copy reads 'tis' for 'kis,' which latter is the word found so far as we know in all other copies.

NOTE XIV.

v. 7. 30. Steevens says: 'In my copy of the second Folio, which had belonged to King Charles the First, his Majesty has erased *Clæ.* and written *King*, in its stead. Shakespeare, therefore, in the catalogue of his restorers may boast a Royal name.'

www.libtool.com.cn

KING RICHARD III.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ¹.

- KING EDWARD the Fourth.
 EDWARD, Prince of Wales, afterwards King Edward V., } sons to
 RICHARD, Duke of York, } the King.
 GEORGE, Duke of Clarence,
 RICHARD, Duke of Gloucester, afterwards } brothers to the King.
 King Richard III.,
- A young son of Clarence.
 HENRY, Earl of Richmond, afterwards King Henry VII.
 CARDINAL BOURCHIER², Archbishop of Canterbury.
 THOMAS ROTHERHAM, Archbishop of York.
 JOHN MORTON, Bishop of Ely.
 DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.
 DUKE OF NORFOLK.
 EARL OF SURREY, his son.
 EARL RIVERS, brother to Elizabeth.
 MARQUIS OF DORSET and LORD GREY, sons to Elizabeth.
 EARL OF OXFORD.
 LORD HASTINGS.
 LORD STANLEY, called also EARL OF DERBY.
 LORD LOVEL.
 SIR THOMAS VAUGHAN.
 SIR RICHARD RATCLIFF.
 SIR WILLIAM CATESBY.
 SIR JAMES TYRREL.
 SIR JAMES BLOUNT.
 SIR WALTER HERBERT.
 SIR ROBERT BRAKENBURY, Lieutenant of the Tower.
 SIR WILLIAM BRANDON.
 CHRISTOPHER URSWICK, a priest. Another Priest.
 TRESSEL³ and BERKELEY, gentlemen attending on the Lady Anne.
 Lord Mayor of London. Sheriff of Wiltshire.
 ELIZABETH, queen to King Edward IV.
 MARGARET, widow of King Henry VI.
 DUCHESS OF YORK, mother to King Edward IV.
 LADY ANNE, widow of Edward Prince of Wales, son to King
 Henry VI.; afterwards married to Richard.
 A young daughter of Clarence (MARGARET PLANTAGENET).
 Ghosts of those murdered by Richard III., Lords and other Attendants;
 a Pursuivant, Scrivener, Citizens, Murderers, Messengers, &c.

SCENE : *England.*

¹ DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.] First given, imperfectly, by Rowe.

² BOURCHIER,] Capell. BOUCHIER, Knight.

³ TRESSEL] TRUSSEL French conj.

THE TRAGEDY
OF
KING RICHARD III.

ACT I.

SCENE I. *London. A street.*

Enter RICHARD, DUKE OF GLOUCESTER, *solus.*

Glou. Now is the winter of our discontent
 Made glorious summer by this sun of York ;
 And all the clouds that lour'd upon our house
 In the deep bosom of the ocean buried.
 Now are our brows bound with victorious wreaths ; 5
 Our bruised arms hung up for monuments ;
 Our stern alarums changed to merry meetings,
 Our dreadful marches to delightful measures.
 Grim-visaged war hath smooth'd his wrinkled front ;
 And now, instead of mounting barbed steeds 10

THE TRAGEDY...] See note (1).

London. A street.] Capell. The Court. Pope.

1 *our*] Q₁Q₂Ff. om. Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈.
sour Strutt conj.

2 *sun*] Rowe. *sonne* Qq. *Son* Ff.

3 *lour'd*] *lowrd* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅. *lowr'd*
Q₆Ff. *low'r* Q₇. *lowr* Q₈.

4 *bosom*] *bowels* Q₈.

buried.] *buried*, Vaughan conj.

7 *alarums*] *alarmes* Q₁.

8 *measures*] *pleasures* Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈.

9 *wrinkled*] *wringled* Q₃Q₄Q₅.

10 *instead*] Q₆Q₈. *in steed* Q₁F₂. *in*
sted Q₇. *in steed* The rest.

To fright the souls of fearful adversaries,
 He capers nimbly in a lady's chamber
 To the lascivious pleasing of a lute.
 But I, that am not shaped for sportive tricks,
 Nor made to court an amorous looking-glass ; 15
 I, that am rudely stamp'd, and want love's majesty
 To strut before a wanton ambling nymph ;
 I, that am curtail'd of this fair proportion,
 Cheated of feature by dissembling nature,
 Deform'd, unfinish'd, sent before my time 20
 Into this breathing world, scarce half made up,
 And that so lamely and unfashionable
 That dogs bark at me as I halt by them ;
 Why, I, in this weak piping time of peace,
 Have no delight to pass away the time, 25
 Unless to spy my shadow in the sun,
 And descant on mine own deformity :
 And therefore, since I cannot prove a lover,
 To entertain these fair well-spoken days,
I am determined to prove a villain, 30
 And hate the idle pleasures of these days.
 Plots have I laid, inductions dangerous,
 By drunken prophecies, libels and dreams,
 To set my brother Clarence and the king

11 *souls*] *fouls* Warburton conj.13 *lute*] Ff. *loue* Qq.14 *shaped for*] *shap'd for* Ff. *shapte*
for Q₁Q₂Q₃. *sharpe* for Q₄Q₅. *sharpe*
of Q₆Q₇Q₈. *shapte of* quoted in
Steevens's reprint.15 *Nor*] *Not* Q₂.*looking-glass*] *looking lass* Vaughan
conj.16 *majesty*] *grace* Hanmer.18 *of this*] *thus of* Collier MS. *of his*
Vaughan conj.21 *world, scarce*] *world*; *scarce* Pope.*scarce*] om. Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈.22 *unfashionable*] *unfashionably* Pope.23 *by them*] *at them* Q₇Q₈.24 *Why*] *While* Q₈.26 *spy*] Qq. *see* Ff.27 *on*] *one* Q₇.29 *days*] *dames* Malone conj.31 *hate*] *bate* Johnson conj.32 *inductions*] *inductiones* Q₁Q₂.33 *By...dreams.*] Transferred to follow
line 35 by Johnson.

In deadly hate the one against the other : 35
 And if King Edward be as true and just
 As I am subtly, ~~false~~ and ~~treacherous~~,
 This day should Clarence closely be mew'd up,
 About a prophecy, which says that G
 Of Edward's heirs the murderer shall be. 40
 Dive, thoughts, down to my soul : here Clarence comes.

Enter CLARENCE, guarded, and BRAKENBURY.

Brother, good day : what means this armed guard
 That waits upon your grace ?

Clar. His majesty,
 Tendering my person's safety, hath appointed
 This conduct to convey me to the Tower. 45

Glou. Upon what cause ?

Clar. Because my name is George.

Glou. Alack, my lord, that fault is none of yours ;
 He should, for that, commit your godfathers :
 O, belike his majesty hath some intent
 That you shall be new-christen'd in the Tower. 50
 But what's the matter, Clarence ? may I know ?

Clar. Yea, Richard, when I know ; for I protest
 As yet I do not : but, as I can learn,

38 *Clarence*] *Gloster* Browne conj.
mew'd] *mewed* Q₁Q₂Q₃.

39, 40 *About...be.*] Omitted by Pope.

39 *a prophecy*] *adprohesie* Q₄Q₆.

40 *murderer*] Steevens (1778). *mur-*
therers Q₁Q₂. *murtherer* The rest.

41 *Dive...comes.*] One line in Ff. Two
 in Qq.

42 *Enter.....*] Rowe (ed. 2). Enter
 Clarence, and Brakenbury, guarded.
 Ff. Enter Clarence with a guard
 of men. Qq (gard Q₁Q₂).
day] *dayes* Qq (*daies* Q₆).

43—45 *His...Tower.*] As in Pope. Two
 lines, the first ending *appointed*, in

Qq. Two lines, the first ending
safety, in Ff.

48 *godfathers*] Q₁Q₂Q₃F₁. *good fathers*
 Q₄Q₆Q₆. *god fathers* Q₇. *Grand-*
fathers F₂F₃F₄. *god-fathers* Q₈.
godfather quoted in Steevens's re-
 print.

49 *O, belike*] *Belike* Pope.

50 *shall be*] Qq (*shalbe* Q₁). *should be*
 Ff.

51 *what's*] Ff. *whats* Q₁Q₂. *what is*
 The rest.

52 *I know*] *I doe know* Q₆Q₇Q₈.
for] Qq. *but* Ff.

He hearkens after prophecies and dreams ;
 And from the cross-row plucks the letter G, 55
 And says a wizard told him that by G
 His issue disinherited should be ;
 And, for my name of George begins with G,
 It follows in his thought that I am he.
 These, as I learn, and such like toys as these 60
 Have moved his highness to commit me now.

Glou. Why, this it is, when men are ruled by women :
 'Tis not the king that sends you to the Tower ;
 My Lady Grey his wife, Clarence, 'tis she
 That tempers him to this extremity. 65
 Was it not she and that good man of worship,
 Anthony Woodville, her brother there,
 That made him send Lord Hastings to the Tower,
 From whence this present day he is deliver'd ?
 We are not safe, Clarence ; we are not safe. 70

Clar. By heaven, I think there's no man is secure,
 But the queen's kindred and night-walking heralds,
 That trudge betwixt the king and Mistress Shore.
 Heard ye not what an humble suppliant
 Lord Hastings was to her for his delivery ? 75

59 *It follows*] *If follows* F₂. *It follows*
 Q₆.

60 *like*] om. F₃F₄.

61 *Have*] Qq F₄. *Hath* F₁F₂F₃.

65 *tempers him to this*] Q₁. *tempts him*
to this Q₂Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈. *tempts him*
to this Q₃. *tempts him to this harsh*
 Ff. *tempts him now to this* Anon.
 MS. apud Halliwell.

67 *Woodville*] F₂F₃. *Woodvile* Qq.
Woodeulle F₁. *Woodvil* F₄. *Woode-*
ville Capell.

her] *he her* Hanmer. *her same* Col-
 lier MS.

68, 69 *Tower, ... deliver'd ?*] *Tower, ...*
deliuered? Qq. *Tower! ... deliuered?*

F₁. *Tower! ... delivered.* F₂F₃F₄.

69 *present*] om. Rowe.

71 *heaven*] *heavens* So quoted by
 Vaughan.

there's no man is secure] Capell.

there is no man is securde Q₁Q₂Q₅.

there is no man securde Q₄. *there*

is no man securde Q₆. *there is no*

man secur'd Q₆Q₇. *there is no man*

secure Ff. *there is no man securd* Q₆.

there's no man is secured Vaughan

conj.

73 *trudge betwixt*] *truge betweene* Q₇Q₈.

74 *ye*] *you* FfQ₇Q₈.

75 *was to her for his*] Qq. *was, for her*

F₁. *was, for his* F₂F₃. *was for his* F₄.

Glou. Humbly complaining to her deity
 Got my lord chamberlain his liberty.
 I'll tell you what; I think it is our way,
 If we will keep in favour with the king,
 To be her men and wear her livery : 80
 The jealous o'erworn widow and herself,
 Since that our brother dubb'd them gentlewomen,
 Are mighty gossips in this monarchy.

Brak. I beseech your graces both to pardon me ;
 His majesty hath straitly given in charge 85
 That no man shall have private conference,
 Of what degree soever, with his brother.

Glou. Even so ; an't please your worship, Brakenbury,
 You may partake of any thing we say :
 We speak no treason, man : we say the king 90
 Is wise and virtuous, and his noble queen
 Well struck in years, fair, and not jealous ;
 We say that Shore's wife hath a pretty foot,
 A cherry lip, a bonny eye, a passing pleasing tongue ;
 And that the queen's kindred are made gentle-folks : 95

76, 77 *Humbly...liberty.*] Continued to
 Clarence. Johnson conj.

76 *Humbly*] *Humble* Q₆Q₆.

78 *it is*] *it were* Q₇Q₆.

83 *this*] Qq. *our* Ff.

84 *I beseech*] *I beg* Pope. *Beseech* Dyce
 (ed. 2).

87 *his*] Qq. *your* Ff.

88 *Even so ;...worship.*] *Euen so...wor-*
ship Qq. *Euen so...Worship* F₁F₂F₃.
Euen so...worship, F₄. *Ev'n so...wor-*
ship? Johnson. *Ev'n so?...wor-*
ship, Capell.

an't] Pope. *and or &* QqFf. *an*
 Capell.

Brakenbury] Ff. *Brokenbury* Qq
 (and *passim*).

89 *partake*] *partake* Q₁.

91 *his*] *the* Q₇Q₆.

92 *struck*] Steevens (1778). *stroke* Q₁.
strook F₃F₄. *strooke* Therest. *stricken-*
 Jackson conj.

fair, and not jealous] *fair, and not*
over-jealous Hanmer. *yet fair still,*
and not jealous Capell. *fair, lov-*
ing, and not jealous Seymour conj.
jealous] *iealious* F₁. *jealious* F₂.

94 *A...tongue;*] One line in QqFf; two,
 the first ending *lip*, in Steevens (1793).

cherry] *chery* Q₇Q₆.
lip,] *lip, fair forehead, dimpled*
cheeks, Seymour conj.

a bonny eye,] Omitted by Pope. *a*
boony eye Becket conj.

pleasing] om. Vaughan conj.

95 *And that the*] *That the* Rowe. *And*
the Steevens (1793).

gentle-folks] *gentle-folk* Theobald.

How say you, sir? can you deny all this?

Brak. With this, my lord, myself have nought to do.

Glou. Nought to do with Mistress Shore! I tell thee,
fellow,

He that doth naught with her, excepting one,

Were best he do it secretly alone. 100

Brak. What one, my lord?

Glou. Her husband, knave: wouldst thou betray me?

Brak. I beseech your grace to pardon me, and withal
Forbear your conference with the noble duke. 104

Clar. We know thy charge, Brakenbury, and will obey.

Glou. We are the queen's subjects, and must obey.

Brother, farewell: I will unto the king;

And whatsoever you will employ me in,

Were it to call King Edward's widow sister,

I will perform it to enfranchise you. 110

Meantime, this deep disgrace in brotherhood

Touches me deeper than you can imagine.

Clar. I know it pleaseth neither of us well.

- 97 *have]* *hath* Q₇Q₈.
nought] Q₁Q₆FfQ₇Q₈. *naught* The rest.
- 98, 99 *Naught...naught]* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₆
Ff. *Nought...nought* Q₇Q₈. *Nought*
...naught Pope.
- 98—100 *Naught...alone.]* Arranged as
in Qq. The lines end *Shore?...her*
...alone, in Ff. See note (II).
- 100 *Were best he do]* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇.
were best to do FfQ₈. *'Twere best he*
do Capell.
secretly alone] QqFf. *secretly, alone*
Steevens. *secretly* :—*ay, one* Jack-
son conj.
- 101, 102 *Brak. What.....me?]* om. Q₁.
102 *me?]* *me? ha?* Capell.
- 103, 104 *I...duke.]* Arranged as by Ca-
pell. The first line ends *forbear*
in Qq. As three lines in Ff,
ending *Grace...forbear...Duke*.
- 103 *I beseech]* Qq. *I do beseech* Ff.
Beseech Dyce (ed. 2).
- 103, 104 *and withal Forbear]* *And to for-
bear* Pope.
- 104 *conference]* *conferencs* Rowe (ed. 1).
conferences Rowe (ed. 2).
noble] om. Pope.
- 105 *We know...obey.]* *We're the King's*
subjects, and we will obey. Seymour
conj.
will] om. Wordsworth.
- 106 *objects]* *objects* Jackson conj.
- 108 *whatsoever you will]* Qq. *whatso're*
you will Ff. *whatsoever you'll* Ca-
pell.
- 111 *in]* QqF₁. of F₂F₃F₄.

Glow. Well, your imprisonment shall not be long;
I will deliver you, or else lie for you: 115
Meantime, have patience.

Clar. I must perforce. Farewell.

[*Exeunt Clarence, Brakenbury, and Guard.*]

Glow. Go tread the path that thou shalt ne'er return,
Simple, plain Clarence! I do love thee so,
That I will shortly send thy soul to heaven,
If heaven will take the present at our hands. 120
But who comes here? the new-deliver'd Hastings?

Enter LORD HASTINGS.

Hast. Good time of day unto my gracious lord!

Glow. As much unto my good lord chamberlain!
Well are you welcome to the open air.
How hath your lordship brook'd imprisonment? 125

Hast. With patience, noble lord, as prisoners must:
But I shall live, my lord, to give them thanks
That were the cause of my imprisonment.

Glow. No doubt, no doubt; and so shall Clarence too;
For they that were your enemies are his, 130
And have prevail'd as much on him as you.

Hast. More pity that the eagle should be mew'd,
While kites and buzzards prey at liberty.

Glow. What news abroad?

- | | |
|--|---|
| 115 <i>or else</i>] Ff. or Qq. (Embrace him) Collier MS. | 124 <i>Well are you</i>] <i>Well, are you</i> Q ₁ . <i>Well, you are</i> Q ₈ . |
| 116 S. Walker would end the line at <i>perforce</i> . <i>perforce</i>] <i>perforce</i> Q ₆ . <i>Farewell.</i>] om. Hanmer. | <i>the</i>] Q ₁ Q ₂ . <i>this</i> The rest. |
| [<i>Exeunt...</i>] Capell. Exit <i>Clar.</i> , or Exit <i>Cl.</i> QqFf. | 132 <i>eagle</i>] Qq. <i>Eagles</i> Ff. <i>mew'd</i>] Ff. <i>mew'd</i> Qq. |
| 117 <i>ne'er</i>] <i>neare</i> Q ₂ . | 133 <i>While</i>] Qq. <i>Whiles</i> Ff. <i>kites</i>] <i>keihts</i> Q ₁ . <i>kights</i> Q ₂ . |
| 120 <i>our</i>] <i>my</i> Hanmer. | <i>buzzards</i>] <i>bussards</i> Q ₁ Q ₂ . <i>buzars</i> Q ₃ Q ₄ Q ₅ . <i>Buzards</i> F ₁ . |
| 121 <i>new-deliver'd</i>] <i>new deliuered</i> QqFf. <i>Hastings</i>] <i>Hastings</i> . Q ₇ Q ₈ . | <i>prey</i>] Qq. <i>play</i> Ff. |
| | 134 <i>What</i>] <i>The times are bad, my lord</i> ; <i>what</i> Seymour conj. |

Hast. No news so bad abroad as this at home; 135
The king is sickly, weak, and melancholy,
And his physicians fear him mightily.

Glou. Now, by Saint Paul, this news is bad indeed.
O, he hath kept an evil diet long,
And overmuch consumed his royal person: 140
'Tis very grievous to be thought upon.
What, is he in his bed?

Hast. He is.

Glou. Go you before, and I will follow you. [*Exit Hastings.*]
He cannot live, I hope; and must not die, 145
Till George be pack'd with post-horse up to heaven.
I'll in, to urge his hatred more to Clarence,
With lies well steel'd with weighty arguments;
And, if I fail not in my deep intent,
Clarence hath not another day to live: 150
Which done, God take King Edward to his mercy,
And leave the world for me to bustle in!
For then I'll marry Warwick's youngest daughter.
What though I kill'd her husband and her father?
The readiest way to make the wench amends 155
Is to become her husband and her father:
The which will I; not all so much for love,
As for another secret close intent,
By marrying her which I must reach unto.
But yet I run before my horse to market: 160

138 *Saint Paul*] *Qq.* *S. Iohn Ff.*
this] *Qq.* *that Ff.*

139 *an evil*] *on ill Q7.* *an ill Q8.*

142 *What, is he*] *Q4Q5Q6.* *What is he*
Q1Q3Q3Q7. *Where is he, Ff.* *What!*
is he Q8.

143 *He is*] *He is, my lord Hanmer.*

146 *post-horse*] *post haste Collier, ed. 2*
(Collier MS.).

148 *With*] *Which Q6F3F4.*

154 *kill'd*] *kill Q7Q8.*

159 *By marrying her which I...*] *Which*
I, by marrying her,..... Hanmer.
Which I must reach unto—by mar-
ring her. Anon. conj. Which I must
reach unto by marrying her Keight-
ley.
marrying] *marring Q7.*

Clarence still breathes ; Edward still lives and reigns :
When they are gone, then must I count my gains. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II. *The same. Another street.*

Enter the corpse of KING HENRY the Sixth, Gentlemen with halberds to guard it ; LADY ANNE being the mourner.

Anne. Set down, set down your honourable load—
If honour may be shrouded in a hearse—
Whilst I awhile obsequiously lament
The untimely fall of virtuous Lancaster.
Poor key-cold figure of a holy king ! 5
Pale ashes of the house of Lancaster !
Thou bloodless remnant of that royal blood !
Be it lawful that I invoke thy ghost,
To hear the lamentations of poor Anne,
Wife to thy Edward, to thy slaughtered son, 10
Stabb'd by the selfsame hand that made these wounds !
Lo, in these windows that let forth thy life
I pour the helpless balm of my poor eyes.
Cursed be the hand that made these fatal holes !

161 *breathes.....reigns] lives, Edward still raignes Q₇Q₈ (Edward Q₇).*

The same. Another street.] Capell. Changes to a street. Theobald.

Enter the corpse of King Henry...]

Enter the Coarse of Henrie... Ff.

Enter Lady Anne with the hearse of Harry the 6. Qq (Henry the sixt Q₇Q₈).

Gentlemen] om. QqFf.

1 *Anne.] Ff. Lady An. Q₁Q₂. Lady.*

Q₇. La. Q₈. Lady Anne. The rest.

Set...set] Sit...sit Q₂.

load] Ff. lo: Q₁ (Bodl.). lord The rest.

3 *Whilst] Q₁Q₈. Whilst Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₈. Whilst FfQ₇.*

4 *[Bearers set down the Coffin. Capell.*

5 *key-cold] clay-cold Hanmer.*

8 *Be it] Be 't Hanmer.*

10 *slaughtered] slaughtred Q₈Q₄Q₆Ff. slaughter'd Pope.*

11 *hand] Ff. hands Qq. wounds] Ff. holes Qq.*

12 *these] Ff. those Qq.*

13 *balm] blame Q₆Q₈Q₇.*

14 *Cursed] Curst Qq. O cursed Ff.*

these fatal] Q₁Q₈. the fatall Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈. these Ff.

Cursed be the heart that had the heart to do it! 15
 Cursed the blood that let this blood from hence!
 More direful hap betide that hated wretch,
 That makes us wretched by the death of thee,
 Than I can wish to adders, spiders, toads,
 Or any creeping venom'd thing that lives! 20
 If ever he have child, abortive be it,
 Prodigious, and untimely brought to light,
 Whose ugly and unnatural aspect
 May fright the hopeful mother at the view;
 And that be heir to his unhappiness! 25
 If ever he have wife, let her be made
 As miserable by the death of him,
 As I am made by my poor lord and thee!
 Come, now towards Chertsey with your holy load,
 Taken from Paul's to be interred there; 30
 And still, as you are weary of the weight,
 Rest you, whiles I lament King Henry's corse.

Enter GLOUCESTER.

Glou. Stay, you that bear the corse, and set it down.

Anne. What black magician conjures up this fiend,

- 15 *Cursed be*] *Curst be* Qq. *Cursed* Ff. *do it*] *do 't* S. Walker conj.
 16 *Cursed...hence!*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.
 19 *adders, spiders*] Qq. *Wolues, to Spiders* Ff.
 21 *be it*] *be 't* S. Walker conj.
 25 *And...unhappiness*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.
 26 *made*] *mad*: Q₆. *mad*, Q₇.
 27, 28 *As...As I*] Qq. *More...Then I* Ff (*Than* F₄).
 27 *death*] *life* Blackstone conj. *health* Vaughan conj., reading *More...Than* &c.
 28 *poor*] Qq. *young* Ff.
 29 *towards*] *toward* Steevens (1778). *Chertsey*] *Chertley* Q₆Q₇. *Chersey* Q₈.
 31 *weary*] *awearie* Q₈. *a wearie* Q₄Q₅ Q₆.
the] Qq. *this* Ff.
 32 *whiles*] *while* Pope.
corse] *fate* Daniel conj.
 [Bearers take up the Corpse, and move forward. Capell.
 33 *Enter Gloucester.*] *Enter Gloucester* (or *Gloster*). Qq. *Enter Richard Duke of Gloster.* Ff.
corse] *course* Q₄.
 34 &c. *Anne.*] Ff. *La.* Qq.

To stop devoted charitable deeds? 35

Glou. Villains, set down the corse; or, by Saint Paul,
I'll make a corse of him that disobeys.

Gent. My lord, stand back, and let the coffin pass.

Glou. Unmanner'd dog! stand thou, when I command:
Advance thy halberd higher than my breast, 40
Or, by Saint Paul, I'll strike thee to my foot,
And spurn upon thee, beggar, for thy boldness.

Anne. What, do you tremble? are you all afraid?
Alas, I blame you not; for you are mortal,
And mortal eyes cannot endure the devil. 45
Avaunt, thou dreadful minister of hell!

Thou hadst but power over his mortal body,
His soul thou canst not have; therefore, be gone.

Glou. Sweet saint, for charity, be not so curst.

Anne. Foul devil, for God's sake, hence, and trouble
us not; 50

For thou hast made the happy earth thy hell,
Fill'd it with cursing cries and deep exclaims.
If thou delight to view thy heinous deeds,
Behold this pattern of thy butcheries.
O, gentlemen, see, see! dead Henry's wounds 55
Open their congeal'd mouths and bleed afresh.
Blush, blush, thou lump of foul deformity;
For 'tis thy presence that exhales this blood
From cold and empty veins, where no blood dwells;

35 *deeds!*] *deedes.* Q₁.

36 *Villains*] F₁F₃F₄. *Villaines* F₁.
Villaine Qq.

38 *My lord,*] om. Q₆Q₇Q₈.

39 *Unmanner'd...command:]* One line
in Qq. Two in Ff.

Unmanner'd] *Unmannerly* Q₃.
stand] *stand'st* F₁Q₈.

40 *halberd*] Capell. *halbert* QqFf.

42 [Corpse set down. Capell.

46 *dreadful*] *fearefull* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

48 *have*] *hurt* Hanmer.

50 *Foul...not;]* One line in Qq. Two
in Ff, the first ending *Diuell*.
and] om. Pope.

59 *where...dwells*] *whence...wells* War-
burton conj.

Thy deed, inhuman and unnatural, 60
Provokes this deluge most unnatural.

O God, which this blood madest, revenge his death!
O earth, which this blood drink'st, revenge his death!
Either heaven with lightning strike the murderer dead,
Or earth, gape open wide and eat him quick, 65
As thou dost swallow up this good king's blood,
Which his hell-govern'd arm hath butchered!

Glou. Lady, you know no rules of charity,
Which renders good for bad, blessings for curses.

Anne. Villain, thou know'st no law of God nor man:
No beast so fierce but knows some touch of pity. 71

Glou. But I know none, and therefore am no beast.

Anne. O wonderful, when devils tell the truth!

Glou. More wonderful, when angels are so angry.
Vouchsafe, divine perfection of a woman, 75
Of these supposed evils, to give me leave,
By circumstance, but to acquit myself.

Anne. Vouchsafe, defused infection of a man,
For these known evils, but to give me leave,
By circumstance, to curse thy cursed self. 80

Glou. Fairer than tongue can name thee, let me have
Some patient leisure to excuse myself.

Anne. Fouler than heart can think thee, thou canst make

- | | |
|---|---|
| 60, 61 <i>deed...Provokes</i>] Qq. <i>Deeds...</i> | 73 <i>truth</i>] <i>troth</i> Q ₁ . |
| <i>Provokes</i> F ₁ F ₂ F ₃ . <i>deeds...Provokes</i> | 75 <i>Vouchsafe</i>] <i>Voutsafe</i> Q ₁ . |
| F ₄ . | 76 <i>evils</i>] Qq. <i>Crimes</i> Ff. |
| 63 <i>revenge</i>] <i>revenges</i> Q ₅ . | 78 <i>Vouchsafe</i>] <i>Voechsaf</i> Q ₂ . |
| 64 <i>Either heaven</i>] <i>Either, heaven</i> , Capell. | <i>defused</i>] Qq. <i>defus'd</i> F ₁ F ₂ . <i>diffus'd</i> |
| <i>Either</i>] Or Pope. | F ₃ F ₄ . |
| 65 <i>earth</i> ,] F ₂ F ₄ . <i>earth</i> QqF ₁ F ₂ . | <i>a man</i>] <i>man</i> F ₁ . |
| 66 <i>dost</i>] <i>didst</i> Q ₆ Q ₇ Q ₈ . | 79, 80 <i>For...curse</i>] <i>Of...accuse</i> Spedding |
| 67 <i>his</i>] <i>this</i> F ₂ F ₄ . | conj. |
| 68 <i>rules</i>] <i>rule</i> Q ₇ Q ₈ . | 79 <i>For</i>] Qq. <i>Of</i> Ff. |
| 69 <i>renders</i>] <i>render</i> Q ₇ Q ₈ . | 83, 84 <i>Fouler...thyself.</i>] As in Qq. As |
| 70 <i>know'st</i>] <i>knowest</i> Q ₁ Q ₂ . | three lines in Ff, ending <i>thee</i> ,..... |
| <i>no</i>] Qq. <i>nor</i> Ff. | <i>currant</i> ,... <i>thy self</i> . |

No excuse current, but to hang thyself.

Glou. By such despair, I should accuse myself. 85

Anne. And, by despairing, shouldst thou stand excused
For doing worthy vengeance on thyself,
Which didst unworthy slaughter upon others.

Glou. Say that I slew them not?

Anne. Why, then they are not dead :
But dead they are, and, devilish slave, by thee. 90

Glou. I did not kill your husband.

Anne. Why, then he is alive.

Glou. Nay, he is dead ; and slain by Edward's hand.

Anne. In thy foul throat thou liest : Queen Margaret
saw

Thy murderous falchion smoking in his blood ;
The which thou once didst bend against her breast, 95
But that thy brothers beat aside the point.

Glou. I was provoked by her slanderous tongue,
Which laid their guilt upon my guiltless shoulders.

Anne. Thou wast provoked by thy bloody mind,
Which never dreamt on aught but butcheries : 100
Didst thou not kill this king?

84 *current, but to*] *that will be currant,*
Unless thou Rowe.

86 *shouldst*] Qq. *shalt* Ff.

88 *Which*] Qq. *That* Ff.

didst] *diddest* Q₄Q₅.

89 *not* f] Q₂. *not.* The rest.

Why...dead:] Qq. *Then say they*
were not slain: Ff.

Why, then] *Then Seymour conj.*

91 *Why...alive.]* *Then he lives.* Seymour
conj.

92 *hand*] Qq. *hands* Ff.

93 *In thy...saw*] One line in Qq. Two
in Ff.

foul] *soul's* Malone.

94 *murderous*] *mur'drous* Ff. *bloody*
Q₁Q₂. *bloody* Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆. *bloody*
Q₇Q₈.

95 *didst*] *did* Q₂.

96 *thy brothers*] *thy brother* Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆.
my brother Q₇Q₈.

97 *provoked*] *provok'd* F₄.

98 *Which*] Qq. *That* Ff.

their] *her* Q₇Q₈.

guilt] *guift* Q₆.

100 *Which*] Qq. *That* Ff.

dreamt] Qq. *dream'st* Ff.

ought] Theobald. *ought* QqFf.

101 *king* f] *king.* Q₁.

Glou. I grant ye.

Anne. Dost grant me, hedgehog? then, God grant me too

Thou mayst be damned for that wicked deed!

O, he was gentle, mild, and virtuous! 104

Glou. The fitter for the King of heaven, that hath him.

Anne. He is in heaven, where thou shalt never come.

Glou. Let him thank me, that help to send him thither;
For he was fitter for that place than earth.

Anne. And thou unfit for any place but hell. 109

Glou. Yes, one place else, if you will hear me name it.

Anne. Some dungeon.

Glou. Your bed-chamber.

Anne. Ill rest betide the chamber where thou liest!

Glou. So will it, madam, till I lie with you.

Anne. I hope so.

Glou. I know so. But, gentle Lady Anne,
To leave this keen encounter of our wits, 115
And fall somewhat into a slower method,
Is not the causer of the timeless deaths
Of these Plantagenets, Henry and Edward,
As blameful as the executioner?

grant] *grant it* Perring conj.

ye] Ff. *yea* Q₁Q₂. *ye* The rest.

ye, yea Ritson conj.

102 *Dost...too*] One line in Qq. Two in Ff.

Dost grant] *Dost grant 't* Perring conj.

hedgehog f] Pope. *hedghogge* Q₁.

Hedge-hogge, F₁F₂. *Hedge-hog*, F₃.

Hedg-hog, F₄. *hedghog*, The rest.

103 *damned*] *damn'd* F₄.

105 *fitter*] Qq. *better* Ff.

107 *holp*] *help'd* Pope.

110 *you*] *ye* Q₃Q₄Q₅.

111 *Some dungeon*. *Glou. Your*] *Some dungeon, perhaps*. *Glou. Your Steevens* conj. *Some dungeon then*. *Glou. No, lady; your Seymour* conj.

bed-chamber] *bed-chamber, gentle lady* Taylor conj. MS.

114 *I know*] *And I know* Hanmer.

115 *keen*] Q₁F₃F₄. *keene* F₁F₂. *kinde* Q₂. *kind* The rest.

our] *your* Q₇Q₈.

116 *somewhat*] Qq. *something* Ff.

117 *timeless*] *teem-lesse* Q₄.

119 *executioner* f] *executioner*. Q₁F₁.

Anne. Thou art the cause, and most accursed effect.

Glou. Your beauty was the cause of that effect; 121
Your beauty, which did haunt me in my sleep
To undertake the death of all the world,
So I might live one hour in your sweet bosom.

Anne. If I thought that, I tell thee, homicide, 125
These nails should rend that beauty from my cheeks.

Glou. These eyes could never endure sweet beauty's
wreck;
You should not blemish it, if I stood by:
As all the world is cheered by the sun,
So I by that; it is my day, my life. 130

Anne. Black night o'ershade thy day, and death thy
life!

Glou. Curse not thyself, fair creature; thou art both.

Anne. I would I were, to be revenged on thee.

Glou. It is a quarrel most unnatural,
To be revenged on him that loveth you. 135

Anne. It is a quarrel just and reasonable,
To be revenged on him that slew my husband.

Glou. He that bereft thee, lady, of thy husband,
Did it to help thee to a better husband. 139

Anne. His better doth not breathe upon the earth.

120 *art*] Qq. *was't* F₁F₂F₃. *wast* F₄.
cause, and...effect.] *cause, and...th'*
effect. Hanmer. *cause of that most*
curst effect. Edwards conj.

122 *which*] Qq. *that* Ff.

124 *live*] Ff. *rest* Qq. *lie* Lettsom
conj.

one] *that* Q₆Q₈Q₇Q₈.

126 *These*] *My* quoted in Steevens's re-
print.

rend] Qq. *rent* Ff.

my] *their* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

127 *never*] Qq. *not* Ff.

sweet] Qq. *y'* F₁F₂. *that* F₃F₄.
wreck] Theobald (ed. 2). *wrack* QqFf.

128 *it*] Ff. *them* Qq.

129 *cheered*] *cleared* Q₇Q₈.

131 *o'ershade*] *ore-shade* F₁F₂. *o're-shade*
F₃F₄. *overshade* or *overshad* Qq.

132 *Curse...both.*] One line in Qq. Two
in Ff.

135 *you*] Qq. *thee* Ff.

137 *that*] *tha* Q₆.

slew] Qq. *kill'd* Ff.

138 *thee*] QqF₄. *the* F₁F₂F₃.

Glou. He lives that loves you better than he could.

Anne. Name him.

Glou. www.libtool.com Plantagenet.

Anne. Why, that was he.

Glou. The selfsame name, but one of better nature.

Anne. Where is he?

Glou. Here. [*She spitteth at him.*] Why dost thou spit at me?

Anne. Would it were mortal poison, for thy sake! 145

Glou. Never came poison from so sweet a place.

Anne. Never hung poison on a fouler toad.

Out of my sight! thou dost infect my eyes.

Glou. Thine eyes, sweet lady, have infected mine.

Anne. Would they were basilisks, to strike thee dead!

Glou. I would they were, that I might die at once; For now they kill me with a living death.

Those eyes of thine from mine have drawn salt tears,

Shamed their aspect with store of childish drops:

These eyes, which never shed remorseful tear,

155

No, when my father York and Edward wept,

To hear the piteous moan that Rutland made

When black-faced Clifford shook his sword at him;

Nor when thy warlike father, like a child,

141 *He*] Ff. *Go to, he* Q₁Q₂. *Go too,*
he The rest.

you] Qq. *thes* Ff.

142 *Why, that*] *Why that* Q₁Q₂Ff.
Why what The rest.

144 *he*] *he*. Q₁.

Glou.] Glo. Qq. Rich. F₁F₃F₄. om.
F₂.

Here...me] As in Pope. Two lines
in QqFf.

[*She spitteth at him.*] Spits at him.

Ff. *She spittes at him.* Q₈.

thou] om. Q₇Q₈.

me] *me*. Q₁F₁. *him?* Q₈.

146 *a place*] *place* Rowe (ed. 1).

148 *my*] Qq. *mine* Ff.

152 *they*] *thy* Q₆.

kill] *kils* F₂.

154 *aspect*] Qq. *Aspects* Ff.

drops.] Q₁Q₂Q₃Ff. *drops.* Q₄. *drops,*
Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈.

155—166 *These...weeping.*] Omitted in
Qq.

156 *No,*] *Not* Pope.

159 *thy*] F₁F₂. *my* F₃F₄.

Told the sad story of my father's death, 160
 And twenty times made pause to sob and weep,
 That all the standers-by had wet their cheeks,
 Like trees bedash'd with rain: in that sad time
 My manly eyes did scorn an humble tear;
 And what these sorrows could not thence exhale, 165
 Thy beauty hath, and made them blind with weeping.
 I never sued to friend nor enemy;
 My tongue could never learn sweet smoothing words;
 But, now thy beauty is proposed my fee, 169
 My proud heart sues, and prompts my tongue to speak.

[*She looks scornfully at him.*]

Teach not thy lips such scorn, for they were made
 For kissing, lady, not for such contempt.
 If thy revengeful heart cannot forgive,
 Lo, here I lend thee this sharp-pointed sword;
 Which if thou please to hide in this true bosom, 175
 And let the soul forth that adareth thee,
 I lay it naked to the deadly stroke,
 And humbly beg the death upon my knee.

[*He lays his breast open: she offers at it with his sword.*]

Nay, do not pause; for I did kill King Henry,
 But 'twas thy beauty that provoked me. 180
 Nay, now dispatch; 'twas I that stabb'd young Edward,

167 *friend*] *friends* Q₆. *frinds* Q₇Q₈.
 168 *smoothing*] FfQ₇Q₈. *soothing* The
 rest.
words] Qq. *word* Ff.
 169 *fee*] Ff. *fee*: Qq.
 170 [*She looks...*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.
 171 *thy*] *my* Q₇Q₈.
lips...they were] Qq. *lip...it was*
 Ff.
 173 [*kneels, and gives his sword.* Capell.
 175 *this true*] *true this* Q₈.
bosom] Qq. *brest* F₁F₂. *breast* F₃F₄.

176 *forth*] *fourth* F₂.
adareth] *adorneth* Q₇Q₈.
 177 *the*] *thy* Q₆Q₇Q₈F₃.
 178 *knee*] *knees* Q₈.
 [*He lays...at it...*] F₂F₃F₄. He
 layes...at... F₁.
 179 *for...Henry*] Ff. *twas I that kild*
your husband Qq.
 181 *'twas...Edward*] Ff. *twas I that*
kild king Henry Qq.
 [*offers at it again.* Capell.

But 'twas thy heavenly face that set me on.

[Here she lets fall the sword.

Take up the sword again, or take up me.

Anne. Arise, dissembler: though I wish thy death,
I will not be the executioner. 185

Glou. Then bid me kill myself, and I will do it.

Anne. I have already.

Glou. Tush, that was in thy rage:
Speak it again, and, even with the word,
That hand, which, for thy love, did kill thy love,
Shall, for thy love, kill a far truer love; 190
To both their deaths shalt thou be accessory.

Anne. I would I knew thy heart.

Glou. 'Tis figured in my tongue.

Anne. I fear me both are false.

Glou. Then never man was true. 195

Anne. Well, well, put up your sword.

Glou. Say, then, my peace is made.

Anne. That shall you know hereafter.

Glou. But shall I live in hope?

Anne. All men, I hope, live so. 200

Glou. Vouchsafe to wear this ring.

- 182 [Here...] Qq. She fals the Sword. Ff. 192—201 *I would ... ring.*] Steevens (1793) arranges as six lines of verse, ending *figur'd in...man... sword...know...men...ring.*
- 183 *the sword*] *thy sword* Q₈.
- 185 *the*] Qq. *thy* Ff.
- 186 (Take the sword) Collier MS. 195 *never man was*] *never was man* Q₁ Q₂. *man Was never* Steevens (1793).
- 187 *Tush, that was*] Qq. *That was* Ff. 198 *shall you*] Qq. *shalt thou* Ff.
- Tush 'twas* Anon. conj. 199 *shall I...hope* F] F₂F₃F₄. *shall I... hope.* Q₁F₁. *I shall.....hope.* The rest.
- 188 *the word*] *thy word* F₂F₃F₄. (Sheathe it) Collier MS.
- 189 *That*] Qq. *This* Ff. 201 *Glou.*] *Gol.* Q₂. *Glo.* Q₁Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₆ Q₇Q₈. om. Ff, continuing the speech to Anne.
- for thy love*] *for my love* Q₆. *Vouchsafe*] *Voutsafe* Q₁.
- 191 *shalt thou*] Q₁Ff. *thou shalt* The rest.
- be*] by Q₆.
- 192 *I knew*] *know* Q₇Q₈.

Anne. To take is not to give.

Glou. Look, how this ring encompasseth thy finger,
Even so thy breast encloseth my poor heart ;
Wear both of them, for both of them are thine. 205
And if thy poor devoted suppliant may
But beg one favour at thy gracious hand,
Thou dost confirm his happiness for ever.

Anne. What is it ? 209

Glou. That it would please thee leave these sad designs
To him that hath more cause to be a mourner,
And presently repair to Crosby Place ;
Where, after I have solemnly interr'd
At Chertsey monastery this noble king,
And wet his grave with my repentant tears, 215
I will with all expedient duty see you :
For divers unknown reasons, I beseech you,
Grant me this boon.

Anne. With all my heart ; and much it joys me too,
To see you are become so penitent. 220
Tressel and Berkeley, go along with me.

Glou. Bid me farewell.

Anne. 'Tis more than you deserve ;
But since you teach me how to flatter you,
Imagine I have said farewell already. 224

[*Exeunt Lady Anne, Tressel, and Berkeley.*]

202 *Anne. To take...give.]* *La. To take*
...give. Qq. Omitted in Ff.

[*She puts on the ring.* Johnson.

203 *this]* Qq. *my* F₁. *thy* F₂F₃F₄.

thy] QqF₁. *my* F₂F₃F₄.

[*putting it on.* Capell.

204 *my]* *me* Q₆Q₈.

205 *Wear]* *Were* Q₄Q₆Q₆Q₇Q₈.

206 *devoted suppliant:]* Q₁. *devoted Ser-*
vant Ff. *suppliant* The rest.

208 *his]* *this* F₂F₄.

209 *What]* *Wat* Q₃.

210 *would]* Qq. *may* Ff.

thee] Qq. *you* Ff.

211 *more]* Qq. *most* Ff.

212 *Place]* Qq. *House* Ff.

221 *Tressel]* Ff. *Tressill* Qq. *Trassel*
Rowe (ed. 2).

Berkeley] *Barkley* Q₁Q₂Ff. *Bartley*
Q₃Q₄. *Bartly* Q₆Q₆Q₇Q₈.

224 [*Exeunt...*] *Exit* two with *Anne.*
Ff (Ex. F₄). *Exit.* Qq.

Glo. Sirs, take up the corse.

Gent. Towards Chertsey, noble lord?

Glo. No, to White-Friars; there attend my coming.
[*Exeunt all but Gloucester.*]

Was ever woman in this humour woo'd?

Was ever woman in this humour won?

I'll have her; but I will not keep her long.

What! I, that kill'd her husband and his father, 230

To take her in her heart's extremest hate,

With curses in her mouth, tears in her eyes,

The bleeding witness of her hatred by;

Having God, her conscience, and these bars against me,

And I nothing to back my suit at all, 235

But the plain devil and dissembling looks,

And yet to win her, all the world to nothing!

Ha!

Hath she forgot already that brave prince,

Edward, her lord, whom I, some three months since, 240

Stabb'd in my angry mood at Tewksbury?

A sweeter and a lovelier gentleman,

225 *Glo. Sirs...corse*] Omitted in Ff.

Glo. Take up the Coarse Hammer.

Glo. Take up the corse, sirs Capell.

corse] *course* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

lord f] *Lord.* Q₁.

226 *No,*] Q₁Q₂. *No:* Q₆Q₄Q₆Q₆F₁. *No*

Q₇Q₈. *Now* F₂F₃F₄.

[*Exeunt...*] *Exeunt.* manet Gl. Qq.

Exit Coarse. Ff.

227 *woo'd* f] *woed,* Q₁.

228 *won* f] *wonne:* Q₁.

230 *What! I, that*] *What I that* Q₁Q₂

Q₄Q₆Q₈. *What I? that* Q₈. *What?*

I that F₁F₂. *What I have* Q₇.

What? I have Q₈F₃F₄.

his father] Q₁Q₂Ff. *her father* The rest.

231 *hate*] Q₁Ff. *heate* The rest.

233 *her*] Qq. *my* Ff.

234 *Having*] *With* Pope.

235 *nothing*] Qq. *no Friends* Ff.

at all] Q₁Q₂. *withall* Q₃Q₄ (B. Mus.)

Q₆Q₆FfQ₇Q₈. *with all* Q₄ (Bodl.).

236 *looks,*] *lookes,* Qq. *lookes?* Ff.

237 *her, all...to nothing*] *her all...to*

nothing. Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₈. *her all...to*

nothing? Q₆. *her?* *All...to no-*

thing. Ff. *her all...is nothing?* Q₇

Q₈.

238 *Ha*] *Hah!* Ff. *Hah* Q₁. *Hah?*

The rest (at end of line 237, in

Qq).

241 *Tewksbury* f] *Tewxbery,* Q₁.

242 *A...lovelier*] *As sweet and as lovelie*
a Vaughan conj.

a lovelier] *lovelier* Q₇Q₈.

Framed in the prodigality of nature,
 Young, valiant, wise, and, no doubt, right royal,
 The spacious world cannot again afford : 245
 And will she yet debase her eyes on me,
 That cropp'd the golden prime of this sweet prince,
 And made her widow to a woful bed?
 On me, whose all not equals Edward's moiety?
 On me, that halt and am unshapen thus ? 250
 My dukedom to a beggarly denier,
 I do mistake my person all this while :
 Upon my life, she finds, although I cannot,
 Myself to be a marvellous proper man.
 I'll be at charges for a looking-glass, 255
 And entertain some score or two of tailors,
 To study fashions to adorn my body :
 Since I am crept in favour with myself,
 I will maintain it with some little cost.
 But first I'll turn yon fellow in his grave ; 260
 And then return lamenting to my love.
 Shine out, fair sun, till I have bought a glass,
 That I may see my shadow as I pass. [Exit.

244 *valiant, wise*] *wise and valiant*
 Pope. *valiant, wise, kind* S. Walk-
 er conj.

royal] *loyal* Johnson conj.

245 *world*] *word* F₂.

246 *ye!*] QqF₁. om. F₂. *thus* F₃F₄.
now Collier MS.

debase] *debase* Q₁Q₈. *abase* Ff.

247 *the*] *he* Q₈.

248 *bed f*] *bed*, Q₁.

249 *moiety*] *moity* Qq. *moytie* Ff.

250 *halt*] Qq. *halts* Ff.

unshapen] Qq. *mishapen* Ff.

251 *to a*] *to be a* Q₆Q₆Q₇. *to bee a* Q₈.

denier] *taniere* Warburton conj.

255 *charges*] *charge* Q₈.

256 *some score*] Qq. *a score* Ff.

257 *adorn*] *adore* Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₈.

259 *some*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *a* The rest.

260 *yon*] *you* Q₄Q₆Q₈.

in] *into* Hanmer.

262 *bought*] *brought* Q₈.

SCENE III. *The palace.*www.libtool.com.cn*Enter* QUEEN ELIZABETH, LORD RIVERS, and LORD GREY.

Riv. Have patience, madam: there's no doubt his
majesty

Will soon recover his accustom'd health.

Grey. In that you brook it ill, it makes him worse:
Therefore, for God's sake, entertain good comfort,
And cheer his grace with quick and merry words. 5

Q. Eliz. If he were dead, what would betide of me?

Riv. No other harm but loss of such a lord.

Q. Eliz. The loss of such a lord includes all harm.

Grey. The heavens have bless'd you with a goodly son,
To be your comforter when he is gone. 10

Q. Eliz. Oh, he is young, and his minority
Is put unto the trust of Richard Gloucester,
A man that loves not me, nor none of you.

Riv. Is it concluded he shall be protector?

Q. Eliz. It is determined, not concluded yet: 15
But so it must be, if the king miscarry.

Enter BUCKINGHAM and DERBY.

Grey. Here come the lords of Buckingham and Derby.

- | | |
|--|---|
| The palace.] Theobald. | 8 <i>harm</i>] <i>harme</i> Qq. <i>harnes</i> F ₁ F ₂ F ₃ . |
| <i>Enter</i> Queen Elizabeth,...] <i>Enter</i> | <i>harnes</i> F ₄ . |
| the Queene Mother... Ff. <i>Enter</i> | 11 <i>Oh</i>] Qq. <i>Ah</i> Ff. |
| Queene, Lord Rivers, and Gray. | 12 <i>unto</i>] in Q ₁ Q ₂ . <i>into</i> Theobald. <i>under</i> . |
| Qq (and om. Q ₁ Q ₂). | Anon. conj. |
| 1 <i>there's</i>] <i>there is</i> F ₄ . | <i>Richard</i>] FfQ ₈ . <i>Rich.</i> The rest. |
| 3 <i>brook</i>] <i>boroke</i> Q ₂ . | 14 <i>Is it</i>] <i>It is</i> Q ₂ Q ₃ Q ₈ . |
| <i>it ill, it</i>] <i>it, ill it</i> Q ₁ . | 17 Derby.] Ff. Darby. Qq. Stanley. |
| 5 <i>with</i>] om. Q ₁ . | Theobald (and <i>passim</i>). See note |
| <i>words</i>] Qq. <i>eyes</i> Ff. | (III). |
| 6 <i>If...me</i>] Repeated in F ₁ . | 17 <i>come the lords</i>] Q ₁ Q ₂ . <i>comes the</i> |
| <i>of</i>] Qq. <i>on</i> Ff. | <i>Lords</i> Q ₃ Q ₄ Q ₆ Q ₇ Q ₈ . <i>comes the Lord</i> |
| <i>me</i>] <i>me.</i> Q ₁ . | Ff. |
| 7 Riv.] Ry. or Ri. Qq. Gray. Ff. | |

Buck. Good time of day unto your royal grace!

Der. God make your majesty joyful as you have been!

Q. Eliz. The Countess Richmond, good my Lord of Derby,

20

To your good prayers will scarcely say amen.
Yet, Derby, notwithstanding she's your wife,
And loves not me, be you, good lord, assured
I hate not you for her proud arrogance.

Der. I do beseech you, either not believe
The envious slanders of her false accusers;
Or, if she be accused in true report,
Bear with her weakness, which, I think, proceeds
From wayward sickness, and no grounded malice.

29

Riv. Saw you the king to-day, my Lord of Derby?

Der. But now the Duke of Buckingham and I
Are come from visiting his majesty.

Q. Eliz. What likelihood of his amendment, lords?

Buck. Madam, good hope; his grace speaks cheerfully.

Q. Eliz. God grant him health! Did you confer with him?

35

Buck. Madam, we did: he desires to make atonement
Betwixt the Duke of Gloucester and your brothers,
And betwixt them and my lord chamberlain;

21 *prayers*] *prayer* Ff.

scarcely] *scarce* Q₁Q₂.

24 *arrogance*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *arrogancy* Q₆.

arrogancie The rest.

25 *do beseech*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *beseech* The rest.

26 *false accusers*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *accusers* The rest.

27 *in*] Qq. *on* Ff.

30 Riv.] Q_r. Ry. Q₁. Qu. Ff. Ri.
The rest.

of] om. Q₆Q₇Q₈.

32 *Are come*] Ff. *Came* Qq. *Come*

Vaughan conj.

33 *What*] *With* Q₁Q₂.

34 *speaks*] *speaketh* Q₅.

35 *him* ?] *him*. Q₁.

36 *Madam, we did*] *Madame we did* Qq.

I Madam, F₁F₂F₃. *I, Madam*, F₄.

Ay, madam, Caspell. *We did, madam*:

Anon. conj.

he] om. F₄.

desires] *seeks* Pope.

to make] *make* Q₄.

37, 38 *Betwixt...betwixt*] Qq. *Betweene...betweens* Ff.

And sent to warn them to his royal presence.

Q. Eliz. Would all were well! but that will never be:
I fear our happiness is at the highest. 41

Enter GLOUCESTER, HASTINGS, and DORSET.

Glou. They do me wrong, and I will not endure it:
Who are they that complain unto the king,
That I, forsooth, am stern and love them not?
By holy Paul, they love his grace but lightly. 45
That fill his ears with such dissentious rumours.
Because I cannot flatter and speak fair,
Smile in men's faces, smooth, deceive and cog,
Duck with French nods and apish courtesy,
I must be held a rancorous enemy. 50
Cannot a plain man live and think no harm,
But thus his simple truth must be abused
By silken, sly, insinuating Jacks?

Riv. To whom in all this presence speaks your grace?

Glou. To thee, that hast nor honesty nor grace. 55
When have I injured thee? when done thee wrong?
Or thee? or thee? or any of your faction?

39 *to warn*] *to warn* Q₄.
to his] *ot his* Q₆. *of his* Q₇Q₈.

41 *highest*] Qq. *height* Ff.

Enter...] *Enter* Richard; Hastings, and Dorset, with him. Capell. *Enter* Gloucester. Qq. *Enter* Richard. Ff. Collier MS. adds 'stamping angrily.' *Enter* Gloucester and Hastings. Hamner.

43 *are they that complain*] Q₈. *are they that complaines* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₈Q₇. *is it that complaines* Ff.

43, 44 *king,...not?*] Ff. *King,...not:* Q₁. *King? !...not:* the rest.

44 *and*] om. Q₆Q₇Q₈.

45 *holy*] *wholy* Q₆.

46 *dissentious*] *discentions* Q₈.

47 *speak*] *speake* Qq. *looks* Ff.

48 *smooth*] *sooth* Theobald conj.

52 *his simple*] *in simple* Q₆Q₇Q₈. *in simpla* Q₆.

53 *By*] Qq. *With* Ff.

54 *Riv.*] Ry. or Ri. Qq. Grey. F₁F₂. Gray. F₃F₄.

whom] *home* Q₆Q₇. *who* F₁.

all] om. Q₆Q₇Q₈.

55 *hast nor*] *hast not* Q₄. *hasth no* Q₇Q₈.

57 *faction*] *faction:* Q₁.

A plague upon you all! His royal person—
Whom God preserve better than you would wish!—
Cannot be quiet scarce a breathing-while, 60
But you must trouble him with lewd complaints.

Q. Eliz. Brother of Gloucester, you mistake the matter.
The king, of his own royal disposition,
And not provoked by any suitor else;
Aiming, belike, at your interior hatred, 65
Which in your outward actions shows itself
Against my kindred, brothers, and myself,
Makes him to send; that thereby he may gather
The ground of your ill-will, and to remove it.

Glou. I cannot tell: the world is grown so bad, 70
That wrens make prey where eagles dare not perch:
Since every Jack became a gentleman,
There's many a gentle person made a Jack.

Q. Eliz. Come, come, we know your meaning, brother
Gloucester;
You envy my advancement and my friends': 75
God grant we never may have need of you!

58 *person*] Qq. *Graces* Ff.
59 *would*] can Q₇Q₈.
61 *lewd*] *loud* Taylor conj. MS.
63 *of*] Qq. *on* Ff.
64 *provoked*] *provokes* Q₈.
66 *Which...actions*] Qq. *That...action*
Ff.
67 *kindred*] Q₁Q₆Q₇Q₈. *kinred* Q₂Q₃Q₄
Q₅. *children* Ff.
brothers] Ff. *brother* Qq.
68, 69 *Makes...to remove it.*] Q₁Q₂Q₃
Q₄Q₆. *Makes...grounds...to remove*
it. Q₅. *Makes him to send, that he*
may learn the ground. Ff (omit-
ting of...it.). *Makes...whereby wee*
...ground...to remove it. Q₇Q₈. *Makes*
him to send, that he may learn the

ground Of your ill will, and there-
by to remove it. Pope (so Spedding
conj., reading *may remove* with
Hanmer). *Hath sent for you, that*
he may learn the ground Of your
ill will, and thereby may remove it.
Hanmer. *Hath sent for you; that*
thereby he may gather The ground
of your ill will, and so remove it.
Capell. *Makes...gather...so remove*
it. Steevens.
68 *him*] *time* Vaughan conj.
71 *make*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *may* Q₃Q₄Q₆. *way*
Q₇Q₈.
75 *my advancement*] Q₁Ff. *mine ad-*
vancement The rest.
friends] Knight. *friends* QqFf.

Glou. Meantime, God grants that we have need of you :
 Our brother is imprison'd by your means,
 Myself disgraced, and the nobility
 Held in contempt ; whilst many fair promotions 80
 Are daily given to ennoble those
 That scarce, some two days since, were worth a noble.

Q. Eliz. By Him that raised me to this careful height
 From that contented hap which I enjoy'd,
 I never did incense his majesty 85
 Against the Duke of Clarence, but have been
 An earnest advocate to plead for him.
 My lord, you do me shameful injury,
 Falsely to draw me in these vile suspects.

Glou. You may deny that you were not the cause 90
 Of my Lord Hastings' late imprisonment.

Riv. She may, my lord, for—

Glou. She may, Lord Rivers ! why, who knows not so ?
 She may do more, sir, than denying that :
 She may help you to many fair preferments ; 95
 And then deny her aiding hand therein,
 And lay those honours on your high deserts.
 What may she not ? She may, yea, marry, may she,—

Riv. What, marry, may she ?

Glou. What, marry, may she ! marry with a king,
 A bachelor, a handsome stripling too : 101

77 *grants*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *grant* The rest.
we] Qq. *I* Ff.

78 *imprison'd*] Ff. *imprisoned* Qq.

80 *whilst many fair*] Qq. *while great*
 Ff. *while many fair* Pope.

89 *in...suspects*] *in, such vile suspect* Q₇
 Q₈.
vile] *wild* Pope.

90 *deny that you were not*] *deny too that*
you were Hanmer.
cause] Qq. *means* Ff.

92 *lord, for—*] Ff. *Lord.* Qq.

95 *fair*] om. Q₇Q₈.

97 *deserts*] Qq. *desert* Ff.

98 *What may*] *What my* Q₅.
not] *not*, Q₁Q₂F₁F₂.

yea] Qq. *I* Ff. *ay* Rowe.

she,—] *she—* Pope. *she*, F₂ *she*.
 The rest.

99 *she*] *she*. Q₁.

101 *a handsome*] Qq. *and a handsome*
 Ff.

I wis your grandam had a worsere match.

Q. Eliz. My Lord of Gloucester, I have too long borne
Your blunt upbraidings and your bitter scoffs :
By heaven, I will acquaint his majesty 105
With those gross taunts I often have endured.
I had rather be a country servant-maid
Than a great queen, with this condition,
To be thus taunted, scorn'd, and baited at :

Enter QUEEN MARGARET, *behind.*

Small joy have I in being England's queen. 110

Q. Mar. And lessen'd be that small, God, I beseech
thee !

Thy honour, state and seat is due to me.

Glou. What ! threat you me with telling of the king ?
Tell him, and spare not : look, what I have said
I will avouch in presence of the king : 115
I dare adventure to be sent to the Tower.

'Tis time to speak ; my pains are quite forgot.

Q. Mar. Out, devil ! I remember them too well :
Thou slewest my husband Henry in the Tower,

102 *a worsere*] *worsere* Q₆.

106 *With*] Qq. *Of* Ff.

I often] Qq. *that oft I* Ff.

108 *great*] om. Q₁Q₈.

109 *thus...at*] Qq (reading *scorned*). *so*
baited, scorn'd, and stormed at Ff
(*storm'd* F₄).

110 *Enter...behind.*] *Enter...at a Dis-*
tance. Capell. *Enter* Qu. Margaret.
Qq. *Enter* old Queene Margaret.
Ff (after line 110).

111 SCENE IV. *Papa.*

thee] Qq. *him* Ff.

112 *is*] *are* Collier MS.

113 *What! threat*] *What threat* Wright
conj.

telling of] *telling, or* Q₂. *telling*

Q₆Q₇Q₈.

114 *Tell...said*] Omitted in Ff.

have] om. Q₆Q₄Q₅Q₇Q₈.

115 *avouch*] Qq (*avouch* Q₆Q₇Q₈). *avouch*
't Ff.

116 *I dare...Tower.*] Omitted in Qq.
to be] *be* Steevens conj.

117 *'Tis...forgot.*] One line in Qq. Two
in Ff.

my] *when* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

118 *Out...well.*] One line in Qq. Two
in Ff.

Out.] *No*, Warburton.

remember] Qq. *do remember* Ff.

them] *thee* Warburton.

119 *slewest*] Qq. *kill'd*st F₁F₂F₃. *kill'd*st
F₄.

And Edward, my poor son, at Tewksbury. 120

Glou. Ere you were queen, yea, or your husband king,
I was a pack-horse in his great affairs;
A weeder out of his proud adversaries,
A liberal rewarder of his friends:
To royalise his blood I spilt mine own. 125

Q. Mar. Yea, and much better blood than his or thine.

Glou. In all which time you and your husband Grey
Were factious for the house of Lancaster;
And, Rivers, so were you. Was not your husband
In Margaret's battle at Saint Alban's slain? 130
Let me put in your minds, if you forget,
What you have been ere now; and what you are;
Withal, what I have been, and what I am.

Q. Mar. A murderous villain, and so still thou art.

Glou. Poor Clarence did forsake his father, Warwick;
Yea, and forswore himself,—which Jesu pardon!— 136

Q. Mar. Which God revenge!

Glou. To fight on Edward's party for the crown;
And for his meed, poor lord, he is mew'd up.
I would to God my heart were flint, like Edward's; 140
Or Edward's soft and pitiful, like mine:
I am too childish-foolish for this world.

Q. Mar. Hie thee to hell for shame, and leave the
world,

121 *Ere...king,*] One line in Qq. Two
in Ff.
yea, or] *yea of Q₂. I, or Ff. ay,*
or Rowe.

125 *spilt]* Qq. *spent* Ff.

126 *Yea...thine.*] One line in Qq. Two
in Ff.

126, 136 *Yea]* Qq. *I* Ff. *Ay* Rowe.

129 *you. Was]* *you, was* Q₁.

131 *minds]* *minde* Q₆. *mind* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

if you] Ff. *if yours* Qq.

132 *ere now]* Qq. *ere this* Ff.

134 *murderous]* *murd'rous* Johnson.
murtherous Qq. *murth'rous* Ff.

139 *mew'd]* Pope. *mewed* QqFf.

142 *childish-foolish]* Theobald. *childish,*
foolish Q₁Q₂. *childish foolish* The
rest.

143 *Hie]* Qq. *High* F₁F₂. *Hye* F₃F₄.
the] Qq. *this* Ff.

Thou cacodemon! there thy kingdom is.

Riv. My Lord of Gloucester, in those busy days 145
Which here you urge to prove us enemies,
We follow'd then our lord, our lawful king:
So should we you, if you should be our king.

Glou. If I should be! I had rather be a pedlar:
Far be it from my heart, the thought of it! 150

Q. Eliz. As little joy, my lord, as you suppose
You should enjoy, were you this country's king,
As little joy may you suppose in me,
That I enjoy, being the queen thereof.

Q. Mar. A little joy enjoys the queen thereof; 155
For I am she, and altogether joyless.
I can no longer hold me patient. [Advancing.

Hear me, you wrangling pirates, that fall out
In sharing that which you have pill'd from me!
Which of you trembles not that looks on me? 160
If not, that, I being queen, you bow like subjects,
Yet that, by you deposed, you quake like rebels?
O gentle villain, do not turn away!

147 *follow'd]* follow *Q₇.*

lawful] *Q_q.* *Souveraigne* *Ff.*

148 *we you]* *we now* *Q₆Q₇.*

if you should] *Q_qF₁F₂.* *if you*
would *F₃F₄.*

149 *If I should]* *If should* *Q₆.*

150 *of it]* *Q_q.* *thereof* *Ff.*

151 *Q. Eliz.]* *Qu.* *Q₁Q₂* *Ff.* *Q. M.* *Q₃Q₄.*

Qu. *Nar.* *Q₆.* *Qu.* *Mar.* *Q₆Q₇.* *Q.*
Mar. *Q₆.*

152 *king,]* *king;* *Vaughan* *conj.,* *reading*
A little *in line 151.*

153 *may you]* *Q_q.* *you may* *Ff.*

155 *Q. Mar.]* *om.* *Q₇Q₆.*

A little] *Q_qFf.* *As little* *Dyce*
(Heath *conj.).* *And little* *Grant*
White. *Ah, little* *Anon.* *conj.*

157 [Advancing.] *Capell.* *Coming for-*

ward. *They all start.* *Collier* *(ed.*
2). *(Comes forth)* *start all.* *Collier*
MS.

159 *In sharing]* *Q₁Ff.* *In sharing out*
Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆. *I shaking out* *Q₇Q₈.*
you] *yon* *F₂.*

160 *of]* *off* *F₁.*

trembles] *tremble* *Q₆.*

looks] *looks* *Q₆Q₆Q₇Q₈.*

161 *being]* *Q_q.* *am* *Ff.*

162 *by you]* *byou* *Q₆.* *by on* *Q₄.*

deposed] *disposd* *Q₇Q₈.*

rebels] *f]* *Theobald* *(ed. 2).* *reabels:*
Q₇. *Rebells.* *F₁.* *Reblls.* *F₂.* *Rebels.*
F₃F₄. *rebels:* *The rest.*

163 *O gentle]* *Ah gentle* *Ff.* *O gentile*
Q₇. *Ungentile* *Warburton.* *Ah,*
gently, *Jackson* *conj.*

Glou. Foul wrinkled witch, what makest thou in my sight?

Q. Mar. But repetition of what thou hast marr'd; 165
That will I make before I let thee go.

Glou. Wert thou not banished on pain of death?

Q. Mar. I was; but I do find more pain in banishment,
Than death can yield me here by my abode. 170
A husband and a son thou owest to me;
And thou a kingdom; all of you allegiance:
The sorrow that I have, by right is yours,
And all the pleasures you usurp are mine.

Glou. The curse my noble father laid on thee,
When thou didst crown his warlike brows with paper, 175
And with thy scorns drew'st rivers from his eyes,
And then, to dry them, gavest the duke a clout,
Steep'd in the faultless blood of pretty Rutland,—
His curses, then from bitterness of soul
Denounced against thee, are all fall'n upon thee; 180
And God, not we, hath plagued thy bloody deed.

Q. Eliz. So just is God, to right the innocent.

Hast. O, 'twas the foulest deed to slay that babe,
And the most merciless that e'er was heard of!

Riv. Tyrants themselves wept when it was reported.

Dor. No man but prophesied revenge for it. 186

Buck. Northumberland, then present, wept to see it.

167—169 *Glou.* Wert thou...abode.]

Omitted in Qq.

169 *my*] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

170 *owest to*] *owest unto* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

172 *The sorrow*] Qq. *This sorrow* Ff.

173 *pleasures*] *pleasure* Q₇.

are] Q₁Q₂Ff. *is* The rest.

174 *my*] *me* Q₆.

on] *one* Q₇Q₈.

176 *scorns*] F₄. *scornes* F₁F₂F₃. *scornes* Qq.

drew'st] *drew* Q₆.

from] *frow* Q₆.

178 *faultless*] Q₁Q₂Ff. The rest omit.

179 *curses, then*] Rowe (ed. 2). *curses then* Qq. *Curse then*, Ff.

180 *all*] Q₁Q₂F₁. The rest omit. *now* Rowe.

181 *hath*] *have* F₂F₄. *has* Pope.

plagued] *plaugde* Q₄. *plaugde* Q₃Q₆Q₇.

182 *Q. Eliz.*] Malone (Warburton conj.).
Qu. QqFf. *Q. Mar.* Rowe.

184 *e'er*] *ere* F₁F₂. *ere* F₂F₄. *ever* Qq.

Q. Mar. What! were you snarling all before I came,
 Ready to catch each other by the throat,
 And turn you all your hatred now on me? 190
 Did York's dread curse prevail so much with heaven,
 That Henry's death, my lovely Edward's death,
 Their kingdom's loss, my woful banishment,
 Could all but answer for that peevish brat?
 Can curses pierce the clouds and enter heaven? 195
 Why, then, give way, dull clouds, to my quick curses!
 If not by war, by surfeit die your king,
 As ours by murder, to make him a king!
 Edward thy son, which now is Prince of Wales,
 For Edward my son, which was Prince of Wales, 200
 Die in his youth by like untimely violence!
 Thyself a queen, for me that was a queen,
 Outlive thy glory, like my wretched self!
 Long mayst thou live to wail thy children's loss;
 And see another, as I see thee now, 205
 Deck'd in thy rights, as thou art stall'd in mine!
 Long die thy happy days before thy death;
 And, after many lengthen'd hours of grief,
 Die neither mother, wife, nor England's queen!
 Rivers and Dorset, you were standers by, 210
 And so wast thou, Lord Hastings, when my son

190 *all...now*] *Q₁Ff. now...all* *Q₂Q₃Q₄*

Q₅Q₆. now...now *Q₇Q₈.*

on] *one* *Q₇.*

193 *loss*] *lost* *Q₇Q₈.*

194 *Could*] *Qq. Should* *Ff.*

but] *not* *Mason* *conj.*

197 *If*] *Qq. Though* *Ff.*

198 *ours*] *our* *Q₅Q₆Q₈. out* *Q₄.*

murder] *Qq. Murder* *Ff.*

199 *thy*] *my* *Q₇Q₈.*

which] *Qq. that* *Ff.*

200 *my*] *Qq. our* *Ff.*

which] *Qq. that* *Ff.*

was] *was* *a* *Q₇. was* *the* *Q₈.*

201 *Die*] *Died* *Q₈.*

violence] *violences* *Q₆Q₇.*

204 *loss*] *Qq. death* *Ff.*

205 *thee*] *thee* *thee* *F₂.*

206 *rights*] *Q₁Ff. glorie* *The rest.*

rites *Anon. conj.*

208 *lengthen'd*] *length'ned* *Ff. length-*
ened *Qq.*

211 *was*] *Q₁Q₂FfQ₈. was* *The rest.*

son] *soone* *Q₇.*

Was stabb'd with bloody daggers: God, I pray him,
That none of you may live your natural age,
But by some unlook'd accident cut off!

Glou. Have done thy charm, thou hateful withered
hag! 215

Q. Mar. And leave out thee? stay, dog, for thou shalt
hear me.

If heaven have any grievous plague in store
Exceeding those that I can wish upon thee,
O, let them keep it till thy sins be ripe,
And then hurl down their indignation 220

On thee, the troubler of the poor world's peace!
The worm of conscience still begnaw thy soul!
Thy friends suspect for traitors while thou livest,
And take deep traitors for thy dearest friends!
No sleep close up that deadly eye of thine, 225

Unless it be whilst some tormenting dream
Affrights thee with a hell of ugly devils!
Thou elvish-mark'd, abortive, rooting hog!
Thou that wast seal'd in thy nativity
The slave of nature and the son of hell! 230

Thou slander of thy mother's heavy womb!
Thou loathed issue of thy father's loins!

213 *your*] *Qq.* *his* Ff.

214 *But...off*] *By some unlook'd for*
accident all cut off Hanmer.
unlook'd] *un-look'd-for* F₃F₄.
cut] *be cut* Taylor conj. MS.

215 *withered*] *withred* Q₁. *wither'd* Ff.

216 *thee? stay*] *the stay* Q₁Q₂.

217 *heaven*] *heavens* Rowe.

221 *the troubler*] *thou troubler* Rowe.

224 *for thy*] *forth*, Q₄.

225 *that deadly eye*] *the deadly eyes*
Q₇Q₈.

226 *whilst*] Q₆Q₇Q₈. *whilst* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄.

Q₆. *while* Ff.

227 *Affrights*] *Affright* F₄.
ugly] *ougly* F₁F₂.

228 *elvish-mark'd*] *elvish-markt* Pope.
elvish markt Qq. *elvish mark'd*
F₁F₂. *elvish, mark'd* F₃. *elvish,*
markt F₄.

230 *slave*] *shame* Anon. apud Theobald
conj. *staine* Collier MS.
son] F₃F₄. *sonne* The rest. *soorne*
Collier MS.

231 *mother's heavy*] Qq. *heavie Mothers*
Ff. *mother's* Johnson.

Thou rag of honour! thou detested—

Glou. Margaret.

Q. Mar. Richard!

Glou. Ha!

Q. Mar. I call thee not..

Glou. I cry thee mercy then, for I had thought 235
That thou hadst call'd me all these bitter names.

Q. Mar. Why, so I did; but look'd for no reply.
O, let me make the period to my curse!

Glou. 'Tis done by me, and ends in 'Margaret.'

Q. Eliz. Thus have you breathed your curse against
yourself. 240

Q. Mar. Poor painted queen, vain flourish of my fortune!
Why strew'st thou sugar on that bottled spider,
Whose deadly web ensnareth thee about?

Fool, fool! thou whet'st a knife to kill thyself.
The time will come that thou shalt wish for me 245
To help thee curse that poisonous bunch-back'd toad.

Hast. False-boding woman, end thy frantic curse,
Lest to thy harm thou move our patience.

Q. Mar. Foul shame upon you! you have all moved
mine.

Riv. Were you well served, you would be taught your
duty. 250

233 *rag]* *wrack* Warburton.

detested—] F₁F₃F₄. *detested, &c.*

Qq. *detested.* F₂.

234 *Ha!]* F₄. *Ha.* The rest.

thee] the Q₆Q₇.

235 *I cry...then]* Ff. *Then I crie thee*
mercie Qq (*I om.* Q₆).

had thought] Qq. *did thinke,* Ff.

236 *That thou hadst]* Q₁Ff. *Thou hadst*

Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆. *Thou hast* Q₇Q₈.

237 *look'd]* *looks* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

239 *in]* by Q₆Q₇Q₈.

240 *Thus...yourself.]* Continued to

Gloucester in Q₇Q₈.

242 *bottled spider]* *bloated spider* Grey
conj. *Bottel spider* Collier MS.

245 *time...that]* Q₁. *day...that* Ff.
time...when The rest.

246 *that]* Qq. *this* Ff.

poisonous] Q₁Ff. *poisoned* The
rest.

247 *False-boding]* *False boading* Q₁Q₂

Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆F₃F₄. *False boding* F₁F₂.

False bosting Q₇. *False boasting*

Q₈.

249 *all]* *oll* Q₆.

Q. Mar. To serve me well, you all should do me duty,
Teach me to be your queen, and you my subjects :

O, serve me well, and teach yourselves that duty!

Dor. Dispute not with her; she is lunatic.

Q. Mar. Peace, master marquess, you are malapert : 255
Your fire-new stamp of honour is scarce current.

O, that your young nobility could judge

What 'twere to lose it, and be miserable!

They that stand high have many blasts to shake them;
And if they fall, they dash themselves to pieces. 260

Glou. Good counsel, marry: learn it, learn it, marquess.

Dor. It toucheth you, my lord, as much as me.

Glou. Yea, and much more: but I was born so high,
Our aery buildeth in the cedar's top,
And dallies with the wind and scorns the sun. 265

Q. Mar. And turns the sun to shade; alas! alas!

Witness my son, now in the shade of death;

Whose bright out-shining beams thy cloudy wrath
Hath in eternal darkness folded up.

Your aery buildeth in our aery's nest. 270

O God, that seest it, do not suffer it;

As it was won with blood, lost be it so!

Buck. Have done! for shame, if not for charity.

Q. Mar. Urge neither charity nor shame to me:

251 *all]* om. *Q₇Q₈.*

252 *you]* *yon Q₈.*

253 *O, serve]* *Observe Q₇Q₈.*

257 *O, that...could]* *Of that...can Long MS.*

could] *QqF₁. can F₃F₃F₄.*

258 *lose]* *Ff. loose Qq.*

259 *many]* *mighty Q₈.*

blasts] *blast Q₁.*

260 *themselves]* *them Q₇Q₈.*

262 *toucheth]* *Qq. touches Ff.*

263 *Yea,]* *Qq. I, Ff. Ay, Rowe.*

high,] *Qq. high: Ff.*

267 *son]* *sunne Q₆Q₆Q₇Q₈.*

270 *aery buildeth.....nest]* *airey build- ing in our airey nest Becket conj.*

272 *was]* *Qq. is Ff.*

lost be it so!] *so be it lost. Pope.*

273 *Buck.]* *Rivers. Lettsom conj.*

Have...charity.] *S. Walker doubts whether this speech be Buckingham's.*

Have done] *Qq. Peace, peace Ff.*

Uncharitably with me have you dealt, 275
 And shamefully by you my hopes are butcher'd.
 My charity is outrage, life my shame ;
 And in that shame still live my sorrow's rage !

Buck. Have done, have done.

Q. Mar. O princely Buckingham, I'll kiss thy hand,
 In sign of league and amity with thee : 281
 Now fair befall thee and thy noble house !
 Thy garments are not spotted with our blood,
 Nor thou within the compass of my curse.

Buck. Nor no one here ; for curses never pass 285
 The lips of those that breathe them in the air.

Q. Mar. I'll not believe but they ascend the sky,
 And there awake God's gentle-sleeping peace.
 O Buckingham, take heed of yonder dog !
 Look, when he fawns, he bites ; and when he bites, 290
 His venom tooth will rankle to the death :
 Have not to do with him, beware of him ;
 Sin, death, and hell have set their marks on him,
 And all their ministers attend on him.

Glou. What doth she say, my Lord of Buckingham ? 295

Buck. Nothing that I respect, my gracious lord.

Q. Mar. What, dost thou scorn me for my gentle counsel ?

276 *by you my hopes*] Qq. *my hopes* 288 *gentle-sleeping*] Theobald. *gentle*
(by you) Ff. *sleeping* QqFf.
butcher'd] *butchered* Q₆Q₇Q₈. *peace*] *wrath* Seymour conj.
278 *that shame*] Ff. *my shame* Qq. 289 *take heed*] Ff. *beware* Qq.
still] *shall* Q₆Q₇Q₈. 291 *venom*] Ff. *venome* Qq. *venom'd*
279 *Have done, have done.*] Ff. *Have*
done. Qq. *rankle*] *rackle* Q₁.
280 *Q. Mar.*] *Q. Mary.* Q₆. *to the death*] Ff. *thes to death* Qq.
I'll] *Ile* F₁F₂. *I'le* F₃F₄. *I will* 292 *Have not*] *Have nought* Anon. conj.
Qq. *I* Capell. 293 *marks on him*] *marks upon him* Pope.
282 *noble*] Ff. *princely* Qq. 297 *What...counsel?*] One line in Qq.
285 *no one*] *none* Q₇Q₈. Two lines, the first ending *me*, in Ff.
286 *of those*] *of them* Q₆Q₇Q₈. 297, 298 *counsel?...from?*] Q₂. *counsell,*
287 *I'll not believe*] Qq. *I will not*
thinke Ff. *...from:* Q₁. *counsell?...from.* Ff.
counsell,...from? The rest.

And soothe the devil that I warn thee from?
 O, but remember this another day,
 When he shall split thy very heart with sorrow, 300
 And say poor Margaret was a prophetess.
 Live each of you the subjects to his hate,
 And he to yours, and all of you to God's! [Exit.
Hast. My hair doth stand on end to hear her curses.
Riv. And so doth mine: I muse why she's at liberty.
Glou. I cannot blame her: by God's holy mother, 306
 She hath had too much wrong; and I repent
 My part thereof that I have done to her.
Q. Eliz. I never did her any, to my knowledge.
Glou. But you have all the vantage of her wrong.
 I was too hot to do somebody good, 311
 That is too cold in thinking of it now.
 Marry, as for Clarence, he is well repaid;
 He is frank'd up to fattening for his pains:
 God pardon them that are the cause of it! 315
Riv. A virtuous and a Christian-like conclusion,
 To pray for them that have done scathe to us.
Glou. So do I ever: [Aside] being well advised:
 For had I cursed now, I had cursed myself.

298 *soothe*] *soothd* Q₆. *smooth* Anon. conj.301 *say poor Margaret was*] Qq. *say*
(*poore Margaret*) was Ff.302 *subjects to*] Ff. *subiects of* Q₁Q₂Q₃
Q₄Q₅Q₆. *subiect of* Q₇Q₈. *subject*
*to Pope.*303 *yours*] Ff. *your* Q₁Q₂. *you* Therest.
God's] *God* Q₈.304 *Hast.*] Qq. Buc. Ff.
on end] Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆. *an end* Ff
Q₇Q₈.305 *muse why*] Ff. *wonder* Qq.308 *to her*] Ff. om. Qq.309 *Q. Eliz.*] Malone. Qu. Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅.
Hast. Q₆Q₇Q₈. Mar. F₁F₂. Der.
F₃F₄. Dors. Rowe.310 *But*] Qq. *Yet* Ff.*her wrong*] Ff. *this wrong* Qq.311 *too*] *to* Q₂.*hot*] *hoat* Q₁. *hotte* Q₈.312 *of it*] *one it* Q₇. *on it* Q₈.313 *as*] om. Pope.315 *of it*] Qq. *thereof* Ff.316 *and a*] *and* Q₇Q₈.318, 319 *So...myself.*] Marked as 'Aside'
by Rowe.318 [Aside] Edd. (S. Walker conj.).
om. QqFf.319 *For...*] Qq. Speakes to himselfe.
For... Ff.
cursed now, I] *curst now, I* Q₄Ff.
curst, now I The rest.

Enter CATESBY.

www.libtool.com.cn

Cates. Madam, his majesty doth call for you; 320
And for your grace; and you, my noble lords.

Q. Eliz. Catesby, we come. Lords, will you go with us?

Riv. Madam, we will attend your grace.

[Exeunt all but Gloucester.]

Glou. I do the wrong, and first begin to brawl.
The secret mischiefs that I set abroad 325

I lay unto the grievous charge of others.

Clarence, whom I, indeed, have laid in darkness,

I do bewep to many simple gulls;

Namely, to Hastings, Derby, Buckingham;

And say it is the queen and her allies 330

That stir the king against the duke my brother.

Now, they believe it; and withal whet me

To be revenged on Rivers, Vaughan, Grey:

But then I sigh; and, with a piece of Scripture,

320 Enter Catesby.] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

321 *And...noble lords.*] Capell. *And... noble Lo: Q₁Q₂. And for your noble Grace: and you my noble Lord. Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₈. And for your Grace, and yours my gracious Lord. Ff (yours, F₄). And for your noble grace and you my Lord. Q₇ Q₈ (grace, Q₈). And for your grace, and you, my noble lord. Pope.*

322 *we come...us?*] *we come...us.* Qq. *I come...mee.* F₁F₂. *I come...me?* F₃F₄. See note (iv).

323 *Madam, we will attend*] Qq. *We wait upon* Ff. *Madam, we will attend upon* Steevens (1793). [Exeunt...] Ff. Exeunt man. Ri. Q₁Q₂. Exeunt. ma. Glo. The rest (substantially).

324 *the wrong*] *thee wrong* Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈

F₃F₄.

begin] Ff. *began* Qq.

to brawl] *the brawl* Anon. conj.

325 *mischiefs*] *mischiefe* Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈.

326 *grievous*] *greenvious* Q₇. *greivous* Q₈.

327 *whom*] *who* F₁.

laid] Qq (layd Q₈). *cast* Ff.

329 *Hastings, Derby*] Qq. *Derby, Hastings* Ff. *Stanley, Hastings* Theobald.

330 *say it is*] Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₇. *say it was* Q₈. *tell them 'tis* Ff.

331 *stir*] *stirres* Q₈.

332 *it*] Ff. *me* Qq.

whet] *wet* Q₇. *wish* Q₈. *they whet* Keightley.

333 *on*] *one* Q₇.

Vaughan] Qq. *Dorset* Ff.

334 *I sigh*] *sigh* Q₃Q₆Q₇Q₈.

Tell them that God bids us do good for evil : 335
 And thus I clothe my naked villany
 With old odd ends stolen out of holy writ ;
 And seem a saint, when most I play the devil.

Enter two Murderers.

But, soft ! here come my executioners.
 How now, my hardy stout resolved mates ! 340
 Are you now going to dispatch this deed ?

First Murd. We are, my lord ; and come to have
 the warrant,
 That we may be admitted where he is.

Glou. Well thought upon ; I have it here about me.
[Gives the warrant.

When you have done, repair to Crosby Place. 345

But, sirs, be sudden in the execution,
 Withal obdurate, do not hear him plead ;
 For Clarence is well-spoken, and perhaps
 May move your hearts to pity, if you mark him.

First Murd. Tush ! 350
 Fear not, my lord, we will not stand to prate ;
 Talkers are no good doers : be assured

335 do] to do Q₆. to doe Q₆Q₇Q₈.

337 old odd] Qq. odds old Ff.

out] Qq. forth Ff.

338 saint] S. Q₇.

339 Enter...] Enter two murderers. Ff.

Enter Executioners. Qq. Enter two villains. Rowe.

come] Q₁Ff. comes The rest.

340 hardy] handy Pope (ed. 2).

stout resolved] stout-resolved Singer, ed. 2 (S. Walker conj.).

341 you now] Q₁Q₂Ff. ye now Q₃Q₄Q₅.

ye not Q₆. yea not Q₇Q₈.

deed ?] Qq (deeds. Q₁). thing ? Ff.

342, 350 First Murd.] 1. M. Capell.

Execu. Exec. or Exa. Qq. Vil. Ff.

344 Well] Ff. It was well Qq.

[Gives the warrant.] Capell. om.

QqFf.

350, 351 Tush !...prate ;] Edd. One line in Qq.

Tush ! Fear not,] Tush, feare not,

Qq (Tush feare not Q₁). Tut, tut,

Ff. Fear not, Pope.

352 doers : be assured] doers ; be assur'd,

F₄. doers, be assured : Q₂F₁F₂F₃

(doers, F₁F₂). doers be assured :

The rest.

We come to use our hands and not our tongues.

Glou. Your eyes drop millstones, when fools' eyes
drop tears.

I like you, lads: about your business straight. 355

Go, go, dispatch.

First Murd. We will, my noble lord. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *London. The Tower.*

Enter CLARENCE and BRAKENBURY.

Brak. Why looks your grace so heavily to-day?

Clar. O, I have pass'd a miserable night,
So full of ugly sights, of ghastly dreams,
That, as I am a Christian faithful man,
I would not spend another such a night, 5
Though 'twere to buy a world of happy days,
So full of dismal terror was the time!

Brak. What was your dream? I long to hear you
tell it.

Clar. Methoughts that I had broken from the Tower,
And was embark'd to cross to Burgundy; 10

353 *come*] Qq. *go* Ff.

354 *drop tears*] Qq. *fall Teares* Ff.

355, 356 *business straight. Go,...lord.*] Ff. *business. Qq* (omitting *straight ...lord.*) *business; go. Pope. business [straight. Go,...lord.] Staunton.*

356 *First Murd.*] 1. M. Capell. Vil. Ff.

SCENE IV.] SCENE V. Pope.
London. The Tower.] The Tower.
Pope.

Enter...] Enter Clarence, Brokenbury. Qq. Enter Clarence and Keeper. Ff.

1 *Brak.*] Brok. or Bro. Qq. Keep. Ff

(as far as line 75).

your] you Q₆.

to-day] om. F₃F₄.

3 *of ugly...dreams*] Qq. *of fearefull Dreames, of vgly sights* Ff.

4 *Christian faithful*] *Christian, faithful* Hutchesson conj. MS.

6 *buy*] by Q₇Q₈.

8 *dream? I long...it.*] Qq (*dreame, Q₁*).
dream my Lord, I pray you tel me.
Ff (*me F₁*).

9, 10 *Methoughts...Burgundy*] Ff. *Me thoughts I was imbarkt for Burgundy*
Qq (*Me thought Q₆Q₆Q₇Q₈*).

9 *Methoughts*] *Methought* Pope.

And, in my company, my brother Gloucester ;
 Who from my cabin tempted me to walk
 Upon the hatches : thence we look'd toward England,
 And cited up a thousand fearful times,
 During the wars of York and Lancaster, 15
 That had befall'n us. As we paced along
 Upon the giddy footing of the hatches,
 Methought that Gloucester stumbled ; and, in falling,
 Struck me, that thought to stay him, overboard,
 Into the tumbling billows of the main. 20
 Lord, Lord ! methought, what pain it was to drown !
 What dreadful noise of waters in mine ears !
 What ugly sights of death within mine eyes !
 Methought I saw a thousand fearful wrecks ;
 Ten thousand men that fishes gnaw'd upon ; 25
 Wedges of gold, great anchors, heaps of pearl,
 Inestimable stones, unvalued jewels,
 All scattered in the bottom of the sea :
 Some lay in dead men's skulls ; and in those holes
 Where eyes did once inhabit, there were crept, 30
 As 'twere in scorn of eyes, reflecting gems,

13 *thence*] $Q_1Q_2Q_3Q_4Q_6$. *there* Q_6FfQ_7
 Q_8 .

we look'd] *he looks* Q_7Q_8

toward] *towards* Q_6Q_8 .

14 *fearful*] Qq . *heavy* Ff .

15—17 *Lancaster That.....us. As.....*
hatches,] *Lancaster : That....vs, as...*
hatches : Q_1 .

16 *us*] *us us* F_2 .

we] QqF_1 . *he* $F_2F_3F_4$.

paced] *pac'd* Ff . *past* Q_1 . *past*
 The rest.

18 *falling*] Ff . *stumbling* Qq .

19 *Struck*] *Stroke* $Q_1Q_2Q_3Q_4$. *Strook* F_3
 F_4 . *Strooke* The rest.
thought] *sought* $Pope$.

21 *Lord, Lord*] Qq . *O Lord* Ff .

22 *waters*] *water* $Q_6FfQ_7Q_8$.

22, 23 *mine*] *my* Q_1 .

23 *ugly sights of*] *sights of ugly* Ff . *a*
sight of Q_7Q_8 .

24 *Methought*] *Me thought* Qq . *Me*
thoughts $F_1F_2F_3$. *Methoughts* F_4 .
wrecks] $Theobald$ (ed. 2). *wracks*
 $Q_6Q_7Q_8F_1F_2$. *wracks* The rest.

25 *Ten*] Qq . *A* Ff .

26 *anchors*] *ingots* $Kinnear$ conj.

28 *All...sea:]* Ff . Omitted in Qq .

scattered] *scattered* F_1 . *scattered*
 F_2 . *scatter'd* $Rowe$.

29 *those*] Qq . *the* Ff .

31 *'twere*] *if it twere* Q_7 . *if it 'twere* Q_8 .

Which woo'd the slimy bottom of the deep,
And mock'd the dead bones that lay scattered by.

Brak. Had you such leisure in the time of death
To gaze upon the secrets of the deep? 35

Clar. Methought I had; and often did I strive
To yield the ghost: but still the envious flood
Kept in my soul, and would not let it forth
To seek the empty, vast and wandering air;
But smothered it within my panting bulk, 40
Which almost burst to belch it in the sea.

Brak. Awaked you not with this sore agony?

Clar. O no, my dream was lengthened after life;
O, then began the tempest to my soul,
Who pass'd, methought, the melancholy flood, 45
With that grim ferryman which poets write of,
Unto the kingdom of perpetual night.
The first that there did greet my stranger soul,
Was my great father-in-law, renowned Warwick;
Who cried aloud, 'What scourge for perjury 50
Can this dark monarchy afford false Clarence?'
And so he vanish'd: then came wandering by

32 *Which*] Qq. *That* Ff.
woo'd] *wade* Q₆Q₇Q₈. *strew'd*
Heath conj.

33 *scattered*] *scattred* F₁F₂Q₈F₃. *scatter'd* Rowe.

35 *the secrets*] QqF₄. *these secrets* F₁F₂F₃.

36, 37 *and often...ghost:]* Ff. om. Qq.

37 *but*] Ff. *for* Qq.

38 *Kept*] Qq. *Stop'd* Ff.

39 *seek*] *seeke* Q₁Q₂. *keepe* Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₈Q₇

Q₈. *find* Ff.

empty...air] *empty vast; and wander*

in air Vaughan conj.

empty, vast and] *emptie vast and* Q₁

Q₂Q₄Q₆. *emptie, vast, and* Q₃Q₆.

empty, vast, and FfQ₇Q₈. *empty*

vast, and Malone conj.

40 *smothered*] Qq. *smother'd* Ff.

41 *Which*] Qq. *Who* Ff.

42 *with*] Qq. *in* Ff.

agony?] *agony*. Q₁.

43 *O no*] Qq. *No, no* Ff.

lengthened] *lengthned* Qq. *length-*

en'd Ff.

44 *to my*] *of my* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

44, 45 *soul, Who*] Qq. *Soule. I* F₁.

soule, I F₂F₃F₄.

46 *grim*] Qq. *sowre* Ff.

48 *stranger soul*] *Stranger-soule* Ff (*soul*

F₃F₄). *strangers soule* Q₈.

49 *renowned*] *renowned* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆.

50 *cried*] Qq. *spake* Ff.

aloud, 'What] *aloud what* Q₁.

51 *Clarence?*] *Clarence*, Q₁.

A shadow like an angel, with bright hair
 Dabbled in blood; and he squeak'd out aloud,
 'Clarence is come; false, fleeting, perjured Clarence, 55
 That stabb'd me in the field by Tewksbury:
 Seize on him, Furies, take him to your torments!'
 With that, methoughts, a legion of foul fiends
 Environ'd me about, and howled in mine ears
 Such hideous cries, that with the very noise 60
 I trembling waked, and for a season after
 Could not believe but that I was in hell,
 Such terrible impression made the dream.

Brak. No marvel, my lord, though it affrighted you;
 I promise you, I am afraid to hear you tell it. 65

Clar. O Brakenbury, I have done those things,
 Which now bear evidence against my soul,
 For Edward's sake; and see how he requites me!
 O God! if my deep prayers cannot appease thee,
 But thou wilt be avenged on my misdeeds, 70
 Yet execute thy wrath in me alone;
 O, spare my guiltless wife and my poor children!
 I pray thee, gentle keeper, stay by me;

53 *with*] Ff. *in* Qq.

54 *Dabbled*] *Dadled* Q₆Q₇.
squeak'd] *squakt* Q₁. *sqaueakt* Q₄.
shriek'd Ff. *squeakt* The rest.

56 *by*] *at* Q₇Q₈.

57 *to your torments*] Qq. *vnto Torment*
 Ff.

58 *methoughts*] *me thoughts* Q₁. *me-*
thought F₄. *me thought* The rest.

59 *Environ'd*] *Enuiron'd* Q₁Q₂. *Inui-*
ron'd Ff. *Enuironed* The rest.
about] Ff. *om.* Ff.

63 *impression*] *impressions* Rowe (ed. 1).
the] Qq. *my* Ff.

64 *my*] Qq. *om.* Ff.
though] *that* Pope.

65 *I promise...afraid*] Qq. *I am afraid*

(*me thinks*) Ff.

66 *O Brakenbury*] *O Brokenbury* Qq.
Ah Keeper, Keeper Ff. *Ah Braken-*
bury Pope.

those] Qq. *these* Ff.

67 *Which*] Qq. *That* Ff.
bear] *bears* Q₈. *gius* Ff.

68 *requites*] *requits* F₁.

69—72 *O God!... children!*] Ff. Omit-
 ted in Qq.

71 *in me*] *on me* Rowe.

73 *I pray thee...me*] Qq. *Keeper, I*
prythes sit by me a-while Ff.
gentle] *gentile* Q₇.
gentle keeper] *Brakenbury* Pope.
 [retiring to a Chair. Capell.]

My soul is heavy, and I fain would sleep.

Brak. I will, my lord: God give your grace good rest!

[*Clarence sleeps.* 75

Sorrow breaks seasons and reposing hours,
Makes the night morning and the noon-tide night.

Princes have but their titles for their glories,

An outward honour for an inward toil;

And, for unfelt imagination,

80

They often feel a world of restless cares:

So that, betwixt their titles and low names,

There's nothing differs but the outward fame.

Enter the two Murderers.

First Murd. Ho! who's here?

Brak. In God's name what are you, and how came you hither?

85

First Murd. I would speak with Clarence, and I came hither on my legs.

Brak. Yea, are you so brief?

Sec. Murd. O sir, it is better to be brief than tedious.

75 See note (v).

[*Clarence sleeps.*] Johnson.

76 *breaks*] *breake* Q₁.

78 *titles*] *title* Q₇.

glories] *troubles* Johnson conj.

labours or *guerdons* Bailey conj.

80 *imagination*] *Imaginations* Ff Q₇ Q₈.

82 *betwixt*] Qq. *betweens* Ff.

their] *your* Q₃ Q₄ Q₅ Q₆ Q₇ Q₈.

names] Qq. *Name* Ff.

84 *Enter...*] *Enter two Murtherers.* Ff.

The *murtherers* enter. Qq.

First Murd.] 1. *Mur.* Ff. om. Qq.

Ho! who's here?] Ff. om. Qq.

here] *there* Warburton.

85 *In...hither?*] Qq. *What would'st*

thou Fellow? And how camm'st thou hither? Ff (*cam'st* F₃F₄). *In God's name, what art thou? how cam'st thou hither?* Pope.

86 *First Murd.*] *Execu.* Q₁. *Exec.* Q₂. 2. *Mur.* Ff. *Exe.* The rest.

88 *Yea, are you?*] Q₁ Q₂ Q₈. *Yea, are ye* Q₃ Q₄ Q₅ Q₆ Q₇. *What* F₁ F₂ F₃. *What,* F₄.

89 *Sec. Murd.*] 2 *Exe.* Qq. 1. Ff.

O sir...tedious] Q₁ Q₂ Q₇ Q₈. *O sir, it is better be briefs then tedious* Q₃ Q₄ Q₅ Q₆. *'Tis better (Sir) then to be tedious* Ff (*than* F₄).

Giuing it *Brak.* Collier MS.

Show him our commission ; talk no more. 90

[*Brakenbury reads it.*

Brak. I am in this commanded to deliver
The noble Duke of Clarence to your hands :
I will not reason what is meant hereby,
Because I will be guiltless of the meaning.
Here are the keys, there sits the duke asleep : 95
I'll to the king ; and signify to him
That thus I have resign'd my charge to you.

First Murd. Do so, it is a point of wisdom : fare you
well. [*Exit Brakenbury.*

Sec. Murd. What, shall we stab him as he sleeps ? 100

First Murd. No ; then he will say 'twas done cowardly,
when he wakes.

Sec. Murd. When he wakes ! why, fool, he shall never
wake till the judgement-day.

First Murd. Why, then he will say we stabbed him
sleeping. 106

Sec. Murd. The urging of that word 'judgement' hath
bred a kind of remorse in me.

First Murd. What, art thou afraid ?

- 90 *Show him*] Qq. *Let him see* Ff.
our] your Q₇Q₈.
talk] and talks Ff.
[*Brakenbury reads it.*] He readeth
it. Qq (reads Q₆). Reads. Ff.
- 93 *hereby*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *thereby* The rest.
- 94 *of*] Qq. *from* F₁F₂F₄. *ftom* F₂.
- 95 *Here.....asleep*] Qq. *There lies the
Duke asleep, and there the Keyes* Ff.
- 96 *I'll...him*] Ff. *Ile to his Maiesty,
and certife his Grace* Qq.
- 97 *my charge to you*] Q₁Q₂. *my place
to you* Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈. *to you my
charge* Ff.
- 98 *First Murd.*] Exe. Qq. 1. Ff.
Do so, it is] Qq. *You may Sir, 'tis*
Ff.
- 98, 99 *fare you well*] Ff (*Far* F₁) in a
separate line. Omitted in Qq.
- 99 [*Exit...*] *Exit.* Ff (after line 97).
Collier MS. adds '(wth Keeper)'.
om. Qq.
- 100 *Sec. Murd.*] 2. QqFf (and through-
out).
we] I Q₁Q₂.
sleeps] *sleepes.* F₁F₂.
- 101 *then he will*] Qq. *hes'l* F₁F₂.
he'll F₂F₄.
- 103 *When...fool*] Qq. *Why* Ff.
- 104 *till the*] Qq. *untill the great* Ff.
- 105 *he will*] Qq. *hes'l* F₁. *he'l* F₂.
he'll F₂F₄.
- 109 *thou*] om. Q₇Q₈.
afraid?] *afraid.* Q₁.

Sec. Murd. Not to kill him, having a warrant for it ; but to be damned for killing him, from which no warrant can defend us. 112

First Murd. I thought thou hadst been resolute.

Sec. Murd. So I am, to let him live.

First Murd. Back to the Duke of Gloucester, tell him so. 116

Sec. Murd. I pray thee, stay a while : I hope my holy humour will change ; 'twas wont to hold me but while one would tell twenty.

First Murd. How dost thou feel thyself now ? 120

Sec. Murd. Faith, some certain dregs of conscience are yet within me.

First Murd. Remember our reward, when the deed is done.

Sec. Murd. 'Zounds, he dies : I had forgot the reward.

First Murd. Where is thy conscience now ? 126

Sec. Murd. In the Duke of Gloucester's purse.

First Murd. So when he opens his purse to give us our reward, thy conscience flies out.

Sec. Murd. Let it go ; there's few or none will entertain it. 131

110 See note (v1).

for it] Qq. om. Ff.

111 which] Qq. the which Ff.

112 us] Qq. me Ff.

113, 114 I thought...live.] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

115 Back...tell] Qq. Its backs...and tell Ff.

117 I pray thee...while] Qq. Nay, I prythee...little F₁F₂. Nay, prethee...little F₃. Nay, prythee...little F₄.

117, 118 my holy humour] Qq. this passionate humor of mine Ff. this compassionate humour of mine Capell. this holy humour of mine

Malone.

118 'twas] Qq. It was Ff.

119 would tell twenty] would tel xx. Q₁ Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆. could tell xx. Q₇Q₈. tels twenty Ff.

121 Faith, some] Qq. Some Ff.

123 our] the F₃F₄. deed is] Qq. deed's Ff.

125 'Zounds] Qq. Come Ff.

126 Where is] Qq. Where's Ff. now?] now. F₁F₂.

127 In] Qq. O, in Ff.

128 So when] Qq. When Ff.

130 Let] Qq. 'Tis no matter, let Ff. it go] vs go Q₂F₂F₃F₄.

First Murd. How if it come to thee again?

Sec Murd. I'll not meddle with it: it is a dangerous thing: it makes a man a coward: a man cannot steal, but it accuseth him; he cannot swear, but it checks him; he cannot lie with his neighbour's wife, but it detects him: it is a blushing shamefast spirit that mutinies in a man's bosom; it fills one full of obstacles: it made me once restore a purse of gold, that I found; it beggars any man that keeps it: it is turned out of all towns and cities for a dangerous thing; and every man that means to live well endeavours to trust to himself and to live without it.

First Murd. 'Zounds, it is even now at my elbow, persuading me not to kill the duke. 144

Sec. Murd. Take the devil in thy mind, and believe him not: he would insinuate with thee but to make thee sigh.

First Murd. Tut, I am strong-framed, he cannot prevail with me, I warrant thee.

Sec. Murd. Spoke like a tall fellow that respects his reputation. Come, shall we to this gear? 150

132 *How*] Qq. *What* Ff.

133—142 *I'll...without it.*] As prose in Ff. Eleven lines in Qq.

133, 134 *it is...thing:*] Qq. Omitted in Ff.

135 *he...he*] Qq. *A man...A man* Ff. *swear*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *steals* The rest.

137 *it is*] Qq. 'Tis Ff. *shamefast*] Q₁Q₂Q₃. *shamfast* Q₂Q₄Q₅. *shamefac'd* Ff. *shamfull* Q₇. *shamefull* Q₈.

138 *one*] Qq. *a man* Ff.

139 *purse*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *piece* Q₃Q₄Q₅. *peece* The rest. *that I found*] Qq. *that (by chance) I found* Ff.

140 *all*] Qq. om. Ff.

141, 142 *well endeavours*] *well, and endeavours* Q₇Q₈.

142 *trust to*] *trust to To* Q₁. *to live*] *live* FfQ₇Q₈.

143 'Zounds, it is] Qq. 'Tis Ff.

145 *Take the devil in*] *Shake off this devil in* Heath conj. *Shake the devil out of* Capell.

145, 146 *him...he*] *it...it* Warburton.

146 *but to make*] Ff. *to make* Qq.

147 *Tut,*] Qq. om. Ff.

strong-framed] *strong-fram'd* Ff. *strong in fraud* Qq. *strong in frame* Anon. conj.

148 *I warrant thee*] Qq. om. Ff.

149 *Spoke*] *Soods* Q₄. *Stood* Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈. *fellow*] Qq. *man* Ff. *his*] Qq. *thy* Ff.

150 *we to this gear*] Qq. (*geere*. Q₁). *we fall to worke*? Ff. *me fall to work*? Rowe (ed. 1).

First Murd. Take him over the costard with the hilts of thy sword, and then we will chop him in the malmsey-butt in the next room.

Sec. Murd. O excellent device! make a sop of him.

First Murd. Hark! he stirs: shall I strike? 155

Sec. Murd. No, first let's reason with him.

Clar. Where art thou, keeper? give me a cup of wine.

Sec. Murd. You shall have wine enough, my lord, anon.

Clar. In God's name, what art thou?

Sec. Murd. A man, as you are. 160

Clar. But not, as I am, royal.

Sec. Murd. Nor you, as we are, loyal.

Clar. Thy voice is thunder, but thy looks are humble.

Sec. Murd. My voice is now the king's, my looks
mine own.

Clar. How darkly and how deadly dost thou speak!
Your eyes do menace me: why look you pale? 166

Who sent you hither? Wherefore do you come?

Both. To, to, to—

Clar. To murder me?

Both. Ay, ay. 170

151 *over*] Qq. *on* Ff.

hilts] *hilt* Q₇Q₈.

152 *thy*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *my* The rest.

we will chop him in] Qq. *throw him into* Ff.

152, 153 *malmsey-butt*] *Malmsey, but* Q₇Q₈.

154 *make*] Qq. *and make* Ff.

sop] Q₁Q₂Ff. *scoops* Q₃. *soppe* The rest.

[*Cl.* *stira*. Capell.

155, 156 *Hark!.....him.*] Qq. 1. *Soft, he wakes.* 2. *Strike.* 1. *No, we'll reason with him.* Ff. 1 Vil. *Soft, he wakes. Shall I strike?* 2 Vil. *No, we'll reason with him.* Pope.

155 *strike?*] *strike.* Q₁.

157 *keeper?*] Ff. *keeper,* Qq.

158 *Sec. Murd.*] 2 Ff. 1 Qq.

159 *thou?*] *thou.* Q₁.

160, 164 *Sec. Murd.*] 2 Qq. 1 Ff.

162 *Sec. Murd.*] 2 Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄. 1 Q₅Q₆ FfQ₇Q₈.

166 *Your...pale?*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

167 *Who...come?*] Ff. *Tell me who are you, wherefore come you hither?* Qq (*came* Q₇Q₈).

168 *Both. To, to, to—*] Am. (= Ambo) *To, to, to.* Qq. 2 *To, to, to—* Ff. 2 M. *To, to, to, to—* Capell conj. (Errata).

169 *murder*] Johnson. *murther* QqFf. *me?*] *me.* Q₁Q₂.

170 *Both. Ay, ay.*] *Both. I, I.* Ff. Am. *I.* Qq.

Clar. You scarcely have the hearts to tell me so,
And therefore cannot have the hearts to do it.

Wherein, my friends, have I offended you?

First Murd. Offended us you have not, but the king.

Clar. I shall be reconciled to him again. 175

Sec. Murd. Never, my lord; therefore prepare to die.

Clar. Are you call'd forth from out a world of men
To slay the innocent? What is my offence?
Where are the evidence that do accuse me?

What lawful quest have given their verdict up 180

Unto the frowning judge? or who pronounced

The bitter sentence of poor Clarence' death?

Before I be convict by course of law,

To threaten me with death is most unlawful.

I charge you, as you hope to have redemption 185

By Christ's dear blood shed for our grievous sins,

That you depart and lay no hands on me:

The deed you undertake is damnable.

First Murd. What we will do, we do upon command.

Sec. Murd. And he that hath commanded is the king.

Clar. Erroneous vassal! the great King of kings 191
Hath in the tables of his law commanded

171 scarcely] scarce Q₇Q₈.
hearts] heart Q₆Q₇Q₈.

172 hearts] heart Q₇Q₈.

177 call'd...from out] Q₁. drawne...
among Ff. call'd...from out John-
son conj.

178 What is] What's F₃F₄.
offence?] offence. Q₁.

179 are...that do] Q₁Q₂. are...to Q₃Q₄.
Q₆Q₆Q₇Q₈. is...that doth Ff.

180 have] hath Q₇Q₈.

182 Clarence] Rowe (ed. 2). Clarence
QqF₁F₂F₃. Clarence's F₄.

182, 183 death?...law,] F₂F₃F₄. death,
...law? QqF₁.

184 threaten] threaten Q₈. threaten
Q₄Q₆Q₈.

185, 186 to have...sins,] Qq. for any
goodness Ff (omitting line 186).
to have redemption Pope (omitting
line 186).

187 hands on] hand one Q₇.

190 is] us is Q₇Q₈.

the] Qq. our Ff.

191 vassal] vassails Qq. Vassals Ff.

192 the tables] Q₁Q₂. his Tables Q₃Q₄.
Q₆Q₈. the Table Ff. his table
Q₇Q₈.

his law] this law Rowe (ed. 1).

That thou shalt do no murder: and wilt thou then
Spurn at his edict, and fulfil a man's?

Take heed; for he holds vengeance in his hands, 195
To hurl upon their heads that break his law.

Sec. Murd. And that same vengeance doth he hurl
on thee,

For false forswearing, and for murder too:
Thou didst receive the holy sacrament,
To fight in quarrel of the house of Lancaster. 200

First Murd. And, like a traitor to the name of God,
Didst break that vow; and with thy treacherous blade
Unrip'dst the bowels of thy sovereign's son.

Sec. Murd. Whom thou wert sworn to cherish and
defend.

First Murd. How canst thou urge God's dreadful law
to us, 205

When thou hast broke it in so dear degree?

Clar. Alas! for whose sake did I that ill deed?
For Edward, for my brother, for his sake:

Why, sirs,
He sends ye not to murder me for this; 210
For in this sin he is as deep as I.
If God will be revenged for this deed,

193 *shalt*] *shall* F₂.

murder] Q₁Q₂. *murther* The rest.

and wilt thou] Qq. *Will you* Ff.

wilt thou Capell.

194 *edict*] *Edicts* F₄.

195 *hands*] Qq. *hand* Ff.

197 *hurl*] Ff. *throw* Qq.

198 *murder*] Q₁Q₂Q₄. *muder* Q₃. *murther*
The rest.

199, 200 *Thou...fight*] As in Qq. One
line in Ff.

200 *in*] *the* Q₇Q₈.

203 *Unrip'dst*] Rowe (ed. 2). *Vnripst*
Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₈. *Vnrip'st* F₁F₂F₃.

Vnript Q₇Q₈. *Unripp'st* F₄.

204 *wert*] Qq. *was't* Ff.

206 *broke*] *brooke* Q₇.

so dear] Qq. *such deere* F₁F₂.

such high F₃F₄.

209—211 *Why...as I.*] As two lines, the
first ending *me*, Vaughan conj.

209, 210 *Why, sirs,...this* ;] Edd. One
line in Qq.

209 *Why, sirs,*] Qq. om. Ff.

210 *ye*] *you* FfQ₇Q₈.

murder] Qq. *murther* Ff.

211 *this*] Qq. *that* Ff.

212 *revenged...this*] Qq. *auenged...the* Ff.

O, know you yet, he doth it publicly :
 Take not the quarrel from his powerful arm ;
 He needs no indirect nor lawless course 215
 To cut off those that have offended him.

First Murd. Who made thee then a bloody minister,
 When gallant-springing brave Plantagenet,
 That princely novice, was struck dead by thee ?

Clar. My brother's love, the devil, and my rage. 220

First Murd. Thy brother's love, our duty, and thy
 fault,

Provoke us hither now to slaughter thee.

Clar. Oh, if you love my brother, hate not me ;
 I am his brother, and I love him well.
 If you be hired for meed, go back again, 225
 And I will send you to my brother Gloucester,
 Who shall reward you better for my life,
 Than Edward will for tidings of my death.

Sec. Murd. You are deceived, your brother Gloucester
 hates you.

Clar. O, no, he loves me, and he holds me dear : 230
 Go you to him from me.

Both. Ay, so we will.

- 213 *O...publicly:]* Ff. Omitted in Qq. *you yet,]* you, that Steevens, 1793 (Farmer conj.).
- 215 *nor lawless]* Q₁. or lawlesse Ff. *nor lawfull* The rest.
- 218 *gallant-springing]* Pope. *gallant springing* Q₁Ff. *gallant spring*, The rest. *gallant springall* Capell conj. *gallant-spirited* Anon. conj.
- 219 *That]* The Q₆Q₇Q₈. *struck]* F₃F₄. *strucks* F₁F₂. *stroke* Q₁. *strookes* The rest.
- 221 *our duty, and thy fault]* Pope. *our Duty, and thy Faults* Ff. *the diuell and thy fault* Qq.
- 222 *Provokes]* Ff. *Have brought* Qq. *slaughter]* Ff. *murder* Q₁Q₂. *murther* The rest.
- 223 *Oh, if you love my brother]* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₇Q₈. *Oh, if you loue brother* Q₄Q₅Q₆. *If you do loue my Brother* Ff.
- 225 *be]* Qq. *are* Ff. *hired for meed, go]* hired, for meed go Becket conj. *meed]* Q₁Ff. *needs* Q₂Q₇Q₈. *need* The rest.
- 227 *shall]* Ff. *will* Qq.
- 229 *You are...you.]* One line in Qq. Two in Ff.
- 231 *Both. Ay,]* Am. I, Qq. 1 / Ff.

Clar. Tell him, when that our princely father York
 Bless'd his three sons with his victorious arm,
 And charged us from his soul to love each other,
 He little thought of this divided friendship : 235
 Bid Gloucester think of this, and he will weep.

First Murd. Ay, millstones; as he lesson'd us to weep.

Clar. O, do not slander him, for he is kind.

First Murd. Right,

As snow in harvest. Thou deceivest thyself : 240
 'Tis he that sent us hither now to slaughter thee.

Clar. It cannot be; for when I parted with him,
 He hugg'd me in his arms, and swore, with sobs,
 That he would labour my delivery.

Sec. Murd. Why, so he doth, now he delivers thee
 From this world's thralldom to the joys of heaven. 246

First Murd. Make peace with God, for you must die,
 my lord.

Clar. Hast thou that holy feeling in thy soul,

234 *And...other,*] Qq. Omitted in Ff.

236 *think of this*] Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅. *thinks*
on this Q₆FfQ₇Q₈.

237 *First Murd. Ay,*] 1 I Ff. Am. I,
 Qq.

lesson'd] *lessond* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆. *les-*
soned The rest.

239 *Right,*] om. Pope.

239, 240 *Right...thyself:*] Edd. One
 line in Qq. Two, the first ending
harvest.; in Ff.

Right, As snow] *Right snow* Vaugh-
 an conj., reading *Right...thyself* as
 one line.

240 *Thou deceivest thyself*] Qq. *Come,*
you deceive yourself Ff. *You deceive*
yourself Pope.

241 *sent...thee*] Q₁. *sent...murder thee*
 Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₇Q₈. *sent...murther thee*

VOL. V.

Q₆. *sends us to destroy you heere* Ff.
hither] om. Anon. conj.

242, 243 *for...He*] Qq. *for he bewept*
my Fortune, And Ff.

243, 244 *He...delivery.*] *He swore he'd*
labour my delivery. Daniel conj.

243 *hugg'd*] *hudg* Q₆.

245, 247 *Sec. Murd. Why,.....First*
Murd. Make] 2 *Why...1 Make* Qq.
 1 *Why...2 Make* Ff.

245 *now...thee*] Qq. *when...you* Ff.

246 *world's*] Qq. *earths* Ff.

247 *Make*] *Makes* Q₁.

248—251 *Hast thou ... thy soul ... art*
thou...thy own soul...thou wilt] Qq.
Have you...your soules...are you...
your own soules...you will Ff. *Have*
you...your soul...are you...your own
soules...you will Pope.

To counsel me to make my peace with God,
 And art thou yet to thy own soul so blind, 250
 That thou wilt war with God by murdering me?
 Ah, sirs, consider, he that set you on
 To do this deed will hate you for the deed.

Sec. Murd. What shall we do?

Clar. Relent, and save your souls.

First Murd. Relent! 'tis cowardly and womanish. 255

Clar. Not to relent is beastly, savage, devilish.

Which of you, if you were a prince's son,
 Being pent from liberty, as I am now,
 If two such murderers as yourselves came to you,
 Would not entreat for life? 260

My friend, I spy some pity in thy looks;
 O, if thine eye be not a flatterer,
 Come thou on my side, and entreat for me,
 As you would beg, were you in my distress:
 A begging prince what beggar pities not? 265

Sec. Murd. Look behind you, my lord.

First Murd. Take that, and that: if all this will not
 do, [Stabs him.

251 *by*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *for* The rest.
murdering] *murdring* Q₁Q₇Q₈. *mur-*
d'ring Ff. *murthuring* Q₆.

252 *Ah*] Qq. *O* Ff.
he] Qq. *they* Ff.

253 *the deed*] Ff. *this deed* Qq.

255 *Relent! 'tis*] *Relent, tis* Qq. *Relent!*
no: 'Tis Ff. *Relent! no, no, 'tis*
 Keightley.

256 *savage,*] Q₁Ff. *savage, and* The rest.

257—265 *Which of you...pities not?*
 See note (vii).

260 *life?*] *life as I do now* Vaughan
 conj., placing lines 261—264 *My...*
distress after line 256.

261 *friend*] *friends* Q₇Q₈.
thy] *your* Q₆Q₈. *you* Q₇.

262 *thine*] Ff. *thy* Qq.
eye] *eyes* Q₆.

265 *beggar*] *hearer* Bailey conj.

266 *Sec. Murd. Look...my lord.*] Omit-
 ted in Qq. 1 *Look...my lord.*
 Collier MS.

267 *First Murd.*] 1 QqF₁F₃F₄. om. F₂.
Take...do] Ff. *I thus, and thus:*
if this wil not serue Qq. *Ay, thus,*
and thus; [stabbing him.] *and, if*
this will not serve Capell.
 [Stabs him.] Ff. He stabs him. Qq.

I'll drown you in the malmsey-butt within.

[*Exit, with the body.*]

Sec. Murd. A bloody deed, and desperately dispatch'd!
How fain, like Pilate, would I wash my hands 270
Of this most grievous guilty murder done!

Re-enter First Murderer.

First Murd. How now! what mean'st thou, that thou
help'st me not?
By heavens, the duke shall know how slack thou art!
Sec. Murd. I would he knew that I had saved his
brother!
Take thou the fee, and tell him what I say; 275
For I repent me that the duke is slain. [*Exit.*]
First Murd. So do not I: go, coward as thou art.
Now must I hide his body in some hole,
Until the duke take order for his burial:
And when I have my meed, I must away; 280
For this will out, and here I must not stay. [*Exit.*]

268 *drown you...within.]* Ff. *chop thee...
in the next rooms.* Qq.
[*Exit...*] Malone. *Exit.* Ff. om.
Qq, and Capell.

269 *dispatch'd]* Ff. *perform'd* Qq.
270 *like Pilate, would I] would I like
Pilate* Q₇Q₈
hands] FfQ₈. *hand* The rest.

271 *grievous guilty] grievous - guilty
Vaughan conj.
guilty murder done]* Qq. *murther* Ff.

272 *Re-enter.....]* *Re-enter first Vil-
lain.* Pope. *Enter 1. Murtherer.*
Ff. om. Qq, and Capell.

272, 273 *How...art I]* *As verse in Qq.
As prose in Ff.*

272 *How now! what...not?]* Ff. *Why
doest thou not helpe me?* Qq (*me,
Q₁*). *Why dost not thou help me?*
Staunton.

273 *heavens] heauen* Q₆FfQ₇Q₈.
thou art] Qq. *you haue bene* Ff.
you've been Rowe (ed. 2).

278 *Now must I hide his] Qq. Well, Ile
go hide the* Ff.

279 *Until the duke take]* Qq. *Till that
the Duke give* Ff.

280 *must away]* Qq. *will away* Ff.

281 *here]* Qq. *then* Ff.
[*Exit.*] Ff. *Exeunt.* Qq. *Exit,
with the Body.* Capell.

www.libtool.com.cn ACT II.

SCENE I. *London. The palace.*

Flourish. Enter KING EDWARD sick, QUEEN ELIZABETH, DORSET, RIVERS, HASTINGS, BUCKINGHAM, GREY, and others.

K. Edw. Why, so: now have I done a good day's work:

You peers, continue this united league:
I every day expect an embassy
From my Redeemer to redeem me hence;
And now in peace my soul shall part to heaven, 5
Since I have set my friends at peace on earth.
Rivers and Hastings, take each other's hand;
Dissemble not your hatred, swear your love.

Riv. By heaven, my soul is purged from grudging hate;
And with my hand I seal my true heart's love. 10

Hast. So thrive I, as I truly swear the like!

K. Edw. Take heed you dally not before your king;

London. The palace.] The same.
A Room in the Palace. Capell. The court. Pope.

Flourish.] Ff. om. Qq and Theobald.
Enter King Edward...] Substantially as Capell. Enter the King sicke, the Queene, Lord Marquesse Dorset, Riwers, Hastings, Catesby, Buckingham, Wooduill. Ff. Enter King, Queene, Hastings, Ryuers, Dorcet, &c. Q₁Q₂. Enter...Riwers, &c. The rest.

1 *Why, so: now have I*] *Why so: now have I* Ff. *So, now I haue* Qq.

2 *this*] *the* Q₁Q₂.

4 *redeem*] *recall* Pope. *release* Kinnear

conj.

5 *now in peace*] Qq. *more to peace* Ff. *more at peace* Capell. *more in peace* Steevens (1793).

part to] *part from* Q₁ (Dev. and Huth) Q₂. *part for* quoted in Steevens's reprint, and adopted by Grant White.

6 *set*] Qq. *made* Ff. *friends*] *friend* Q₂.

7 *Rivers and Hastings*] Qq (*Hasting* Q₇). *Dorset and Riwers* Ff. *Hastings and Rivers* Rowe.

9 *soul*] Ff. *heart* Qq.

10 *heart's love*] *Hearts-love* F₄.

11 *truly*] Q₁Q₂Ff. om. The rest.

Lest he that is the supreme King of kings
 Confound your hidden falsehood, and award
 Either of you to be the other's end. 15

Hast. So prosper I, as I swear perfect love!

Riv. And I, as I love Hastings with my heart!

K. Edw. Madam, yourself are not exempt in this,
 Nor your son Dorset; Buckingham, nor you;
 You have been factious one against the other. 20
 Wife, love Lord Hastings, let him kiss your hand;
 And what you do, do it unfeignedly.

Q. Eliz. Here, Hastings; I will never more remember
 Our former hatred, so thrive I and mine!

K. Edw. Dorset, embrace him; Hastings, love lord
 marquess. 25

Dor. This interchange of love, I here protest,
 Upon my part shall be unviolable.

Hast. And so swear I, my lord. [*They embrace.*]

K. Edw. Now, princely Buckingham, seal thou this
 league

With thy embracements to my wife's allies, 30
 And make me happy in your unity.

Buck. [*To the Queen*] Whenever Buckingham doth turn
 his hate

On you or yours, but with all duteous love
 Doth cherish you and yours, God punish me

18 *are*] is FfQ₇Q₈.

in] Qq. *from* Ff.

19 *your*] Qq. *you* Ff.

23 *Here*] Qq. *There* Ff.

25 *K. Edw. Dorset.....marquess.*] One
 line in Rowe (ed. 2). Two in Ff.
 Omitted in Qq.

26 *This*] Q₁Ff. *Thus* The rest.

27 *unviolable*] Qq. *inviolable* Ff.

28 *swear*] *I swear* Q₇. *I swere* Q₈.

my lord] Qq. om. Ff.

[*They embrace.*] Capell. om. QqFf.

29 *thou*] *up* Q₇Q₈.

30 *embracements*] *embracement* Q₆Q₇Q₈.
wife's Rowe. *wives* QqFf.

31 *your*] *his* Q₇. *this* Q₈.

32 [*To the Queen*] Rowe. om. QqFf.

33 *On you or yours, but with all*] Qq.
Vpon your Grace, but with all Ff.
Upon your grace, and not with Pope.

With hate in those where I expect most love! 35
 When I have most need to employ a friend,
 And most assured that he is a friend,
 Deep, hollow, treacherous and full of guile,
 Be he unto me! this do I beg of God,
 When I am cold in zeal to you or yours. [*They embrace.* 40
K. Edw. A pleasing cordial, princely Buckingham,
 Is this thy vow unto my sickly heart.
 There wanteth now our brother Gloucester here,
 To make the perfect period of this peace.
Buck. And, in good time, here comes the noble duke. 45

Enter GLOUCESTER.

Glou. Good morrow to my sovereign king and queen;
 And, princely peers, a happy time of day!
K. Edw. Happy indeed, as we have spent the day.
 Brother, we have done deeds of charity;
 Made peace of enmity, fair love of hate, 50
 Between these swelling wrong-incensed peers.
Glou. A blessed labour, my most sovereign liege:
 Amongst this princely heap, if any here,
 By false intelligence, or wrong surmise,
 Hold me a foe; 55
 If I unwittingly, or in my rage,

39 *unto*] to Pope.

God] Qq. *heaven* Ff.

40 *zeal*] Qq. *lous* Ff.

[*They embrace.*] Embrace. Ff. om.
 Qq.

44 *perfect*] Qq. *blessed* Ff.

45 *And...duke.*] Qq. *And in good time,*
Heere comes Sir Richard Ratcliffe,
and the Duke. Ff.

46 *Enter Gloucester.*] Qq. *Enter Rat-*
cliffe, and Gloster. Ff.

49 *Brother*] Qq. *Gloster* Ff.

51 *wrong-incensed*] Rowe (ed. 2). *wrong*
insenced Q₁Q₂. *wrong insenced* Q₁
 Q₂. *wrong incensed* The rest.

52 *my*] Q₁Q₂Ff. om. The rest.
liege] Qq. *Lord* Ff.

53 *Amongst*] Qq. *Among* Ff.

55—57 *Hold...borne*] Two lines, the
 first ending *or in*, in Keightley.

55, 56 *Hold...rage,*] As in Malone (Ca-
 pell conj.). One line in QqFf.

56 *unwittingly*] Qq. *unwillingly* Ff.
or in my rage,] Omitted by Pope.

Have aught committed that is hardly borne
 By any in this presence, I desire
 To reconcile me to his friendly peace :
 'Tis death to me to be at enmity ; 60
 I hate it, and desire all good men's love.
 First, madam, I entreat true peace of you,
 Which I will purchase with my duteous service ;
 Of you, my noble cousin Buckingham,
 If ever any grudge were lodged between us ; 65
 Of you, Lord Rivers, and, Lord Grey, of you,
 That all without desert have frown'd on me ;
 Dukes, earls, lords, gentlemen ; indeed, of all.
 I do not know that Englishman alive
 With whom my soul is any jot at odds, 70
 More than the infant that is born to-night :
 I thank my God for my humility.

Q. Eliz. A holy day shall this be kept hereafter :
 I would to God all strifes were well compounded.
 My sovereign liege, I do beseech your majesty 75
 To take our brother Clarence to your grace.

Glou. Why, madam, have I offer'd love for this,
 To be so flouted in this royal presence ?

57 *ought*] Theobald (ed. 2). *thought*
Q₇Q₈. ought The rest.

58 *By*] *Qq. To Ff.*

59 *his*] *this Q₂.*

62 *First*] *Fird F₂.*

true] *Q₁Q₂Ff. om.* The rest.

63 *will*] *om. Q₆Q₇Q₈.*

66 *Of you, Lord.....of you*] *Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄.*

Of you my Lord...of you *Q₆Q₆Q₇Q₈.*

Of you and you, Lord Rivers and of

Dorset Ff. Of you, Lord Rivers and,

Dorset, of you Grant White conj.

Of you [to Grey], and you, Lord

Rivers &c. Spedding conj., reading

with Ff.

67, 68 *That...me ; Dukes...all.] Dukes*
...all That...me. Wright conj.

67 Here the Folios, after *frown'd on*
me, insert *Of you Lord Woodwill,*
and Lord Scales of you.

72 [Aside. Collier MS.

73 *holy day*] *holy-day Rowe.*

74 *strifes*] *strife Q₇Q₈.*

75 *liege*] *Qq. Lord Ff.*

your] *you Q₆.*

majesty] *Qq. Highness Ff.*

77 *offer'd*] *F₂. offered Q₇Q₈. off'red F₂.*

offred The rest.

78 *so flouted*] *Ff. thus scorn'd Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄.*

thus scorn'd Q₆Q₈. thus scorn'd Q₇Q₈.

Who knows not that the noble duke is dead? [*They all start.*
You do him injury to scorn his corse. 80

Riv. Who knows not he is dead! who knows he is?

Q. Eliz. All-seeing heaven, what a world is this!

Buck. Look I so pale, Lord Dorset, as the rest?

Dor. Ay, my good lord; and no one in this presence
But his red colour hath forsook his cheeks. 85

K. Edw. Is Clarence dead? the order was reversed.

Glou. But he, poor soul, by your first order died,
And that a winged Mercury did bear;
Some tardy cripple bore the countermand,
That came too lag to see him buried. 90

God grant that some, less noble and less loyal,
Nearer in bloody thoughts, but not in blood,
Deserve not worse than wretched Clarence did,
And yet go current from suspicion!

Enter DERBY.

Der. A boon, my sovereign, for my service done! 95

K. Edw. I pray thee, peace: my soul is full of sorrow.

Der. I will not rise, unless your highness grant.

79 *noble*] Qq. *gentle* Ff.
dead] *dead*, Q₁Q₂.
[*They all start.*] Ff. Omitted in
Qq.

80 *corse*] Q₁Q₂. *course* Q₃. *coarse* The
rest.

81 *Riv.*] Qq. King. Ff.
Who...he is] One line in Qq. Two
in Ff.

84 *no one*] *no man* Ff. *noone* Q₇. *none*
Q₈.
this presence] Qq. *the presence* Ff.

86 *dead*] *dead*, Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄.

87 *soul*] Qq. *man* Ff.

your] *our* Q₇Q₈.

88 *winged*] *wingled* Q₁.

89 *bore*] Qq. *bare* Ff. *had* Pope.

90 *came*] QqF₁. *come* F₂F₃F₄.

92 *but*] Qq. *and* Ff.

93 *not*] QqF₁F₂. *no* F₃F₄.

95 *Enter Derby.*] *Enter Darby* (or
Darbie). Qq. *Enter Earle of Derby.*
Ff. *Enter Stanley. Theobald.* See
note (III).

[*Kneels.* *Furnivall conj.*

96 *pray thee*] Qq. *prethes* F₁F₂F₃.
prithes F₄.

97 *grant.*] Q₁. *graunt.* Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅.
graunt, Q₆Q₇. *grant,* Q₈. *hears*
me. Ff.

K. Edw. Then speak at once what is it thou demand'st.

Der. The forfeit, sovereign, of my servant's life;
Who slew to-day a riotous gentleman 100
Lately attendant on the Duke of Norfolk.

K. Edw. Have I a tongue to doom my brother's death,
And shall that tongue give pardon to a slave?
My brother slew no man; his fault was thought,
And yet his punishment was cruel death. 105

Who sued to me for him? who, in my rage,
Kneel'd at my feet and bade me be advised?
Who spake of brotherhood? who spake of love?
Who told me how the poor soul did forsake
The mighty Warwick, and did fight for me? 110

Who told me, in the field by Tewksbury,
When Oxford had me down, he rescued me,
And said 'Dear brother, live, and be a king'?
Who told me, when we both lay in the field
Frozen almost to death, how he did lap me 115
Even in his own garments, and gave himself,
All thin and naked, to the numb cold night?
All this from my remembrance brutish wrath

98 *speak*] Qq. *say* Ff.
is it] *it is* Q₆.
demand'st.] *requests.* F₁F₂. *request'st.*
F₃F₄. *demaundst.* Q₁Q₂. *de-*
maundst? Q₃Q₄Q₅. *demaundest?*
Q₆. *demandest?* Q₇Q₈.

99 *Der.*] om. Q₃.
101 *attendant on*] *attending one* Q₇.
attending on Q₆.

103 *that tongue*] Ff. *the same* Qq.

104 *slew*] Qq. *kill'd* Ff.

thought] *nought* Q₈.

105 *cruel*] Qq. *bitter* Ff.

106 *rage*] Qq. *wrath* Ff.

107 *at*] *and* F₁.

bade] Q₂. *bid* Ff. *bad* The rest.

108 *Who spake*] Qq. *Who spoke* Ff.
Who spake to me Anon. conj., read-
ing the rest of the line as Qq.

who spake of love] *who spoke of*
love F₁. *who of love* Qq. *who*
spoke in love F₂F₃F₄.

110 *me?*] *me*: Q₁F₂F₃F₄.

111 *by*] *at* FfQ₇Q₈.

114 *in*] *is* Q₂.

115 *did lap*] Ff. *lappe* Q₇. *lapt* Q₈.
did lappe The rest.

116 *his own garments*] *his owne armes*
Q₆Q₇Q₈. *his Garments* Ff.

gave] Qq. *did give* Ff.

117 *and naked*] *and and naked* Q₂.
numb cold] *numbcold* Q₁Q₂.

Sinfully pluck'd, and not a man of you
 Had so much grace to put it in my mind. 120
 But when your carters or your waiting-vassals
 Have done a drunken slaughter, and defaced
 The precious image of our dear Redeemer,
 You straight are on your knees for pardon, pardon;
 And I, unjustly too, must grant it you: 125
 But for my brother not a man would speak,
 Nor I, ungracious, speak unto myself
 For him, poor soul. The proudest of you all
 Have been beholding to him in his life;
 Yet none of you would once plead for his life. 130
 O God, I fear thy justice will take hold
 On me, and you, and mine, and yours for this!
 Come, Hastings, help me to my closet. Oh, poor Clarence!

[*Exeunt some with King and Queen.*]

Glou. This is the fruit of rashness. Mark'd you not
 How that the guilty kindred of the queen 135
 Look'd pale when they did hear of Clarence' death?
 O, they did urge it still unto the king!
 God will revenge it. But come, let us in,

119 *pluck'd*] *puckt* Q₁.

123 *dear*] *dearest* Q₈.

125 [Derby rises. Furnivall conj.

126 *man*] *mast* Q₅Q₄Q₆.

127 *speak unto*] *spake unto* Rowe.

128 *of*] *one* Q₇Q₈.

129 *beholding*] *beholden* Q₄Q₆Q₈.

130 *plead*] Qq. *begge* Ff.

132 *your*] *your* Q₆.

133 *Come...Clarence!*] One line in Qq.

Two, the first ending *closet*, in Ff.

Pope ends the first line at *Ah*.

Come, Hastings, help] *Come*, [to

Hast.] *help* Capell.

help] *prithes help* Collier MS.

Oh] Qq. *Ah* Ff.

[*Exeunt...*] Ff. Exit. Qq.

134 *This is the fruit*] Qq. *This is the fruits* Ff. *These are the fruits* Pope.

rashness] *rawnes* Q₃Q₄Q₆. *rawnesse* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

Mark'd] *marks* Q₇Q₈. *Markt* F₄.

markt The rest.

135 *guilty*] QqF₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

136 *Clarence*] Rowe (ed. 2). *Clarence* QqF₁F₂F₃. *Clarence's* F₄.

death] Q₁Q₂Q₄. *death*. The rest.

138 *But come, let us in.*] *But come lets in* Qq. *Come Lords will you go*, Ff.

To comfort Edward with our company.

Buck. We wait upon your grace.

[*Exeunt.* 140

www.libtool.com.cn

SCENE II. *The palace.*

Enter the DUCHESS OF YORK, with the two children of CLARENCE.

Boy. Tell me, good grandam, is our father dead?

Duch. No, boy.

Boy. Why do you wring your hands, and beat your breast,

And cry 'O Clarence, my unhappy son'?

Girl. Why do you look on us, and shake your head, And call us wretches, orphans, castaways, 6

If that our noble father be alive?

Duch. My pretty cousins, you mistake me much.

I do lament the sickness of the king, As loath to lose him; not your father's death; 10 It were lost sorrow to wail one that's lost.

Boy. Then, grandam, you conclude that he is dead. The king my uncle is to blame for this:

139 *company.*] QqF₁. *company?* F₂F₃F₄.

140 *Buck. We...grace.*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

The palace.] The same. Capell.

Enter...] Enter the old Dutchesse of Yorke... Ff. Enter Dutches of Yorke, with Clarence Children. Qq.

1 *Boy.]* Qq. Edw. Ff. Son. Rowe. *Tell me, good grandam]* *Tell me good Granam* Qq. *Good grandam, tell us* Ff.

3 *Boy.]* Qq. Daugh. Ff. *you]* om. F₁. *wring your hands, and]* Qq. *weeps so oft?* And Ff. *weep so? and oft* Collier MS.

5 *Girl.]* Gerl. Q₁Q₂. *Boy.* Ff. *Girl.*

The rest. Son. Rowe.

6 *wretches, orphans]* *Orphans, Wretches* Ff. *wretched, orphanes* Q₇Q₈.

7 *be]* Qq. *were* Ff.

8 *much]* Qq. *both* Ff.

10 *lose]* Ff. *loose* Qq. *not your father's death]* *now your fathers dead* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

11 *sorrow to wail]* Ff. *labour to weeps for* Qq (*labour, to* Q₁Q₂).

12 *grandam, you conclude that]* *Granam you conclude that* Qq. *you conclude, (my Grandam)* Ff.

13 *my]* Qq. *mine* Ff. *to blame]* *too blame* QqF₁. *this]* Qq. *it* Ff.

God will revenge it; whom I will importune
With daily prayers all to that effect.

15

Girl. And so will I.

Duch. Peace, children, peace! the king doth love you
well:

Incapable and shallow innocents,
You cannot guess who caused your father's death.

Boy. Grandam, we can; for my good uncle Gloucester

20

Told me, the king, provoked by the queen,
Devised impeachments to imprison him:
And when my uncle told me so, he wept,
And hugg'd me in his arm, and kindly kiss'd my cheek;
Bade me rely on him as on my father,
And he would love me dearly as his child.

25

Duch. Oh, that deceit should steal such gentle
shapes,

And with a virtuous vizard hide foul guile!
He is my son; yea, and therein my shame;
Yet from my dugs he drew not this deceit.

30

Boy. Think you my uncle did dissemble, grandam?

Duch. Ay, boy.

Boy. I cannot think it. Hark! what noise is this?

15 *daily*] Qq. *earnest* Ff. *daily earnest*
Pope.

all to that effect] Omitted by Pope.

16 *Girl.* *And...I.*] *Daugh.* *And...I.* Ff.
Omitted in Qq.

20, 31 *Grandam.*] Ff. *Granam* Qq.

21 *provoked*] Qq. *prouok'd to it* Ff.
provok'd to't Pope.

23 *my uncle*] Ff. *he* Qq.

24 *And...arm,*] *And hugg'd me in his*
arme, Qq (*armes,* Q₇Q₈). *And pittied*

me Ff.

kindly] om. Edd. conj.

cheek] *cheekes* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

25 *Bade*] *Bad* Ff. *And bad* Qq.

on my] *in my* Qq.

26 *his*] Qq. *a* Ff.

27 *Oh*] Qq. *Ah!* Ff.

shapes] Qq. *shape* Ff.

28 *vizard*] *Vizor* Ff. *visard* Q₁Q₂.

foul guile] Qq. *deepe vice* Ff.

29 *yea*] *I* Ff. om. Q₄. *ay* Rowe.

Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH, *with her hair about her ears*; RIVERS and
DORSET *after her.*

Q. Eliz. Oh, who shall hinder me to wail and weep,
To chide my fortune and torment myself? 35
I'll join with black despair against my soul,
And to myself become an enemy.

Duch. What means this scene of rude impatience?

Q. Eliz. To make an act of tragic violence:
Edward, my lord, your son, our king, is dead. 40
Why grow the branches now the root is wither'd?
Why wither not the leaves the sap being gone?
If you will live, lament; if die, be brief,
That our swift-winged souls may catch the king's,
Or, like obedient subjects, follow him 45
To his new kingdom of perpetual rest.

Duch. Ah, so much interest have I in thy sorrow
As I had title in thy noble husband!
I have bewept a worthy husband's death,
And lived by looking on his images: 50
But now two mirrors of his princely semblance
Are crack'd in pieces by malignant death,
And I for comfort have but one false glass,
Which grieves me when I see my shame in him.

- 34 *Enter* Queen Elizabeth.....] *Enter* *Queene... Ff. Enter the Queene.* 42 *the sap being gone] that want their*
Qq (Quee. Q₁; Queen. Q₂). *sap Ff.*
Oh] Q₁Q₂Q₄. Ah Ff. Wh Q₃. om. 46 *perpetual rest] Qq. nere-changing*
The rest. Who Staunton. *night Ff. nere-changing light Collier*
34, 35 *weep, ... myself?] weeps? ... my* 47 *MS. perpetual light Keightley conj.*
selfe? Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄. weeps?...my Selfe. 47 *Ah] QqFf. Ay Pope.*
Ff. *I] om. F₁.*
36 *soul] selfe Q₆Q₆Q₇Q₈.* 48 *in] QqF₁F₂. to F₃F₄.*
37 *enemy.] enemy— Rowe.* *thy] my Q₇Q₈.*
38 *impatience?] impatience. Q₁.* 50 *by] Qq. with Ff.*
40 *your] Qq. thy Ff.* *images] image Q₈.*
41 *now...witherd?] Qq (witherd? Q₁* 54 *Which] Qq. That Ff.*
Q₂; witherd? Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₆; witherd. Q₇

Thou art a widow; yet thou art a mother, 55
 And hast the comfort of thy children left thee:
 But death hath snatch'd my husband from mine arms,
 And pluck'd two crutches from my feeble limbs,
 Edward and Clarence. O, what cause have I,
 Thine being but a moiety of my grief, 60
 To overgo thy plaints and drown thy cries!

Boy. Good aunt, you wept not for our father's death,
 How can we aid you with our kindred tears?

Girl. Our fatherless distress was left unmoan'd;
 Your widow-dolour likewise be unwept! 65

Q. Eliz. Give me no help in lamentation;
 I am not barren to bring forth complaints:
 All springs reduce their currents to mine eyes,
 That I, being govern'd by the watery moon,
 May send forth plenteous tears to drown the world! 70
 Oh for my husband, for my dear lord Edward!

Chil. Oh for our father, for our dear lord Clarence!

Duch. Alas for both, both mine, Edward and Clarence!

56 *thee*] Qq. om. Ff.

57 *husband*] Ff. *children* Qq.

58 *limbs*] *limmes* Qq. *hands* Ff.

59 *Edward and Clarence*] Qq. *Clarence,*
and Edward Ff.

59, 60 *have I, Thine*] *have I then, Thine*
 Vaughan conj.

60 *Thine*] Ff. *Then, Qq. Thou* Anon.
 MS. (in Capell's copy of Q₃).

a moiety] *a moity* Ff. *moity* Q₁Q₂
 Q₈. *moitie* Q₃Q₄Q₅. *motitie* Q₆
motity Q₇.

grief] *selfe* Q₆Q₇Q₈. *moane* Ff.

61 *plaints*] Qq (*plants* Q₃). *woes* Ff.

thy cries] *the cries* Q₆Q₈. *my cries*
 F₂.

62 *Good*] Qq. *Ah* Ff.

wept] *weept* Q₆Q₇.

our] *my* Q₁Q₈. *your* F₂F₃.

63 *kindred*] Ff. *kindreds* Qq.

tears] *teares*. Q₁.

64 *Girl.*] Q₈. *Daugh.* Ff. *Gerl.* The rest.

65 *widow-dolour*] Ff. *widowes dolours*
 Qq (*widdowes* Q₁). *widow dolours*
 Pope.

67 *complaints*] Ff. *laments* Qq.

68—70 *All...world!*] Put in the mar-
 gin by Pope.

69 *moon*] F₂F₄. *Moone* F₁F₂Q₇Q₈.
moane The rest.

71 *Oh*] Qq. *Ah* Ff.

for my husband] *my husband* Q₇Q₈.
dear] F₂F₄. *deere* F₁F₂. *eire* Q₁.
eyre Q₂. *heire* The rest.

72, 75, 78 *Chil.*] Ff. *Ambo.* or *Am.* Qq.

72 *Oh*] Qq. *Ah* Ff.

73 *Clarence*] *my Clarence* Long MS.

Q. Eliz. What stay had I but Edward? and he's gone.

Chil. What stay had we but Clarence? and he's gone.

Duch. What stays had I but they? and they are gone.

Q. Eliz. Was never widow had so dear a loss.

Chil. Were never orphans had so dear a loss.

Duch. Was never mother had so dear a loss.

Alas, I am the mother of these moans! 80

Their woes are parcell'd, mine are general.

She for an Edward weeps, and so do I;

I for a Clarence weep, so doth not she:

These babes for Clarence weep, and so do I;

I for an Edward weep, so do not they: 85

Alas, you three, on me threefold distress'd

Pour all your tears! I am your sorrow's nurse,

And I will pamper it with lamentations.

Dor. Comfort, dear mother: God is much displeas'd
That you take with unthankfulness his doing: 90

In common worldly things, 'tis call'd ungrateful,

With dull unwillingness to repay a debt

74 *Edward?*] Rowe. *Edward*, QqFf.

gone.] Rowe. *gone?* QqFf.

74, 75 *he's*] Ff. *is he* Q₆Q₇. *he is* The rest.

75 *Clarence?*] Ff. *Clarence*, Qq.

75, 76 *gone.*] Ff. *gone?* Qq.

76 *stays*] *stay* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

they?] Ff. *they*, Qq.

77 *Was never*] *Was euer* Q₄Q₇Q₈.

78 *Were never*] Ff. *Was neuer* Q₁. *Was euer* The rest.

so dear a] Ff Q₇Q₈. *a dearer* The rest.

loss.] *losse*. Q₁Ff. *losse?* The rest.

79 *never*] Q₁Ff. *euer* The rest.

so dear a] Ff. *a dearer* Qq.

loss.] *losse*: Q₁. *losse*. Ff. *losse?* The rest.

80 *moans*] Qq. *Greefes* F₁F₂. *Griefs*

F₃F₄.

81 *are*] Qq. *is* Ff.

82 *an*] Ff. om. Qq.

83 *weep*] *weepes* F₁.

84, 85 *and so...weep.*] Qq. Omitted in Ff.

85 *I...they.*] omitted by Pope.

weep] om. Q₄.

so do not] Q₁Ff. *and so do* The rest.

87 *Pour*] *Proue* Q₂.

all your] *all yours* F₂.

88 *lamentations*] Qq. *Lamentation* Ff.

89—100 *Dor. Comfort.....throne.*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

90 *you take with unthankfulness*] *with unthankfulness you take* Pope.

92 *repay*] *pay* Pope.

Which with a bounteous hand was kindly lent;
 Much more to be thus opposite with heaven,
 For it requires the royal debt it lent you. 95

Riv. Madam, bethink you, like a careful mother,
 Of the young prince your son: send straight for him;
 Let him be crown'd; in him your comfort lives:
 Drown desperate sorrow in dead Edward's grave,
 And plant your joys in living Edward's throne. 100

Enter GLOUCESTER, BUCKINGHAM, DERBY, HASTINGS, and
 RATCLIFF.

Glou. Madam, have comfort: all of us have cause
 To wail the dimming of our shining star;
 But none can cure their harms by wailing them.
 Madam, my mother, I do cry you mercy;
 I did not see your grace: humbly on my knee 105
 I crave your blessing.

Duch. God bless thee, and put meekness in thy mind,
 Love, charity, obedience, and true duty!

Glou. [*Aside*] Amen; and make me die a good old man!
 That is the butt-end of a mother's blessing: 110
 I marvel why her grace did leave it out.

Buck. You cloudy princes and heart-sorrowing peers,
 That bear this mutual heavy load of moan,

101 SCENE III. Pope.

Enter Gloucester... Enter Richard... Ff. Enter Glocest. (or Gloucester, or Gloucester) with others. Qq. Madam] Qq. Sister Ff.

103 *cure their*] Qq. *helps our* Ff.

105 *your grace*] you Pope.

on] on on Q₈.

knee] knees Q₈.

107 *mind*] Qq. *breast* Ff.

109 *and make me die*] *make me die* Q₈.

make me to die Q₇Q₈.

[*Aside*.] Hanmer.

110 *That is*] Ff. *Thats* Qq.

of a] Q₁Ff. *of my* The rest.

111 *why*] Qq. *that* Ff.

out.] Q₁Ff. *out!* The rest.

112 *cloudy princes*] Hyphened in Ff (*Princess F₁*).

heart-sorrowing peers] Hyphened in Ff.

heart-sorrowing] Hyphened in Q₁Q₂.

113 *mutual heavy*] Qq. *heavie mutuall* Ff.

Now cheer each other in each other's love :
 Though we have spent our harvest of this king, 115
 We are to reap the harvest of his son.
 The broken rancour of your high-swoln hearts,
 But lately splinter'd, knit and join'd together,
 Must gently be preserved, cherish'd, and kept :
 Me seemeth good, that, with some little train, 120
 Forthwith from Ludlow the young prince be fetch'd
 Hither to London, to be crown'd our king.

Riv. Why with some little train, my Lord of Bucking-
 ham ?

Buck. Marry, my lord, lest, by a multitude,
 The new-heal'd wound of malice should break out ; 125
 Which would be so much the more dangerous,
 By how much the estate is green and yet ungovern'd :
 Where every horse bears his commanding rein,
 And may direct his course as please himself,
 As well the fear of harm as harm apparent, 130
 In my opinion, ought to be prevented.

Glou. I hope the king made peace with all of us ;
 And the compact is firm and true in me.

Riv. And so in me ; and so, I think, in all :

114 *other*] *others* Q₁.
 115 *of*] Q₁Ff. *for* The rest.
 116 *son*] *soons* Q₆.
 117 *rancour*] *concord* Bailey conj.
hearts] Qq. *hates* Ff.
 118 *lately*] *lastly* Q₁Q₆.
splinter'd] F₁. *splinter'd* Q₁. *splint-*
red F₂F₃. *splintr'd* F₄. *splinted*
 The rest.
 119 *gently*] Q₁Ff. *greatly* The rest.
 121 *fetch'd*] *fetcht* Qq. *fet* Ff.
 123—140 Riv. *Why...say I.*] Ff. Omit-
 ted in Qq.
 123 *Why...Buckingham f*] One line in

Pope. Two in Ff.
 127 *estate is*] *state's* Dyce, ed. 2 (S.
 Walker conj.).
green and] om. Pope.
 127—129 *ungovern'd*:.....*himself,*] *un-*
govern'd,...*himself.* Vaughan conj.
 129 *please*] *it please* Keightley.
 132 Glou.] Rich. Ff. Riv. Long MS.
 134 Riv.] Ff. Stan. Hanmer. Rich.
 Long MS.
 134—140 Riv. *And*.....*prince.* Hast.
And...I.] Hast. *And*.....*prince.* Sta.
And....*I.* Capell.

Yet, since it is but green, it should be put 135
 To no apparent likelihood of breach,
 Which haply by much company might be urged :
 Therefore I say with noble Buckingham,
 That it is meet so few should fetch the prince.

Hast. And so say I. 140

Glou. Then be it so ; and go we to determine
 Who they shall be that straight shall post to Ludlow.
 Madam, and you, my mother, will you go
 To give your censures in this weighty business ?

Q. Eliz. }
Duch. } With all our hearts. 145

[*Exeunt all but Buckingham and Gloucester.*]

Buck. My lord, whoever journeys to the prince,
 For God's sake, let not us two stay behind ;
 For, by the way, I'll sort occasion,
 As index to the story we late talk'd of,
 To part the queen's proud kindred from the king. 150

Glou. My other self, my counsel's consistory,
 My oracle, my prophet !—My dear cousin,
 I, like a child, will go by thy direction.
 Towards Ludlow then, for we'll not stay behind. [*Exeunt.*]

139 *so few*] *but few* Hanmer.

142 *Ludlow*] Qq. *London* Ff.

143 *mother*] Qq. *Sister* Ff.

144 *censures*] *sensures* Q, Q₈.

weighty] Qq. om. Ff.

business] Rowe. *business*, Q₁. *business*. The rest.

145 *Q. Eliz. Duch. With...hearts.*] Ans.
With.....hearts. Qq. Omitted in
 Ff.

[*Exeunt.....*] *Exeunt.* man. Glo.
Buck. Qq. (substantially). *Exeunt.*

Manent Buckingham, and Richard
 Ff (Manet F₁).

147 *stay behind*] Q₁. *stay at home* Ff.
be behind The rest.

149 *late*] Q₁F₁F₂F₃. *lately* The rest.

150 *king*] Qq. *Prince* Ff.

152 *prophet* !—*My*] Theobald (Warburton).
Prophet, my QqFf.

153 *like*] Qq. *as* Ff.

154 *Towards*] Qq. *Toward* Ff.
Ludlow] Qq. *London* Ff.
we'll] Ff. *we will* Qq.

SCENE III. *London. A street.**Enter two Citizens, meeting.**First Cit.* Neighbour, well met : whither away so fast ?*Sec. Cit.* I promise you, I scarcely know myself :
Hear you the news abroad ?*First Cit.* Ay, that the king is dead.*Sec. Cit.* Bad news, by 'r lady, seldom comes the better :
I fear, I fear, 'twill prove a troublous world. 5*Enter another Citizen.**Third Cit.* Neighbours, God speed !*First Cit.* Give you good morrow, sir.*Third Cit.* Doth this news hold of good King Edward's
death ?*Sec. Cit.* Ay, sir, it is too true ; God help the while !*Third Cit.* Then, masters, look to see a troublous world.*First Cit.* No, no ; by God's good grace his son shall
reign. 10*Third Cit.* Woe to that land that's govern'd by a child !

SCENE III.] SCENE IV. Pope. In Collier MS. the whole scene is erased. London. A street.] A street near the court. Theobald.
Enter...] Capell. Enter two Citizens. Qq. Enter one Citizen at one doore, and another at the other. Ff.
1 *Neighbour, well met*] Qq. *Good morrow, Neighbour* Ff. *whither*] *whether* F₁Q₆.
2 *scarcely*] QqF₁. *hardly* F₂F₃F₄.
3 *Hear*] Ff. 1 *Heare* Qq. *First Cit.*] 1 Ff. 2 Qq. *Ay*] 1 Qq. *Yes* Ff. *that*] QqF₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

4 *Sec. Cit.*] 2 Ff. 1 Qq. *Bad*] Qq. *Ill* Ff. *the better*] *better* Q₁Q₆. *a better* Pope.
5 *troublous*] Q₁. *giddy* Ff. *troublesome* The rest.
6 *Neighbours, God speed!*] Ff. *Good morrow neighbours.* Qq. *First Cit. Give...sir.*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.
7 *this*] Qq. *the* Ff.
8 *Sec. Cit. Ay, sir...while!*] 2. *I sir,... while.* Ff. 1 *It doth.* Qq.
9 *troublous*] *troublesome* Q₆.
10 *good*] Q₁Ff. The rest omit.

Sec. Cit. In him there is a hope of government,
That in his nonage council under him,
And in his full and ripen'd years himself,
No doubt, shall then and till then govern well. 15

First Cit. So stood the state when Henry the Sixth
Was crown'd in Paris but at nine months old.

Third Cit. Stood the state so? No, no, good friends,
God wot;

For then this land was famously enrich'd
With politic grave counsel; then the king 20
Had virtuous uncles to protect his grace.

First Cit. Why, so hath this, both by the father and
mother.

Third Cit. Better it were they all came by the father,
Or by the father there were none at all;
For emulation now, who shall be nearest, 25
Will touch us all too near, if God prevent not.

O, full of danger is the Duke of Gloucester!
And the queen's sons and brothers haught and proud:

12 *a hope*] *hope* Q₇Q₈.

government] See note (VIII).

13 *That*] Qq. *Which* Ff. *With* Collier MS. *Whilst* Hutchesson conj. (Gent. Mag. 1790). *Set* or *First* Taylor conj. MS.

council under him] *counsel under them* (i.e. the regency) Seymour conj.

14 *full and*] *full* Q₇Q₈.

ripen'd] Pope. *ripened* QqFf.

14, 15 *himself, No doubt,*] *himself No doubt,* Vaughan conj.

16 *state*] *case* Q₇Q₈.

Henry] Ff. *Henris* Q₈. *Harry* The rest.

the Sixth] *nam'd the Sixth* Seymour conj.

17 *in Paris*] Ff. *at Paris* Qq.

nine] *ix.* Q₁. *xi.* Q₂.

18 *No,...wot*] Ff. *no good my friend not so* Qq.

19 *this*] *our* Q₈.

20 *With*] *Which* F₁.

22, 31 *First Cit.*] 1 Ff. 2 Qq.

22 *Why, so*] Ff. *So* Qq.

22, 23, 24 *the father*] Qq. *his Father* Ff.

25 *emulation now, who shall*] Qq. *emulation, who shall now* Ff.

nearest] *earnest* Q₇Q₈.

26 *Will*] Q₁Ff. *Which* The rest.

28 *sons...haught*] Ff. *kindred haughty* Qq. *kindred hautie* are Capell conj.

haught and proud] *haughty, proud* Pope.

And were they to be ruled, and not to rule,
This sickly land might solace as before. 30

First Cit. Come, come, we fear the worst; all shall be well.

Third Cit. When clouds appear, wise men put on their cloaks;

When great leaves fall, the winter is at hand;
When the sun sets, who doth not look for night?
Untimely storms make men expect a dearth. 35
All may be well; but, if God sort it so,
'Tis more than we deserve, or I expect.

Sec. Cit. Truly, the souls of men are full of dread:
Ye cannot reason almost with a man
That looks not heavily and full of fear. 40

Third Cit. Before the times of change, still is it so:
By a divine instinct men's minds mistrust
Ensuing dangers; as, by proof, we see
The waters swell before a boisterous storm.
But leave it all to God. Whither away? 45

Sec. Cit. Marry, we were sent for to the justices.

Third Cit. And so was I: I'll bear you company. [*Exeunt.*]

29 *to rule*] *rule* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

30 *land*] Qq. *Land*, Ff.

31 *First Cit.*] 1. Ff. 2 Qq.

shall] Qq. *will* Ff.

32 *appear*] Qq. *are seen* Ff.

33 *the*] Qq. *then* Ff.

35 *make*] *makes* F₁Q₈.

men] *them* Q₇Q₈.

dearth] *darth* Q₁.

36 *may*] *men* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

38 *Sec. Cit.*] 2. Ff. 1 Qq.

souls] Qq. *hearts* Ff.

dread] *bread* Q₁Q₈. *fears* Ff.

39 *Ye*] *Yea* Q₇Q₈. *You* Ff.

reason almost] Ff. *almost reason*

Qq. (*almost* Q₆).

40 *heavily*] *heavy* Q₇Q₈.

fear] Qq. *dread* Ff.

41 *times*] *dayes* Ff. *time* Q₇Q₈.

is it] *it is* Q₈.

41, 42 *so: . . . instinct*] Qq. *so, . . . instinct*,

F₁F₂F₃. *so By . . . instinct*, F₄.

43 *Ensuing dangers*] Qq. *Pursuing*

danger Ff. *Ensuing danger* Pope.

In F₁F₂F₃ the catchword is *Ensuing*.

44 *waters*] Qq. *Water* Ff.

boisterous] *boystous* Q₈.

45 *Whither*] *Whether* Q₇Q₈.

46 *Marry*] Ff. om. Qq.

were] Ff. *are* Qq.

justices] Ff. *Iustice* Qq. *justice's*

Anon. conj.

SCENE IV. *London. The palace.*

*Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF YORK, the young DUKE OF YORK,
QUEEN ELIZABETH, and the DUCHESS OF YORK.*

Arch. Last night, I hear, they lay at Northampton ;
At Stony-Stratford will they be to-night :
To-morrow, or next day, they will be here.

Duch. I long with all my heart to see the prince :
I hope he is much grown since last I saw him. 5

Q. Eliz. But I hear, no ; they say my son of York
Hath almost overta'en him in his growth.

York. Ay, mother ; but I would not have it so.

Duch. Why, my young cousin, it is good to grow.

York. Grandam, one night, as we did sit at supper, 10
My uncle Rivers talk'd how I did grow
More than my brother : 'Ay,' quoth my uncle Gloucester,
'Small herbs have grace, great weeds do grow apace :'
And since, methinks, I would not grow so fast,
Because sweet flowers are slow and weeds make haste. 15

Duch. Good faith, good faith, the saying did not hold

SCENE IV.] SCENE V. Pope.

London. The palace.] The same.
A Room in the Palace. Capell. The
Court. Theobald.

Enter...] Enter Cardinal, Dutches
of Yorke, Quee. (or Qu.) young
(or yong) Yorke. Qq. Enter Arch-
bishop, yong Yorke, the Queene,
and the Dutchesse. Ff.

1 *hear*] Q₁Q₂Q₇Q₈. *heard* The rest.

Northampton] Qq. *Stony Stratford*
Ff. See note (ix).

3 *they will*] *will they* Q₇Q₈.

5 *last I*] *I last* Q₈.

6 *no*] *not* Pope.

7 *Hath*] Qq. *Ha's* F₁F₂F₃. *Has* F₄.
almost] om. Q₆Q₇Q₈.

his] om. Q₇Q₈.

9 *young*] Q₈. *good* Ff. *yong* The
rest.

cousin,] *cousin* ? Capell.

10 *Grandam*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *Granam* The
rest.

12 *uncle*] *Nnckle* Q₁.

Gloucester] *Glocester* Q₁Q₄. *Clo.* Q₃

Q₆. *Glo.* Q₆Q₇Q₈. *Glouster* F₁F₇.

Gloster F₂F₄.

13 *herbs*] *earbs* Q₇.

do] Ff. om. Qq.

In him that did object the same to thee :
 He was the wretched'st thing when he was young,
 So long a-growing and so leisurely,
 That, if this rule were true, he should be gracious. 20
Arch. Why, madam, so, no doubt, he is.
Duch. I hope so too; but yet let mothers doubt.
York. Now, by my troth, if I had been remember'd,
 I could have given my uncle's grace a flout,
 To touch his growth nearer than he touch'd mine. 25
Duch. How, my pretty York? I pray thee, let me hear it.
York. Marry, they say my uncle grew so fast
 That he could gnaw a crust at two hours old :
 'Twas full two years ere I could get a tooth.
 Grandam, this would have been a biting jest. 30
Duch. I pray thee, pretty York, who told thee this?
York. Grandam, his nurse.
Duch. His nurse! why, she was dead ere thou wert born.
York. If 'twere not she, I cannot tell who told me.
Q. Eliz. A parlous boy : go to, you are too shrewd. 35

- 20 *if this rule were true*] Edd. *if this were a true rule* Q₁Q₂. *if this were a rule* Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈. *if his rule were true* Ff.
 21 *Arch.*] Arc. Capell. Car. Qq. Yor. Ff.
Why, madam,...is.] Qq. *And so no doubt he is, my gracious Madam.* Ff. S. Walker suspects a corruption in *gracious*.
 22 *so too*] Qq. *he is* Ff.
 25 *To touch...mine.]* *That should have neerer toucht his growth then he did mine.* Qq. *That should have near touch'd his growth than he mine.* Vaughan conj.
 26 *How...it.]* As one line in Qq. As two in Ff.
pretty] Qq. *yong* Ff.
York ?] *Yorke*, Ff.
pray thee] Qq. *prythee* Ff.
 27 *they*] *thy* Q₄.
my] Q₁Ff. *that my* The rest.
fast] *faw* Q₈.
 28 *old*] *hold* Q₃Q₆.
 30, 32 *Grandam*] Ff. *Granam* Qq.
 30 *biting*] Q₁F₃F₄. *byting* F₁F₂. *pretic* Q₂. *prettie* Q₃Q₄Q₆. *prittie* Q₅. *pritty* Q₇Q₈.
 31 *pray thee*] Qq. *prythee* F₁F₂. *prethee* F₃. *prithee* F₄.
this ?] Ff. *so*. Q₁. *so ?* The rest.
 33 *His nurse*] Q₁Ff. om. The rest.
wert] Qq. *was* Ff.
 35 *parlous*] Ff. *perillous* Qq (*perillous* Q₆).
go to] Q₁Q₂. *go too* The rest.
you are] *thou art* Q₇Q₈.

Arch. Good madam, be not angry with the child.

Q. Eliz. Pitchers have ears.

www.libtool.com.cn

Enter a Messenger.

Arch. Here comes a messenger. What news?

Mess. Such news, my lord, as grieves me to unfold.

Q. Eliz. How fares the prince?

Mess. Well, madam, and in health.

Duch. What is thy news then? 41

Mess. Lord Rivers and Lord Grey are sent to Pomfret,
With them Sir Thomas Vaughan, prisoners.

Duch. Who hath committed them?

Mess. The mighty dukes,
Gloucester and Buckingham.

Q. Eliz. For what offence? 45

Mess. The sum of all I can, I have disclosed;
Why or for what these nobles were committed

36 *Arch.*] *Arc. Capell. Car. Qq. Dut. Ff.*

the] a F₃F₄. *the poor* Taylor conj. MS., reading 32—41 as eight lines of verse, ending *dead...cannot...Go to...angry...comes...lord...prince...news?*

37—41 *Pitchers...then?*] Steevens (1793) arranges as four lines, ending *messenger...lord...prince?...news?*

37 *have]* *hath* Q₇Q₈.

38 *Enter a Messenger.] Ff. Enter Dorset. Qq.*

Arch. Here comes...news?] *Ff. Here comes your sonne, Lo: M. Dorset. What newes Lo: Marques?* Qq (*Lo: Marques...Lo: Marques?* Q₂; *Lord Marques...Lord Marques?* The rest). See note (x).

What news?] *What news with you?* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

39 *Mess.] Mes. Ff. Dor. Qq* (and throughout the scene).

unfold] Qq. *report* Ff.

40 *fares]* Qq. *doth* Ff.

41 *thy news then?*] Q₁. *thy Newes?* Ff. *the newes then?* The rest.

42, 43 *Lord Rivers...With them...prisoners.] Qq. Lord Riuers...and with them,.....Prisoners. Ff, ending the lines Grey,...them,...Prisoners.*

Pomfret...Vaughan, prisoners] *Pomfret prisoners; and with them..... Vaughan Capell.*

43 *Vaughan]* *Vaughan* Q₆.

44, 45 *The mighty...Buckingham.] As in Pope. One line in QqFf.*

45 *Gloucester]* *Clocester* Q₂.

Q. Eliz.] Queen. Johnson. Car. Qq. Arch. Ff.

47 *for what]* *what* Q₂. *these]* Qq. *the* Ff.

Is all unknown to me, my gracious lady.

Q. Eliz. Ay me, I see the downfall of our house!
The tiger now hath seized the gentle hind; 50
Insulting tyranny begins to jet
Upon the innocent and aweless throne:
Welcome, destruction, death, and massacre!
I see, as in a map, the end of all.

Duch. Accursed and unquiet wrangling days, 55
How many of you have mine eyes beheld!
My husband lost his life to get the crown;
And often up and down my sons were toss'd,
For me to joy and weep their gain and loss:
And being seated, and domestic broils 60
Clean over-blown, themselves, the conquerors,
Make war upon themselves; blood against blood,
Self against self: O, preposterous
And frantic outrage, end thy damned spleen;
Or let me die, to look on death no more! 65

Q. Eliz. Come, come, my boy; we will to sanctuary.
Madam, farewell.

48 *lady*] Qq. *Lord* Ff.

49 *Ay*] *Ah* Rowe.

downfall] Qq. *ruine* Ff.

our] Qq. *my* Ff.

50 *The...hind;*] Printed in italic in F₄.
seized] *seaze* Q₇.

51 *jet*] *iet* Qq. *Iutt* F₁F₂. *Jut* F₃. *jut* F₄.

52 *aweless*] Ff. *lawless* Qq.

53 *death*] Qq. *Blood* Ff.

58 *And often*] *Too often* Collier MS.

59 *their*] *were* Q₈.

60, 61 *seated, and...broils Clean over-blown, themselves,*] *seated and..... broiles, Cleans overblowne themselves,* Q₁.

61 *conquerors,*] *conquerours* Q₁.

62, 63 *blood against blood, Self*] Qq.
Brother to Brother; Blood to blood, selfe Ff (ending line 62 at to *Brother*).

63 *Self against self*] *Self 'gainst self* Steevens (1793), reading with Ff. O,] om. Taylor conj. MS. (reading with Ff). *preposterous*] *prepostorous* F₁. *most preposterous* Pope. *prepost'rous* Rowe.

64 *outrage*] *courage* Reed (1803).

thy] *the* Q₈.

65 *death*] Qq. *earth* Ff.

67 *Madam, farewell.*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

Duch. I'll go along with you.

Q. Eliz. You have no cause.

Arch. My gracious lady, go ;
 And thither bear your treasure and your goods.
 For my part, I'll resign unto your grace 70
 The seal I keep : and so betide to me
 As well I tender you and all of yours !
 Come, I'll conduct you to the sanctuary. [*Exeunt.*]

ACT III.

SCENE I. *London. A street.*

*The trumpets sound. Enter the young PRINCE, the Dukes of
 GLOUCESTER and BUCKINGHAM, CARDINAL BOURCHIER,
 CATESBY, and others.*

Buck. Welcome, sweet prince, to London, to your
 chamber.

Glou. Welcome, dear cousin, my thoughts' sovereign :
 The weary way hath made you melancholy.

Prince. No, uncle ; but our crosses on the way
 Have made it tedious, wearisome, and heavy: 5
 I want more uncles here to welcome me.

I'll go along] Qq. *Stay, I will go*
 Ff.

68 [To the Queen. Malone.

69 *thither]* *thether* F₁.

bear] *bare* Q₆.

71 *betide]* *betid* Q₆.

to me] QqF₁. *it me* F₂F₃F₄.

73 *Come]* Qq. *Go* Ff.

London.] Pope.

A street.] Capell.

Cardinal Bourchier, Catesby, and
 others.] Capell, substantially. Car-
 dinal, &c. Qq. Lord Cardinal, with
 others. Ff.

1 *Welcome...chamber.]* One line Qq.
 Two, the first ending *London,* in
 Ff.

5 *Have]* *Hath* Q₆.

Glou. Sweet prince, the untainted virtue of your years
 Hath not yet dived into the world's deceit :
 Nor more can you distinguish of a man
 Than of his outward show ; which, God he knows, 10
 Seldom or never jumpeth with the heart.
 Those uncles which you want were dangerous ;
 Your grace attended to their sugar'd words,
 But look'd not on the poison of their hearts :
 God keep you from them, and from such false friends ! 15

Prince. God keep me from false friends ! but they were
 none.

Glou. My lord, the mayor of London comes to greet you.

Enter the Lord Mayor, and his train.

May. God bless your grace with health and happy
 days !

Prince. I thank you, good my lord ; and thank you all.
 I thought my mother and my brother York 20
 Would long ere this have met us on the way :
 Fie, what a slug is Hastings, that he comes not
 To tell us whether they will come or no !

Enter LORD HASTINGS.

Buck. And, in good time here comes the sweating lord.

Prince. Welcome, my lord : what, will our mother come ?

Hast. On what occasion, God he knows, not I, 26
 The queen your mother and your brother York

8 *Hath*] *Have* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

9 *Nor*] *No* FfQ₈.

16 *Prince.*] *Prince* [Aside. Edd. conj.
God...none.] One line in Qq. Two
 in Ff.

from false] *frō such false* Q₄.

17 *mayor*] F₄. *Maïor* QqF₁. *Major*

F₂F₃.

18 *Enter the Lord Mayor...*] Capell.

Enter Lord Maior. QqF₁ (*Maire* Q₇).

Enter Lord Major. F₁F₃. *Enter*

Lord Mayor. F₄.

19 [they kiss his Hand, and retire.

Capell.

Have taken sanctuary: the tender prince
 Would fain have come with me to meet your grace,
 But by his mother was perforce withheld. 30

Buck. Fie, what an indirect and peevish course
 Is this of hers! Lord cardinal, will your grace
 Persuade the queen to send the Duke of York
 Unto his princely brother presently?
 If she deny, Lord Hastings, go with him, 35
 And from her jealous arms pluck him perforce.

Card. My Lord of Buckingham, if my weak oratory
 Can from his mother win the Duke of York,
 Anon expect him here; but if she be obdurate
 To mild entreaties, God in heaven forbid 40
 We should infringe the holy privilege
 Of blessed sanctuary! not for all this land
 Would I be guilty of so deep a sin.

Buck. You are too senseless-obstinate, my lord,
 Too ceremonious and traditional: 45
 Weigh it but with the grossness of this age,
 You break not sanctuary in seizing him.
 The benefit thereof is always granted

28 *Have*] *Hath* Q₈.

29 *have come*] Q₁Q₂Q₄Ff. *come* The rest.

31 *an*] *an an* F₂.
peevish] *peenish* Q₈.

33 *to send*] *the send* Q₈. *they send* Q₆.
she send Anon. conj.

35 *go*] *you goe* F₂. *you go* F₃F₄.
him] *them* Q₆Q₈Q₇Q₈.

38 *the*] *to* Q₈.

39 *Anon*] om. Steevens conj.

39, 40 *be obdurate To mild entreaties*]
be Obdurate to entreaties Pope.

40 *in heaven*] Q₁Q₂. The rest omit.

42 *blessed*] om. Pope.

43 *deep*] Q₁Q₂. *great* The rest.

44—46 *too... Weigh it but*] *to sense, less obstinate, my lord: Too...traditional Weight, is but* Jackson conj.

44 *senseless-obstinate*] Theobald. *senceless obstinate* QqFf. *strict and abstinent* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). *needless-obstinate* Staunton conj.

46 *grossness of this*] *greatness of this* Q₆. *greatness of his* Q₇Q₈. *greenness of his* Hanmer (Warburton). *goodness of his* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). *grossness of his* Hunter conj. *cunning* (or *knowledge*) of *this* Lettsom conj. *progress of this* so quoted by Cartwright. *looseness of this* Cartwright conj.

To those whose dealings have deserved the place,
 And those who have the wit to claim the place : 50
 This prince hath neither claim'd it nor deserved it ;
 And therefore, in mine opinion, cannot have it :
 Then, taking him from thence that is not there,
 You break no privilege nor charter there.
 Oft have I heard of sanctuary men ; 55
 But sanctuary children ne'er till now.

Card. My lord, you shall o'er-rule my mind for once.
 Come on, Lord Hastings, will you go with me ?

Hast. I go, my lord.

Prince. Good lords, make all the speedy haste you may.
 [Exit Cardinal and Hastings.]

Say, uncle Gloucester, if our brother come, 61
 Where shall we sojourn till our coronation ?

Glou. Where it seems best unto your royal self.
 If I may counsel you, some day or two
 Your highness shall repose you at the Tower : 65
 Then where you please, and shall be thought most fit
 For your best health and recreation.

Prince. I do not like the Tower, of any place.
 Did Julius Cæsar build that place, my lord ?

Buck. He did, my gracious lord, begin that place ; 70
 Which, since, succeeding ages have re-edified.

Prince. Is it upon record, or else reported

51 *neither*] never F₄.

52 *And therefore*] QqF₁. *Therefore* F₂
 F₃F₄.

53 *taking*] take Q₆Q₇Q₈.

thence] hence Dyce (ed. 1).

there] worthy Bailey conj.

56 *ne'er*] ne're Ff. *never* Qq.

57 *o'er-rule*] Ff. *ouerrule* Qq.

60 *Good*] My Capell (corrected in Errata).

[Exit...] om. Q₁Q₂. Exit... The

rest (after line 59).

63 *seems*] Q₁Q₂. *thinkst* Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈.
think'st Ff. *thinks* S. Walker conj.
 and Collier MS.

64 *may*] my Q₈.

66 *and*] as Q₇Q₈.

70 Buck.] Glo. Steevens.

gracious] om. Steevens conj., reading
He...since as one line.

71 *re-edified*] rebuilt Hanmer.

72 *record*] record? Ff. record Q₇Q₈.

Successively from age to age, he built it?

Buck. Upon record, my gracious lord.

Prince. But say, my lord, it were not register'd, 75
Methinks the truth should live from age to age,
As 'twere retail'd to all posterity,
Even to the general all-ending day.

Glou. [*Aside*] So wise so young, they say, do never
live long.

Prince. What say you, uncle? 80

Glou. I say, without characters, fame lives long.

[*Aside*] Thus, like the formal vice, Iniquity,
I moralize two meanings in one word.

Prince. That Julius Cæsar was a famous man;
With what his valour did enrich his wit, 85
His wit set down to make his valour live:
Death makes no conquest of this conqueror;
For now he lives in fame, though not in life.
I'll tell you what, my cousin Buckingham,—

Buck. What, my gracious lord? 90

Prince. An if I live until I be a man,
I'll win our ancient right in France again,
Or die a soldier, as I lived a king.

74 *Upon*] *It is upon* Capell.

77 *retail'd*] *intail'd* Warburton.

78 *all-ending*] *Q₁.* *ending* The rest.

79 [*Aside*] Johnson.
never] *ne'er* Pope.

81 *say...fame*] *say that Julius Cæsar's
fame* Taylor conj. MS.
lives] *ne'er lives* Mason conj.

82 [*Aside*] *F₂F₃F₄.* om. The rest.

Thus] *That Q₆Q₇Q₈.*
formal vice, Iniquity] *formal wise
antiquary* Hanmer (ed. 1). *formal-
wise antiquity* Warburton. *formal
vice, hypocrisy* Long MS. *form, all*

vice, iniquity Jackson conj.

83 *moralize two*] *moralize: two* Warbur-
ton. *moralize,—two* Capell.

86 *valour*] *valure* *Q₁Q₂.*

87 *makes*] *made* Hanmer.
this] *Q₁.* *his* The rest.

88 *now*] *yet* Capell.

89 *my*] om. *F₄.*

Buckingham,—] *Buckingham.* *Qq*
Ff.

90 *What*] *What is't* Wordsworth.
gracious] *good* Capell.

91 *An if*] Theobald. *And if* *QqFf*

Glou. [*Aside*] Short summers lightly have a forward
spring.

94

www.fbtool.com.cn

Enter young YORK, HASTINGS, and the CARDINAL.

Buck. Now, in good time, here comes the Duke of York.

Prince. Richard of York! how fares our loving brother?

York. Well, my dread lord; so must I call you now.

Prince. Ay, brother, to our grief, as it is yours:

Too late he died that might have kept that title,

Which by his death hath lost much majesty. 100

Glou. How fares our cousin, noble Lord of York?

York. I thank you, gentle uncle. O, my lord,

You said that idle weeds are fast in growth:

The prince my brother hath outgrown me far.

Glou. He hath, my lord.

York. And therefore is he idle? 105

Glou. O, my fair cousin, I must not say so.

York. Then he is more beholding to you than I.

Glou. He may command me as my sovereign;

But you have power in me as in a kinsman.

York. I pray you, uncle, give me this dagger. 110

Glou. My dagger, little cousin? with all my heart.

94 [*Aside*] Johnson.

Short...spring.] In italics in F₃F₄.

Short summers lightly] *Lightly* :—

short summers Jackson conj.

summers...have] QqFf. *summers...*

has Pope (ed. 1). *summer.....has*

Pope (ed. 2). *summer...hath* Capell

conj.

lightly] *likely* Q₆. *rightly* Jackson

conj.

96 *Richard*] Q₆FfQ₇Q₈. *Rich.* The

rest.

loving] Q₁Q₂. *noble* The rest.

97 *dread*] Q₁Q₂. *deare* or *dear* The

rest.

99 *Too late*] *Too soon* Hanmer. *So*

late Vaughan conj.

that] *this* Q₇Q₈.

104 *outgrown*] *overgrown* Q₈.

105 *idle?*] *idle*. F₃F₄.

107 *he is*] QqFf. *is he* Theobald (ed. 2).

beholding] *beholden* Pope.

109 *in me as in*] *o'er me as* Collier

MS.

110 *uncle*] *uncle then*, Hanmer. *gentle*

uncle Keightley.

give me] *give to me* Keightley conj.

this] *this your* Warburton.

- Prince.* A beggar, brother?
York. Of my kind uncle, that I know will give;
 And being but a toy, which is no grief to give.
Glou. A greater gift than that I'll give my cousin. 115
York. A greater gift! O, that's the sword to it.
Glou. Ay, gentle cousin, were it light enough.
York. O, then, I see, you will part but with light gifts;
 In weightier things you'll say a beggar nay.
Glou. It is too heavy for your grace to wear. 120
York. I weigh it lightly, were it heavier.
Glou. What, would you have my weapon, little lord?
York. I would, that I might thank you as you call me.
Glou. How?
York. Little. 125
Prince. My Lord of York will still be cross in talk:
 Uncle, your grace knows how to bear with him.
York. You mean, to bear me, not to bear with me:
 Uncle, my brother mocks both you and me;
 Because that I am little, like an ape, 130
 He thinks that you should bear me on your shoulders.
Buck. With what a sharp-provided wit he reasons!
 To mitigate the scorn he gives his uncle,

- 113 *York. Of...* *York. Ay, a beggar,*
brother, Of... Anon. conj.
 113, 114 *give; And being] give't, Being*
 Lettsom conj.
 114 *And] om.* Mitford conj.
being] om. Anon. conj.
but] QqF₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.
which is] QqF₁. *it is* F₂F₃F₄. om.
 Steevens conj.
grief] gift Q₆Q₇Q₈.
to give] to lack Anon. conj. *to*
 Vaughan conj. (doubtfully).
 116 *to] too* Q₆Q₈Q₇.
 118 *then] thā* Q₈. *than* Q₃Q₄Q₅.
you will] you'll Pope.
gifts] gift Rowe.
 120 *heavy] Q₁.* *waightie* Q₂Q₄. *weightie*
 Q₃Q₆Q₈F₁F₂. *weighty* Q₁Q₇F₃F₄.
your] you Q₆.
 121 *I weigh] I'd weigh* Hanmer. *I'd*
wear Lettsom conj.
 123 *thank] thinks* Q₈.
as] as as Q₈. *as, as,* F₁. *as—as—*
 S. Walker conj.
 126 *still] ever* F₃F₄.
 132 *Buck.] Card. or Hast.* Anon. conj.
sharp-provided] Theobald. *sharp*
provided QqFf. *sharply pointed*
 Collier MS.
 133 *gives] give* Q₆Q₈Q₇.

He prettily and aptly taunts himself:
So cunning and so young is wonderful. 135

Glou. My lord, will't please you pass along?
Myself and my good cousin Buckingham
Will to your mother, to entreat of her
To meet you at the Tower and welcome you.

York. What, will you go unto the Tower, my lord? 140

Prince. My lord protector needs will have it so.

York. I shall not sleep in quiet at the Tower.

Glou. Why, what should you fear?

York. Marry, my uncle Clarence's angry ghost:
My grandam told me he was murder'd there. 145

Prince. I fear no uncles dead.

Glou. Nor none that live, I hope.

Prince. An if they live, I hope I need not fear.

But come, my lord; and with a heavy heart,
Thinking on them, go I unto the Tower. 150

[*A Sennet. Exeunt all but Gloucester, Buckingham and Catesby.*

Buck. Think you, my lord, this little prating York
Was not incensed by his subtle mother
To taunt and scorn you thus opprobriously?

Glou. No doubt, no doubt: O, 'tis a parlous boy;
Bold, quick, ingenious, forward, capable: 155

136 *lord]* *gracious lord* Hanmer.

will't] Pope. *will* QqFf. *will it*
Keightley.

you] *your highness* Capell. *your*
grace to Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).
you to Keightley.

141 *needs will]* Q₁. *will* The rest. *here*
will Hanmer. *will't en* Collier MS.

143 *Why]* *Why, sir* Hanmer.

144 *Clarence]* Pope. *Clarence* QqFf.

145 *grandam]* Ff. *Granam* Qq.
murder'd] *murdred* Qq. *murther'd*
Ff.

148 *An if]* Theobald. *And if* QqFf.

149 *and with]* Ff. *with* Qq.

150 *A Sennet.]* *A Senet.* F₁. om. The
rest.

Exeunt...] *Exeunt* Prin. Yor. Hast.
Dors. manet, Rich. Buck. Qq (Bich.
Q₆; Bish. Q₆Q₇Q₈). *Exeunt* Prince,
Yorke, Hastings, and Dorset. Ma-
net Richard, Buckingham, and
Catesby. Ff (Manent F₂F₄). *Ex-*
eunt Prince, York, Hastings, and
Archbishop. Hanmer.

151 SCENE II. Pope.

154 *parlous]* F₄. *perlous* Q₁Q₈. *peril-*
lous Q₁Q₂F₁F₂F₃. *perilous* The rest.

He is all the mother's, from the top to toe.

Buck. Well, let them rest. Come hither, Catesby.
Thou art sworn as deeply to effect what we intend,

As closely to conceal what we impart:

Thou know'st our reasons urged upon the way; 160

What think'st thou? is it not an easy matter

To make William Lord Hastings of our mind,

For the instalment of this noble duke

In the seat royal of this famous isle?

Cate. He for his father's sake so loves the prince, 165
That he will not be won to aught against him.

Buck. What think'st thou then of Stanley? what will he?

Cate. He will do all in all as Hastings doth.

Buck. Well, then, no more but this: go, gentle Catesby,
And, as it were far off, sound thou Lord Hastings, 170

How he doth stand affected to our purpose;

And summon him to-morrow to the Tower,

To sit about the coronation.

If thou dost find him tractable to us,

Encourage him, and show him all our reasons: 175

If he be leaden, icy-cold, unwilling,

Be thou so too; and so break off your talk,

And give us notice of his inclination:

156 *the top*] *top* F₃F₄.

157 *hither*] *om.* Pope, reading *Well... sworn* as one line. *hither, gentle Capell*, ending the lines *rest... sworn*.

158 *Thou art sworn*] As a separate line, Edd. conj.

deeply] *deep* Lettsom conj.

160 *know'st*] Ff. *knowest* Qq.

161, 167 *think'st*] Ff. *thinkest* Qq.

162 *William Lord*] *lord William* Pope.

166 *aught*] Theobald. *ought* QqFf.

167 *what will he?*] Qq. *Will not hee?* Ff.

169, 170 *Well...Hastings,*] As in Pope. As three lines in Ff, ending *this: ...off, ...Hastings*. See note (xi).

169 *but*] *than* Rowe (ed. 2).

170 *sound thou*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *sound* The rest.

171 *our*] *your* Q₄.

172, 173 *And summon.....coronation.*] Omitted in Qq.

175 *show*] *shew* Qq. *tell* Ff.

176 *leaden*] *laden* F₃F₄.

icy-cold] Edd. (Ingleby conj.). *icie, cold* QqFf.

177 *your*] Qq. *the* Ff.

For we to-morrow hold divided councils,
Wherein thyself shalt highly be employ'd. 180

Glou. Commend me to Lord William: tell him, Catesby,
His ancient knot of dangerous adversaries
To-morrow are let blood at Pomfret-castle;
And bid my friend, for joy of this good news,
Give Mistress Shore one gentle kiss the more. 185

Buck. Good Catesby, go, effect this business soundly.

Cate. My good lords both, with all the heed I may.

Glou. Shall we hear from you, Catesby, ere we sleep?

Cate. You shall, my lord. 189

Glou. At Crosby Place, there shall you find us both.

[*Exit Catesby.*]

Buck. Now, my lord, what shall we do, if we perceive
Lord Hastings will not yield to our complots?

Glou. Chop off his head, man; somewhat we will do:
And, look, when I am king, claim thou of me
The earldom of Hereford, and the moveables 195
Whereof the king my brother stood possess'd.

Buck. I'll claim that promise at your grace's hands.

180 *shalt]* shall Q₆.

184 *friend]* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆. *friends* Q₆Q₇
Q₈. *Lord* Ff.

185 *Mistress]* *gentle* *Mistress* Q₃Q₄Q₅.
gentle *Mistis* Q₆. *gentile* M^u Q₇.
gentle *Mis* Q₈.
one gentle] *one gentle* Q₇.

186 *go]* Ff. om. Qq.

187 *with all]* *withall* Q₂.
may] Qq. *can* Ff.

188 *Shall]* *Sall* Q₄.

190 *Crosby Place]* Qq. *Crosby House* Ff.
shall you] *you shall* Rowe.

[*Exit Catesby.*] Ff. om. Q₁Q₂.
The rest place it after line 189.

191 *Now...perceive]* One line in Qq.
Two in Ff.
Now] om. Pope.

192 *Lord]* Ff. *William Lo:* (or *Lord*) Qq.
complots] *complot* Q₄.

193 *Chop...do:]* One line in Qq. Two
in Ff.

off] of Q₁.

head, man...do] Qq. *Head: Some-*
thing we will determine Ff. *head,*
man,'s somewhat we will do Vaughan
conj.

194 *claim thou]* *thou claim* Vaughan
conj.

195 *Hereford]* Q₁Q₂Ff. *Herford* Q₃Q₄
Q₆Q₇Q₈. *Hertford* Q₆.
and the] Qq. *and all the* Ff.

196 *stood]* Qq. *was* Ff.

197 *grace's]* om. Q₇Q₈.
hands] Qq. *hand* Ff.

Glou. And look to have it yielded with all willingness.
Come, let us sup betimes, that afterwards
We may digest our complots in some form. [*Exeunt.* 200

SCENE II. *Before Lord Hastings' house.*

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. What, ho! my lord!

Hast. [*Within*] Who knocks at the door?

Mess. A messenger from the Lord Stanley.

Enter LORD HASTINGS.

Hast. What is 't o' clock?

Mess. Upon the stroke of four. 5

Hast. Cannot thy master sleep these tedious nights?

Mess. So it should seem by that I have to say.

First, he commends him to your noble lordship.

Hast. And then?

Mess. And then he sends you word 10

198 *all willingness*] Q₁. *all kindnesse*
Ff. *willingness* The rest.
200 SCENE II.] SCENE III. Pope.
Before...house.] Theobald.
Enter...] Enter a messenger to Lo:
Hastings. Qq. Enter a Messenger
to the Doore of Hastings. Ff.
1 *What, ho !*] Qq. *My Lord*, Ff.
[knocking. Capell.
2 [*Within*] Theobald.
at the door] Qq. om. Ff.
3 *A messenger from the*] Qq. *One*
from the Ff. *One from Pope.*
4 Enter...] Qq. In Ff after line 5.
What is 't] Ff. *Whats* Qq.
6 *thy master*] Qq. *my Lord Stanley*
Ff.

these] Q₁Ff. *the* The rest.
tedious] *teditous* Q₃Q₅.
nights] *night* Q₈.
7 *should seem*] Qq. *appeares* Ff.
that] *what* Rowe (ed. 2).
8 *lordship*] Qq. *selfe* Ff.
9—11 *And then?...helm:]* Two lines
in Steevens (1793), the first ending
dreamt, reading *raised off* with F₁F₂.
9 *And then?*] *And then.* Qq. *What*
then? Ff. *And then,—* Theobald.
And then, what then? Anon. conj.,
reading 9, 10 as one line.
10, 11 *And...to-night*] Qq. *Then certi-*
fies your Lordship, that this Night
He dreamt Ff.
10 *word*] *word, my lord* Capell.

He dreamt to-night the boar had razed his helm :
 Besides, he says there are two councils held ;
 And that may be determined at the one
 Which may make you and him to rue at the other.
 Therefore he sends to know your lordship's pleasure, 15
 If presently you will take horse with him,
 And with all speed post with him toward the north,
 To shun the danger that his soul divines.

Hast. Go, fellow, go, return unto thy lord ;
 Bid him not fear the separated councils : 20
 His honour and myself are at the one,
 And at the other is my servant Catesby ;
 Where nothing can proceed that toucheth us,
 Whereof I shall not have intelligence.
 Tell him his fears are shallow, wanting instance : 25
 And for his dreams, I wonder he is so fond
 To trust the mockery of unquiet slumbers :
 To fly the boar before the boar pursues,
 Were to incense the boar to follow us,
 And make pursuit where he did mean no chase. 30
 Go, bid thy master rise and come to me ;
 And we will both together to the Tower,

11 *boar*] F₄. *Boare* Q₆Q₇Q₈. *Bore* F₁
 F₂F₃. *Beare* The rest.
razed] *raste* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄. *caste* Q₅.
cast Q₆Q₇Q₈. *raised off* F₁F₂. *raised*
off F₃F₄. *rashed* so quoted in
 Nares.

12 *held*] Qq. *kept* Ff.

13 *may be*] *many be* Q₇Q₈.

14 *ai*] om. Taylor conj. MS.

16 *presently you will*] Qq. *you will*
presently Ff.

17 *speed*] *speedy* Q₇.
with him toward] Ff. *into* Qq. *with*
him towards Rowe (ed. 2). *hence*
into Capell.

19 *Go, fellow*] *Good fellow* Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇
 Q₈.

20 *councils*] *councils* Q₃Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆. *coun-*
sels Q₁Q₇Q₈. *Council* F₁F₂. *coun-*
sell F₃. *Council* F₄.

22 *servant*] Qq. *good friend* Ff.

25 *wanting instance*] Q₁. *wanting in-*
stancie Q₂Q₃Q₅Q₆. *wanting instancy*
 Q₄Q₇Q₈. *without instance* Ff.

26 *he is so fond*] *he is fond* Q₄. *hes's*
so simple Ff. *he's so fond* Pope.

28 *pursues*] Ff. *pursues vs* Q₁Q₂. *pur-*
sue vs Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆. *persues vs* Q₇Q₈.

30 *no chase*] *to chase* Q₇Q₈.

Where, he shall see, the boar will use us kindly.

Mess. My gracious lord, I'll tell him what you say.
[*Exit.*]

Enter CATESBY.

Cate. Many good morrows to my noble lord! 35

Hast. Good morrow, Catesby; you are early stirring:
What news, what news, in this our tottering state?

Cate. It is a reeling world indeed, my lord;
And I believe 'twill never stand upright
Till Richard wear the garland of the realm. 40

Hast. How! wear the garland! dost thou mean the
crown?

Cate. Ay, my good lord.

Hast. I'll have this crown of mine cut from my
shoulders,

Ere I will see the crown so foul misplaced.

But canst thou guess that he doth aim at it? 45

Cate. Ay, on my life, and hopes to find you forward
Upon his party for the gain thereof:
And thereupon he sends you this good news,
That this same very day your enemies,
The kindred of the queen, must die at Pomfret. 50

Hast. Indeed, I am no mourner for that news,
Because they have been still mine enemies:

34 *My gracious lord, I'll*] Qq. *Its goe,*
my Lord, and Ff.

[*Exit.*] om. Q₁Q₂.

35 *Enter Catesby.*] Q₃Ff. *Enter Cates.*
Q₁. *Enter Catesby to L. Hastings.*
The rest (Lord Q₇Q₈).

39 *'twill*] *twill* Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈. *it will*
Q₁Q₂. *will* Ff.

41 *How...crown?*] One line in Qq. Two
in Ff, the first ending *Garland?*

How!] *How?* Q₃Q₈. *Howe?* Q₁.

How Ff. *Who?* Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₈Q₇.
wear the garland!] om. Taylor conj.
MS.

44 *Ere I will*] Qq. *Before Its* Ff.

46 *Ay, on my life*] *I, on my life* Ff.
Upon my life, my L. Qq (Lo: Q₁Q₂).

51 *that*] *this* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

52 *mine enemies*] Qq. *my adversaries*
Ff.

But, that I'll give my voice on Richard's side,
To bar my master's heirs in true descent,
God knows I will not do it, to the death. 55

Cate. God keep your lordship in that gracious mind!

Hast. But I shall laugh at this a twelve-month hence,
That they who brought me in my master's hate,
I live to look upon their tragedy.
I tell thee, Catesby,— 60

Cate. What, my lord?

Hast. Ere a fortnight make me elder,
I'll send some packing that yet think not on it.

Cate. 'Tis a vile thing to die, my gracious lord,
When men are unprepared and look not for it. 65

Hast. O monstrous, monstrous! and so falls it out
With Rivers, Vaughan, Grey: and so 'twill do
With some men else, who think themselves as safe
As thou and I; who, as thou know'st, are dear
To princely Richard and to Buckingham. 70

Cate. The princes both make high account of you;
[*Aside*] For they account his head upon the bridge.

Hast. I know they do; and I have well deserved it.

Enter LORD STANLEY.

Come on, come on; where is your boar-spear, man?
Fear you the boar, and go so unprovided? 75

58 *who*] Qq. *which* Ff.

60—62 *I tell...my lord!* *Hast.* *Ere*] Qq.

Well, Catesby, ere Ff.

60 *thee*] *the* Q₅Q₆Q₈.

62 *elder*] Qq. *older* Ff.

63 *think*] *thinks* Q₈.

on it] *on 't* Ff. *one it* Q₇Q₈.

66 *falls it*] *it falls* Q₈.

68 *who*] Qq. *that* Ff.

69 *know'st*] *knowest* Q₁Q₂.

70 *and to*] QqF₁. *and* F₂F₃F₄.

72 [*Aside*] F₄.

73 *it*] *i* Q₃Q₆.

74 *Come on, come on*] Ff. *What my*

Lo: Q₁. *What my L*: The rest.

What my good Lord! Anon. conj.

75 *go*] *goes you* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

Stan. My lord, good morrow; good morrow, Catesby:
You may jest on, but, by the holy rood,
I do not like these several councils, I.

Hast. My lord,
I hold my life as dear as you do yours; 80
And never in my life, I do protest,
Was it more precious to me than 'tis now:
Think you, but that I know our state secure,
I would be so triumphant as I am?

Stan. The lords at Pomfret, when they rode from
London, 85

Were jocund and supposed their state was sure,
And they indeed had no cause to mistrust;
But yet, you see, how soon the day o'ercast.
This sudden stab of rancour I misdoubt:
Pray God, I say, I prove a needless coward! 90
What, shall we toward the Tower? the day is spent.

Hast. Come, come, have with you. Wot you what,
my lord?
To-day the lords you talk of are beheaded.

76—79 *My lord...lord,*] Three lines ending *may...do...lord*, Taylor conj. MS.

76 *morrow; good*] *morrow, and good* Pope.

79, 80 *My lord...yours;*] As in Johnson. One line in QqFf.

80 *you do*] Qq. om. Ff. *yours*] om. Vaughan conj., reading *My lord...do* as one line.

81 *life*] Qq. *dayes* Ff.

82 *more...than 'tis*] Capell. *more...then it is* Qq. *so...as 'tis* Ff.

83 *our state*] *the state* F₃F₄. *our states* Vaughan conj.

85 *at Pomfret*] *of Pomfret* Q₆Q₇.

86 *state was*] Edd. *states was* Qq. *states were* Ff. *states as* Vaughan conj.

87 *they*] Q₁Q₂Ff. om. The rest.

88 *o'ercast*] *ouercast* Q₁Q₂.

89 *stab*] Ff. *scab* Qq. *scaps* Vaughan conj.

90 *I say*] om. Q₄.

91—93 *What...beheaded.*] Ff. See note (xii).

91 *day*] *date* Bailey conj.

92 *Come...lord*] One line in Pope. Two in Ff.

Wot you] *Wot ye* Rowe (ed. 1).

Wot he Rowe (ed. 2). *Wot yet* Warburton.

93 *talk*] *talkt* Q₁Q₂.

Stan. They, for their truth, might better wear their
heads,
Than some that have accused them wear their hats. 95
But come, my lord, let us away.

Enter a Pursuivant.

Hast. Go on before; I'll talk with this good fellow.
[*Exeunt Stanley and Catesby.*

How now, sirrah! how goes the world with thee?

Purs. The better that your lordship please to ask.

Hast. I tell thee, man, 'tis better with me now, 100
Than when I met thee last where now we meet:
Then was I going prisoner to the Tower,
By the suggestion of the queen's allies;
But now, I tell thee—keep it to thyself—
This day those enemies are put to death, 105
And I in better state than e'er I was.

Purs. God hold it, to your honour's good content!

Hast. Gramercy, fellow: there, drink that for me.

[*Throws him his purse.*

95 hats] Q₁Q₆FfQ₇Q₈. hat The rest.
96—98 But.....sirrah!] As two lines,
ending before...sirrah? in Capell.

96 But.....away] But come, my lord,
away Pope. Come, let us away Capell.

let us] Qq. let's Ff.

away] away to the Tower Taylor
conj. MS.

97 Enter a Pursuivant.] Ff. Enter
Hastings a Pursuivant. Qq (Hastin.
Q₁; Hast. Q₂. Pursuant. Q₁). This
stage direction follows line 97 in all
Quartos but Q₁ and Q₂.
Go on...fellow] Ff. Go you before,
He follow presently Qq.
[*Exeunt...*] Exit L. Standley, & Cat.

Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆. om. Q₁Q₂. Exit Lord
Stanley, and Catesby. Ff. Exit L.
Stanley, and Cat. Q₇Q₈.

98 How now, sirrah!] Ff. Well met
Hastings, Qq. Sirrah, how now?
Pope.

99 that your lordship please] Ff. that
it please your Lo: Q₁Q₂. that it
please your good Lordship The
rest.

100 man] Ff. fellow Qq.

101 I met thee] Qq. thou met'st me Ff.

106 e'er] ere F₁F₂F₃. e're F₄. euer Qq.

108 fellow] Ff. Hastings Qq.

there...me] Ff. hold spend thou
that Qq.

[*Throws...*] Ff. He giues... Qq.

Purs. God save your lordship.

[*Exit.*

www.libtool.com.cn

Enter a Priest.

Priest. Well met, my lord; I am glad to see your honour. 110

Hast. I thank thee, good Sir John, with all my heart. I am in your debt for your last exercise; Come the next Sabbath, and I will content you.

[*He whispers in his ear.*

Enter BUCKINGHAM.

Buck. What, talking with a priest, lord chamberlain? Your friends at Pomfret, they do need the priest; 115 Your honour hath no shriving work in hand.

Hast. Good faith, and when I met this holy man, Those men you talk of came into my mind. What, go you toward the Tower?

Buck. I do, my lord; but long I shall not stay: 120 I shall return before your lordship thence.

109 *God save your lordship]* Qq. *I thanke your Honor* Ff.

[*Exit.*] *Exit Pursuiuant.* Ff. om. Q₁Q₂. *Exit. Pur. The rest.*

110, 111 *Priest. Well.....heart.]* Ff.

Hast. What sir Iohn, you are wel met, Qq.

110, 112 *I am]* *I'm Pope.*

112 *I...exercise]* Ff. *I am beholding to you for your last daies exercise* Qq (*exercise* Q₃Q₄Q₆).

113 *Sabbath]* Q₆F₃F₄. *sabaoth* Q₁Q₂. *Sabboth* The rest.

[*He whispers...*] Qq (*whis-* Q₂). Omitted in Ff.

Here follows 'Priest. *He wait vpon*

your Lordship.' in Ff. Omitted in Qq.

114 *What.....chamberlain?]* Ff. *How now Lo: Chamberlaine, what talking with a priest,* Qq.

116 *shriving]* *striving* Q₁Q₆.

118 *Those]* Qq. *The* Ff.

119—124 *What...go?]* As five lines, ending *lord; ...return...enough, ... too, ...go?* Anon. conj.

119 *toward]* Ff. *to* Qq.

Tower?] Ff. *tower my Lord?* Qq. *Tower, my good Lord?* Taylor conj. MS.

120 *my lord]* Ff. om. Qq.

shall not stay] Qq. *cannot stay there* Ff.

Hast. 'Tis like enough, for I stay dinner there.

Buck. [*Aside*] And supper too, although thou know'st it not.

Come, will you go?

Hast. I'll wait upon your lordship. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *Pomfret Castle.*

Enter SIR RICHARD RATCLIFF, *with halberds, carrying* RIVERS, GREY, *and* VAUGHAN *to death.*

Rat. Come, bring forth the prisoners.

Riv. Sir Richard Ratcliff, let me tell thee this:

To-day shalt thou behold a subject die

For truth, for duty, and for loyalty.

4

Grey. God keep the prince from all the pack of you!
A knot you are of damned blood-suckers.

Vaug. You live that shall cry woe for this hereafter.

Rat. Dispatch; the limit of your lives is out.

Riv. O Pomfret, Pomfret! O thou bloody prison,

Fatal and ominous to noble peers!

10

Within the guilty closure of thy walls

Richard the second here was hack'd to death;

122 'Tis] Qq. *Nay* Ff.

123 [*Aside*] Rowe.

know'st] *knowest* Q₁Q₂Q₇Q₈. *knowh* Q₅.

124 *Come...Hast. I'll...lordship.*] Ff.

Come shall we go along? Qq.

[*Exeunt.*] om. Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈.

SCENE III.] SCENE IV. Pope.

Pomfret Castle.] Theobald. Pomfret. Before the Castle. Capell.

Enter...] Enter Sir Richard Ratcliffe, with the Lo: Riwers, Gray, and Vaughan, prisoners. Qq. Enter Sir

Richard Ratcliffe, with Halberds, carrying the Nobles to death at Pomfret. Ff.

1 Rat. *Come...prisoners.*] Qq. Omitted in Ff.

5 *keep*] Qq. *blesse* Ff.

7, 8 Vaug. *You...Rat. Dispatch...out.*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

7 *live*] *laugh* Vaughan conj.

10 *ominous*] *dominious* Q₂Q₃. *ominious* Q₄Q₅.

10, 11 *peers!.....walls*] *peers.....walls!* Vaughan conj.

And, for more slander to thy dismal seat,
We give thee up our guiltless blood to drink.

Grey. Now Margaret's curse is fall'n upon our heads,
For standing by when Richard stabb'd her son. 16

Riv. Then cursed she Hastings, then cursed she Buck-
ingham,

Then cursed she Richard. O, remember, God,
To hear her prayers for them, as now for us!
And for my sister and her princely sons, 20
Be satisfied, dear God, with our true blood,
Which, as thou know'st, unjustly must be spilt.

Rat. Make haste; the hour of death is expiate.

Riv. Come, Grey, come, Vaughan, let us all embrace:
And take our leave, until we meet in heaven. [*Exeunt.*]

13 *seat*] Ff. *soule* Qq. *soile* Capell
conj. *jail* Vaughan conj.

14 *give thee up...blood*] Q₇Q₈. *give thee
up...blouds* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆. *give to
thee...blood* Ff.

15 *Margaret's...is*] *Margarts...if* Q₆.
Here follows: *When shee exclaim'd
on Hastings, you, and I, in Ff.*
Omitted in Qq. *I* is changed to
me, Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

17 *Then...Buckingham,*] One line in Qq.
Two in Ff.

then cursed she] *curs'd she* Pope.
then she curs'd or *then curs'd* or
and then curs'd she Taylor conj. MS.

17, 18 *Hastings...Richard*] Qq. *Rich-
ard...Hastings* Ff.

18 *curs'd*] *cus'd* F₂.

19 *prayers*] Qq. *prayer* Ff.

20 *And*] *As* F₄.

sons] F₃F₄. *sonnes* F₁F₂. *sonne*
Qq.

21 *blood*] Ff. *blouds* Qq.

22 *know'st*] Ff. *knowest* Qq.

23 *Make.....expiate.*] F₁. *Come, come,
dispatch, the limit of your lives is
out.* Qq (*linea* Q₁ (Bodl.); *lines*
Q₁ (Dev.) Q₂). *Make...now expir'd.*
F₂F₃F₄. *Make.....expiate.* Singer,
ed. 2 (Steevens conj.). *Make haste,
the hour of death is:—expiate.*
Jackson conj. *Make.....expedite.*
Collier conj.

24 *all*] Qq. *here* Ff.

25 *And take our leave, until we meet*
Qq (*leaves* Q₄Q₇Q₈). *Farewell, vntill
we meet againe* Ff.

SCENE IV. *The Tower of London.*

www.libtool.com.cn

Enter BUCKINGHAM, DERBY, HASTINGS, the BISHOP OF ELY, RATCLIFF,
LOVELL, with others, and take their seats at a table.

Hast. My lords, at once: the cause why we are met
Is, to determine of the coronation.

In God's name, speak: when is the royal day?

Buck. Are all things fitting for that royal time?

Der. It is, and wants but nomination. 5

Ely. To-morrow then I judge a happy day.

Buck. Who knows the lord protector's mind herein?
Who is most inward with the noble duke?

Ely. Your grace, we think, should soonest know his
mind.

Buck. Who, I, my lord! We know each other's faces,
But for our hearts, he knows no more of mine 11
Than I of yours;

Nor I no more of his, than you of mine.

Lord Hastings, you and he are near in love.

Hast. I thank his grace, I know he loves me well;

SCENE IV.] SCENE V. Pope.

The Tower of London.] The Tower.
Pope.Enter...others, and take their seats
at a table.] Enter...others, at a Table. Ff. Enter the Lords to Coun-
cell. Qq (counsell Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈).

Ratcliff,] Norfolk, Ratcliffe, Ff.

1 *My lords, at once*] Qq. *Now Noble*
Peeres F₁. *Now Noble Peere* F₂.
Now Noble Peers F₃F₄.*once: the*] Edd. *once the* Q₁Q₂.
once, the The rest.3 *speak*] Ff. *say* Qq.*the*] Ff. *this* Qq.4 *Are...fitting*] Qq. *Is...ready* Ff.
Are...ready Rowe. *Is all thing**ready* Collier MS.*that*] Qq. *the* Ff.5 *It is, and wants but*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *It is,*
and let but Q₃Q₆Q₇. *It is, and*
lack but Q₄. *It is, and yet in* Q₅.
They are, and want but Rowe. *They*
are, and wants but Capell. See note
(XIII).6 *Ely.*] Ryu. Q₁. Riu. Q₂. Bish. The
rest.*judge...day*] Ff. *guesse...time* Qq.8 *duke?*] Duke. Q₁.9 *Your...think*] Ff. *Why you my Lo:*
me thinks you Qq (*thinks* Q₂).10 *Who...lord*] Qq. Omitted in Ff.
See note (XIV).

But, for his purpose in the coronation, 16
 I have not sounded him, nor he deliver'd
 His gracious pleasure any way therein :
 But you, my noble lords, may name the time ;
 And in the duke's behalf I'll give my voice, 20
 Which, I presume, he'll take in gentle part.

Enter GLOUCESTER.

Ely. Now in good time, here comes the duke himself.

Glou. My noble lords and cousins all, good morrow.
 I have been long a sleeper ; but, I hope,
 My absence doth neglect no great designs, 25
 Which by my presence might have been concluded.

Buck. Had not you come upon your cue, my lord,
 William Lord Hastings had pronounced your part,—
 I mean, your voice,—for crowning of the king.

Glou. Than my Lord Hastings no man might be
 bolder ; 30
 His lordship knows me well, and loves me well.

Hast. I thank your grace.

Glou. My Lord of Ely !

Ely. My lord ?

- | | |
|--|---|
| 17 <i>deliver'd</i>] Ff. <i>deliuerd</i> Q ₁ Q ₂ Q ₃ . <i>de-</i> <i>liuered</i> The rest. | 24 <i>a sleeper</i>] <i>a sleepe</i> Q ₆ Q ₇ Q ₈ . <i>I hope</i>] Q ₁ . <i>I trust</i> Ff. <i>now I hope</i> The rest. |
| 18 <i>gracious</i>] Ff. <i>Graces</i> Qq. | 25 <i>designs</i>] Qq. <i>designs</i> Ff. |
| 19 <i>my noble lords</i>] Singer (ed. 2). <i>my</i> <i>noble Lo:</i> Q ₁ Q ₂ . <i>my L.</i> Q ₃ Q ₄ Q ₅ Q ₆ Q ₇ . <i>my Lord</i> Q ₈ . <i>my Honorable Lords</i> F ₁ . <i>my Honorable Lord</i> F ₂ F ₃ . <i>my</i> <i>Honourable Lord</i> F ₄ . <i>my noble</i> <i>Lord</i> Pope. | 27 <i>not you</i>] Qq. <i>you not</i> Ff. <i>your cue</i>] <i>your kew</i> Qq. <i>your</i> Q Ff. |
| 21 <i>he'll...gentle</i>] Ff. <i>he will...gentle</i> Q ₁ Q ₂ Q ₃ Q ₄ Q ₅ . <i>he will...good</i> Q ₆ Q ₇ Q ₈ . | 28 <i>had</i>] Ff. <i>had now</i> Qq. <i>your</i>] <i>you</i> Q ₆ . |
| 22 Enter G.] Ff. Ent. Glo. Qq (after line 22). <i>Now in good</i>] Qq. <i>In happie</i> Ff. | 28, 29 <i>part,—...voice,—</i>] Capell. <i>part:</i> <i>...voice</i> Qq. <i>part ;...Voices</i> , Ff. |
| 23 <i>lords</i>] Ff. <i>Lord</i> Q ₈ . <i>L.</i> The rest. | 29 <i>for</i>] <i>from</i> Q ₇ Q ₈ . 30 <i>Than</i>] Q ₁ F ₄ . <i>Then</i> The rest. 32, 33 <i>Hast. I...Glou. My...Ely. My</i> <i>lord ? Glou. When</i>] Qq. <i>My Lord</i> <i>of Ely, when</i> Ff. |

Glou. When I was last in Holborn,
I saw good strawberries in your garden there :
I do beseech you send for some of them. 35

Ely. Marry, and will, my lord, with all my heart.
[*Exit.*

Glou. Cousin of Buckingham, a word with you.
[*Drawing him aside.*

Catesby hath sounded Hastings in our business,
And finds the testy gentleman so hot,
As he will lose his head ere give consent 40
His master's son, as worshipful he terms it,
Shall lose the royalty of England's throne.

Buck. Withdraw you hence, my lord, I'll follow you.
[*Exit Gloucester, Buckingham following.*

Der. We have not yet set down this day of triumph.
To-morrow, in mine opinion, is too sudden ; 45
For I myself am not so well provided
As else I would be, were the day prolong'd.

Re-enter BISHOP OF ELY.

Ely. Where is my lord protector? I have sent for
these strawberries.

34 *your*] *you* Q₆.

35 *do*] *now* Q₄.

36 *Marry...heart.*] Ff. *I go my Lord.*
Qq.

[*Exit.*] *Exit Bishop.* Ff. om. Qq.

37 *of*] Ff. om. Qq.

[*Drawing him aside.*] Capell.

39 *testy*] *resty* Q₄.

40 *As*] Qq. *That* Ff.

ere] *ere* Q₁. *are* Q₆.

40, 42 *lose*] Ff. *loose* Qq.

41 *son*] Qq. *Child* Ff.

worshipful] Qq. *worshipfully* Ff.

43 *you...you.*] Qq. *your selfe a while,*
He goe with you. Ff.

[*Exit...*] Exe. Glo. and Buck. Pope.

Ex. Gl. Qq. Exeunt. Ff.

45 *mine opinion*] Qq. *my iudgement* Ff.
sudden] Ff. *sodaine* Q₁. *soone* The
rest.

48 *Re-enter...*] Pope. *Enter...* QqFf.

48, 49 *Where...strawberries.*] As prose,
Edd. One line in Qq. Two, the
first ending *Gloster?* in Ff.

48 *protector*] Qq. *the Duke of Gloster*
Ff (*Glocester* F₄).

sent] *sent straitway* Hanmer.

48, 49 *I have...strawberries*] *I've sent*
for them Taylor conj. MS.

49 *these*] *these same* Capell, ending line
48 at *protector?* *I have sent.*

Hast. His grace looks cheerfully and smooth to-day;
There's some conceit or other likes him well, 51
When he doth bid good morrow with such a spirit.

I think there's never a man in Christendom
That can less hide his love or hate than he;
For by his face straight shall you know his heart. 55

Der. What of his heart perceive you in his face
By any likelihood he show'd to-day?

Hast. Marry, that with no man here he is offended;
For, were he, he had shown it in his looks.

Der. I pray God he be not, I say. 60

Re-enter GLOUCESTER and BUCKINGHAM.

Glou. I pray you all, tell me what they deserve
That do conspire my death with devilish plots
Of damned witchcraft, and that have prevail'd
Upon my body with their hellish charms?

Hast. The tender love I bear your grace, my lord,
Makes me most forward in this noble presence 66
To doom the offenders, whatsoever they be:
I say, my lord, they have deserved death.

50 *to-day*] *to day* Qq. *this morning* Ff.

52 *he doth bid...such a*] Qq. *that he bids...such* Ff. *he doth bid...such* Capell.

53 *there's never*] Ff. *there is neuer* Qq. *there's ne'er* Pope.

54 *That can less*] *That can lesse* Q_s. *Can lesser* Ff. *That can lesser* The rest.

57 *likelihood*] Qq. *liuelyhood* Ff. *show'd*] *shew'd* Ff. *shewed* Qq. *shows* Dyce conj.

58 *he is*] *he's* Pope.

59 *were he, he had*] Ff. *if he were, he would have* Qq. *shown*] *shew'd* Q_s.

looks] Q₁Ff. *face* The rest.

60 *Der. I pray...say.*] *Dar. I pray...say.* Qq. Omitted in Ff. *Stan. Ay, pray...say.* Staunton.

61 *Re-enter Gloucester...*] Pope. *Enter Gloucester (or Glo.)* Qq. *Enter Richard... Ff. tell me what they*] Ff. *what doe they* Qq.

[*advancing sternly toward his Seat.* Capell.

66 *noble*] Qq. *Princely* Ff.

67 *offenders,...be:] offenders.* *Whosoe'er they be,* Johnson. *whatsoever*] Qq. *whosoe're* Ff.

Glou. Then be your eyes the witness of this ill:
 See how I am bewitch'd; behold, mine arm 70
 Is like a blasted sapling, withered up:
 And this is Edward's wife, that monstrous witch,
 Consorted with that harlot strumpet Shore,
 That by their witchcraft thus have marked me.

Hast. If they have done this thing, my gracious
 lord,— 75

Glou. If! thou protector of this damned strumpet,
 Tellest thou me of 'ifs'? Thou art a traitor:
 Off with his head! Now, by Saint Paul I swear,
 I will not dine until I see the same.
 Lovel and Ratcliff, look that it be done: 80
 The rest that love me, rise and follow me.

[*Exeunt all but Hastings, Ratcliff and Lovel.*]

Hast. Woe, woe for England! not a whit for me;
 For I, too fond, might have prevented this.
 Stanley did dream the boar did raze his helm;
 But I disdain'd it, and did scorn to fly: 85
 Three times to-day my foot-cloth horse did stumble,
 And startled, when he look'd upon the Tower,

69 *this ill*] Qq. *their euill* Ff.

70 *See*] Qq. *Looks* Ff.

[stripping and laying it bare. Capell.

71 *withered*] Qq. *wither'd* Ff.

72 *And this is*] Ff. *This is that* Qq.

73 *harlot strumpet*] Qq. *Harlot, Strumpet* Ff.

74 *witchcraft*] Q₁Ff Q₇Q₈. *witchcrafts*
 The rest.

75 *thing*] Qq. *deed* Ff.
gracious] Qq. *Noble* Ff.

lord,—] *lord*— Rowe. *Lo*: Q₁Q₂.
Lord. The rest.

77 *Tellest thou me*] *Telst thou me* Qq.
Talk'st thou to me Ff.

'ifs'] *Ifts* F₂.

VOL. V.

78—80 See note (xv).

81 *rise*] Ff. *come* Qq.

[*Exeunt...*] *Exeunt*. Ff (after line
 80, F₁F₂). Manet Louell and Rat-
 cliffe, with the Lord Hastings. Ff
 (Manent F₂F₄). *Exeunt*. manet Cat.
 with Ha. Qq. *Exeunt*. Manent
 Lovel and Catesby, with the lord
 Hastings. Theobald.

84 *raze his helm*] *raze his helme* Qq.
rowze our Helmes F₁F₂. *rowze our*
Helmes F₃F₄. *raze our helms* Rowe.

85 *But I disdain'd.....did scorn*] Qq.
And I did scorne...disdains Ff.

87 *startled*] *started* Ff Q₇Q₈.

As loath to bear me to the slaughter-house.

O, now I want the priest that spake to me :

I now repent I told the pursuivant,

90

As 'twere triumphing at mine enemies,

How they at Pomfret bloodily were butcher'd,

And I myself secure in grace and favour.

O Margaret, Margaret, now thy heavy curse

Is lighted on poor Hastings' wretched head !

95

Rat. Dispatch, my lord ; the duke would be at dinner :
Make a short shrift ; he longs to see your head.

Hast. O momentary grace of mortal men,
Which we more hunt for than the grace of God !

Who builds his hopes in air of your fair looks,

100

Lives like a drunken sailor on a mast,

Ready, with every nod, to tumble down

Into the fatal bowels of the deep.

Lov. Come, come, dispatch ; 'tis bootless to exclaim.

Hast. O bloody Richard ! miserable England !

105

I prophesy the fearfull'st time to thee

That ever wretched age hath look'd upon.

Come, lead me to the block ; bear him my head :

They smile at me that shortly shall be dead. [*Exeunt.*

89 *want*] *need* Ff. *warrant* Q₇Q₈.

91 *'twere...at*] Qq. *too...how* Ff.

92 *How they*] Qq. *To day* Ff.

95 *lighted*] *lightened* Q₆Q₇. *lightned* Q₈.

96 *Rat.*] Ra. Ff. *Cat.* Qq.

Dispatch, my lord] Qq. *Come, come, dispatch* Ff.

98 *grace of mortal*] Ff. *state of worldly* Qq.

99 *than the*] F₄. *then the* Q₁Q₂F₁F₂F₃.

then for the The rest.

God] Ff. *heaven* Qq.

100 *hopes*] Qq. *hope* Ff.

air] F₄. *aire* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₆F₃. *aiere*

Q₄. *ayre* F₁F₂. *the aire* Q₇. *the*

ayre Q₈.

fair] Qq. *good* Ff.

looks] *looks* Q₄.

104—107 *Lov.* *Come.....upon.*] Ff.

Omitted in Qq.

109 *that*] Qq. *who* Ff.

SCENE V. *The Tower-walls.*

www.libtool.com.cn

Enter GLOUCESTER and BUCKINGHAM, in rotten armour, marvellous ill-favoured.

Glou. Come, cousin, canst thou quake, and change thy colour,

Murder thy breath in middle of a word,
And then begin again, and stop again,
As if thou wert distraught and mad with terror?

Buck. Tut, I can counterfeit the deep tragedian, 5
Speak and look back, and pry on every side,
Tremble and start at wagging of a straw,
Intending deep suspicion: ghastly looks
Are at my service, like enforced smiles;
And both are ready in their offices, 10
At any time, to grace my stratagems.
But what, is Catesby gone?

Glou. He is; and, see, he brings the mayor along.

Enter the Mayor and CATESBY.

Buck. Lord mayor,—

SCENE V.] SCENE VI. Pope.

The Tower-walls.] Theobald.

Enter Gloucester...] Enter Richard ... Ff. Collier MS. adds 'all in haste in the tower'. Enter Duke of Gloucester and Buckingham in armour. Qq.

rotten armour,] rusty armour, Rowe.

1 *Come...colour,*] One line in Qq. Two in Ff.

2 *Murder*] Johnson. *Murder* QqFf. *Smother* quoted in Steevens's reprint.

3 *begin again*] Qq. *again* begin Ff.

4 *wert*] Qq. *were* Ff. *distraught*] *destrought* Q₆Q₇. *de-*

stract Q₈.

5 *Tut, I can*] Ff. *Tut feare not me. I can* Qq. *Tut, fear not me, my lord of Gloucester, I Can* Anon. conj.

7 *Tremble...straw,*] Ff. Omitted in Qq. Misplaced, Capell conj.

8, 9 *suspicion: ghastly looks Are*] *suspicion, gastly lookes Are* QqF₁F₄. *suspicion, gastly lookes: Are* F₂F₃.

10—21 *And both...Lovel.*] Ff. See note (xvi).

14 *Enter the Mayor...*] F₃F₄. *Enter the Maior...* F₁. *Enter the Major...* F₂. *Enter Maior.* Qq. *Enter the Lord Mayor, attended.* Theobald. *mayor,—*] *Mayor—* Rowe. *Maior.* F₁. *Major.* F₂. *Mayor.* F₃F₄.

Glou. Look to the drawbridge there! 15
Buck. Hark! a drum.
Glou. Catesby, o'erlook the walls.
Buck. Lord mayor, the reason we have sent—
Glou. Look back, defend thee, here are enemies. 19
Buck. God and our innocency defend and guard us!
Glou. Be patient, they are friends, Ratcliff and Lovel.

Enter LOVEL and RATCLIFF, with HASTINGS' head.

Lov. Here is the head of that ignoble traitor,
 The dangerous and unsuspected Hastings.

Glou. So dear I loved the man, that I must weep.
 I took him for the plainest harmless creature 25
 That breathed upon this earth a Christian;
 Made him my book, wherein my soul recorded
 The history of all her secret thoughts:
 So smooth he daub'd his vice with show of virtue
 That, his apparent open guilt omitted, 30
 I mean, his conversation with Shore's wife,
 He lived from all attainder of suspect.

Buck. Well, well, he was the covert'st shelter'd traitor

16 *Hark!*] *Hark, hark!* Capell.

17 *Catesby,*] *Some one* Hanmer.

18 *Lord mayor...sent—*] Rowe. *Lord maior.....sent.* Ff. *The reason we have sent for you.* Qq. *Lord mayor, the reason we have sent for you,—* Capell.

19 *thee*] QqF₁. *thres* F₂. *there* F₃F₄.

20 *innocency*] *innocence* Q₁.

and guard] Ff. om. Qq.

21 *Be...Lovel*] *Be patient, Buckingham, they are friends;* 'tis *Lovel* Taylor conj. MS.

22 *Enter...*] Ff (after line 20). *Enter Catesby with...* Qq. and *Ratcliff,*] and another, Taylor

conj. MS.

head.] *head on a spear.* Collier MS. *Lov.] Lovell.* Ff. *Cat.* Qq.

25 *harmless*] *harmless't* Steevens (1793). *creature*] Ff. *man* Qq.

26 *this*] *the* Q₄Ff.

Christian] Here follows *Looks ye my Lo: Maior* as a separate line in Qq.

27 *Made*] *I made* Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈.

30 *apparent open*] *apparent-open* S. Walker conj.

32 *lived*] *liv'd* Ff. *laid* Qq. (*layd* Q₆). *suspect*] Qq. *suspects* Ff.

33, 34 *traitor That ever lived.*] *traitor—* Pope. *traitor...liv'd.—Look you, my*

That ever lived.

Would you imagine, or almost believe, 35
 Were't not that, by great preservation,
 We live to tell it you, the subtle traitor
 This day had plotted, in the council-house
 To murder me and my good Lord of Gloucester?

May. What, had he so? 40

Glou. What, think you we are Turks or infidels?
 Or that we would, against the form of law,
 Proceed thus rashly to the villain's death,
 But that the extreme peril of the case,
 The peace of England and our persons' safety, 45
 Enforced us to this execution?

May. Now, fair befall you! he deserved his death;
 And you, my good lords both, have well proceeded,
 To warn false traitors from the like attempts.
 I never look'd for better at his hands, 50
 After he once fell in with Mistress Shore.

Glou. Yet had not we determined he should die,

- | | |
|--|--|
| <p><i>lord mayor, Capell. traitor...liv'd.</i> <i>Look you, my good lord mayor</i> Taylor conj. MS.</p> <p>35 <i>imagine</i>] Ff. <i>have imagined</i> Qq, reading <i>That ever...imagined</i> as one line.</p> <p>36 <i>Were't]</i> <i>wer't</i> F₃F₄. <i>were</i> The rest. <i>that]</i> Ff. om. Qq, reading as one line or...<i>preservation</i>.</p> <p>37 <i>it you, the]</i> <i>it you?</i> The Qq. <i>it, that the</i> Ff.</p> <p>38 <i>This day had]</i> Ff. <i>Had this day</i> Qq.</p> <p>39 <i>murder]</i> Qq. <i>murther</i> Ff.</p> <p>40 <i>What, had he so?]</i> Qq. <i>Had he done so?</i> Ff. <i>Ay, had he so?</i> Capell conj.</p> <p>41 <i>What]</i> <i>Why</i> Wordsworth.</p> | <p><i>you]</i> Q₁Q₂Ff. <i>ye</i> The rest.</p> <p>42 <i>would]</i> <i>should</i> Q₁Q₆.</p> <p><i>form]</i> Q₁Q₂Ff. <i>course</i> The rest.</p> <p>43 <i>to]</i> Qq. <i>in</i> Ff.</p> <p>44 <i>extreme]</i> <i>very extreme</i> Q₄.</p> <p>46 <i>this]</i> <i>that</i> Q₄.</p> <p><i>execution?]</i> <i>execution.</i> Q₁Ff.</p> <p>48 <i>you, my good lords]</i> <i>you my good Lords</i> Q₁Q₄Q₆. <i>you my good Lo:</i> Q₂. <i>you my good L.</i> Q₃Q₅Q₆Q₇. <i>your good Graces</i> Ff.</p> <p>50, 51 <i>I never...Shore.]</i> As in Qq. Given to 'Buck' in Ff.</p> <p>52 <i>Glou.]</i> Glo. Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈. <i>Dut.</i> Q₁Q₂. <i>Clo.</i> Q₃Q₅. Continued to 'Buck' in Ff.</p> <p><i>not we]</i> Qq. <i>we not</i> Ff.</p> |
|--|--|

Until your lordship came to see his death ;
 Which now the loving haste of these our friends,
 Somewhat against our meaning, have prevented : 55
 Because, my lord, we would have had you heard
 The traitor speak and timorously confess
 The manner and the purpose of his treason ;
 That you might well have signified the same
 Unto the citizens, who haply may 60
 Misconstrue us in him and wail his death.

May. But, my good lord, your grace's word shall serve,
 As well as I had seen and heard him speak :
 And doubt you not, right noble princes both,
 But I'll acquaint our duteous citizens 65
 With all your just proceedings in this cause.

Glou. And to that end we wish'd your lordship here,
 To avoid the carping censures of the world.

Buck. But since you come too late of our intents,
 Yet witness what you hear we did intend : 70
 And so, my good lord mayor, we bid farewell. [*Exit Mayor.*]

53 *death*] Qq. *end* Ff.

54 *loving*] Ff. *longing* Qq.

55 *Somewhat.....meaning*] Qq. *Something...meanings* Ff. *Something...meaning* Pope.

have] *hath* Pope. *has* Collier MS.

56 *we*] Qq. *I* Ff.

have had you heard] *have had you hear* Collier MS. and Keightley conj. *that you had heard* Lettsom conj.

57 *timorously*] *timeously* Hutchesson conj. MS.

58 *treason*] Qq. *Treasons* Ff.

60 *haply*] Ff. *happily* Qq.

61 *Misconstrue*] Q₆F₄. *Misconstrue* Q₇ Q₈. *Misconster* The rest.

62 *But,*] Q₁Q₂Ff. The rest omit. *Tut!* Hanmer.

grace's] *gracious* Q₇Q₈.

word] Qq. *words* Ff.

63 *as I*] *as if I* Q₈.

and heard] Ff. *or heard* Qq.

64 *doubt you not*] Qq. *doe not doubt* Ff.

65 *our*] Ff. *your* Qq.

66 *cause*] *case* Q₆. *case* FfQ₇Q₈.

67 *wish'd*] *wish* Q₆Q₇.

68 *carping censures of the*] Qq (*sensures* Q₃Q₄Q₅). *Censures of the carping* Ff.

world] *word* Q₃.

69 *But*] Qq. *Which* Ff.

come] Q₁Q₂Ff. *came* The rest.

too late of] *too late* for Capell. *intents*] Qq. *intent* Ff.

70, 71 *Yet...farewell.*] Ff. *Yet witness what we did intend, and so my Lord adue.* Qq.

Glou. Go, after, after, cousin Buckingham.
 The mayor towards Guildhall hies him in all post :
 There, at your meetst advantage of the time,
 Infer the bastardy of Edward's children : 75
 Tell them how Edward put to death a citizen,
 Only for saying he would make his son
 Heir to the crown, meaning indeed his house,
 Which, by the sign thereof, was termed so.
 Moreover, urge his hateful luxury 80
 And bestial appetite in change of lust ;
 Which stretched to their servants, daughters, wives,
 Even where his lustful eye or savage heart,
 Without control, listed to make his prey.
 Nay, for a need, thus far come near my person : 85
 Tell them, when that my mother went with child
 Of that unsatiate Edward, noble York,
 My princely father, then had wars in France ;
 And, by just computation of the time,
 Found that the issue was not his begot ; 90
 Which well appeared in his lineaments,
 Being nothing like the noble duke my father :
 But touch this sparingly, as 'twere far off ;
 Because you know, my lord, my mother lives.

72 *Go, after*] Capell. *Gos after* Ff.
After Qq.

73 *in all*] om. Wordsworth.

74 *meetst advantage*] *meetst advantage*
 Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆. *meetest advantage* Q₅
 Q₇Q₈. *meetest vantage* Ff. *meerest*
vantage Rowe (ed. 2).

81 *bestial*] *beastly* Q₈.

82 *stretched to*] Qq. *stretcht unto* Ff.
daughters] *daughter* F₂.

83 *lustful*] Qq. *raging* Ff. *ranging* Pope.

84 *listed*] Qq. *lusted* Ff.

his prey] Qq. *a prey* Ff.

87 *unsatiate*] Qq. *insatiate* Ff.

88 *wars*] *wares* Q₆.

89 *just*] Qq. *true* Ff.

91 *appeared*] *appear'd* F₄.

93 *But*] Qq. *Yet* Ff.

'twere] Ff. *it were* Qq.

far] *a farre* Q₄.

94 *you know, my lord*] Qq. *my Lord,*
you know Ff.

my mother] *my brother* Q₆Q₇Q₈. *me*
brother Q₉.

Buck. Fear not, my lord, I'll play the orator, 95
As if the golden fee for which I plead
Were for myself: and so, my lord, adieu.

Glou. If you thrive well, bring them to Baynard's
Castle;

Where you shall find me well accompanied
With reverend fathers and well-learned bishops. 100

Buck. I go; and towards three or four o'clock
Look for the news that the Guildhall affords. [Exit.]

Glou. Go, Lovel, with all speed to Doctor Shaw;
[To Cate.] Go thou to Friar Penker; bid them both
Meet me within this hour at Baynard's Castle. 105

[Exeunt all but Gloucester.]

Now will I in, to take some privy order,
To draw the brats of Clarence out of sight;
And to give notice, that no manner of person
At any time have recourse unto the princes. [Exit.]

SCENE VI. *The same. A street.*

Enter a Scrivener, with a paper in his hand.

Scriv. This is the indictment of the good Lord Hastings;

- | | |
|--|--|
| 95 <i>Fear</i>] Qq. <i>Doubt</i> Ff. | and Cates. severally. Theobald. |
| 97 <i>and...adieu</i>] Ff. Omitted in Qq. | 108 <i>in</i>] Qq. <i>gos</i> Ff. |
| 101, 102 <i>I go...affords.</i>] Ff. <i>About three or foure a clocks looke to heare What news Guildhall affordeth, and so my Lord farewell.</i> Qq. | 108 <i>notice</i>] Qq. <i>order</i> Ff. |
| 102 [Exit.] Exit (or Ex.) Buc. Qq. Exit Buckingham. Ff. Exe. Buck. and Catesby severally. Pope. | <i>manner of person</i>] <i>manner person</i> Q ₃ Q ₄ Ff. <i>sort of person</i> Pope. <i>man or person</i> Steevens conj. |
| 103—105 <i>Glou. Go...Castle.</i>] Ff. Omitted in Qq. | 109 <i>At any time have</i>] Qq. <i>Have any time</i> Ff. <i>Any time have</i> Vaughan conj. |
| 104 [To Cate.] Capell. <i>Penker</i>] Capell. <i>Peuker</i> F ₁ . <i>Reuker</i> F ₂ . <i>Beuker</i> F ₃ F ₄ . | [Exit.] QqF ₃ F ₄ . Exeunt. F ₁ F ₂ . SCENE VI.] Capell. The Folios, Pope &c. continue the scene. |
| 105 [Exeunt...] Exit. Ff. Exeunt Lov. | The same. A street.] Capell. <i>with...hand</i>] Qq. om. Ff. |
| | 1 <i>This</i>] Qq. <i>Here</i> Ff. |

Which in a set hand fairly is engross'd,
 That it may be this day read o'er in Paul's.
 And mark how well the sequel hangs together:
 Eleven hours I spent to write it over, 5
 For yesternight by Catesby was it brought me;
 The precedent was full as long a-doing:
 And yet within these five hours lived Lord Hastings,
 Untainted, unexamined, free, at liberty.
 Here's a good world the while! Why, who's so gross,
 That seeth not this palpable device? 11
 Yet who's so blind, but says he sees it not?
 Bad is the world; and all will come to nought,
 When such bad dealing must be seen in thought. [*Exit.*]

SCENE VII. *Baynard's Castle.*

Enter GLOUCESTER and BUCKINGHAM, at several doors.

Glou. How now, my lord, what say the citizens?

Buck. Now, by the holy mother of our Lord,

- | | |
|--|---|
| <p>3 <i>this day</i>] Qq. <i>to day</i> Ff. <i>o'er</i>] <i>ouer</i> Qq. 5 <i>I spent</i>] Qq. <i>I have spent</i> Ff. <i>I've spent</i> Pope. 6 <i>brought</i>] Qq. <i>sent</i> Ff. 7 <i>precedent</i>] Ff. <i>president</i> Qq. 8 <i>lived Lord Hastings</i>] Qq. <i>Hastings liv'd</i> Ff. 9 <i>free, at</i>] <i>free at</i> Q₄. 10 <i>Why, who's</i>] Qq. (<i>whoes</i> Q₁Q₂). <i>who is</i> F₂F₃F₄. <i>Who is</i> F₁, ending lines 10, 11 at <i>while...device</i>? 11 <i>seeth not</i>] Edd. <i>sees not</i> Qq. <i>cannot see</i> Ff. <i>palpable</i>] <i>palpable</i> Q₃. <i>palpapale</i> Q₄. 12 <i>who's</i>] Q₈. <i>whoes</i> Q₁. <i>whose</i> Q₂. <i>who</i></p> | <p>The rest. <i>blind</i>] Qq. <i>bold</i> Ff. <i>but</i>] <i>that</i> Q₈. <i>says</i>] <i>say</i> F₄. 13 <i>nought</i>] <i>naught</i> Q₁Q₂. 14 <i>bad</i>] Qq. <i>ill</i> Ff. <i>dealing</i>] <i>dealings</i> Q₄. <i>in</i>] or Collier MS. SCENE VII.] Pope. The Folios continue the scene. Baynard's Castle.] Theobald. Enter...] Ff. Enter Gloucester at one doore, Buckingham at another. Qq. 1 <i>my lord</i>] Qq. <i>how now</i> Ff. <i>say</i>] <i>says</i> Q₇Q₈.</p> |
|--|---|

The citizens are mum, and speak not a word.

Glou. Touch'd you the bastardy of Edward's children?

Buck. I did; with his contract with Lady Lucy, 5
 And his contract by deputy in France;
 The insatiate greediness of his desires,
 And his enforcement of the city wives;
 His tyranny for trifles; his own bastardy,
 As being got, your father then in France, 10
 And his resemblance, being not like the duke:
 Withal I did infer your lineaments,
 Being the right idea of your father,
 Both in your form and nobleness of mind;
 Laid open all your victories in Scotland, 15
 Your discipline in war, wisdom in peace,
 Your bounty, virtue, fair humility;
 Indeed left nothing fitting for the purpose
 Untouch'd or slightly handled in discourse:
 And when mine oratory grew to an end, 20
 I bid them that did love their country's good
 Cry 'God save Richard, England's royal king!'

Glou. Ah! and did they so?

Buck. No, so God help me, they spake not a word;

- | | |
|--|--|
| 3 <i>and speak</i>] Qq. <i>say</i> Ff. <i>a word</i>] <i>word</i> Vaughan conj. | Q ₇ Q ₈ . |
| 5, 6 <i>his...France;</i>] Ff. Omitted in Qq, reading as one line <i>I did...desires</i> . | 15 <i>open</i>] <i>upon</i> Q ₆ Q ₇ Q ₈ . <i>victories</i>] <i>victorie</i> Q ₄ . |
| 7 <i>The</i>] <i>Th</i> Ff. <i>with the</i> Qq. <i>insatiate</i>] Qq. <i>unsatiate</i> Ff. <i>desires</i>] Qq. <i>desire</i> Ff. | 18 <i>the purpose</i>] Qq. <i>your purpose</i> Ff. 20 <i>mine</i>] Q ₁ Q ₂ . <i>my</i> The rest. <i>grew</i>] Qq. <i>drew</i> Ff. <i>to an end</i>] Q ₁ Q ₂ Q ₄ . <i>toward end</i> Ff. <i>to end</i> The rest. |
| 8 <i>And...wives;</i>] Ff. Omitted in Qq. 11 <i>And...duke:</i>] Ff. Omitted in Qq. <i>his resemblance</i>] <i>dis-resemblance</i> Col- lier MS. <i>in his semblance</i> Bailey conj. | 21 <i>bid</i>] <i>bad</i> Q ₆ Q ₆ Q ₇ Q ₈ . <i>did love</i>] Q ₁ Q ₂ Ff. <i>loves</i> The rest. |
| 14 <i>your</i>] Q ₁ Q ₂ Ff. <i>one</i> Q ₃ Q ₄ Q ₆ Q ₆ . om. | 23 <i>Ah! and</i>] A, <i>and</i> Qq (<i>A and</i> Q ₁). <i>And</i> Ff. |
| | 24 <i>they...word</i>] Ff. Omitted in Qq. |

But, like dumb statuës or breathing stones, 25
 Gazed each on other, and look'd deadly pale.
 Which when I saw, I reprehended them;
 And ask'd the mayor what meant this wilful silence:
 His answer was, the people were not wont
 To be spoke to but by the recorder. 30
 Then he was urged to tell my tale again:
 'Thus saith the duke, thus hath the duke inferr'd;'
 But nothing spake in warrant from himself.
 When he had done, some followers of mine own
 At the lower end of the hall hurl'd up their caps, 35
 And some ten voices cried 'God save King Richard!'
 And thus I took the vantage of those few,
 'Thanks, gentle citizens and friends!' quoth I,
 'This general applause and loving shout
 Argues your wisdoms and your love to Richard;'
 And even here brake off, and came away. 40

Glow. What tongueless blocks were they! would they
 not speak?

- 25 *statuës*] Keightley. *statues* QqFf. *lower end the* Capell.
statuas Steevens, 1793 (Reed). *hur'd*] F₄. *hurl'd* Q₁Q₂F₁F₂F₃.
or breathing] Q₁Q₂Ff. *or breathlesse* *hurled* The rest.
The rest. *or unbreathing* Rowe. 37 *And...few,*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.
unbreathing Lettsom conj. 38 *gentle*] Ff. *loving* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₆.
26 *Gazed*] *Gazde* Qq. *Star'd* Ff. *noble* Q₇Q₈.
each on] *on each* Steevens. 39 *loving*] Qq. *chearefull* Ff.
28 *meant*] *meanes* Q₆Q₇Q₈. 40 *wisdoms*] *wisdomes* Q₁Q₂. *wisdomes*
silence:] Capell. *silence?* QqFf. Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₆Q₇. *wisdomes* F₁F₂Q₈F₃.
29 *wont*] Qq. *vsd* Ff. *wisdom* F₄.
29, 30 *wont...recorder.*] As one line, *love*] *loues* Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₆.
Vaughan conj. 41 *even here*] Ff. *so* Qq.
30 *spoke to*] *spoken unto* Keightley. 42 *What...speak?*] One line in Qq.
but] *except* Pope. *but only* Keight- Two in Ff.
ley conj. *they!* *would they...speak?*] *they, they*
the] *their own* Capell. *would ... speak?* Hanmer. *they,*
33 *spake*] *speaks* Q₆. *spoke* Ff. *would they not speak!* Vaughan
35 *the lower end of the*] Qq. *lower end* conj.
of the Ff. *lower end o' th'* Pope.

Buck. No, by my troth, my lord.

Glou. Will not the mayor then and his brethren come?

Buck. The mayor is here at hand: intend some fear;
Be not you spoke with, but by mighty suit: 46
And look you get a prayer-book in your hand,
And stand betwixt two churchmen, good my lord;
For on that ground I'll build a holy descant:
And be not easily won to our request; 50
Play the maid's part, still answer nay, and take it.

Glou. I go; and if you plead as well for them
As I can say nay to thee for myself,
No doubt we'll bring it to a happy issue.

Buck. Go, go up to the leads; the lord mayor knocks.
[*Exit Gloucester.*]

Enter the Mayor and Citizens.

Welcome, my lord: I dance attendance here; 56
I think the duke will not be spoke withal.

43, 44 *Buck. No...lord. Glou.] Qq.*

Omitted in Ff.

45 *at hand] om. Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈.*

intend] Ff. and intend Qq. pretend Pope.

some] some Q₆.

46 *Be...suit] Ff. Be not spoken withall, but with mighty suite Qq.*

47 *look you get] look you, get so quoted by Delius (Shakes. Jahrbuch).*

48 *betwixt] Qq. betweene Ff.*

49 *build] Qq. make Ff.*

50 *And be not easily] Ff. Be not easily Q₁. Be not easie The rest.*

request] Qq. requests Ff.

51 *still...take it] Ff. say no, but take it Qq. say no, and no, but take it Anon. conj.*

52 *I go; and if you plead] Ff. Feare*

not me, if thou canst pleade Qq.

53 *can...thee] must say nay to them Johnson conj.*

myself,] my selfe? Q₁.

54 *we'll] weele Qq. we Ff. (knocks) Collier MS.*

55 *Go, go...knocks.] Ff. You shal see what I can do, get you up to the leads. Qq (get up Q₈).*

go up] go, up Capell.

[*Exit Gloucester.] Exit. or Ex. Qq. om. Ff.*

56 *Enter...] F₁F₂. Enter Lord Mayor... F₃F₄. om. Qq.*

Welcome, my lord] Ff. Now my Lord Maior Qq (L. Q₁).

I dance] you dance Q₇Q₈.

57 *spoke] Q₁Q₂Ff. spoken The rest.*

Enter CATESBY.

www.libtool.com.cn

Here comes his servant: how now, Catesby,
What says he?

Cate. My lord, he doth entreat your grace
To visit him to-morrow or next day: 60
He is within, with two right reverend fathers,
Divinely bent to meditation;
And in no worldly suit would he be moved,
To draw him from his holy exercise.

Buck. Return, good Catesby, to thy lord again; 65
Tell him, myself, the mayor and citizens,
In deep designs and matters of great moment,
No less importing than our general good,
Are come to have some conference with his grace.

Cate. I'll tell him what you say, my lord. [*Exit.* 70

Buck. Ah, ha, my lord, this prince is not an Edward!
He is not lolling on a lewd day-bed,
But on his knees at meditation;
Not dallying with a brace of courtezans,
But meditating with two deep divines; 75
Not sleeping, to engross his idle body,

58 Enter...] Enter, from the Castle,...
Malone.

58, 59 *Hers...says he?*] Qq (in one line).
*Now Catesby, what sayes your Lord
to my request?* Ff. *Catesby, what...
request?* Pope. *Here comes his
servant: Catesby, what says he?*
Spedding conj.

59 *he?*] *he.* Q₁.
My Lord, he...grace] Qq. *He doth
entreat your Grace, my Noble Lord* Ff.

61 *with two right*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *with two
Q₃Q₄Q₅. with two Q₆. and two Q₇Q₈.
and two right* quoted in Steevens's

reprint. *but with two* Hanmer.

63 *suit*] *sute* Qq. *suites* Ff.

65 *thy lord again*] Qq. *the gracious
Duke* Ff.

66 *citizens*] Qq. *Aldermen* Ff.

67 *designs and matters*] Qq. *designes,
in matter* Ff.

68 *than*] *them then* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

70 *I'll...lord*] Qq. *He signifie so much
unto him straight* Ff.

tell] om. Q₆.

72 *lolling*] Pope. *lulling* QqFf.

day-bed] *day bed* Qq. *Lous-Bed*
Ff.

But praying, to enrich his watchful soul:
 Happy were England, would this gracious prince
 Take on himself the sovereignty thereof:

But, sure, I fear, we shall ne'er win him to it. 80

May. Marry, God forbid his grace should say us nay!

Buck. I fear he will.

Re-enter CATESBY.

How now, Catesby, what says your lord?

Cate. My lord,

He wonders to what end you have assembled
 Such troops of citizens to speak with him, 85
 His grace not being warn'd thereof before:
 My lord, he fears you mean no good to him.

Buck. Sorry I am my noble cousin should
 Suspect me, that I mean no good to him:
 By heaven, I come in perfect love to him; 90
 And so once more return and tell his grace. [*Exit Catesby.*
 When holy and devout religious men
 Are at their beads, 'tis hard to draw them thence,
 So sweet is zealous contemplation.

78 *gracious*] Qq. *vertuous* Ff.

79 *himself*] Qq. *his Grace* Ff.

thereof] Ff. *thereon* Qq.

80 *sure,*] *sore* Singer, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

ne'er] Capell. *neuer* Qq. *not* Ff.

81 *forbid*] Qq. *defend* Ff. *shield*
 Pope.

82 *I fear he will*] Qq. *I fears he will:*
here Catesby comes againe Ff.

82, 83 *I fear...Catesby*] One line in Qq.

83 *Re-enter...*] Capell. *Enter...* QqFf.
How now...your lord?] Qq. *Now*
Catesby, what sayes his Grace? Ff.
Catesby, what...grace? Pope. *Now,*
Catesby, what says his grace to our

request? Taylor conj. MS.

My lord] Qq. om. Ff.

85 *speak with*] Qq. *come to* Ff.

85, 86 *him,...before:*] Ff. *him,...before,*
 Qq. *him:...before,* Collier.

87 *My lord, he fears*] Qq. *He fears,*
my Lord Ff.

90 *I come...to him*] Qq. *we come to him*
in perfitt loue Ff (*perfect* F₃F₄).

perfect] *perfest* Q₆.

91 [*Exit Catesby.*] *Exit.* Ff. om. Q₄
 Q₆.

93 *their*] *there* Q₄.

hard] Qq. *much* Ff.

thence] *hence* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

Enter GLOUCESTER *aloft, between two* Bishops. CATESBY *returns.*

May. See, where he stands between two clergymen!

Buck. Two props of virtue for a Christian prince, 98
To stay him from the fall of vanity:
And, see, a book of prayer in his hand,
True ornaments to know a holy man.
Famous Plantagenet, most gracious prince, 100
Lend favourable ears to our request;
And pardon us the interruption
Of thy devotion and right Christian zeal.

Glou. My lord, there needs no such apology:
I rather do beseech you pardon me, 105
Who, earnest in the service of my God,
Neglect the visitation of my friends.
But, leaving this, what is your grace's pleasure?

Buck. Even that, I hope, which pleaseth God above,
And all good men of this ungovern'd isle. 110

Glou. I do suspect I have done some offence
That seems disgracious in the city's eyes,
And that you come to reprehend my ignorance.

95 SCENE VIII. Pope.

Enter Gloucester...Bishops.] *Enter* Richard...Bishops. Ff. *Enter* Rich. with two Bishops aloft. Qq (and two... Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈. a loste Q₁). *Enter* G. above...Clergymen. Hammer. Catesby returns.] Theobald. om. QqFf. Catesby again, below. Capell. *he stands between*] Qq. *his Grace stands, twenee* Ff.

98 *prayer*] *prayers* Anon. conj.

98, 99 *And see...man.*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

99 *ornaments*] Ff. *ornament* Dyce.

101 *ears*] *eares* Qq. *ears* F₁F₂. *ear* F₃F₄.

our] Q₁Ff. *my* The rest.

request] Qq. *requests* Ff.

103 *right Christian*] Hyphened in Theobald.

105 *I...pardon*] Qq. *I doe beseech your Grace to pardon* Ff.

106 *my God*] QqF₁. *God* F₂. *th' high God* F₃F₄.

107 *Neglect*] Qq. *Deferr'd* Ff.

112 *seems*] *seeme* Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈.

eyes] Qq. *eye* Ff.

- Buck.* You have, my lord: would it might please your
 grace,
 At our entreaties, to amend that fault! 116
Glou. Else wherefore breathe I in a Christian land?
Buck. Then know, it is your fault that you resign
 The supreme seat, the throne majesticall,
 The scepter'd office of your ancestors,
 Your state of fortune and your due of birth, 120
 The lineal glory of your royal house,
 To the corruption of a blemish'd stock:
 Whilst, in the mildness of your sleepy thoughts,
 Which here we waken to our country's good,
 This noble isle doth want her proper limbs; 125
 Her face defaced with scars of infamy,
 Her royal stock graft with ignoble plants,
 And almost shoulder'd in the swallowing gulf
 Of blind forgetfulness and dark oblivion.
 Which to recure, we heartily solicit 130
 Your gracious self to take on you the charge

- 114 *You...grace,*] One line in Qq. Two
 in Ff.
might] Ff. om. Qq.
 115 *At*] Qq. *On* Ff.
that] Qq. *your* Ff.
 116 *breathe*] Ff. *breath* Qq.
land] Qq. *Land*. Ff.
 117 *Then know*] Qq. *Know then* Ff.
 119 *scepter'd*] *scepter* Q₁Q₈.
 120 *Your...birth,*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.
due] F₂F₄. *deaw* F₁F₂.
 123 *Whilst*] Q₁. *Whiles* Ff. *Whilist*
 The rest. *While* Pope.
your] *you* Q₂.
 124 *our*] *your* Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈.
 125 *This*] Qq. *The* Ff.
her] Q₁Q₂. *his* The rest.
 126 *Her*] Qq. *His* Ff.

- scars*] Q₁Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈. *stars* Q₂Q₃Q₄.
skarres F₁F₂. *skarrs* F₃. *skars* F₄.
 127 *Her royal.....plants,*] Pope. *His*
royal.....Plants, Ff. Omitted in
 Qq.
 128 *shoulder'd*] *shouldred* QqFf. *smoul-*
der'd Johnson conj. *smother'd*
 Mason conj. *shoaled* Becket conj.
founder'd Anon. conj.
in the] *into th'* Hanmer.
the] Q₁Q₂Ff. *this* Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈.
 129 *blind...dark*] Qq. *darks...deepe*
 Ff.
 130 *recure*] *recouer* Q₆Q₇Q₈.
 131 *you*] *yon* Q₂.
 131, 132 *the charge.....land*] Ff. *the*
soueraingtie thereof Qq, reading
Your...thereof as one line.

And kingly government of this your land ;
 Not as protector, steward, substitute,
 Or lowly factor for another's gain ;
 But as successively, from blood to blood, 135
 Your right of birth, your empery, your own.
 For this, consorted with the citizens,
 Your very worshipful and loving friends,
 And by their vehement instigation,
 In this just suit come I to move your grace. 140

Glou. I know not whether to depart in silence,
 Or bitterly to speak in your reproof,
 Best fitteth my degree or your condition :
 If not to answer, you might haply think
 Tongue-tied ambition, not replying, yielded 145
 To bear the golden yoke of sovereignty,
 Which fondly you would here impose on me ;
 If to reprove you for this suit of yours
 So season'd with your faithful love to me,
 Then, on the other side, I check'd my friends. 150
 Therefore, to speak, and to avoid the first,
 And then, in speaking, not to incur the last,
 Definitively thus I answer you.
 Your love deserves my thanks, but my desert
 Unmeritable shuns your high request. 155
 First, if all obstacles were cut away

- 134 *Or*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *Nor* The rest. *not whither* Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈. *cannot tell,*
gain ;] gains ? Q₃Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈. *if* Ff.
 136 *emperry*] Q₈. *Empyrie* F₁. *Empyry* 143 *fitteth*] *fittest* Q₇. *fits* Q₈.
 F₂. *Empiry* F₃F₄. *Emperie* The 144—153 *If not.....answer you.*] Ff.
 rest. Omitted in Qq.
 138 *very worshipful and loving*] Q₁Q₂Ff. 144 *If not*] F₁. *For not* F₂F₃F₄. *If,*
worshipfull and very louing The *not* Malone.
 rest. 152 *not to*] Ff. *not* Pope.
 140 *suit*] *sute* Qq. *Cause* Ff. 155 *shuns*] *shames* S. Walker conj.
 141 *know not whether*] Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄. *know*

And that my path were even to the crown,
 As my ripe revenue and due by birth;
 Yet so much is my poverty of spirit,
 So mighty and so many my defects, 160
 As I had rather hide me from my greatness,
 Being a bark to brook no mighty sea,
 Than in my greatness covet to be hid,
 And in the vapour of my glory smother'd.
 But, God be thanked, there's no need of me, 165
 And much I need to help you, if need were;
 The royal tree hath left us royal fruit,
 Which, mellow'd by the stealing hours of time,
 Will well become the seat of majesty,
 And make, no doubt, us happy by his reign. 170
 On him I lay what you would lay on me,
 The right and fortune of his happy stars;
 Which God defend that I should wring from him!

Buck. My lord, this argues conscience in your grace;
 But the respects thereof are nice and trivial, 175
 All circumstances well considered.
 You say that Edward is your brother's son:
 So say we too, but not by Edward's wife;
 For first he was contract to Lady Lucy—
 Your mother lives a witness to that vow— 180
 And afterward by substitute betroth'd

158 *my ripe*] Q₁. *the ripe* Ff. *my right*

The rest.

by birth] Qq. *of birth* Ff.

161 *As I had*] Qq. *That I would* Ff.

164 *smother'd*] Ff. *smotherd* Q₁Q₂.

smothered The rest.

165 *thank'd, there's*] Qq. *thank'd, there*
is Ff.

of me] Q₁Q₂Ff. *for me* The rest.

166 *if need were*] Qq. *were there need*
 Ff.

168 *mellow'd*] Ff. *mellowed* Qq.

170 *no doubt, us*] QqF₁. *us (no doubt)*

F₂F₃F₄. *us doubtless* Pope.

171 *what*] Qq. *that* Ff.

would lay] *would* Q₇Q₈.

179 *he was*] Qq. *was he* Ff.

contract] *contracted* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

180 *that*] Qq. *his* Ff.

181 *afterward*] *afterwards* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

betroth'd] Ff. *betrothed* Qq.

To Bona, sister to the King of France.
 These both put by, a poor petitioner,
 A care-crazed mother of a many children,
 A beauty-waning and distressed widow, 185
 Even in the afternoon of her best days,
 Made prize and purchase of his lustful eye,
 Seduced the pitch and height of all his thoughts
 To base declension and loathed bigamy ;
 By her, in his unlawful bed, he got 190
 This Edward, whom our manners term the prince.
 More bitterly could I expostulate,
 Save that, for reverence to some alive,
 I give a sparing limit to my tongue.
 Then, good my lord, take to your royal self 195
 This proffer'd benefit of dignity ;
 If not to bless us and the land withal,
 Yet to draw forth your noble ancestry
 From the corruption of abusing times,
 Unto a lineal true-derived course. 200

May. Do, good my lord, your citizens entreat you.

Buck. Refuse not, mighty lord, this proffer'd love.

Cate. O, make them joyful, grant their lawful suit !

- 183 *put by*] Qq. *put off* Ff.
 184 *of...children*] Q₁. *to a many Sonnes*
 Ff. *of many children* The rest.
 185 *beauty-waning*] Steevens (1778).
Beautie-waining F₁. *beauty-wain-*
ing The rest.
 186 *days*] day F₄.
 187 *prize*] Q₄Ff. *price* Q₇Q₈. *prise*
 The rest.
lustful] Qq. *wanton* Ff.
 188 *Seduced*] *Seduce* Q₆Q₇Q₈.
all his thoughts] Qq. *his degree* Ff.
 189 *and loathed*] Q₈. *and loath'd* Ff.
loathed Q₇Q₈. *and loathd* The
 rest.
 190 *his*] *this* Q₆Q₇Q₈.
 191 *term*] Qq. *call* Ff.
 192 *I*] om. Q₆Q₇.
 193 *to some*] of some F₃F₄.
 195 *your*] you F₃.
 196 *proffer'd*] Ff. *proffered* Qq.
 198 *forth...ancestry*] Ff. *out your royall*
stocke Qq.
 199 *abusing times*] Ff. *abusing time*
 Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅. *a busing time* Q₆.
a busie time Q₇. *a busy time* Q₈.
 200 *true-derived*] Theobald. *true de-*
riued QqFf. *true, derived* Pope.
 202 *Buck. Refuse...love.*] Ff. Omitted
 in Qq.

Glou. Alas, why would you heap these cares on me?
I am unfit for state and majesty : 205
I do beseech you, take it not amiss ;
I cannot nor I will not yield to you.

Buck. If you refuse it,—as, in love and zeal,
Loath to depose the child, your brother's son ;
As well we know your tenderness of heart 210
And gentle, kind, effeminate remorse,
Which we have noted in you to your kin,
And egally indeed to all estates,—
Yet whether you accept our suit or no,
Your brother's son shall never reign our king ; 215
But we will plant some other in the throne,
To the disgrace and downfall of your house :
And in this resolution here we leave you.
Come, citizens: 'zounds! I'll entreat no more.

Glou. O, do not swear, my lord of Buckingham. 220
[*Exit Buckingham with the Citizens.*]

Cate. Call them again, my lord, and accept their suit :

Another. Do, good my lord, lest all the land do rue it.

Glou. Would you enforce me to a world of care?

204 *would*] *should* Q₇Q₈.
these cares] Q₁. *this Care* Ff. *those*
cares The rest.

205 *majesty*] Ff. *dignitie* Qq.

212 *kin*] Qq. *Kindred* Ff.

213 *egally*] Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₆F₁. *egallie* Q₁Q₂.
equally The rest.

214 *whether*] Qq. *know, where* Ff.
know, wh'er Theobald.
accept] *except* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

217 *downfall*] *downfull* Q₂.

218 *we*] I Q₇Q₈.

219 *Come.....I'll*] Qq. *Come, citizens,*
we will Ff. *'Zounds, citizens, we*
will Collier MS.

[*Exit Buckingham.* Collier (ed. 2).]

220 *Glou. O, do not...Buckingham.*] Qq.
Omitted in Ff.

[*Exit...Citizens.*] Capell. *Exeunt*
Ff. om. Qq.

221 *Call...accept*] Qq. *Call him againe,*
sweet Prince, accept Ff. *Call them*
again, sweet Prince, accept Pope.

222 *Another.*] Ano. Qq. Continued to
Catesby in Ff.

Do...it.] Qq. *If you denie them, all*
the Land will rue it. Ff.

rue it] *rue't* S. Walker conj.

223 *Would...care*] *Would...care:* Q₁
Q₂. *Will...Cares.* F₁. *Will...Cares?*
F₂F₃F₄.

Well, call them again. I am not made of stones,
But penetrable to your kind entreats,
Albeit against my conscience and my soul.

225

Re-enter BUCKINGHAM *and the rest.*

Cousin of Buckingham, and you sage, grave men,
Since you will buckle fortune on my back,
To bear her burthen, whether I will or no,
I must have patience to endure the load: 230
But if black scandal or foul-faced reproach
Attend the sequel of your imposition,
Your mere enforcement shall acquittance me
From all the impure blots and stains thereof;
For God he knows, and you may partly see, 235
How far I am from the desire thereof.

May. God bless your grace! we see it, and will say it.

Glou. In saying so, you shall but say the truth.

Buck. Then I salute you with this kingly title:

Long live Richard, England's royal king! 240

May. and Cit. Amen.

224 *Well,*] Qq. om. Ff.
them] *him* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

[*Exit* Catesby. Theobald.
stones] QqFf. *stone* Pope.

225 *entreats*] *intreats* Q₁Q₂. *intreats* Q₃Q₆Q₆Q₇. *interats* Q₄. *entreaties* Ff. *intents* Q₈.

227 *Re-enter...*] Pope. *Enter...* Ff. om. Qq.
you] Qq. om. Ff.
grave] om. F₃F₄.

228 *you*] *your* Q₃.

229 *her*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *the* The rest.
burthen] *burden* Johnson.
whether] *where* F₁. *wher* Steevens (1778).

231 *foul-faced*] *fouls-fac't* Q₁. *soule-fac't* Q₂. *so foule fac't* Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₆Q₇Q₈. *fouls-fac'd* F₁F₂. *four-fac'd* F₃. *foul-fac'd* F₄.

234 *blots*] *plots* Q₈.

235 *he knows*] Qq. *doth know* Ff.

236 *thereof*] Qq. *of this* Ff.

239 *this*] *the* Q₄.

kingly] Qq. *Royall* Ff.

240, 241 *Long.....Amen.*] As one line, Vaughan conj.

240 *Richard*] Qq. *King Richard* Ff. *great Richard* Anon. conj. *royal*] *worthis* Ff.

241 *May. and Cit.*] *Mayor* or *Mai.* or *May.* Qq. All. Ff.

Buck. To-morrow will it please you to be crown'd?

Glou. Even when you please, since you will have it so.

Buck. To-morrow then we will attend your grace:
And so most joyfully we take our leave. 245

Glou. Come, let us to our holy task again.
Farewell, good cousin; farewell, gentle friends. [*Exeunt.*]

ACT IV.

SCENE I. *Before the Tower.*

Enter, on one side, QUEEN ELIZABETH, DUCHESS OF YORK, and MARQUESS OF DORSET; on the other, ANNE, DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER, leading LADY MARGARET PLANTAGENET, CLARENCE'S young daughter.

Duch. Who meets us here? my niece Plantagenet
Led in the hand of her kind aunt of Gloucester?
Now, for my life, she's wandering to the Tower,
On pure heart's love to greet the tender princes.
Daughter, well met.

Anne. God give your graces both 5

242 *will*] Qq. *may* Ff.

243 *since*] Qq. *for* Ff.

245 *And so...leave.*] Omitted in Qq.

246 *task*] Qq. *Worke* Ff.

[To the Clergymen. Johnson.

247 *good cousin*] Qq. *my Cousins* Ff.
my cousin Pope.

[*Exeunt.*] om. Qs.

ACT IV. SCENE I.] ACT III. SCENE
VIII. Rann (Johnson conj.).

Before the Tower.] Theobald. The
Tower. Pope.

Enter...] Malone (after Theobald).

Enter Quee. mother, Duchesse of

Yorke, Marques Dorset, at one
doore, Duchesse of Glocest. at an-
other doore. Qq. Enter the Queene,
Anne Duchesse of Gloucester, the
Duchesse of Yorke, and Marquesse
Dorset. Ff (of Dorset F₃F₄).

1 *Who...Plantagenet*] One line in Qq.
Two in Ff.

2—8 *Led.....day*] Ff. Omitted in
Qq.

4 *princes*] Theobald. *Prince* Ff.

5, 6 *God...day*] As in Pope. Line
5 ends at *happie* in Ff.

A happy and a joyful time of day!

Q. Eliz. As much to you, good sister! Whither away?

Anne. No farther than the Tower, and, as I guess,
Upon the like devotion as yourselves,
To gratulate the gentle princes there. 10

Q. Eliz. Kind sister, thanks: we'll enter all together.

Enter BRAKENBURY.

And, in good time, here the lieutenant comes.

Master lieutenant, pray you, by your leave,

How doth the prince, and my young son of York?

Brak. Right well, dear madam. By your patience, 15
I may not suffer you to visit them;
The king hath straitly charged the contrary.

Q. Eliz. The king! why, who's that?

Brak. I cry you mercy: I mean the lord protector.

Q. Eliz. The Lord protect him from that kingly title!
Hath he set bounds betwixt their love and me? 21
I am their mother; who should keep me from them?

Duch. I am their father's mother; I will see them.

7 *As.....away?*] Ff. *Sister well met, whether awake so fast?* Qq (*whither* Q₆Q₆Q₇).

8 *Anne.*] Ff. *Duch.* Q₁. *Du.* Q₂. *Dut. Glo.* The rest. *farther*] *further* Johnson.

10 *gentle*] Ff. *tender* Qq.

11 *enter*] *never enter* F₁.

12 *Enter Brakenbury.*] Capell. *Enter Lieutenant.* Q₁Q₂. *Enter the Lieutenant of the Tower.* Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈. *Enter the Lieutenant.* Ff.

14 *How...York?*] Ff. *How fares the Prince?* Qq.

15 *Right...patience*] Ff. *Wel Madam, and in health, but by your leave* Qq.

16 *them*] Ff. *him* Qq

17 *straitly*] Qq. *strictly* Ff. *the*] *to the* Q₇Q₈.

18 *why, who's that?*] Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇. *whie, whose that?* Q₁Q₂. *why who is that?* Q₈. *who's that?* Ff.

19 *I...mercy:*] Qq. Omitted in Ff.

21 *he*] *be* F₂.

bounds] *bonds* Q₇Q₈.

betwixt] Qq. *betweens* Ff.

their] *there* Q₇Q₈.

22 *should keep*] Qq. *shall barre* Ff.

23 *Duch. I am...*] *Du. yor. I am...* Q₁. *Duch. Yorke. I am...* Ff. Continued to the Queen in the rest.

their father's mother; I] Ff. *their Fathers, Mother, I* Q₁. *their father,* Qq.

Anne. Their aunt I am in law, in love their mother:
Then bring me to their sights; I'll bear thy blame, 25
And take thy office from thee, on my peril.

Brak. No, madam, no; I may not leave it so:
I am bound by oath, and therefore pardon me. [Exit.

Enter LORD STANLEY.

Stan. Let me but meet you, ladies, one hour hence,
And I'll salute your grace of York as mother, 30
And reverend looker on, of two fair queens.

[To *Anne*] Come, madam, you must straight to Westminster,
There to be crowned Richard's royal queen.

Q. Eliz. O, cut my lace in sunder, that my pent heart
May have some scope to beat, or else I swoon 35
With this dead-killing news!

Anne. Despiteful tidings! O unpleasing news!

Dor. Be of good cheer: mother, how fares your grace?

Q. Eliz. O Dorset, speak not to me, get thee hence!

- | | |
|---|--|
| <i>Mother, and Q₂, their father, mother,</i> | <i>on] one Q₇Q₈.</i> |
| <i>and Q₃Q₆Q₆Q₇Q₈. theirs father</i> | 32 [To <i>Anne</i>] Capell. |
| <i>mother, and Q₄.</i> | <i>straight] Ff. go with me Qq.</i> |
| 25 <i>Then bring...sights] Ff. Then feare</i> | 34—36 <i>O, cut...news!] Arranged as in</i> |
| <i>not thou Qq.</i> | <i>Qq. The lines end asunder...beat...</i> |
| 27, 28 <i>No,...me.] Ff. I doe beseech your</i> | <i>newes, in Ff.</i> |
| <i>graces all to pardon me: I am bound</i> | 34 <i>O] Qq. Ah Ff.</i> |
| <i>by oath, I may not doe it. Qq.</i> | <i>in sunder] Qq. asunder Ff.</i> |
| 28 <i>I am] I'm Pope.</i> | 35 <i>I swoon] Ff. sound Q₂Q₄. I sound</i> |
| [Exit.] Exit Lieutenant. Ff. om. | <i>The rest.</i> |
| Qq. | 36 <i>dead-killing] Ff. dead killing Q₁Q₂</i> |
| 29 Enter Lord Stanley.] Qq. Enter | <i>Q₃Q₄. dead liking Q₆Q₆Q₇Q₈. dead-</i> |
| Stanley. Ff. | <i>striking Capell conj.</i> |
| <i>you, ladies] your ladies Q₆Q₇</i> | 37 <i>Anne. Despiteful...news!] Ff. Omit-</i> |
| <i>one] Ff. an Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄. at an Q₅Q₆</i> | <i>ted in Qq.</i> |
| <i>Q₇Q₈.</i> | 38 <i>Be of good cheer: mother,] Ff</i> |
| 30 <i>mother,] Ff. Mother: Qq.</i> | <i>Madam, haus comfort, Qq.</i> |
| 31 <i>reverend] FfQ₆. reuerente Q₁. reuer-</i> | 39 <i>hence] Qq. gone Ff.</i> |
| <i>ent The rest.</i> | |

Death and destruction dog thee at the heels ; 40
 Thy mother's name is ominous to children.
 If thou wilt outstrip death, go cross the seas,
 And live with Richmond, from the reach of hell :
 Go, hie thee, hie thee from this slaughter-house,
 Lest thou increase the number of the dead ; 45
 And make me die the thrall of Margaret's curse,
 Nor mother, wife, nor England's counted queen.

Stan. Full of wise care is this your counsel, madam.
 Take all the swift advantage of the hours ;
 You shall have letters from me to my son 50
 To meet you on the way, and welcome you.
 Be not ta'en tardy by unwise delay.

Duch. O ill-dispersing wind of misery !
 O my accursed womb, the bed of death !
 A cockatrice hast thou hatch'd to the world, 55
 Whose unavoided eye is murderous.

Stan. Come, madam, come ; I in all haste was sent.

Anne. And I in all unwillingness will go.
 I would to God that the inclusive verge
 Of golden metal that must round my brow 60

40 *dog*] *dogges* F₁F₂. *dogs* Q₆F₃F₄.
the heels] Qq. *thy heeles* Ff.
 41 *ominous*] *ominious* Q₆.
children] *her children* Collier MS.
 42 *outstrip*] *ouerstrip* Q₆Q₇Q₈.
 43 *reach*] *race* Q₆Q₇Q₈.
 47 *Nor*] *Not* Q₈.
 49 *of the hours*] Ff. *of the time* Qq (af
 Q₇).
 50 *my*] *me* Q₆.
 51 *To meet...you.*] Qq. *In your behalfe,*
to meet you on the way : Ff.
 52 *ta'en*] *tane* Q₁. *ta'ne* Ff. *taken* The
 rest.
delay] *delays* Capell conj.
 53 *ill-dispersing*] Theobald. *ill dis-*

persing QqFf. *all-dispersing* Vaugh-
 an conj.
 55 *hast*] *hath* Q₇.
hatch'd] *hatch* Q₁.
 56 *murderous*] Johnson. *murtherous* Qq
 Ff.
 57 *Come...sent.*] *Come, madam ; I...sent*
for you. Capell conj.
Come, madam, come] Ff. *Come*
Madam Qq.
sent] Q₁Q₂Ff. *sent for* The rest.
 58 *Anne.*] Ff. *Duch.* Qq.
in] Qq. *with* Ff.
 59 *I would*] Qq. *O would* Ff.
inclusive] *idclusive* Q₈.

Were red-hot steel, to sear me to the brain!
 Anointed let me be with deadly venom,
 And die, ere men can say, God save the queen!

Q. Eliz. Go, go, poor soul, I envy not thy glory;
 To feed my humour, wish thyself no harm. 65

Anne. No! why? When he that is my husband
 now

Came to me, as I follow'd Henry's corse,
 When scarce the blood was well wash'd from his hands
 Which issued from my other angel husband,
 And that dead saint which then I weeping follow'd; 70
 O, when, I say, I look'd on Richard's face,
 This was my wish: 'Be thou,' quoth I, 'accursed,
 For making me, so young, so old a widow!
 And, when thou wed'st, let sorrow haunt thy bed;
 And be thy wife—if any be so mad— 75

As miserable by the death of thee
 As thou hast made me by my dear lord's death!
 Lo, ere I can repeat this curse again,
 Even in so short a space, my woman's heart
 Grossly grew captive to his honey words, 80
 And proved the subject of my own soul's curse,

61 *brain*] Qq. *Braines* Ff.

62 *venom*] Ff. *poyson* Qq.

63 *can*] om. F₃F₄.

64 *Go, go*] Ff. *Alas* Qq.
thy] the Q₅.

66 *why*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

67 *as*] om. Q₆Q₇Q₈.

67, 70 *follow'd*] Ff. *followed* Qq.

67 *corse*] Ff. *course* Qq.

68 *scarce...well*] *the blood was scarce* Q₇.
the blood was scarce Q₈.

70 *dead*] Qq. *deare* Ff.
which] *whom* Capell conj.

75 *so mad—*] *so—made* Ferrers conj.

mad] Ff. *madd* Q₁Q₂. *badd* Q₃.
 Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇. *bad* Q₈.

76, 77 *As...death...As*] Qq. *More...life...*
Then Ff (*Than* F₄). *As...life...As*
 Staunton.

78 *ere*] Ff. *eare* Q₁. *euen* The rest.

79 *Even...space*] Qq. *Within so small*
a time Ff.

80 *Grossly*] Ff. *Grosselis* Q₁. *Crosselis*
 Q₂. *Crosly* The rest.

81 *subject*] FfQ₈. *subiecte* Q₁. *subiectes*
 Q₂. *subiects* Q₃. *subiects* Q₄Q₅
 Q₇.

my] *mine* FfQ₇Q₈.

Which ever since hath kept my eyes from rest ;
 For never yet one hour in his bed
 Have I enjoy'd the golden dew of sleep,
 But have been waked by his timorous dreams. 85
 Besides, he hates me for my father Warwick ;
 And will, no doubt, shortly be rid of me.

Q. Eliz. Poor heart, adieu ! I pity thy complaining.

Anne. No more than from my soul I mourn for yours.

Dor. Farewell, thou woful welcomer of glory ! 90

Anne. Adieu, poor soul, that takest thy leave of it !

Duch. [*To Dorset*] Go thou to Richmond, and good
 fortune guide thee !

[*To Anne*] Go thou to Richard, and good angels guard
 thee !

[*To Queen Eliz.*] Go thou to sanctuary, and good thoughts
 possess thee !

I to my grave, where peace and rest lie with me ! 95

Eighty odd years of sorrow have I seen,

And each hour's joy wreck'd with a week of teen.

Q. Eliz. Stay, yet look back with me unto the Tower.

Pity, you ancient stones, those tender babes

82 *ever since*] Qq. *hitherto* Ff.

kept] Qq. *held* Ff.

my] *mine* Ff Q₆ Q₇ Q₈.

rest] Ff. *sleeps* Qq (*steeps* Q₆).

84 *Have I enjoy'd*] *Have I enjoyed* Qq

(*injoyed* Q₈). *Did I enjoy* Ff.

dew] Q₁ Q₂ Q₆ Q₇ Q₈ F₃ F₄. *deaw* Q₃ Q₄

Q₅ F₁ F₂.

85 *But.....dreams*] Qq. *But with his*
timorous Dreames was still awak'd
 Ff.

waked] *waken'd* Vaughan conj.

87 *no doubt*] Q₁ Ff. Omitted by the
 rest.

88 *Poor heart,.....complaining*] Ff.
Alas poore soule, I pittie thy com-
plaints Qq.

89 *from*] Qq. *with* Ff.

90 *Dor.*] Q₁. *Dora.* Ff. *Qu.* The rest.

91 *that*] Ff. *thou* Qq.

92, 93, 94 *Go thou*] *Go* F₂ F₃. See
 note (xvii).

93 *guard*] Qq. *tend* Ff.

94 *and*] Ff. *om.* Qq.

96 *odd*] *olde* Q₆. *old* Q₆ Q₇ Q₈.

97 *wreck'd*] Theobald (ed. 2). *wrackt*
 Qq F₁ F₂ F₃. *wrack'd* F₄. *wreak'd* or
rack'd Anon. conj.

teen] *anguish* Pope.

98—104 *Q. Eliz. Stay...farewell.*] Ff.
 Omitted in Qq.

98 *Stay, yet*] Ff. *Stay yet*; Capell.

99 *Pity.....those*] *Pity your ancient*
stones those Vaughan conj.

Whom envy hath immured within your walls ! 100
 Rough cradle for such little pretty ones !
 Rude ragged nurse, old sullen playfellow
 For tender princes, use my babies well !
 So foolish sorrow bids your stones farewell. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *London. The palace.*

Sennet. Enter RICHARD, in pomp, crowned ; BUCKINGHAM,
 CATESBY, a Page, and others.

K. Rich. Stand all apart. Cousin of Buckingham !

Buck. My gracious sovereign ?

K. Rich. Give me thy hand. [*Here he ascendeth the throne.*]

Thus high, by thy advice

And thy assistance, is king Richard seated :

But shall we wear these honours for a day ? 5

Or shall they last, and we rejoice in them ?

Buck. Still live they, and for ever may they last !

102, 103 [To the Lieutenant. Johnson
 conj.

104 *sorrow bids*] Rowe. *Sorrows bids*
F₁F₂. sorrows bids F₃. sorrows
bid F₄.

London. The palace.] The Court.
 Pope. The same. A Room of
 State in the Palace. Capell.

Sennet.] *Sound a Sennet. F₁.* Sound
 a *Sonnet. F₂F₃F₄.* The Trumpets
 sound, Qq.

Enter R.....crowned ;] Enter R.
 crowned, Qq (crownd Q₁). Enter
 R. in pompe, Ff. Richard upon
 his Throne, Capell.

a Page, and others.] Capell. with

other Nobles. Qq. Ratcliffe, Louel.
 Ff.

2 *Buck. My gracious sovereign f*] Ff.
 Omitted in Qq.

3, 4 *Give.....seated:]* As in Qq. As
 three lines ending *hand...assistance,*
...seated: in Ff.

3 [*Here...throne.*] Qq (ascends Q₇Q₈
 throne. Q₃; his throne. Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈).
 Sound. Ff. om. Rowe.

4 *And*] *Add* Q₇.

5 *honours*] Qq. *Glories* Ff.

6 *them f*] *them.* Q₁.

7 *for*] *for for* Q₃.

may they] Qq. *let them* Ff.

K. Rich. O Buckingham, now do I play the touch,
To try if thou be current gold indeed:
Young Edward ~~lives~~ ~~but~~ ~~think~~ ~~now~~ what I would say. 10

Buck. Say on, my loving lord.

K. Rich. Why, Buckingham, I say, I would be king.

Buck. Why, so you are, my thrice renowned liege.

K. Rich. Ha! am I king? 'tis so: but Edward lives.

Buck. True, noble prince.

K. Rich. O bitter consequence, 15
That Edward still should live true noble prince!
Cousin, thou wert not wont to be so dull:
Shall I be plain? I wish the bastards dead;
And I would have it suddenly perform'd.

What sayest thou? speak suddenly; be brief. 20

Buck. Your grace may do your pleasure.

K. Rich. Tut, tut, thou art all ice, thy kindness
freezeth:

Say, have I thy consent that they shall die?

Buck. Give me some breath, some little pause, my lord,
Before I positively speak herein: 25

I will resolve your grace immediately. [Exit.]

8 *O]* Qq. *Al* Ff.

do I] Q₁Q₂Ff. *I do* The rest.

play] ply Warburton. *apply* Heath
conj.

10 *say]* Qq. *speake* Ff.

11 *loving lord]* Ff. *gracious souveraigne*
Qq. *loving lord, what thou wouldst*
say Vaughan conj.

13 *renowned]* *renowned* Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅.
liege] Qq. *Lord* Ff.

14 *king]* a *King* Pope.

16 *live...prince!]* *live true...prince.* Qq
Ff. *live—true...Prince.* Theobald.
live, True...Prince. Rowe (ed. 1).
live. True, noble Prince? Hanmer.

17 *wert]* Qq. *wast* Ff.

20 *sayest thou?]* *saigest thou?* Q₆Q₇Q₈.
saist thou? Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅. *say'st thou*
now? Ff.

22 *freezeth]* Qq. *freezes* Ff.

24 *some...lord]* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆. *some*
litle breath, some pause, dears Lord
Ff. *some breath my lord.* Q₇Q₈.
some breath, some little pause, dear
lord Pope.

25 *herein]* Qq. *in this* Ff.

26 *your grace immediately]* Qq. *you*
herein presently Ff.

[Exit.] Q₁. Exit *Buck.* Ff. The
rest omit.

Cate. [*Aside to a stander by*] The king is angry : see, he bites the lip.

K. Rich. I will converse with iron-witted fools
And unrespective boys : none are for me
That look into me with considerate eyes : 30
High-reaching Buckingham grows circumspect.
Boy!

Page. My lord?

K. Rich. Know'st thou not any whom corrupting gold
Would tempt unto a close exploit of death? 35

Page. My lord, I know a discontented gentleman,
Whose humble means match not his haughty mind :
Gold were as good as twenty orators,
And will, no doubt, tempt him to any thing.

K. Rich. What is his name?

Page. His name, my lord, is Tyrrel. 40

K. Rich. I partly know the man : go, call him hither.

[*Exit Page.*]

The deep-revolving witty Buckingham
No more shall be the neighbour to my counsel :
Hath he so long held out with me untired,
And stops he now for breath? 45

27 [*Aside to a stander by*] Capell.
Aside. Hanmer.

bites the] *gnaws his* Ff. *bites his*
Q₇Q₈.

28 [*Descends from his throne.* Malone.
iron-witted] *iron wittie* Q₇. *iron*
witty Q₈.

31, 32 *High-reaching...Boy*] Ff. *Boy,*
high reaching... Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₇.
Boy. High reaching... Q₈.

33 *Page.*] Ff. *Boy.* Qq.
My lord ?] *My Lord.* Q₁Q₂Ff. *Lord.*
The rest.

34 *Know'st*] *Knowest* Q₂.

35 *Would*] Qq. *Will* Ff.
death?] Ff. *death.* Qq.

36 *My lord,*] Qq. om. Ff.

37 *mind*] Qq. *spirit* Ff.

40 *Tyrrel*] Capell. *Tirrell* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄
Q₆Ff. *Terrill* Q₆Q₇. *Terrel* Q₈.

41 *I partly.....hither.* [*Exit Page.*] *I*
partly...hither. Exit Boy. Pope. *I*
partly...hither, Boy. Exit. Ff. *Go*
call him hither presently. Qq (*pres-*
entlie, Q₁).

42 *deep-revolving*] Pope. *deepe resolu-*
ing Q₇Q₈. *deepe reuolving* The rest.
Buckingham] *Buckingham.* Q₁.

43 *counsel*] *counsell* Qq. *counsailles* Ff.

45 *breath?*] Qq. *breath? Well, be it*
so. Ff.

Enter STANLEY.

www.libtool.com.cn

How now! what news with you?

Stan. My lord, I hear the Marquis Dorset's fled
To Richmond, in those parts beyond the seas
Where he abides.

[*Stands apart.*]

K. Rich. Catesby!

50

Cate. My lord?

K. Rich. Rumour it abroad

That Anne, my wife, is sick and like to die:
I will take order for her keeping close.

Inquire me out some mean-born gentleman,
Whom I will marry straight to Clarence' daughter:
The boy is foolish, and I fear not him.

55

Look, how thou dream'st! I say again, give out
That Anne my wife is sick, and like to die:

About it; for it stands me much upon,
To stop all hopes whose growth may damage me.

60

[*Exit Catesby.*]

I must be married to my brother's daughter,
Or else my kingdom stands on brittle glass.
Murder her brothers, and then marry her!
Uncertain way of gain! But I am in
So far in blood that sin will pluck on sin:

65

46 *Enter Stanley.*] Ff. *Enter Darby.*
Qq.

How...with you?] Qq. *How now,*
Lord Stanley, what's the newes? Ff.
How now, Lord Stanley, what's the
news with you? Collier MS.

47—52 *My lord,.....abroad*] See note
(xviii).

49 [*Stands apart.*] Edd.

52 *i]* is Q₇. *this* Q₈.

55 *mean-born*] *meane borne* Qq. *means*
poore Ff.

56 *Clarence*] Pope. *Clarence* QqFf.

58 *dream'st*] *dreamest* Q₈.

59 *wife*] Qq. *Queene* Ff.

61 [*Exit Catesby.*] Capell. om. QqFf.

62 *brother's*] *brother* Q₇Q₈.

(*To himselfe*) Collier MS.

64 *Murder*] Johnson. *Murther* QqFf.

brothers] *brother* Q₇Q₈.

65 *Uncertain*] *Uncurrent* Vaughan
conj.

66 *will pluck*] Q₁Ff. *plucks* Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅.
plucks Q₆Q₇. *plukes* Q₈.

Tear-falling pity dwells not in this eye.

www.libtool. *Re-enter* Page, with TYRREL.

Is thy name Tyrrel?

Tyr. James Tyrrel, and your most obedient subject.

K. Rich. Art thou, indeed?

Tyr. Prove me, my gracious sovereign. 70

K. Rich. Darest thou resolve to kill a friend of mine?

Tyr. Ay, my lord;

But I had rather kill two enemies.

K. Rich. Why, there thou hast it: two deep enemies,
Foes to my rest and my sweet sleep's disturbers 75

Are they that I would have thee deal upon:

Tyrrel, I mean those bastards in the Tower.

Tyr. Let me have open means to come to them,
And soon I'll rid you from the fear of them.

K. Rich. Thou sing'st sweet music. Hark, come hither,
Tyrrel: 80

Go, by this token: rise, and lend thine ear: [*Whispers.*

There is no more but so: say it is done,

And I will love thee, and prefer thee too.

67 *Tear-falling*] Ff. *Teares falling* Q₆
Q₇Q₈. *Teare falling* The rest.

68 *Re-enter...*] Capell. Enter Tirrel.
Qq. Enter Tyrrel. Ff.
Tyrrel ?] *Tirrell.* Q₂.

70 [He takes him aside. Pope.
sovereign] Qq. Lord Ff.

72, 73 *Ay,...had*] *I my Lord, but I had*
Qq, reading 72, 73 as one line.
Please you: But I had Ff. *Please*
you, I'd Pope, reading as one line.

73 *two enemies*] Q₁Ff. *two deepe ene-*
mies The rest.

74 *there*] Qq. *then* Ff.
two] to Q₈.

75 *and*] *that* Q₇Q₈.

sleep's] *sleeps* Q₈.
disturbers] Ff. *disturbs* Qq.

78 *open*] om. Q₇Q₈.

79 (Kneeling) Collier MS.

80 *Thou.....Tyrrel:]* One line in Qq.
Two in Ff.

music. Hark, come] *musicus: Hearke,*
come Ff. *musicke. Come* Qq. *music*
to me. Come Anon. conj.

81 *this*] Ff. *that* Qq.

[*Whispers.*] Ff. He whispers in his
ears. Qq (wispers Q₁).

82 *There is*] Ff. *Tis* Qq.

it is] Q₆Q₄Q₅Ff. *is it* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₇Q₈.

83 *too*] Qq. *for it* Ff.

Tyr. 'Tis done, my gracious lord.

K. Rich. Shall we hear from thee, Tyrrel, ere we sleep?

Tyr. Ye shall, my lord.

[*Exit.*

Re-enter BUCKINGHAM.

Buck. My lord, I have consider'd in my mind
The late demand that you did sound me in.

K. Rich. Well, let that pass. Dorset is fled to Richmond.

Buck. I hear that news, my lord. 90

K. Rich. Stanley, he is your wife's son: well, look to it.

Buck. My lord, I claim your gift, my due by promise,
For which your honour and your faith is pawn'd;
The earldom of Hereford and the moveables
The which you promised I should possess. 95

K. Rich. Stanley, look to your wife: if she convey
Letters to Richmond, you shall answer it.

Buck. What says your highness to my just demand?

K. Rich. As I remember, Henry the Sixth
Did prophesy that Richmond should be king, 100

84 'Tis done...lord.] Qq. *I will dispatch it straight.* Ff.

gracious] good Q₇Q₈.

85, 86 *K. Rich. Shall...my lord.]* Qq. Omitted in Ff.

86 *Ye shall, my lord]* *Yea my good lord* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

[*Exit.*] Ff (at line 84). om. Qq.

87 *Re-enter...]* Pope. *Enter...* FfQ₇Q₈. In the rest it is put after line 85.

consider'd] Ff. *considered* Qq.

88 *demand]* Qq. *request* Ff.

89 *pass]* Qq. *rest* Ff.

90 *that]* Qq. *the* Ff.

91 *wife's]* Rowe. *wives* QqFf.

son] *sonnes* Q₁Q₂Q₃.

to it] Qq. *vnto it* Ff.

92 *your]* Qq. *the* Ff.

94 *Hereford]* *Herford* Qq. (*Herfort* Q₄). *Hertford* F₁.

95 *The which...should]* Qq. (*your* Q₂). *Which you have promised I shall* Ff.

96 *she]* *they* Q₇Q₈.

98 *demand]* *demand.* Q₁. *request* Ff.

99 *As I remember]* Qq. *I doe remember me* Ff.

When Richmond was a little peevish boy.

A king, perhaps, perhaps,—

Buck. My lord!

K. Rich. How chance the prophet could not at that time
Have told me, I being by, that I should kill him? 105

Buck. My lord, your promise for the earldom,—

K. Rich. Richmond! When last I was at Exeter,
The mayor in courtesy show'd me the castle,
And call'd it Rougemont: at which name I started,
Because a bard of Ireland told me once, 110
I should not live long after I saw Richmond.

Buck. My lord!

K. Rich. Ay, what's o'clock?

Buck. I am thus bold to put your grace in mind
Of what you promised me.

K. Rich. Well, but what's o'clock? 115

Buck. Upon the stroke of ten.

K. Rich. Well, let it strike.

Buck. Why let it strike?

K. Rich. Because that, like a Jack, thou keep'st the
stroke

Betwixt thy begging and my meditation.

I am not in the giving vein to-day. 120

Buck. Why, then resolve me whether you will or no.

102 *A king, perhaps, perhaps,—*] *A king*

perhaps, perhaps. Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆.

A king perhaps, Q₄. *A King per-*

haps. Ff. *A king perhaps, per-*

haps, Q₇. *A king perhaps—* Pope.

A king!—*perhaps.* Capell.

103—120 *Buck. My lord!.....to-day.]*

Qq. Omitted in Ff.

105 *him?*] Pope. *him.* Qq.

106 *earldom,—*] *Earldome.* Qq.

108 *show'd*] *show'd* Q₁. *shew'd* The rest.

109 *Rougemont*] *Ruge-mount* Qq.

110 *bard*] *Lord* Q₈.

112—117 *My lord?.....strikes?*] Four lines

in Steevens (1793), ending *bold...*

me...stroke...strikes?

115 *Well,*] om. Pope.

o'] a Qq.

118 *keep'st*] *keepst* Q₃Q₄.

121 *Why, then.....or no*] Qq. *May it*

please you to resolve me in my suit

Ff.

whether] *if* Pope.

no.] Pope. *no?* Qq.

K. Rich. Tut, tut,
Thou troublest me; I am not in the vein.

[*Exeunt all but Buckingham.*]

Buck. Is it even so? rewards he my true service
With such deep contempt? made I him king for this? 125
O, let me think on Hastings, and be gone
To Brecknock, while my fearful head is on! [*Exit.*]

SCENE III. *The same.*

Enter TYRREL.

Tyr. The tyrannous and bloody deed is done,
The most arch act of piteous massacre
That ever yet this land was guilty of.
Dighton and Forrest, whom I did suborn
To do this ruthless piece of butchery, 5
Although they were flesh'd villains, bloody dogs,
Melting with tenderness and kind compassion

122, 123 *Tut...vein.*] One line in Qq.
122 *Tut, tut,*] Qq. om. Ff.
123 [*Exeunt...*] *Exit.* QqFf. *Exeunt*
Richard, and Train. Capell. *Exit*
angrily. Collier MS.
124 *Is it even so?*] Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₆. *Is it*
even so, Q₁Q₂Q₇Q₈. *And is it thus?*
Ff. *Is't even so?* Vaughan conj.,
reading *Is't...* *With* as one line.
rewards] *rewardst* Q₁. *repayes* Ff.
true] Qq. *deeps* Ff.
125 *deep*] Qq. om. Ff.
contempt?] Ff. *contempt,* Qq.
SCENE III.] Pope. om. QqFf.
The same.] Capell.
Enter Tyrrel.] Ff. *Enter Sir Francis*

Tirrell. Qq.
1 *deed*] Qq. *Act* Ff.
2 *arch act*] Q₄Q₈. *arch-act* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₆
Q₆. *arch-acts* Q₇. *arch deed* Ff.
4 *whom*] *who* F₁.
5 *this ruthless...butchery*] Q₁Q₂. *this*
ruthfull...butchery Q₃. *this ruthfull*
...butchery Q₄Q₆Q₆Q₇Q₈. *this peece*
of ruthfull Butchery Ff. *this piece*
of ruthless butchery Pope.
6 *Although*] Qq. *Albeit* Ff.
bloody] *blooded* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier
MS.).
7 *Melting*] Qq. *Melted* Ff.
kind] Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆. om. Q₆Q₇Q₈.
milde Ff.

Wept like two children in their deaths' sad stories.
 'Lo, thus,' quoth Dighton, 'lay those tender babes :'
 'Thus, thus,' quoth Forrest, 'girdling one another 10
 Within their innocent alabaster arms :
 Their lips were four red roses on a stalk,
 Which in their summer beauty kiss'd each other.
 A book of prayers on their pillow lay ;
 Which once,' quoth Forrest, 'almost changed my mind ; 15
 But O ! the devil'—there the villain stopp'd ;
 Whilst Dighton thus told on : ' We smothered
 The most replenished sweet work of nature
 That from the prime creation e'er she framed.'
 Thus both are gone with conscience and remorse ; 20
 They could not speak ; and so I left them both,
 To bring this tidings to the bloody king.
 And here he comes.

- 8 two] Qq. to Ff.
 deaths'] Theobald. *deaths* QqFf.
 death's Collier.
 stories] Qq. *Story* Ff.
 9 Lo, thus] Qq. *O thus* Ff.
 those tender] Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅. *these*
 tender Q₆Q₇Q₈. *the gentle* Ff.
 10 girdling] girdling Q₈.
 one] on Q₁Q₂.
 11 innocent alabaster] Q₈. *innocent*
 alabaster Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇. *Ala-*
 blaster innocent F₁F₂F₃. *Alabaster*
 innocent F₄.
 12 were] Q₁Ff. om. Q₂. *like* The rest.
 13 Which in] Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅. *When in*
 Q₆Q₇Q₈. *And in* F₁F₂. *And* F₃F₄.
 their] there Q₇Q₈.
 14 prayers] prayer Q₇Q₈.
 on] one Q₇.
 15 once] Qq. one Ff.
 16 devil'—there] Rowe. *Diuell their* Q₁.

- diuel: their* Q₂. *diuel: there* Q₃.
diuell: there Q₄. *diuel! there*
 Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈. *Diuell, there* Ff.
 17 Whilst] Qq (*Whilset* Q₂). *When* Ff.
 told on: 'We' told on, we Ff. *told*
 on we Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅. *told, on we*
 Q₇. *told, one we* Q₈.
 smothered] smothered there Vaughan
 conj.
 18 replenished] replenisht Q₇Q₈.
 19 e'er she] ere she Ff. *ever he* Qq.
 20 Thus...remorse] Q₁Q₂. *Hence...Re-*
 morse Ff. The rest omit.
 gone with] Q₁Q₂Ff. *gone; with* Han-
 mer.
 remorse ;] remorse, Q₁Q₂Ff. *remorse*
 Hanmer.
 22 bring] Qq. bears Ff.
 this] Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅F₁. *these* Q₆Q₇F₂Q₈
 F₃F₄.
 23 comes] come Q₆.

Enter KING RICHARD.

All hail, my sovereign liege!

K. Rich. Kind Tyrrel, am I happy in thy news?

Tyr. If to have done the thing you gave in charge 25
Beget your happiness, be happy then,
For it is done, my lord.

K. Rich. But didst thou see them dead?

Tyr. I did, my lord.

K. Rich. And buried, gentle Tyrrel?

Tyr. The chaplain of the Tower hath buried them;
But how or in what place I do not know. 30

K. Rich. Come to me, Tyrrel, soon at after supper,
And thou shalt tell the process of their death.
Meantime, but think how I may do thee good,
And be inheritor of thy desire.
Farewell till soon. *[Exit Tyrrel.* 35

The son of Clarence have I pent up close;
His daughter meanly have I match'd in marriage;
The sons of Edward sleep in Abraham's bosom,
And Anne my wife hath bid the world good night.
Now, for I know the Breton Richmond aims 40

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>Enter King Richard.] Qq. Enter Richard. Ff. <i>hail</i>] Qq. <i>health</i> Ff. <i>liege</i>] Qq. (<i>leige</i> Q₁). Lord Ff. 24 <i>am</i>] and Q₆Q₇Q₈. <i>thy</i>] the F₃F₄. <i>news</i>] <i>newes</i>. Q₁. 25 <i>gave</i>] <i>give</i> Q₁Q₂. 27 <i>my lord</i>] Qq. om. Ff. 30 <i>how or in what place</i>] Qq. <i>where (to say the truth)</i> Ff. 31 <i>soon at after</i>] <i>soone, and after</i> Ff. <i>soone after</i> Q₁Q₂. <i>soon, soon after</i> Rowe. <i>after supper</i>] <i>after-supper</i> Staunton. 32 <i>And thou</i>] Qq. <i>When thou</i> F₁.</p> | <p><i>When thou there</i> F₂F₃F₄. 33 <i>Meantime, but</i>] <i>Mean time—but</i> Rowe. <i>thee</i>] the F₁. 35, 38 <i>soon. The son</i>] Qq. <i>then</i>. Tir. <i>I humbly take my leave</i>. Rich. <i>The Sonne</i> Ff. (<i>take leave</i> F₂F₃F₄). 35 <i>[Exit Tyrrel.] Exit Tirrel</i>. Qq. (after line 34). om. Ff. 36 <i>pent</i>] <i>pend</i> Q₇Q₈. 39 <i>the world</i>] Qq. <i>this world</i> Ff. <i>good night</i>] <i>godnight</i> Q₁Q₂. 40 <i>Breton</i>] Capell. <i>Brittaine</i> Qq. <i>Bri- taine</i> F₁F₂. <i>Brittain</i> F₃. <i>Britain</i> F₄. <i>Briton</i> Rowe.</p> |
|---|---|

At young Elizabeth, my brother's daughter,
 And, by that knot, looks proudly o'er the crown,
 To her I go, a jolly thriving wooer.

Enter CATESBY.

Cate. My lord!

K. Rich. Good news or bad, that thou comest in so
 bluntly? 45

Cate. Bad news, my lord: Ely is fled to Richmond;
 And Buckingham, back'd with the hardy Welshmen,
 Is in the field, and still his power increaseth.

K. Rich. Ely with Richmond troubles me more near
 Than Buckingham and his rash-levied army. 50
 Come, I have heard that fearful commenting
 Is leaden servitor to dull delay;
 Delay leads impotent and snail-paced beggary:
 Then fiery expedition be my wing,
 Jove's Mercury, and herald for a king! 55
 Come, muster men: my counsel is my shield;
 We must be brief when traitors brave the field. [*Exeunt.*]

42 *o'er*] *ore* Qq. *on* Ff.

43 *I go*] Qq. *go I* Ff.

44 *Enter Catesby.*] Qq. *Enter Ratcliffe.* Ff. *Enter Catesby in haste.* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

44, 46 *Cate.*] Rat. Ff.

45 *news or bad*] Qq. *or bad news* Ff. *in*] om. Q₇Q₈.

46 *Ely*] Qq. *Mourton* Ff.

49 *near*] om. Q₈.

50 *rash-levied*] Pope. *rash levied* Qq. Ff (*levied* Q₇Q₈).

army] Qq. *Strength* Ff. *arms* Anon. conj.

51 *heard*] Qq. *learn'd* Ff.

53 *leads*] *leds* F₁.

54 *wing*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *wings* The rest.

55 *Jove's*] *Ioues* Q₁Q₂F₁. *Ioue*, Q₃Q₆Q₈ Q₇Q₈. *Ioue*, Q₄. *Ioves* F₂. *Joves* F₃F₄.

Jove's Mercury, and] *Jove's Mercury's an Theobald* conj. and Long MS.

56 *Come*] Qq. *Go* Ff.

SCENE IV. *Before the palace.**Enter* QUEEN MARGARET.

Q. Mar. So, now prosperity begins to mellow
 And drop into the rotten mouth of death.
 Here in these confines slyly have I lurk'd,
 To watch the waning of mine adversaries.
 A dire induction am I witness to,
 And will to France, hoping the consequence
 Will prove as bitter, black, and tragical.
 Withdraw thee, wretched Margaret: who comes here?

5

Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH *and the* DUCHESS OF YORK.

Q. Eliz. Ah, my young princes! ah, my tender babes!
 My unblown flowers, new-appearing sweets! 10
 If yet your gentle souls fly in the air,
 And be not fix'd in doom perpetual,
 Hover about me with your airy wings,
 And hear your mother's lamentation!
Q. Mar. Hover about her; say, that right for right 15
 Hath dimm'd your infant morn to aged night.

SCENE IV.] Pope. Scena Tertia. Ff.
 Before the palace.] Capell.
 Enter...] Enter Queene Margaret
 sola. Qq. Enter old Queene Mar-
 garet. Ff.
 3 *slyly*] *slie* Qr.
 4 *waning*] Malone. *wayning* Qc.
waining The rest.
adversaries] Qq. *enemies* Ff.
 7 *bitter, black*] *bitter-black* S. Walker
 conj.
 9 Enter...] Enter the Qu. and the
 Dutchesse of Yorke. Qq. Enter

Dutchesse and Queene. Ff.
young] Qq. *poore* Ff.
princes] *princess* F₄.
 10 *unblown*] *enblowed* F₁.
flowers] *flower* Q₆Q₇Q₈.
new-appearing] Pope. *new appear-*
ing QqFf.
sweets] *sweet* Q₈.
 13 *about*] *abous* Q₆Q₇Q₈.
 14 *hear*] *here* F₄.
lamentation] *lamentations* Q₇Q₈.
 15 *right for right*] *wrong for wrong*
 Warburton.

Duch. So many miseries have crazed my voice,
That my woe-wearied tongue is mute and dumb.
Edward Plantagenet, why art thou dead?

Q. Mar. Plantagenet doth quit Plantagenet, 20
Edward for Edward pays a dying debt.

Q. Eliz. Wilt thou, O God, fly from such gentle lambs,
And throw them in the entrails of the wolf?
When didst thou sleep when such a deed was done?

Q. Mar. When holy Harry died, and my sweet son. 25

Duch. Blind sight, dead life, poor mortal living ghost,
Woe's scene, world's shame, grave's due by life usurp'd,
Brief abstract and record of tedious days,
Rest thy unrest on England's lawful earth, [*Sitting down.*
Unlawfully made drunk with innocents' blood! 30

Q. Eliz. O, that thou wouldst as well afford a grave
As thou canst yield a melancholy seat!
Then would I hide my bones, not rest them here.
O, who hath any cause to mourn but I?

[*Sitting down by her.*

Q. Mar. If ancient sorrow be most reverend, 35

17—19 *Duch. So...dead?*] Arranged as
in Ff. In Qq these lines are placed
after line 34.

17 *have*] *hath* Q₆.

18 *mute and dumb*] Qq. *still and mute*
Ff.

20, 21 *Q. Mar. Plantagenet...debt.*] Ff.
Omitted in Qq.

24 *When...when*] QqF₁. *Why...when*
F₂F₃F₄. *When.....while* Lettsom
conj.

25 *Harry*] Q₁Q₂F₁. *Mary* Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇
Q₈. *Henry* F₂F₃F₄.
sweet] *swee* F₂.

26—30 *Duch. Blind...blood!*] Put in
the margin by Pope.

26 *Blind...life,*] Qq. *Dead life, blind*
sight, Ff.

mortal living] *mortal-living* Vaughan
conj.

28 *Brief...days,*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

29 *thy*] *they* Q₆. *their* Q₆Q₇Q₈.
[*Sitting down.*] *sitting down* on it.
Capell. throws herself upon the
ground. Long MS. om. QqFf.

30 *Unlawfully*] *Unlawfull* Q₆Q₇.
innocents'] *innocents* Qq. *innocent* Ff.

31 *O*] Qq. *Ah* Ff.

as well] Qq. *assoon* Ff.

34 *O...I!*] Qq. *Ah...wee?* Ff.
[*Sitting...*] Throwing herself down
upon the earth. Hanmer (at line 31).
om. QqFf.

35 *ancient*] *any ancient* Pope.
sorrow] om. F₄.

reverend] *reuerent* QqFf.

Give mine the benefit of seniory,
 And let my woes frown on the upper hand.
 If sorrow can admit society, *[Sitting down with them.*
 Tell o'er your woes again by viewing mine :
 I had an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him ; 40
 I had a Harry, till a Richard kill'd him :
 Thou hadst an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him ;
 Thou hadst a Richard, till a Richard kill'd him.

Duch. I had a Richard too, and thou didst kill him ;
 I had a Rutland too, thou holp'st to kill him. 45

Q. Mar. Thou hadst a Clarence too, and Richard
 kill'd him.

From forth the kennel of thy womb hath crept
 A hell-hound that doth hunt us all to death :
 That dog, that had his teeth before his eyes,
 To worry lambs and lap their gentle blood, 50
 That foul defacer of God's handiwork,
 That excellent grand tyrant of the earth,
 That reigns in galled eyes of weeping souls,
 Thy womb let loose, to chase us to our graves.
 O upright, just, and true-disposing God, 55
 How do I thank thee, that this carnal cur

36 *seniory*] *signorie* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆. *signorie* Q₆Q₇. *signeurie* F₁. *signoury* F₂F₃F₄. *signiory* Q₈. *seigneurie* Rowe (ed. 1). *seniority* Pope.

37 *woes*] Qq. *greesfes* Ff.

37, 38 *hand. If...society,*] Warburton. *hand, If...societis,* Qq. *hand If...society.* Ff.

38 [*Sitting...*] joining, and taking Seat between them. Capell.

39 *Tell...mine :*] Qq. Omitted in Ff. *o'er*] Warburton. *ouer* Qq.

41 *had a*] *had an* F₄. *Harry*] Edd. *Henry* Rann (Capell conj.). *Richard* Qq. *Husband* Ff.

44, 45 *too*] to Q₁.

45 *thou holp'st*] F₂F₃F₄. *thou hopst* Q₁ Q₂. *thou hop'st* F₁. *and thou holp'st* The rest.

46 *Thou...him.*] One line in Qq. Two in Ff. *and Richard*] Q₁Ff. *till Richard* The rest.

50 *blood*] FfQ₈. *blouds* Q₁Q₂. *bloods* The rest.

52, 53 *That...earth, That...souls,*] Capell. *That.....soules : That.....earth,* Ff. Omitted in Qq.

54 *chase*] *chafe* Q₈.

55 *true-disposing*] F₁F₂. *true disposing* The rest.

56 *that this*] for *this* Q₇Q₈.

Preys on the issue of his mother's body,
And makes her pew-fellow with others' moan!

Duch. O Harry's wife, triumph not in my woes!
God witness with me, I have wept for thine. 60

Q. Mar. Bear with me; I am hungry for revenge,
And now I cloy me with beholding it.
Thy Edward he is dead, that stabb'd my Edward;
Thy other Edward dead, to quit my Edward;
Young York he is but boot, because both they 65
Match not the high perfection of my loss:

Thy Clarence he is dead that kill'd my Edward;
And the beholders of this tragic play,
The adulterate Hastings, Rivers, Vaughan, Grey,
Untimely smother'd in their dusky graves. 70

Richard yet lives, hell's black intelligencer,
Only reserved their factor, to buy souls
And send them thither: but at hand, at hand,
Ensues his piteous and unpitied end:
Earth gapes, hell burns, fiends roar, saints pray, 75

58 *And...moan*] Omitted by Pope.

makes] *makes* Q₇Q₈.

pew-fellow] *pewfellow* Q₈. *puefellow*

Q₁Q₂. *pue-fellow* The rest.

59 *wife*] *wifes* Q₁.

60 *thine*] Q₁Ff. *thee* The rest.

63 *stabb'd*] Qq. *kill'd* Ff.

64 *Thy other*] Qq. *The other* Ff.

quit] *quite* Q₆.

my Edward] *my Henry Vaughan*
conj.

66 *Match*] Qq. *Match* F₁F₂. *Match'd*
F₃F₄.

67 *kill'd*] Qq. *stab'd* Ff.

68 *tragic play*] Qq. *franticks play* Ff.
tragic scene Capell conj.

69 *adulterate*] *adulterer* Warburton.

Vaughan] *Vaugham* Q₆.

70 *smother'd*] Ff. *smothered* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄
Q₆. *smothered* Q₈. *smothered* Q₇Q₈.

dusky] *dusty* Anon. conj.

71 *intelligencer*] *intelligence* S. Walker
conj.

72 *Only...to*] *Only reserved, their factor*
to Hunter conj.

their factor, to] Ff. *their factor to*
Qq. *the factor to* Hanmer.

73 *them*] *then* F₂.

at hand, at hand,] *at hand at handes,*
Q₁. *at hand,* Q₇Q₈.

75, 76 Seymour proposes to invert these
lines.

75 *Earth gapes*] *Earth gapes, heaven*
lovers Seymour conj.

hell burns] *hell burns, heaven weeps*
S. Walker conj.

hell] *hels* Q₆.

roar] *roar for him* Capell.

saints] *and saints* Wordsworth.
pray,] *pray for vengeance.* Pope.

To have him suddenly convey'd away.

Cancel his bond of life, dear God, I pray,
That I may live to say, The dog is dead!

Q. Eliz. O, thou didst prophesy the time would come
That I should wish for thee to help me curse 80
That bottled spider, that foul bunch-back'd toad!

Q. Mar. I call'd thee then vain flourish of my fortune;
I call'd thee then poor shadow, painted queen;
The presentation of but what I was;
The flattering index of a direful pageant; 85

One heaved a-high, to be hurl'd down below;
A mother only mock'd with two sweet babes;
A dream of what thou wert, a breath, a bubble,
A sign of dignity, a garish flag
To be the aim of every dangerous shot; 90
A queen in jest, only to fill the scene.

Where is thy husband now? where be thy brothers?
Where are thy children? wherein dost thou joy?
Who sues to thee, and cries 'God save the queen'?
Where be the bending peers that flattered thee? 95

76 *To have...away.*] Omitted by Pope.
convey'd away] *conveyed away* Qq
(*conueied* Q₁Q₂). *convey'd from hence*
Ff. *conveyed hence* Seymour conj.

77 *bond*] *bonds* Q₇Q₈
pray] *plead* Daniel conj.

78 *to say*] Qq. *and say* Ff.

79 *didst*] *didst* Q₄.

81 *bottled spider*] *bloated spider* Grey
conj. *bottel spider* Collier MS.
bunch-back'd] Ff. *bunch-backt* Q₁.
hunch-backt The rest.

82, 83 *call'd*] *call* Q₇.

84 *presentation*] *representation* F₃F₄.

85 *pageant*] *page* Warburton.

86 *a-high*] *a high* QqFf. *on high* Pope.

87, 88 Spedding would place these lines

after 90; reading lines 86—91 in
this order: 86, 89, 90, 87, 88, 91.

87 *only mock'd*] *onely mockt* FfQ₈.
onelis, mockt The rest.
sweet] Qq. *faire* Ff.

88 *what thou wert,*] *which thou wert* Q₁
Q₂. *which thou wert,* Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈.
what thou wast, Ff.

88—90 *a breath...shot;*] Qq. *a garish*
Flagge To be.....Shot; A signe of
Dignity, a Breath, a Bubble; Ff.

93 *are thy children*] Q₁Q₂. *be thy two*
Sonnes Ff. *be thy children* The
rest.

94 *to thee, and cries*] Qq (*me* Q₇). *and*
kneeles, and sayes, Ff.

95 *flattered*] QqFf. *flatter'd* Pope.

Where be the thronging troops that followed thee?
 Decline all this, and see what now thou art:
 For happy wife, a most distressed widow;
 For joyful mother, one that wails the name;
 For queen, a very caitiff crown'd with care; 100
 For one being sued to, one that humbly sues;
 For one that scorn'd at me, now scorn'd of me;
 For one being fear'd of all, now fearing one;
 For one commanding all, obey'd of none.
 Thus hath the course of justice wheel'd about, 105
 And left thee but a very prey to time;
 Having no more but thought of what thou wert,
 To torture thee the more, being what thou art.
 Thou didst usurp my place, and dost thou not
 Usurp the just proportion of my sorrow? 110
 Now thy proud neck bears half my burthen'd yoke;
 From which even here I slip my weary neck,
 And leave the burthen of it all on thee.
 Farewell, York's wife, and queen of sad mischance:
 These English woes will make me smile in France. 115

Q. Eliz. O thou well skill'd in curses, stay awhile,
 And teach me how to curse mine enemies!

Q. Mar. Forbear to sleep the nights, and fast the days;

- | | |
|---|--|
| 96 followed] QqFf. follow'd Pope. | Ff. |
| 100, 101 For queen...sues;] As in Qq. | 106 thee] me Q ₁ Q ₈ . |
| In Ff these two lines are transposed. | 107 wert] Q ₁ Q ₂ . wast Ff. art The rest. |
| 101 humbly] humble Q ₁ . | 109 not] now Hanmer. |
| 102—104 For...none.] Arranged as in Ff. In Qq line 103 is omitted, and lines 102, 104 are transposed. | 111 burthen'd] Ff. burdened Q ₈ . burthened The rest. |
| 102, 104 one] Qq. she Ff. | 112 weary neck] Q ₁ Q ₂ Q ₃ Q ₄ Q ₅ . wearied necks Q ₆ Q ₇ Q ₈ . wearied head Ff. |
| 103 For one] Pope. For she Ff. | 113 burthen] burden Johnson. |
| fear'd] Rowe. feared Ff. | 115 woes] wars Q ₄ . |
| fearing one] fearing all Dodd conj. | will] Qq. shall Ff. |
| 104 all, obey'd] all, obeyed Qq. all obey'd, F ₄ . | 118 nights...days] Q ₁ Q ₂ . night...day The rest. |
| 105 wheel'd] Qq (wh'eld Q ₁). whir'd. | |

Compare dead happiness with living woe;
 Think that thy babes were fairer than they were, 120
 And he that slew them fouler than he is:
 Bettering thy loss makes the bad causer worse:
 Revolving this will teach thee how to curse.

Q. Eliz. My words are dull; O, quicken them with
 thine!

Q. Mar. Thy woes will make them sharp and pierce
 like mine. [Exit,

Duch. Why should calamity be full of words? 126

Q. Eliz. Windy attorneys to their client woes,
 Airy succeeders of intestate joys,
 Poor breathing orators of miseries!
 Let them have scope: though what they do impart 130
 Help not at all, yet do they ease the heart.

Duch. If so, then be not tongue-tied: go with me,
 And in the breath of bitter words let's smother
 My damned son, which thy two sweet sons smother'd.
 I hear his drum: be copious in exclams. 135

119 *dead*] *deaths* Q₇Q₈.

120 *thy*] om. Q₄.

fairer] Qq. *sweeter* Ff.

122 *Bettering.....worse*] *Bettering thy
 loss, make the bad causer worse* or
 (*Bettering thy loss makes...worse*)
 Mason conj.

makes] *make* Q₇Q₈.

bad causer worse] *bad causes worse*

Q₄. *bad cause worse* Q₈. *bad-
 causer worse* Steevens (1793).

124 *words*] *word* F₂.

125 *Thy...mine.*] One line in Qq. Two
 in Ff.

[Exit.] Exit Margaret. Ff. Exit
 Mar. Qq, after line 126.

127 *their client*] Hanmer. *your Client*
 Qq. *their Clients* F₁F₂F₄. *their*

Clients F₂. *your client's* Pope.

client woes] *clients, woes* S. Walker
 conj.

128 *intestate*] Qq. *intestine* Ff.

130 *do*] Qq. *will* Ff.

131 *not at all*] Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₈. *nothing
 els* Ff. *not all* Q₇Q₈.

do they] *not doe they* Q₇. *they do*
 Rowe (ed. 2).

132 *If so, then*] *If so then*, F₁F₂F₃. *If
 so then* Q₈.

133 *smother*] *wither* Bailey conj.

134 *which*] Qq. *that* Ff.

sweet] om. Q₂Q₄Q₆Q₈Q₇Q₈.

[Drum within. Capell.

135 *I...drum*] Qq. *The Trumpet sounds*
 Ff.

(Sennet) Collier MS.

Enter KING RICHARD, marching, with drums and trumpets.

www.ibtool.com.cn

K. Rich. Who intercepts my expedition?

Duch. O, she that might have intercepted thee,
By strangling thee in her accursed womb,
From all the slaughters, wretch, that thou hast done!

Q. Eliz. Hidest thou that forehead with a golden
crown, 140

Where should be graven, if that right were right,
The slaughter of the prince that owed that crown,
And the dire death of my two sons and brothers?
Tell me, thou villain slave, where are my children?

Duch. Thou toad, thou toad, where is thy brother
Clarence? 145

And little Ned Plantagenet, his son?

Q. Eliz. Where is kind Hastings, Rivers, Vaughan,
Grey?

K. Rich. A flourish, trumpets! strike alarum, drums!
Let not the heavens hear these tell-tale women
Rail on the Lord's anointed: strike, I say! 150

[*Flourish. Alarums.*]

Either be patient, and entreat me fair,

136 SCENE V. Pope.

marching.....trumpets.] Qq. and
his Traine. Ff.
my] Qq. *me in my* Ff.

137 *O, she*] *O she*, Ff. *A she*, Qq.

140 *Hidest*] *Had'st* Q₇. *Hast* Q₈.

141 *Where...right,*] Qq (*Where would*
..... Q₄). *Where't should be brand-*
ed...right? Ff. *Where...branded*
...right, Rowe (ed. 2).

141, 142 *Where...The slaughter*] *Where't*
...For slaughter Collier MS.

143 *two*] Qq. *poore* Ff.

145 *Thou...Clarence?*] One line in Qq.
Two in Ff.

146 *Plantagenet*] *Plantaget* Q₃Q₄Q₆.

147 *Q. Eliz. Where is kind Hastings,*
Rivers,] *Where is kind Hastings?*

Q. Eliz. Rivers? Vaughan conj.,
continuing the speech of the
Duchess.

Where is kind Hastings,...Grey?] Qq.
Where is the gentle Rivers,
Vaughan, Gray? Dut. *Where is*
kinde Hastings? Ff.

150 *on*] one Q₇.

[*Flourish. Alarums.*] Ff. The trum-
pets Q₁. The trumpets sound. Q₂
Q₆. The trumpets sounds. The rest.

Or with the clamorous report of war
Thus will I drown your exclamations.

Duch. Art thou my son?

K. Rich. Ay, I thank God, my father, and yourself.

Duch. Then patiently hear my impatience. 156

K. Rich. Madam, I have a touch of your condition,
Which cannot brook the accent of reproof.

Duch. O, let me speak!

K. Rich. Do then; but I'll not hear.

Duch. I will be mild and gentle in my speech. 160

K. Rich. And brief, good mother; for I am in haste.

Duch. Art thou so hasty? I have stay'd for thee,
God knows, in anguish, pain and agony.

K. Rich. And came I not at last to comfort you?

Duch. No, by the holy rood, thou know'st it well, 165
Thou camest on earth to make the earth my hell.

A grievous burthen was thy birth to me;

Tetchy and wayward was thy infancy;

Thy school-days frightful, desperate, wild, and furious,

Thy prime of manhood daring, bold, and venturous, 170

Thy age confirm'd, proud, subtle, bloody, treacherous;

More mild, but yet more harmful, kind in hatred:

What comfortable hour canst thou name,

That ever graced me in thy company?

152 *report*] *reports* Q₁Q₆F₃F₄.

153 *drown*] *drownd* Q₈.

155 *Ay, I*] Rowe. *I, I* QqFf.

156 *hear*] F₂F₄. *here* Q₁. *heare* The
rest. *hear* Collier MS.

158 *Which*] Qq. *That* Ff.

159 *Duch. O, let...* *K. Rich. Do,...hear.*
Ff. Omitted in Qq.

160 *speech*] Qq. *words* Ff.

162 *have stay'd*] *once stay'd* Collier MS.

163 *anguish, pain and agony*] Qq. *tor-*

ment and in agony Ff.

167 *burthen*] *burden* Johnson.

170 *Thy prime...venturous,*] Q₁Q₂Ff.
Omitted in the rest.

171 *bloody, treacherous*] Qq. *slye, and
bloody* Ff.

172 *More mild.....hatred:*] Ff. Omit-
ted in Qq.

harmful, kind] *harmfull*; *Kinde* Ff.

harmful-kind S. Walker conj.

174 *in*] Qq. *with* Ff.

K. Rich. Faith, none, but Humphrey Hour, that call'd
 your grace 175
 To breakfast once forth of my company.
 If I be so disgracious in your sight,
 Let me march on, and not offend your grace.
 Strike up the drum.

Duch. I prithee, hear me speak.

K. Rich. You speak too bitterly.

Duch. Hear me a word; 180
 For I shall never speak to thee again.

K. Rich. So.

Duch. Either thou wilt die, by God's just ordinance,
 Ere from this war thou turn a conqueror,
 Or I with grief and extreme age shall perish 185
 And never look upon thy face again.
 Therefore take with thee my most heavy curse;
 Which, in the day of battle, tire thee more
 Than all the complete armour that thou wear'st!
 My prayers on the adverse party fight; 190
 And there the little souls of Edward's children
 Whisper the spirits of thine enemies,

175, 176 *Faith...company.*] Put in the margin by Pope.

175 *Faith...grace*] One line in Qq. Two, the first ending *Hower*, in Ff. *Humphrey Hour*] *Humpy's hour* Jackson conj. *th' hungry hour* Kinnear conj.

Humphrey] *Humphreys* Q₈.

176 *breakfast*] *breaks fast* Q₁. *my*] om. Q₄.

177 *I*] Q₁Ff. *it* The rest. *disgracious*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *gracious* Q₈. Q₄Q₆Q₇. *grievous* Q₈. *sight*] Qq. *eye* Ff.

178 *your grace*] Qq. *you Madam* Ff.

179 *Strike up the drum.*] Ff. Omitted

in Qq.

179—182 *Duch. I prithee.....K. Rich. So.*] Ff. *Du. O heare me speake for I shal neuer see thee more.* King. *Come, come, you are too bitter.* Qq. (*the more* Q₂Q₃Q₄. *you art* Q₁).

Pope reads with Qq, omitting *more*.

183 *thou wilt*] *thou'lt* Pope.

184 *Ere*] *Eare* Q₁.

this] *his* Q₇.

185 *and*] or Johnson (1771).

186 *look upon*] Qq. *more behold* Ff.

187 *heavy*] Qq. *grievous* Ff.

191 *Edward's*] *Edward* Q₂.

192 *spirits*] *spirit* Q₄.

And promise them success and victory.

Bloody thou art, bloody will be thy end ;

Shame serves thy life and doth thy death attend. [*Exit.*

Q. Eliz. Though far more cause, yet much less spirit
to curse 196

Abides in me ; I say amen to all.

K. Rich. Stay, madam ; I must speak a word with you.

Q. Eliz. I have no more sons of the royal blood
For thee to murder : for my daughters, Richard, 200
They shall be praying nuns, not weeping queens ;
And therefore level not to hit their lives.

K. Rich. You have a daughter call'd Elizabeth,
Virtuous and fair, royal and gracious.

Q. Eliz. And must she die for this ? O, let her live,
And I'll corrupt her manners, stain her beauty ; 206
Slander myself as false to Edward's bed ;
Throw over her the veil of infamy :

So she may live unscarr'd of bleeding slaughter,
I will confess she was not Edward's daughter. 210

K. Rich. Wrong not her birth, she is of royal blood.

Q. Eliz. To save her life, I'll say she is not so.

K. Rich. Her life is only safest in her birth.

Q. Eliz. And only in that safety died her brothers.

K. Rich. Lo, at their births good stars were op-
posite. 215

193 *and victory]* in *victory* Q₇Q₈.

194 *art,]* *art, and* Q₆Q₇Q₈.
be] by Q₈.

197 *all]* Qq. *her* Ff.
[going. Theobald.

198 *speak]* Qq. *talke* Ff.

199 *more]* Q₁. *more* The rest.

200 *murder: for]* Steevens. *murther:*
for Capell. *murther for* Q₁. *mur-*
ther, for The other Quartos. *slaugh-*
ter. For Ff.

208 *veil]* *vale* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅.

209 *unscarr'd of]* Ff. *vnscard from*
Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄. *vn scard from* Q₅.
vnscarde from Q₆Q₇. *vnscard from*
Q₈.

211 *of royal blood]* Qq. *a Royall*
Princesse Ff.

213 *only safest]* Qq. *safest onely* Ff.

215 *Lo,]* *No,* Pope.
births] Qq. *Birth* Ff.
were] are Q₇Q₈.

Q. Eliz. No, to their lives bad friends were contrary.

K. Rich. All unavoided is the doom of destiny.

Q. Eliz. True, when avoided grace makes destiny:

My babes were destined to a fairer death,
If grace had bless'd thee with a fairer life. 220

K. Rich. You speak as if that I had slain my cousins.

Q. Eliz. Cousins, indeed; and by their uncle cozen'd
Of comfort, kingdom, kindred, freedom, life.
Whose hand soever lanced their tender hearts,
Thy head, all indirectly, gave direction: 225

No doubt the murderous knife was dull and blunt,
Till it was whetted on thy stone-hard heart,
To revel in the entrails of my lambs.
But that still use of grief makes wild grief tame,
My tongue should to thy ears not name my boys, 230
Till that my nails were anchor'd in thine eyes;

And I, in such a desperate bay of death,
Like a poor bark, of sails and tackling reft,
Rush all to pieces on thy rocky bosom.

K. Rich. Madam, so thrive I in my enterprise, 235
And dangerous success of bloody wars,
As I intend more good to you and yours,
Than ever you or yours were by me wrong'd!

Q. Eliz. What good is cover'd with the face of heaven,
To be discover'd, that can do me good? 240

216 *bad*] *Qq. ill Ff.*

221—234 *K. Rich. You...bosom.*] *Ff.*
Omitted in *Qq.*

221 *cousins.*] *Capell. Cosins? F₁F₂.*
Cousins? F₃F₄.

222, 223 *Cousins,...life.*] Omitted by
Pope.

224 *hand*] *hands Steevens.*

lanced] *Rowe (ed. 2). lanch'd Ff.*

226 *murderous*] *murd'rous Ff. mur-*
th'rous Capell.

235, 236 *enterprise, And.....wars*] *Ff.*
dangerous attempt of hostile armes
Qq.

237 *I intend*] *Intend Q₆. intend Q₇.*

238 *or yours*] *Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆. and yours*
Q₆Ff Q₇Q₈.
were by me wrong'd] *Qq. by me*
were harm'd Ff.

240 *discover'd*] *discovered Q₆Ff Q₇Q₈.*
good?] *Q₃Q₄F₁F₃F₄. good, Q₁.*
good. The rest.

K. Rich. The advancement of your children, gentle lady.

Q. Eliz. Up to some scaffold, there to lose their heads?

K. Rich. No, to the dignity and height of honour,
The high imperial type of this earth's glory.

Q. Eliz. Flatter my sorrows with report of it; 245
Tell me what state, what dignity, what honour,
Canst thou demise to any child of mine?

K. Rich. Even all I have; yea, and myself and all,
Will I withal endow a child of thine;
So in the Lethe of thy angry soul 250
Thou drown the sad remembrance of those wrongs,
Which thou supposest I have done to thee.

Q. Eliz. Be brief, lest that the process of thy kindness
Last longer telling than thy kindness' date.

K. Rich. Then know, that from my soul I love thy
daughter. 255

Q. Eliz. My daughter's mother thinks it with her soul.

K. Rich. What do you think?

Q. Eliz. That thou dost love my daughter from thy
soul:

So from thy soul's love didst thou love her brothers;
And from my heart's love I do thank thee for it. 260

K. Rich. Be not so hasty to confound my meaning:
I mean, that with my soul I love thy daughter,

241 *gentle*] Ff. *mightie* Qq.

242 *lose*] Ff. *loose* Qq.

243 *No, to*] Qq. *Vnto* Ff.
honour] Qq. *Fortunes* Ff.

244 *high*] Q₁Ff. *height* Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₈.
hight Q₇.

245 *sorrows*] Qq. *sorrow* Ff.

247 *demise*] QqF₁. *devise* F₂F₃F₄.

248 *yea, and*] *yea and* Qq. *I, and* Ff.

249 *withal*] om. Q₇Q₈.

251 *drown*] *drownd* Q₈.

254 *kindness' date*] Capell. *kindnesse*

date Ff. *kindnes doe* Q₁. *kindnesse*
doo The rest. *kindness doth* Heath
conj.

255 *Then...daughter.*] One line in Qq.
Two, the first ending *know*, in Ff.
thy] *my* Q₈.

259 *soul's love didst thou love her*] Q₁Ff.
soules loue didst thou her Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅.
soule didst thou loue her Q₆Q₇Q₈.

260 *my*] *thy* F₄.

do] om. Q₇Q₈.

And mean to make her queen of England.

Q. Eliz. Say then, who dost thou mean shall be her king?

K. Rich. Even he that makes her queen: who should be else? 265

Q. Eliz. What, thou?

K. Rich. I, even I: what think you of it, madam?

Q. Eliz. How canst thou woo her?

K. Rich. That would I learn of you, As one that are best acquainted with her humour.

Q. Eliz. And wilt thou learn of me?

K. Rich. Madam, with all my heart.

Q. Eliz. Send to her, by the man that slew her brothers, 271

A pair of bleeding hearts; thereon engrave Edward and York; then haply she will weep: Therefore present to her,—as sometime Margaret Did to thy father, steep'd in Rutland's blood,— 275 A handkerchief; which, say to her, did drain The purple sap from her sweet brother's body,

263 mean] Qq. *do intend* Ff.

264 Say then] Qq. *Well then* Ff. *king?* Qq. *King.* Ff.

265 Even...else? One line in Qq. Two in Ff.

who should be else? Q₁. *who should else?* Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈. *how should else?* Q₅. *Who else should bee?* Ff.

267 I, even I.....madam?] Qq. *Even so: How thinks you of it?* Ff. *I, even I*] *Even I* Capell. *Ay, even I* Malone conj. *Even so: What... madam?* Steevens (1793).

268 That] om. Pope. *would I*] Q₁Q₂. *I would* The rest.

269 that are] Q₁Q₂. *that were* Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈. *being* Ff.

270 Madam,] om. Pope.

272 engrave] *engraven* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

273 haply] Ff. *happellie* Q₁Q₂. *happily* The rest.

she will] Qq. *will she* Ff.

274 sometime] *sometimes* Q₁Q₂Q₇Q₈.

275 thy] my Q₈.

275, 276 steep'd....A handkerchief] Ff. *a handkercher steeped in Rutlands blood* Qq. (*handkercheffe* Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈).

276, 277 which...body,] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

277 sap] *tide* Pope. *brother's body*] Capell. *brothers body* Ff. *brothers bodies* Rowe. *brothers' bodies* Warburton.

And bid her dry her weeping eyes therewith.
 If this inducement force her not to love,
 Send her a story of thy noble acts ; 280
 Tell her thou madest away her uncle Clarence,
 Her uncle Rivers ; yea, and, for her sake,
 Madest quick conveyance with her good aunt Anne.

K. Rich. Come, come, you mock me ; this is not the
 way
 To win your daughter.

Q. Eliz. . There is no other way ; 285
 Unless thou couldst put on some other shape,
 And not be Richard that hath done all this.

K. Rich. Say that I did all this for love of her.

Q. Eliz. Nay, then indeed she cannot choose but hate
 thee,

Having bought love with such a bloody spoil. 290

K. Rich. Look, what is done cannot be now amended :
 Men shall deal unadvisedly sometimes,
 Which after-hours give leisure to repent.
 If I did take the kingdom from your sons,
 To make amends, I'll give it to your daughter. 295
 If I have kill'd the issue of your womb,
 To quicken your increase, I will beget
 Mine issue of your blood upon your daughter :
 A grandam's name is little less in love

278 *dry*] Qq. *wipe* Ff.

therewith] Qq. *withall* Ff.

279 *force*] Qq. *moue* Ff.

280 *story...acts*] Qq. *Letter...deeds* Ff.

282 *yea, and*] Qq. *I (and* Ff. *ay, and*
Rowe.

284 *Come, come, you mock me ;*] Qq (*ye*
*Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈). *You mocke me*
Madam, Ff.*

is] om. F₁.

285 *There is*] *There's* Pope.

288—342 *K. Rich. Say...years ?*] Ff.
 Omitted in Qq.

288 *her.*] *her ?* Capell.

289 *hate*] *have* Steevens, 1793 (Mason
 conj.). *love* Grant White (Tyrwhitt
 conj.). *take* Jervis conj.

290 *bought*] *brought* Pope.

293 *give*] Rowe. *gives* Ff.

repent] *repent of* Rowe.

Than is the doting title of a mother; 300
 They are as children but one step below,
 Even of your mettle, of your very blood;
 Of all one pain, save for a night of groans
 Endured of her, for whom you bid like sorrow.
 Your children were vexation to your youth, 305
 But mine shall be a comfort to your age.
 The loss you have is but a son being king,
 And by that loss your daughter is made queen.
 I cannot make you what amends I would,
 Therefore accept such kindness as I can. 310
 Dorset your son, that with a fearful soul
 Leads discontented steps in foreign soil,
 This fair alliance quickly shall call home
 To high promotions and great dignity:
 The king, that calls your beauteous daughter wife, 315
 Familiarly shall call thy Dorset brother;
 Again shall you be mother to a king,
 And all the ruins of distressful times
 Repair'd with double riches of content.
 What! we have many goodly days to see: 320
 The liquid drops of tears that you have shed
 Shall come again, transform'd to orient pearl,
 Advantaging their loan with interest
 Of ten times double gain of happiness.
 Go then, my mother, to thy daughter go; 325
 Make bold her bashful years with your experience;
 Prepare her ears to hear a wooer's tale;

302 *mettle*] F₃. *mettall* F₁F₂. *metal* F₄.

304 *bid*] 'bid Capell (Heath conj.). *had* Long MS.

312 *Leads*] *Treads* Collier, ed. 2 (Capell conj.).

323 *loan*] Theobald. *Lous*, F₁. *Love*, F₂F₃. *love* F₄.

324 *Of ten times*] Theobald. *Oftentimes* Ff.

326 *her*] *your* F₄.

Put in her tender heart the aspiring flame
 Of golden sovereignty; acquaint the princess
 With the sweet silent hours of marriage joys : 330
 And when this arm of mine hath chastised
 The petty rebel, dull-brain'd Buckingham,
 Bound with triumphant garlands will I come,
 And lead thy daughter to a conqueror's bed ;
 To whom I will retail my conquest won, 335
 And she shall be sole victress, Cæsar's Cæsar.

Q. Eliz. What were I best to say? her father's brother
 Would be her lord? or shall I say, her uncle?
 Or, he that slew her brothers and her uncles?
 Under what title shall I woo for thee, 340
 That God, the law, my honour and her love,
 Can make seem pleasing to her tender years?

K. Rich. Infer fair England's peace by this alliance.

Q. Eliz. Which she shall purchase with still lasting
 war.

K. Rich. Say that the king, which may command,
 entreats. 345

Q. Eliz. That at her hands which the king's King
 forbids.

K. Rich. Say, she shall be a high and mighty queen.

Q. Eliz. To wail the title, as her mother doth.

K. Rich. Say, I will love her everlastingly.

Q. Eliz. But how long shall that title 'ever' last? 350

K. Rich. Sweetly in force unto her fair life's end.

333 *garlands*] *laurels* Capell.

336 *victress*] *F*₄. *Victoress* *F*₁*F*₂*F*₃.

339 *brothers*] *Brothers*? *F*₃*F*₄.

343 *this*] *his* *Q*₆*Q*₇*Q*₈.

345 *Say that...which*] *Q*_q. *Tell her...*
that *Ff*.

346 *forbids*] *Q*₁*Ff*. *forbid* The rest.

348 *wail*] *Q*_q. *vaile* *F*₁*F*₂*F*₃. *vail* *F*₄.

350 *title*] *titile* Roderick conj.

ever] om. *Q*₈.

351 *in force*] *Ff*. *inforce* *Q*_q.

life's] Rowe. *lyues* *Q*₁. *liues* or
lives The rest.

- Q. *Eliz.* But how long fairly shall her sweet life last?
 K. *Rich.* So long as heaven and nature lengthens it.
 Q. *Eliz.* So long as hell and Richard likes of it.
 K. *Rich.* Say, I, her sovereign, am her subject love. 355
 Q. *Eliz.* But she, your subject, loathes such sovereignty.
 K. *Rich.* Be eloquent in my behalf to her.
 Q. *Eliz.* An honest tale speeds best being plainly told.
 K. *Rich.* Then in plain terms tell her my loving tale.
 Q. *Eliz.* Plain and not honest is too harsh a style. 360
 K. *Rich.* Your reasons are too shallow and too quick.
 Q. *Eliz.* O no, my reasons are too deep and dead;
 Too deep and dead, poor infants, in their grave.
 K. *Rich.* Harp not on that string, madam; that is past.
 Q. *Eliz.* Harp on it still shall I till heart-strings break.
 K. *Rich.* Now, by my George, my garter, and my
 crown,— 366
 Q. *Eliz.* Profaned, dishonour'd, and the third usurp'd.
 K. *Rich.* I swear—
 Q. *Eliz.* By nothing; for this is no oath:
 The George, profaned, hath lost his holy honour;
 The garter, blemish'd, pawn'd his knightly virtue; 370
 The crown, usurp'd, disgraced his kingly glory.

352 *her sweet life*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *that title*
 The rest.
 353, 354 *So long.....So long*] Qq. *As*
long...As long Ff.
 353 *lengthens*] *lengthen* Pope.
 354 *likes*] *like* Pope.
 355 *love*] Qq. *low* Ff. *now* Pope.
 359 *in plain terms tell her*] Qq. *plainly*
to her, tell Ff.
 361 *Your*] Ff. *Madame your* Qq.
 362—365 Q. *Eliz.* *O no,...break.*] Put
 in the margin by Pope.
 362 *my*] *your* Rann.
 363 *Too deep*] *To deep* Rowe (ed. 2).

Two deep F₄.
their grave] Qq. *their graves* Ff.
your graves Capell.
 364, 365 K. *Rich.* *Harp.....past.* Q.
Eliz. *Harp...break.*] As in Q₁. See
 note (xix).
 367 *usurp'd*] *usurped* Qq.
 368 *I swear—*] *I swear.* Ff. *I swear*
by nothing. Qq.
 369, 370, 371. *The...The...The*] Qq.
Thy...Thy...Thy Ff.
 369 *holy*] Qq. *Lordly* Ff.
 370 *knightly*] QqF₁. *Kingly* F₂F₃F₄.
 371 *glory*] Ff. *dignitie* Qq.

If something thou wilt swear to be believed,
Swear then by something that thou hast not wrong'd.

K. Rich. Now, by the world—

Q. Eliz. 'Tis full of thy foul wrongs.

K. Rich. My father's death—

Q. Eliz. Thy life hath that dishonour'd.

K. Rich. Then, by myself—

Q. Eliz. Thyself thyself misusest. 376

K. Rich. Why then, by God—

Q. Eliz. God's wrong is most of all.

If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by Him,
The unity the king thy brother made
Had not been broken, nor my brother slain: 380
If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by Him,
The imperial metal, circling now thy brow,
Had graced the tender temples of my child,
And both the princes had been breathing here,
Which now, two tender playfellows for dust, 385
Thy broken faith hath made a prey for worms.

372 *something thou wilt*] *something thou wouldst* Ff. *nothing thou wilt* Q₇ Q₈

375 *life*] Q₁Q₂Ff. *selfe* The rest. *that*] Qq. *it* Ff.

376 *K. Rich. Then.....misusest.*] Qq. This line is placed after *not wrong'd*, l. 373, in Ff. *Thyself thyself misusest*] *Thy Selfe, is selfe-misus'd* Ff. *Thy selfe, thy selfe misused* Q₈.

377 *God—...God's*] Qq. *Heaven.... Heavens* Ff. *Heaven—...God's* Malone.

378 *hadst fear'd*] Qq. *didst feare* Ff. *by Him*] *by him* Qq. *with him* Ff. *with heav'n* Pope.

379 *thy brother*] Q₁Q₈. *my husband* Ff.

my brother The rest.

380 *Had not been*] Qq. *Thou hadst not* Ff.

brother slain] Qq. *Brothers died* Ff.

381 *by Him*] *by him* QqFf. *with heav'n* Pope.

382 *thy brow*] *thy head* Ff. *my brow* Q₈.

383 *graced*] *grac'd* Ff. *grast* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄ Q₈. *gract* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

385 *two...for*] *are tender bedfellowes* in Long MS. *too tender bed-fellows* for Capell (Roderick conj.).

playfellows] Qq. *Bed-fellows* Ff.

386 *hath*] *had* Q₈.

a prey for] Qq. *the prey for* Ff. *a prey to* Pope.

worms] *worme* Q₈.

What canst thou swear by now?

K. Rich. The time to come.

Q. Eliz. That thou hast wronged in the time o'erpast ;
For I myself have many tears to wash
Hereafter time, for time past wrong'd by thee. 390
The children live, whose parents thou hast slaughter'd,
Ungovern'd youth, to wail it in their age ;
The parents live, whose children thou hast butcher'd,
Old withered plants, to wail it with their age.
Swear not by time to come ; for that thou hast 395
Misused ere used, by time misused o'erpast.

K. Rich. As I intend to prosper and repent,
So thrive I in my dangerous attempt
Of hostile arms ! myself myself confound !
Heaven and fortune bar me happy hours ! 400
Day, yield me not thy light ; nor, night, thy rest !
Be opposite all planets of good luck
To my proceedings, if, with pure heart's love,
Immaculate devotion, holy thoughts,
I tender not thy beauteous princely daughter ! 405

- 387 *What...now ?*] Ff. Omitted in Qq *plants*] *plaints* Q₆.
and Pope. *with*] in Pope.
The time] Ff. *By the time* Qq. *By* 395, 396 *Swear.....o'erpast.*] Put in the
time Pope. margin by Pope.
- 388 *wronged in the time*] Ff. *wrongd* 396 *ere*] *ere* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₆. *ners* Q₄.
in time Qq. *time misused o'erpast*] Qq. *times*
390 *time, for time*] Ff. *time, for time,* *ill-vs'd repast* Ff. *times ill-us'd*
Q₁Q₂. *time for time,* The rest. *o'erpast* Rowe.
- 398 *attempt*] Qq. *Affayres* Ff.
399 *past wrong'd by thee*] Ff. *by the* 400 *Heaven...hours ?*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.
past wrongd Qq (*thee* Q₆Q₆). *Heaven*] *So heaven* Keightley conj.
- 391 *parents*] Qq. *Fathers* Ff. 401 *light ;*] *light ?* F₂F₃F₄.
- 392 *in their*] Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄. *with their* Q₅ 403 *proceedings*] Ff. *proceeding* Ff.
Ff. *with her* Q₆Q₇Q₈. *in her* quoted *pure*] Qq. *deere* Ff.
- 393 *butcher'd*] *butchered* Q₇Q₈. 404 *Immaculate*] Q₁Ff. *Immaculatd*
405 *withered*] Qq. *barren* Ff. *wither'd* 405 *tender*] Q₁Q₂Q₄FfQ₈. *render* The
Pope. rest.

In her consists my happiness and thine ;
 Without her, follows to this land and me,
 To thee, herself, and many a Christian soul,
 Death, desolation, ruin and decay :
 It cannot be avoided but by this ; 410
 It will not be avoided but by this.

Therefore, good mother,—I must call you so—
 Be the attorney of my love to her :
 Plead what I will be, not what I have been ;
 Not my deserts, but what I will deserve : 415
 Urge the necessity and state of times,
 And be not peevish-fond in great designs.

Q. Eliz. Shall I be tempted of the devil thus ?

K. Rich. Ay, if the devil tempt thee to do good.

Q. Eliz. Shall I forget myself to be myself ? 420

K. Rich. Ay, if yourself's remembrance wrong yourself.

Q. Eliz. But thou didst kill my children.

K. Rich. But in your daughter's womb I bury them :
 Where in that nest of spicery they shall breed
 Selves of themselves, to your recomforture. 425

Q. Eliz. Shall I go win my daughter to thy will ?

407, 408 *this land...herself*] *Qq. my selfe, and thee; Her selfe, the Land*
Ff.

409 *Death, desolation*] *Ff. Sad desolation*
Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆. Sad desolate
Q₇Q₈

411 *by*] *om. Q₁.*

412 *good*] *Qq. deare Ff.*

415 *my*] *Ff. by Qq.*

deserts] *desires F₄.*

416 *and state of*] *of state and Collier*
MS.

417 *peevish-fond*] *Staunton (Malone*
conj.). peevish, fond Q₁. peevish,
fond Q₂. peevish fond Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇
Q₈. peevish found Ff.

418 *thus ?*] *thus. Q₁.*

419, 421 *Ay*] *Rowe. I QqFf.*

419 *thee*] *Qq. you Ff.*

420 *myself ?*] *my selfe. Q₁Q₂.*

421 *yourself*] *your selues Q₈.*

422 *But*] *Qq. Yet Ff.*

my children.] my harmless children.

S. Walker conj. my children, didst

thou not ? Anon. conj.

423 *I bury*] *I burie Q₃Ff. I buried*

Q₁Q₂. Ile burie Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈.

424 *Where in*] *Wherein Q₇Q₈.*

they shall] *Q₁Q₂. there shall Q₃Q₄*

Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈. they will Ff.

425 *Selves*] *Ff. Selves Qq.*

recomforture] *Ff. recomfiture Qq.*

K. Rich. And be a happy mother by the deed.

Q. Eliz. I go. Write to me very shortly,
And you shall understand from me her mind.

K. Rich. Bear her my true love's kiss; and so,
farewell. [Exit Queen Elizabeth. 430
Relenting fool, and shallow, changing woman!

Enter RATOLIFF; CATESBY following.

How now! what news?

Rat. My gracious sovereign, on the western coast
Rideth a puissant navy; to the shore
Throng many doubtful hollow-hearted friends, 435
Unarm'd, and unresolved to beat them back:
'Tis thought that Richmond is their admiral;
And there they hull, expecting but the aid
Of Buckingham to welcome them ashore.

K. Rich. Some light-foot friend post to the Duke of
Norfolk: 440
Ratcliff, thyself, or Catesby; where is he?

Cate. Here, my lord.

K. Rich. Fly to the duke. [To Ratcliff] Post thou to
Salisbury:

427 *by the deed*] *in the deed* Q₇Q₈.

428 *to me*] *to me, Richard*, Collier, ed. 2
(Collier MS.).

very] om. Pope.

429 *And...mind.*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

430 *and so*] Ff. om. Qq.

[Kissing her. Johnson.

[Exit.....] Exit. or Exit Qu. Qq.

Exit Q. or Qu. Ff, after line 429.

431 *shallow, changing woman*] *shallow
changing woman* Qq. *shallow-
changing woman* Ff. *shallow,
changing—woman* Capell.

432 *Enter...*] Capell. *Enter Rat.* Qq.

Enter Ratcliffe. Ff (after *news!*).

How...news?] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

433 SCENE VI. Pope.

My gracious] Qq. *Most mightie*
Ff.

434 *Rideth*] *Rides* F₄.

the shore] Qq. *our Shores* Ff.

438 *they*] *thy* Q₂.

440 *Norfolk*] *Norff.* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅.

441 [Enter Catesby. Collier MS.

442 *my lord*] Qq. *my good Lord* Ff.

443 *Fly...Salisbury:*] See note (xx).

[To Ratcliff] Edd.

When thou comest thither,— [To Catesby] Dull unmindful
villain,

Why stand'st thou still, and go'st not to the duke? 445

Cate. First, mighty sovereign, let me know your mind,
What from your grace I shall deliver to him.

K. Rich. O, true, good Catesby: bid him levy straight
The greatest strength and power he can make,
And meet me presently at Salisbury. 450

Cate. I go. [Exit.

Rat. What is't your highness' pleasure I shall do
At Salisbury?

K. Rich. Why, what wouldst thou do there before I
go?

Rat. Your highness told me I should post before. 455

K. Rich. My mind is changed, sir, my mind is changed.

Enter LORD STANLEY.

How now, what news with you?

Stan. None good, my lord, to please you with the
hearing;

Nor none so bad, but it may well be told.

444 *thither*] Ff. *there* Qq.

[To Catesby] Rowe.

445 *stand'st.....still*] Qq (*stands* Q₄Q₇).
stay'st...here Ff.

446 *sovereign.....mind*] Qq. *Liege, tell
me your Highnesses pleasure* Ff.

4-17 *to him*] Ff. *them* Q₁Q₂. *him* The
rest.

449 *he*] Qq. *that he* Ff.

450 *presently*] Qq. *suddenly* Ff.

451 *Cate. I go.*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

[Exit.] Ff. om. Qq.

452, 453 *What...Salisbury?*] Edd. One
line in Qq. *What, may it please
you, shall I doe at Salisbury?* Ff.

452 *is't*] Edd. *is it* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄. *it is*

Q₅. *is* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

453 *Salisbury?*] *Salisbury*, Q₁. *Salis-
bury?* Q₂. *Salisbury* Q₃Q₄. *Salis-
bury.* F₃F₄.

456, 457 *My mind.....you?*] Qq. *My
minde is chang'd: Stanley, what
newes with you?* Ff.

457 *Enter* Lord Stanley.] Ff. *Enter
Darbie.* Qq.

458 *None good, my lord*] *None good my
Lord* Qq. *None, good my Liege*
F₁F₂F₃. *None good, my Liege* F₄.
the] om. Q₇Q₈.

459 *it...told*] Qq. *well may be reported*
Ff.

K. Rich. Hoyday, a riddle! neither good nor bad! 460
Why dost thou run so many mile about,
When thou mayst tell thy tale a nearer way?
Once more, what news?

Stan. Richmond is on the seas.

K. Rich. There let him sink, and be the seas on him!
White-liver'd runagate, what doth he there? 465

Stan. I know not, mighty sovereign, but by guess.

K. Rich. Well, sir, as you guess, as you guess?

Stan. Stirr'd up by Dorset, Buckingham, and Ely,
He makes for England, there to claim the crown.

K. Rich. Is the chair empty? is the sword unsway'd?
Is the king dead? the empire unpossess'd? 471
What heir of York is there alive but we?

And who is England's king but great York's heir?
Then, tell me, what doth he upon the sea?

Stan. Unless for that, my liege, I cannot guess. 475

K. Rich. Unless for that he comes to be your liege,
You cannot guess wherefore the Welshman comes.
Thou wilt revolt and fly to him, I fear.

Stan. No, mighty liege; therefore mistrust me not.

K. Rich. Where is thy power then to beat him back?
Where are thy tenants and thy followers? 481

460 *Hoyday*] *Heyday* Pope.
riddle! neither] Theobald. *riddle*
neither Q₇Q₈F₄. *riddle, neither* The
rest.

461 *Why dost*] Qq. *What need'st* Ff.
mile] miles Ff Q₇Q₈.

462 *a nearer*] Qq. *the nearest* Ff.
way] Ff. *way*. Q₁Q₂. *way*, Therest.

467 *Well...guess*] *Well...guesse*. Q₁Q₂
Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₈ (*sir*? Q₄). *Well, as you*
guesse. Ff. *Well, sir, as you guesse*,
Q₇. *Well, sir, as you guesse*. Q₈.
Well, as you guess? Capell.

468 *Ely*] Qq. *Morton* Ff.

469 *there*] Qq. *here* Ff.

474 *doth he*] *makes he* Ff. *makes him*
Hanmer.
sea] *Seas* Ff Q₈.

475 *guess*] *guess*— Hunter conj.

477 *Welshman*] *Welchmen* Q₇Q₈.
comes] *comes*? Staunton.

479 *mighty liege*] Qq. *my good Lord*
Ff.

480 *then...back*] *then*?...backe. Q₁.
then] *now* Q₇Q₈.
him] *them* Q₈.

481 *are*] Qq. *be* Ff.
tenants] *tennants*? Q₁.

Are they not now upon the western shore,
Safe-conducting the rebels from their ships?

Stan. No, my good lord, my friends are in the north.

K. Rich. Cold friends to Richard: what do they in
the north, 485

When they should serve their sovereign in the west?

Stan. They have not been commanded, mighty so-
vereign:-

Please it your majesty to give me leave,

I'll muster up my friends, and meet your grace

Where and what time your majesty shall please. 490

K. Rich. Ay, ay, thou wouldst be gone to join with
Richmond:

I will not trust you, sir.

Stan. Most mighty sovereign,

You have no cause to hold my friendship doubtful:

I never was nor never will be false.

K. Rich. Well, 495

Go muster men; but, hear you, leave behind

Your son, George Stanley: look your faith be firm,

Or else his head's assurance is but frail.

Stan. So deal with him as I prove true to you. [*Exit.*]

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. My gracious sovereign, now in Devonshire, 500

483 *Safe-conducting]* *Conducting safe*
Pope.

485 *Richard]* Qq. *me* Ff.

487 *been]* bin Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆.
sovereign] Qq. *King* Ff.

488 *Please it]* Qq. *Pleaseth* Ff.

491 *Ay, ay, thou wouldst]* I, I, thou
wouldst Qq (*wouldst* Q₁). *I, thou*
wouldst Ff. *Ay, thou wouldst*
Rowe. *Ay, thou wouldst fain*
Pope.

492 *I will...sir.]* Qq. *But Ile not trust*
thee. Ff.

Most] om. Pope.

494 *nor never]* *nor ever* Pope.

495, 496 *Well...behind]* Qq (*thy men* Q₈),
in one line. *Goe then, and muster*
men: but leave behind Ff.

497 *faith]* Qq. *heart* Ff.

499 [*Exit.*] Q₆Q₇Q₈. om. Q₁Q₂. *Exit.*
Dar. Q₃Q₄Q₅. *Exit Stanley.* Ff.

As I by friends am well advertised,
 Sir Edward Courtney, and the haughty prelate
 Bishop of Exeter, his brother there,
 With many moe confederates, are in arms.

Enter another Messenger.

Sec. Mess. My liege, in Kent, the Guildfords are in
 arms ;

505

And every hour more competitors
 Flock to their aid, and still their power increaseth.

Enter another Messenger.

Third Mess. My lord, the army of the Duke of Buck-
 ingham—

K. Rich. Out on you, owls! nothing but songs of
 death? *[He striketh him.*

Take that, until thou bring me better news. 510

Third Mess. The news I have to tell your majesty
 Is, that by sudden floods and fall of waters,

501 *advertised]* *advertis'd* F₄.

502 *Edward]* Ff. *William* Qq. *Ed-*
mond Pope.

503 *brother there]* Qq. *elder Brother*
 Ff.

504 *moe]* Q₄Q₆F₁. *mo* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₅. *more*
 Q₇F₂Q₈F₃F₄.

505 *Sec. Mess.]* 2. M. Capell. *Mes.* Qq.
Mess. Ff.

My liege, in Kent] Qq. *In Kent,*
my Liege Ff.

506 *more competitors]* *Competitors* F₄.
still more competitors Pope. *still*
more complices Hanmer.

507 *their aid.....increaseth]* Qq. *the*
Rebels, and their power grows strong
 Ff.

508, 511, 519 *Third Mess.]* 3. M. Capell
Mes. Qq. *Mess.* Ff.

508 *the Duke of]* Qq. *great* Ff.

509 *you]* ye Q₅FfQ₇Q₈.

of] off Q₁.

death?] Pope. *Death,* F₁Q₇Q₈

death. The rest.

[He striketh him.] QqFf. In Qq
 it is put after line 508.

510 *Take...me]* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆. *Take...*
you bring me Q₅Q₇Q₈. *There, take*
thou that, till thou bring Ff.

511—516 *The news.....thine.]* Ff. See
 note (XXI).

511 *[Kneeling. Collier (ed. 2) (Kneele)*
Collier MS.

512 *floods]* *Flood,* F₁.

Buckingham's army is dispersed and scatter'd ;
 And he himself wander'd away alone,
 No man knows whither.

K. Rich. I cry thee mercy : 515
 There is my purse to cure that blow of thine.
 Hath any well-advised friend proclaim'd
 Reward to him that brings the traitor in ?

Third Mess. Such proclamation hath been made, my
 liege.

Enter another Messenger.

Fourth Mess. Sir Thomas Lovel and Lord Marquess
 Dorset, 520

'Tis said, my liege, in Yorkshire are in arms.
 Yet this good comfort bring I to your grace,
 The Breton navy is dispersed by tempest :
 Richmond, in Dorsetshire, sent out a boat
 Unto the shore, to ask those on the banks 525
 If they were his assistants, yea or no ;
 Who answer'd him, they came from Buckingham
 Upon his party : he, mistrusting them,
 Hoised sail and made away for Brittany.

- 515 *I cry thee* Oh! *I cry thee* Pope. 523 *Breton*] Capell. *Brittains* QqF₁F₂.
O, I cry you Capell (as Qq). *Britain* F₃F₄. *Bretagne* Theo-
 516 [3 Mess. rises. Collier, ed. 2 (Collier bald.
 MS.). *by tempest*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.
 517 *proclaim'd*] Ff. *given out* Qq. 524 *Dorsetshire*] *Dorshire* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅,
 518 *Reward*] Ff. *Rewardest* Qq. reading *The Brittaines...Dorshire* as
 to] Ff. *for* Qq. one line.
 519 *been*] bin Q₃Q₄Q₅. 524, 525 *sent...banks*] Ff. *Sent out a*
liege] Qq. *Lord* Ff. *boate to aske them on the shore* Qq
 520 *Fourth Mess.*] 4. M. Capell. *Mes.* 527 *answer'd*] Ff. *answered* Qq.
 Qq. *Mes.* Ff. 529 *Hoised...Brittany*] Edd. *Hoist...
 521 in Yorkshire are*] Ff. *are vp* Qq. *Brittaines* Qq. *Hoy's'd sayle, and
 522 Yet...grace*] Qq. *But...Highness* Ff. *made his course againe for Brittaines*
 Ff.

K. Rich. March on, march on, since we are up in
arms ;

530

If not to fight with foreign enemies,
Yet to beat down these rebels here at home.

Re-enter CATESBY.

Cate. My liege, the Duke of Buckingham is taken ;
That is the best news : that the Earl of Richmond
Is with a mighty power landed at Milford,
Is colder tidings, yet they must be told.

535

K. Rich. Away towards Salisbury ! while we reason
here,
A royal battle might be won and lost :
Some one take order Buckingham be brought
To Salisbury ; the rest march on with me.

540

[*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. Lord DERBY'S house.

Enter DERBY and Sir CHRISTOPHER URSWICK.

Der. Sir Christopher, tell Richmond this from me :
That in the sty of this most bloody boar
My son George Stanley is frank'd up in hold :
If I revolt, off goes young George's head ;

532 *beat] bars Q₆.*

533 *Re-enter...] Dyce. Enter... QqFf.*
Enter another Messenger. Edd.
conj.

534 *That is] Ff. Thats Qq.*

536 *tidings] nerves Q₆FfQ₇Q₈.*
yet they] Qq. but yet they Ff. but
yet it Rowe.

540 [*Flourish. Exeunt.] Florish. Ex-*
eunt. F₁. Exeunt. Q₁F₂F₃F₄. The
rest omit.

SCENE V.] Capell. Scena Quarta.

Ff. SCENE VII. Pope.

Lord Derby's house.] Lord Stanley's
house. Hanmer.

Enter...] Enter Darbie, Sir Chris-
topher. Qq (Entee Q₁). Enter
Derby, and Sir Christopher. Ff.
Enter Lord Stanley, and Sir Chris-
topher. Pope. Enter Lord Stanley,
and Sir Christopher Urswick. Theo-
bald.

2 *this most bloody] Qq. the most deadly*
Ff. the most bloody Collier.

The fear of that withholds my present aid. 5

But, tell me, where is princely Richmond now?

Chris. At Pembroke, or at Ha'rford-west, in Wales.

Der. What men of name resort to him?

Chris. Sir Walter Herbert, a renowned soldier;

Sir Gilbert Talbot, Sir William Stanley; 10

Oxford, redoubted Pembroke, Sir James Blunt,

And Rice ap Thomas, with a valiant crew,

And many moe of noble fame and worth:

And towards London they do bend their course,

If by the way they be not fought withal. 15

Der. Return unto thy lord; commend me to him:

Tell him the queen hath heartily consented

He shall espouse Elizabeth her daughter.

These letters will resolve him of my mind.

Farewell.

[*Exeunt.* 20

5 *withholds*] Qq. *holds off* Ff.

6—20 See note (xxii).

7 *Pembroke*] *Penbroke* F₁F₂. *Penbrook* F₃.

Ha'rford-west] Capell. *Harford-west* Q₁. *Herford-west* Q₂Q₆. *Hertford-west* Q₃Q₄. *Hertford west* Q₆Q₇. *Hertford West* Ff. *Hertford, west* Q₈. *Havrford-West* Hanmer.

8 *name*] *name and mark* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). *note and name* S. Walker conj.

resort] *have made resort* Anon. conj. *to him*] *unto him there* Wordsworth.

9 *renowned*] *renowned* Q₁Q₂Q₄Q₅.

10 *Sir William*] *and Sir William* Pope.

11 *redoubted*] *doubted* Q₄.

12 *And*] Ff. om. Qq.

13 *moe*] *other* Ff. *more* Q₇Q₈. *others* Warburton.

noble fame] Qq. *great name* Ff.

14 *they do*] Qq. *do they* Ff.

course] Qq. *power* Ff.

16 *thy*] Q₁Ff. *my* The rest.

19 *These letters*] Qq. *My Letter* Ff. *Those letters* Capell. See note (xxii).

www.libtool.com.cn ACT V.

SCENE I. *Salisbury. An open place.*

Enter the Sheriff, and BUCKINGHAM, with halberds, led to execution.

Buck. Will not King Richard let me speak with him?

Sher. No, my good lord; therefore be patient.

Buck. Hastings, and Edward's children, Rivers, Grey,
Holy King Henry, and thy fair son Edward,
Vaughan, and all that have miscarried 5
By underhand corrupted foul injustice,
If that your moody discontented souls
Do through the clouds behold this present hour,
Even for revenge mock my destruction!
This is All-Souls' day, fellows, is it not? 10

Sher. It is, my lord.

Buck. Why, then All-Souls' day is my body's dooms-
day.

This is the day that, in King Edward's time,
I wish'd might fall on me when I was found
False to his children or his wife's allies; 15
This is the day wherein I wish'd to fall
By the false faith of him I trusted most;

- | | |
|---|--|
| ACT V. SCENE I.] Actus Quintus. | 3 <i>Rivers, Grey]</i> <i>Rivers, Gray</i> Qq. <i>Gray & Riuers</i> Ff. |
| Scena Prima. Ff. | 10 <i>fellows]</i> Qq. <i>Fellow</i> Ff. |
| Salisbury.] Pope. | 11 <i>my lord]</i> Qq. om. Ff. |
| An open place.] Capell. The Mar- ket-place. Grant White. | 12 <i>Why...doomsday.]</i> Omitted by Pope. |
| Enter...] Rowe. Enter Buckingham to execution. Qq. Enter Bucking- ham with Halberds, led to Execu- tion. Ff. | 13 <i>that]</i> Qq. <i>which</i> Ff. |
| 2, 11 <i>Sher.]</i> Ff. Rat. Qq. | 14 <i>on]</i> <i>one</i> Q ₇ . |
| 2 <i>my good lord]</i> Ff. <i>my lord</i> Qq. <i>good my lord</i> Rowe. | 15 <i>or]</i> <i>and</i> FfQ ₈ . <i>wife's]</i> Rowe. <i>Wives</i> QqFf. |
| | 17 <i>I trusted most]</i> Qq. <i>whom most I trusted</i> Ff. |

This, this All-Souls' day to my fearful soul
 Is the determined respite of my wrongs:
 That high All-seer that I dallied with
 Hath turn'd my feigned prayer on my head,
 And given in earnest what I begg'd in jest.
 Thus doth he force the swords of wicked men
 To turn their own points on their masters' bosoms:
 Now Margaret's curse is fallen upon my head; 20
 'When he,' quoth she, 'shall split thy heart with sorrow,
 Remember Margaret was a prophetess.'
 Come, sirs, convey me to the block of shame;
 Wrong hath but wrong, and blame the due of blame.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *The camp near Tamworth.*

Enter RICHMOND, OXFORD, BLUNT, HERBERT, *and others, with*
drum and colours.

Richm. Fellows in arms, and my most loving friends,
 Bruised underneath the yoke of tyranny,
 Thus far into the bowels of the land
 Have we march'd on without impediment;

- | | |
|--|---|
| 18 <i>This, this</i>] <i>This is</i> Q ₇ Q ₈ . | <i>is fallen...head</i>] Qq. <i>faller heavy</i> |
| 19 <i>Is</i>] <i>This</i> Pope, omitting line 18, <i>This...soul.</i> <i>respite</i>] <i>despite</i> Q ₇ Q ₈ . <i>respect</i> War- burton. <i>restrict</i> Becket conj. | <i>on my necks</i> Ff. <i>falls heavy on my</i> <i>head</i> Pope. |
| 20 <i>That high</i>] <i>What high</i> Q ₂ . <i>that I</i>] Qq. <i>which I</i> Ff. <i>whom I</i> Capell. | 26 <i>shall</i>] <i>will</i> F ₃ F ₄ . |
| 21 <i>feigned</i>] <i>feign'd</i> F ₄ . | 28 <i>Come, sirs, convey me</i>] Qq. <i>Come</i> <i>leade me</i> Officers Ff. |
| 23 <i>swords</i>] Q ₁ Q ₂ Ff. <i>sword</i> Q ₃ Q ₄ Q ₅ Q ₇ Q ₈ . <i>sword</i> Q ₆ . | 29 [Exeunt.] om. Qq. Exeunt Buck- ingham with Officers. Ff. |
| 24 <i>own</i>] Q ₁ Q ₂ Ff. The rest omit. <i>on</i>] Qq. <i>in</i> Ff. <i>bosoms</i>] Ff. <i>bosome</i> Qq. | SCENE II.] <i>Scena Secunda</i> . Ff. The camp...] Hanmer. The Camp. Pope. On the borders of Leicester- shire. A Camp. Theobald. Enter...] Ff. Enter Richmond with drums and trumpets. Qq. |
| 25 <i>Now</i>] Qq. <i>Thus</i> Ff. | |

And here receive we from our father Stanley 5
 Lines of fair comfort and encouragement.
 The wretched, bloody, and usurping boar,
 That spoil'd your summer fields and fruitful vines,
 Swills your warm blood like wash, and makes his trough
 In your embowell'd bosoms, this foul swine 10
 Lies now even in the centre of this isle,
 Near to the town of Leicester, as we learn :
 From Tamworth thither is but one day's march.
 In God's name, cheerly on, courageous friends,
 To reap the harvest of perpetual peace 15
 By this one bloody trial of sharp war.

Oxf. Every man's conscience is a thousand swords,
 To fight against that bloody homicide.

Herb. I doubt not but his friends will fly to us.

Blunt. He hath no friends but who are friends for
 fear, 20

Which in his greatest need will shrink from him.

Richm. All for our vantage. Then, in God's name,
 march :

True hope is swift, and flies with swallow's wings ;
 Kings it makes gods, and meaner creatures kings. [*Exeunt.*]

- | | |
|--|---|
| 5 (Paper) Collier MS. | The rest. |
| 7 <i>The wretched</i>] <i>The wretchless</i> Anon. conj. (Fras. Mag., 1853). <i>The wreck- less</i> Collier MS. <i>The reckless</i> Collier (ed. 2). <i>The raged</i> Anon. conj. <i>The ruthless</i> Kinnear conj. | 17 <i>Oxf.</i>] Ff. 1 Lo. Qq. <i>swords</i>] Qq. <i>men</i> Ff. 18 <i>that bloody</i>] Qq. <i>this guilty</i> Ff. 19 <i>Herb.</i>] Her. Ff. 2 Lo. Qq. <i>fly</i>] Qq. <i>turne</i> Ff. |
| 8 <i>spoil'd</i>] <i>spoils</i> Capell. <i>summer fields</i>] Ff. <i>somer-fielde</i> Q ₁ . <i>summer-fields</i> Q ₂ . <i>sommer-field</i> The rest. | 20 <i>Blunt.</i>] Ff. 3 Lo. Qq. <i>who</i>] <i>what</i> Ff Q ₆ . |
| 9 <i>Swills...makes</i>] <i>Swill'd...made</i> Pope. | 21 <i>greatest</i>] Qq. <i>deere</i> Ff. <i>shrink</i>] Qq. <i>flye</i> Ff. |
| 10 <i>bosoms</i>] <i>bosome</i> Q ₇ Q ₈ . | 22 <i>vantage</i>] <i>advantage</i> Q ₇ Q ₈ . |
| 11 <i>Lies now</i>] Qq. <i>Is now</i> Ff. <i>centre</i>] <i>Centry</i> F ₁ . | 24 <i>makes</i>] <i>make</i> Q ₁ Q ₂ Q ₃ Q ₄ Q ₆ . [<i>Exeunt.</i>] <i>Exit.</i> Q ₁ . <i>Exeunt Omnes.</i> Ff. The rest omit. |
| 14 <i>cheerly</i>] Q ₁ Ff. <i>cheere</i> Q ₂ . <i>cheare</i> | |

SCENE III. *Bosworth Field.*
www.libtool.com.cn

Enter KING RICHARD in arms with NORFOLK, the EARL OF SURREY,
 and others.

K. Rich. Here pitch our tents, even here in Bosworth
 field.

My Lord of Surrey, why look you so sad?

Sur. My heart is ten times lighter than my looks.

K. Rich. My Lord of Norfolk,—

Nor. Here, most gracious liege.

K. Rich. Norfolk, we must have knocks; ha! must we
 not? 5

Nor. We must both give and take, my gracious lord.

K. Rich. Up with my tent there! here will I lie to
 night:

But where to-morrow? Well, all's one for that.

Who hath descried the number of the foe?

Nor. Six or seven thousand is their utmost power. 10

K. Rich. Why, our battalion trebles that account:

Besides, the king's name is a tower of strength,
 Which they upon the adverse party want.

- | | |
|--|---|
| SCENE III.] Pope. om. Ff. | 5 <i>Norfolk.....not ?</i>] One line in Qq. |
| Bosworth Field.] Pope. | Two in Ff. |
| Enter...] Enter King Richard, Nor- | 6 <i>gracious</i>] Qq. <i>louing</i> Ff. |
| folke, Ratcliffe, Catesbie, with others. | 7 <i>there</i>] om. FfQ ₇ Q ₈ . |
| Qq. Enter King Richard in Armes, | [Tent set up.] Capell. |
| with Norfolke, Ratcliffe, and the | 8 <i>all's</i>] Ff. <i>all is</i> Qq. |
| Earle of Surrey. Ff. | [Aside. Collier MS. |
| 1 <i>tents</i>] Qq. <i>Tent</i> Ff. | 9 <i>foe</i>] Qq. <i>Traitors</i> Ff. |
| 2 <i>My...sad?</i>] Ff. <i>Whie, how now Cates-</i> | 10 <i>utmost power</i>] Ff. <i>greatest number</i> |
| <i>bie, whie lookst thou so bad.</i> Q ₁ . <i>Why</i> | Qq. |
| <i>(Whie, Q₂), how now Catesbie, why</i> | 11 <i>battalion</i>] Q ₁ Q ₄ Q ₆ . <i>battailon</i> Q ₃ Q ₅ |
| <i>lookst thou so sad?</i> The rest. | Q ₆ . <i>Battalia</i> Ff. <i>battalian</i> Q ₇ Q ₈ . |
| 3 <i>Sur.</i>] Ff. <i>Cat.</i> Qq. | <i>trebles</i>] <i>trebble</i> F ₄ . |
| 4 <i>My Lord...liege</i>] Ff. <i>Norfolke, come</i> | 12 <i>the</i>] that a Q ₇ Q ₈ . |
| <i>hither</i> Qq (<i>hether</i> Q ₁). | 13 <i>party</i>] Qq. <i>Faction</i> Ff. |
| <i>Norfolk,—</i>] Theobald. <i>Norfolke.</i> Ff. | |

Up with my tent there! Valiant gentlemen,
 Let us survey the vantage of the field; 15
 Call for some men of sound direction:
 Let's want no discipline, make no delay;
 For, lords, to-morrow is a busy day. [Exeunt.]

Enter, on the other side of the field, RICHMOND, SIR WILLIAM BRANDON, OXFORD, and others. Some of the Soldiers pitch Richmond's tent.

Richm. The weary sun hath made a golden set,
 And by the bright track of his fiery car 20
 Gives signal of a goodly day to-morrow.
 Sir William Brandon, you shall bear my standard.
 Give me some ink and paper in my tent:
 I'll draw the form and model of our battle,
 Limit each leader to his several charge, 25
 And part in just proportion our small strength.
 My Lord of Oxford, you, Sir William Brandon,
 And you, Sir Walter Herbert, stay with me.
 The Earl of Pembroke keeps his regiment:
 Good Captain Blunt, bear my good-night to him, 30
 And by the second hour in the morning

14 *my tent there! Valiant] my tent there, valiant* Qq. *the Tent: Come Noble* Ff.

15 *of] or* Q₆.

field] Qq. ground Ff.

17 *want] Qq. lacke* Ff.

19 Scene changes to another part of Bosworth field. Theobald.

Enter.....tent.] Enter Richmondand Dorset. Ff. *Enter Richmond with the Lordes, &c.* Qq. (Richard Q₈). *Drums. Enter, on the other Side of the Field, Soldiers of Richmond's Army, and set up his Tent: Then, Enter Henry, Blunt, Oxford, Herbert, Sir William Brandon, and Others. Capell.*

set] Ff. sete Q₁. *seate* Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅. *seat* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

20 *track] Qq. Tract* Ff.

21 *signal] Qq. token* Ff.

22 *Sir.....standard] Ff. Where is Sir William Brandon, he shall beare my standerd* Qq.

23—26 *Give...strength.] Arranged as in Ff. See note (xxxiii).*

23, 24 *paper in my tent: I'll] paper; in my tent I'll* Pope.

26 *strength] Qq. Power* Ff.

27, 28 *My Lord...with me.] Ff. Omitted in Qq.*

28 *you,] your* F₁.

29 *keeps] Ff. keeps* Qq.

Desire the earl to see me in my tent :

Yet one thing more, good Blunt, before thou go'st,
Where is Lord Stanley quarter'd, dost thou know?

Blunt. Unless I have mista'en his colours much, 35
Which well I am assured I have not done,
His regiment lies half a mile at least
South from the mighty power of the king.

Richm. If without peril it be possible,
Good Captain Blunt, bear my good-night to him, 40
And give him from me this most needful scroll.

Blunt. Upon my life, my lord, I'll undertake it ;
And so, God give you quiet rest to-night !

Richm. Good night, good Captain Blunt. Come, gentle-
men,

Let us consult upon to-morrow's business : 45
In to our tent ! the air is raw and cold.

[*They withdraw into the tent.*]

*Enter, to his tent, KING RICHARD, NORFOLK, RATCLIFF, CATESBY,
and others.*

K. Rich. What is 't o' clock?

Cate.

It's supper-time, my lord ;

33 *good Blunt, before thou go'st*] Qq.
(*good Captaine*) *do for me* Ff.

34 *dost thou*] *dost thou* Qq. *do you* Ff.
know?] *know.* Q₁.

35 *colours*] *quarters* Warburton.

37 *lies*] Q₁Q₂F₁F₃F₄. *lieth* Q₃Q₅. *lieth*
Q₄Q₆Q₇Q₈. *lyes* F₂.

40 *Good...to him,*] Qq. *Sweet Blunt,*
make some good meanes to speak with
him Ff.

41 *scroll*] *scrowle* Qq. *Note* Ff.

42 *life*] *selfe* F₂F₃F₄.

43 *And so...to-night!*] Ff. om. Qq.

44 *Good...gentlemen,*] Two lines in Ff.
[Exit Blu. Capell.

46 *In to our*] *Into our* Q₆Q₇. *Into my*

Ff. *In our* Q₆. *In to my* Capell.
air] Qq. *Dew* Ff.

[*They withdraw...*] Ff. om. Qq.

47 *Enter, to his tent...*] Capell. *Enter*
King Richard... Qq. *Enter* Ri-
chard... Ff. Scene changes back
to King Richards Tent. *Enter.....*
Theobald.

Catesby, and others.] *Catesby &c.* Q₁
Q₂. & *Catesby.* Ff. *Catesby.* The rest.

47, 48 *What is 't.....nine o' clock.*] Ff.
What is a clocke. Cat. *It is sixe of*
clocke, full supper time. Qq. (of the
Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈).

It's supper-time...nine o' clock.] As
in Pope. One line in Ff.

It's nine o'clock.

K. Rich. I will not sup to-night.
Give me some ink and paper.

What, is my beaver easier than it was! 50

And all my armour laid into my tent?

Cate. It is, my liege; and all things are in readiness.

K. Rich. Good Norfolk, hie thee to thy charge;
Use careful watch, choose trusty sentinels.

Nor. I go, my lord. 55

K. Rich. Stir with the lark to-morrow, gentle Norfolk.

Nor. I warrant you, my lord. [Exit.

K. Rich. Catesby!

Cate. My lord?

K. Rich. Send out a pursuivant at arms
To Stanley's regiment; bid him bring his power 60

Before sunrising, lest his son George fall

Into the blind cave of eternal night. [Exit Catesby.

Fill me a bowl of wine. Give me a watch.

Saddle white Surrey for the field to-morrow.

Look that my staves be sound, and not too heavy. 65

Ratcliff!

Rat. My lord?

K. Rich. Saw'st thou the melancholy Lord Northumberland?

48 *It's nine*] *It's six* Dyce, ed. 1 (Steevens conj.) from Qq.

48, 49 *I will.....paper.*] As in Ff. As one line in Qq.

49 *Give...paper.*] Omitted by Pope.

50 *What, is*] *What? is* Q₁. *What is* Q₇ Q₈

53 *charge*] *charge, away* Capell. *proper charge* Wordsworth.

54 *sentinels*] *Centinels* Ff. *Centinell* Qq.

57 [Exit.] Ff. om. Qq.

58, 59 *Catesby!* *Cate. My lord!*] As in Pope. *Catesby!* *Rat. My lord.* Qq.

Ratcliffe. *Rat. My Lord.* Ff.

62 [Exit Catesby.] Edd. om. QqFf.

63 [To Ratcliff. Pope. to Cat. Capell. *watch*] *watch-light* Keightley.

65, 66 *Look...Ratcliff!*] As in Rowe (ed. 2). One line in QqFf.

68 *Saw'st thou*] *Sawest thou* Q₁. *Saw'st* Ff. *Sawest thou* The rest.

Rat. Thomas the Earl of Surrey, and himself,
 Much about cock-shut time, from troop to troop 70
 Went through the army, cheering up the soldiers.

K. Rich. So, I am satisfied. Give me a bowl of wine:
 I have not that alacrity of spirit,
 Nor cheer of mind, that I was wont to have.
 Set it down. Is ink and paper ready?

Rat. It is, my lord. 75

K. Rich. Bid my guard watch. Leave me. Ratcliff,
 About the mid of night come to my tent,
 And help to arm me. Leave me, I say.

[*Exeunt Ratcliff and the other attendants.*]

Enter DERBY to RICHMOND in his tent, Lords and others attending.

Der. Fortune and victory sit on thy helm!

Richm. All comfort that the dark night can afford 80
 Be to thy person, noble father-in-law!
 Tell me, how fares our loving mother?

Der. I, by attorney, bless thee from thy mother,
 Who prays continually for Richmond's good:
 So much for that. The silent hours steal on, 85

70 *about*] like Q₆Q₇Q₈

72-75 *So, I am...Set*] I'm...So, set
 Capell. I'm...There, set Pope.

74 *cheer*] *cleare* Q₇Q₈

[Wine brought. Capell.

76 *Leave me. Ratcliff,*] and *leave me.*
 Pope. *Now leave me.* Keightley.

So leave me. Id. conj.

76, 77 *Ratcliff,...tent*] As in Dyce. One
 line in Q₁Ff.

77 *mid*] *midst* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

78 *arm me*] *arme* F₂. *Arm* F₄. *arm*
me, Ratcliff Capell, reading l. 76 as
 Pope.

Leave me] *Leave me now* Pope.

[*Exeunt.....*] Edd. Exit Ratcliffe.

Q₁Ff. K. Richard retires into his
 tent. Exeunt Ratcliffe and Catesby.
 Malone.

79 SCENE III. Pope (ed. 1). SCENE IV.
 Pope (ed. 2).

Enter.....attending.] Edd. Enter
 Darby to Richmond in his tent. Q₁
 Ff (Derby Ff).

sit] set Q₁.

82 *Tell me*] *Tell me, I pray* Collier,
 ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

fares] *fares it with* Hanmer.

loving] Q₁Q₂. *noble* The rest.

mother] *mother now* Keightley conj.

85 *that. The*] Ff. *that the* Q₁. *that,*
the Q₄. *that: the* The rest.

And flaky darkness breaks within the east.
 In brief, for so the season bids us be,
 Prepare thy battle early in the morning,
 And put thy fortune to the arbitrement
 Of bloody strokes and mortal-staring war. 90
 I, as I may—that which I would I cannot,—
 With best advantage will deceive the time,
 And aid thee in this doubtful shock of arms :
 But on thy side I may not be too forward,
 Lest, being seen, thy brother, tender George, 95
 Be executed in his father's sight.
 Farewell : the leisure and the fearful time
 Cuts off the ceremonious vows of love,
 And ample interchange of sweet discourse,
 Which so long sunder'd friends should dwell upon : 100
 God give us leisure for these rites of love !
 Once more, adieu : be valiant, and speed well !
Richm. Good lords, conduct him to his regiment :
 I'll strive, with troubled thoughts, to take a nap,
 Lest leaden slumber peise me down to-morrow, 105
 When I should mount with wings of victory :

86 *And*] A Q₇Q₈.89 *arbitrement*] *arbitrement* Q₃Q₄Q₅.
arbitrement Q₆Q₇Q₈.90 *mortal-staring*] Steevens (1793).
mortall staring QqFf. *mortal-fearing*
Capell. *mortal-scaring* Malone conj.
mortal starry Becket conj. *mortal-*
staving Jackson conj. *mortal-stab-*
bing Staunton conj. *mortal-daring*
Anon. conj. *mortal-bearing* Cart-
wright conj.95 *brother, tender*] Ff. *brother tender*
Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅. *tender brother* Q₆Q₇
Q₈.97 *Farewell : the leisure*] *Farewell :**The lack of leisure* Anon. conj.*leisure*] *lesion* Becket conj. *seizure*
Forsyth conj.100 *sunder'd*] *sundred* FfQ₇Q₈. *sun-*
dried Q₁Q₂. *sundired* Q₃Q₄. *sun-*
dered Q₅Q₆.101 *us*] on Q₇Q₈.
for] of Q₇Q₈.
rites] Ff. *rights* Qq.104 *with troubled thoughts*] Qq. *with*
troubled noise Ff. *troubled with*
noise Grant White. *with busied*
thoughts Kinnear conj.105 *peise*] Qq. *peize* F₁F₂. *poize* F₃
F₄.

Once more, good night, kind lords and gentlemen.

[*Exeunt all but Richmond.*]

O Thou, whose captain I account myself,
 Look on my forces with a gracious eye;
 Put in their hands thy bruising irons of wrath, 110
 That they may crush down with a heavy fall
 The usurping helmets of our adversaries!
 Make us thy ministers of chastisement,
 That we may praise thee in the victory!
 To thee I do commend my watchful soul, 115
 Ere I let fall the windows of mine eyes:
 Sleeping and waking, O, defend me still! [*Sleeps.*]

Enter the Ghost of PRINCE EDWARD, son to HENRY the Sixth.

Ghost. [*To Richard*] Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow!

Think, how thou stab'dst me in my prime of youth
 At Tewksbury: despair, therefore, and die! 120
 [*To Richmond*] Be cheerful, Richmond; for the wronged souls
 Of butcher'd princes fight in thy behalf:
 King Henry's issue, Richmond, comforts thee.

- 107 *gentlemen*] *gentilemen* Q₇.
 [*Exeunt...*] *Exeunt.* Manet Richmond. Ff. *Exunt.* Q₁Q₂. *Exeunt.* The rest.
- 108 [*going towards a Couch, and kneeling.* Capell. Kneel. Collier MS.
- 109 *on*] *one* Q₇.
forces with a gracious eye] *force with thy gracious eyes* Q₇Q₈.
- 111 *a*] *om.* Q₇Q₈.
- 112 *helmets*] *helmet* Q₆Q₆Q₇Q₈.
- 114 *the*] Q₁Q₂Q₆Q₇Q₈. *thy* Q₃Q₄Q₆Ff.
 [*Rising.* Collier MS.
- 117 [*Sleeps.*] Ff. *om.* Q₁. [*throws himself upon the Couch, and sleeps.* Capell.
- 118 SCENE IV. Between the Tents of
- Richard and Richmond: They sleeping. Pope (ed. 1). SCENE V. Pope (ed. 2).
 Enter...] Enter...young Prince Edward, sonne Harry the sixt, to Ri. Q₁. yoong Prince Edward,.....to Ri. Q₂.
- 119 *stab'dst*] *stab'dst* Rowe. *stabst* Qq. *stab'st* F₁F₂. *stab'bst* F₃F₄. *my prime*] *the prime* F₃F₄.
- 120 *despair, therefore*] *therefore despair* Pope.
therefore] *om.* Q₇Q₈.
- 121 *Be...souls*] One line in Qq. Two in Ff.
- 122 *butcher'd*] Ff. *butchred* Q₃Q₄Q₅. *butchered* The rest.

Enter the Ghost of HENRY the Sixth.

Ghost. [To Richard] When I was mortal, my anointed
body

By thee was punched full of deadly holes: 125

Think on the Tower and me: despair, and die!

Harry the Sixth bids thee despair and die!

[To Richmond] Virtuous and holy, be thou conqueror!

Harry, that prophesied thou shouldst be king,

Doth comfort thee in thy sleep: live, and flourish! 130

Enter the Ghost of CLARENCE.

Ghost. [To Richard] Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-
morrow!

I, that was wash'd to death with fulsome wine,

Poor Clarence, by thy guile betray'd to death.

To-morrow in the battle think on me,

And fall thy edgeless sword: despair, and die! 135

[To Richmond] Thou offspring of the house of Lancaster,

The wronged heirs of York do pray for thee:

Good angels guard thy battle! live, and flourish!

Enter the Ghosts of RIVERS, GREY, and VAUGHAN.

Ghost of R. [To Richard] Let me sit heavy on thy
soul to-morrow,

125 *deadly*] Q₁. Omitted in the rest.

127 *Harry*] Q₁F₁. *Henry* F₂F₃F₄.

130 *in thy sleep: live*] Q₁. *in sleeps:*
Live Ff. *in sleep: live thou* Rowe
(ed. 2). *in sleep: live, live* Anon.
conj. *in sleep now; live, and flourish*
Keightley. *in sleep; flourish*
and live or in thy sleep; now live
and flourish or in slumber; live and

flourish. Id. conj.

131 *sit*] set Q₁.

131, 139 *on*] Q₆Q₈Q₈. *one* Q₇. *in* The
rest.

132 *wash'd*] *wak'd* Jackson conj.

to] in Dyce conj.

with] in F₃F₄.

139 *Ghost of R.*] King. Q₁Q₂. Riu. The
rest.

Rivers, that died at Pomfret! despair, and die! 140

Ghost of G. [To Richard] Think upon Grey, and let
thy soul despair!

Ghost of V. [To Richard] Think upon Vaughan, and,
with guilty fear,

Let fall thy lance: despair, and die!

All. [To Richmond] Awake, and think our wrongs in
Richard's bosom

Will conquer him! awake, and win the day! 145

Enter the Ghost of HASTINGS.

Ghost. [To Richard] Bloody and guilty, guiltily awake,
And in a bloody battle end thy days!

Think on Lord Hastings: despair, and die!

[To Richmond] Quiet untroubled soul, awake, awake!

Arm, fight, and conquer, for fair England's sake! 150

Enter the Ghosts of the two young Princes.

Ghosts. [To Richard] Dream on thy cousins smothered
in the Tower:

Let us be lead within thy bosom, Richard,

And weigh thee down to ruin, shame, and death!

Thy nephews' souls bid thee despair and die!

143 *lance]* *hurless lance* Capell. *pointless lance* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).
despair] Richard, *despair* Pope.

144 *Awake,*] In a separate line in Ff.
Richard's] Q₁FfQ₆. *Ri.* Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆.
Ric. Q₆. *Rich.* Q₇.

145 *Will]* Wel Q₁.
him] QqF₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

146 *Hastings.]* Q₁Q₂. L. Hastings. the
other Quartos. Lord Hastings.
Ff. See note (xxiv).
guiltily] QqF₁. *guilty* F₂F₃F₄.

148 *despair]* and *despair* Pope. *so de-*

spair Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

149 *Quiet...awake]* One line in Qq.
Two in Ff.

151 *Dream...Tower:]* One line in Qq.
Two in Ff.

smothered] *smoothred* Q₃Q₆. *smothered* Q₄. *smoothered* Q₆. *smother'd* F₄.

152 *lead]* Q₁. *laid* or *layd* The rest.

153 *thee]* *the* Q₆F₃.

154 *souls bid]* QqF₄. *souls bids* F₁F₂
F₃.

[*To Richmond*] Sleep, Richmond, sleep in peace, and wake
in joy; 155
Good angels guard thee from the boar's annoy!
Live, and beget a happy race of kings!
Edward's unhappy sons do bid thee flourish.

Enter the Ghost of LADY ANNE his wife.

Ghost. [*To Richard*] Richard, thy wife, that wretched
Anne thy wife,
That never slept a quiet hour with thee, 160
Now fills thy sleep with perturbations:
To-morrow in the battle think on me,
And fall thy edgeless sword: 'despair, and die!
[*To Richmond*] Thou quiet soul, sleep thou a quiet sleep:
Dream of success and happy victory! 165
Thy adversary's wife doth pray for thee.

Enter the Ghost of BUCKINGHAM.

Ghost. [*To Richard*] The first was I that help'd thee
to the crown;
The last was I that felt thy tyranny:
O, in the battle think on Buckingham,
And die in terror of thy guiltiness! 170
Dream on, dream on, of bloody deeds and death:

- | | |
|---|--|
| 155 <i>Sleep...joy;</i>] One line in Qq. Two in Ff. | conj. |
| 159 Lady Anne.....] Q ₁ Q ₂ . Queene Anne... the other Quartos. Anne, ... Ff. | 163 <i>edgeless sword</i>] <i>powerless arm</i> Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). |
| <i>Richard...Anne thy wife,</i>] One line in Qq. Two in Ff. | 164 <i>Thou...sleep:</i>] One line in Qq. Two in Ff. |
| 161 <i>perturbations</i>] <i>preturbations</i> Q ₁ . | 167 <i>Enter the Ghost.....</i>] <i>Enter the Ghosts... F₂</i> . |
| 162, 163 <i>To-morrow...die!</i>] Spurious; the true lines being lost. Lettson | <i>The first...crown;</i>] One line in Qq. Two in Ff, the first ending I. |
| | 168 <i>thy</i>] <i>the Q₁</i> . |

Fainting, despair; despairing, yield thy breath!
 [To Richmond] I died for hope ere I could lend thee aid:
 But cheer thy heart, and be thou not dismay'd:
 God and good angels fight on Richmond's side; 175
 And Richard falls in height of all his pride.

[The Ghosts vanish. King Richard starts out of his dream.

K. Rich. Give me another horse: bind up my wounds.
 Have mercy, Jesu!—Soft! I did but dream.
 O coward conscience, how dost thou afflict me!
 The lights burn blue. It is now dead midnight. 180
 Cold fearful drops stand on my trembling flesh.
 What do I fear? myself? there's none else by:
 Richard loves Richard; that is, I am I.
 Is there a murderer here? No. Yes, I am:
 Then fly. What, from myself? Great reason why: 185
 Lest I revenge. What, myself upon myself?
 Alack, I love myself. Wherefore? for any good

- 173 *I died...aid:]* One line in Qq. Two in Ff.
for hope] for holpe Theobald. *for-sake* Hanmer. *forholpe* Steevens conj. *fore-done* Tyrwhitt conj. *sore hope*, Jackson conj. *to hope* Grant White conj. *my hope* Cartwright conj.
- 176 *falls] Qq. fall* Ff.
 [The Ghosts vanish.] Rowe. om. QqFf.
 King.....dream.] Richard starteth up out of a dreame. Qq (starteth out Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₆; started out of his Q₇Q₈). Richard starts out of his dreame. Ff.
- 179 *coward] See note (xxv).*
- 180 *It is now] Q₁. It is not* The rest. *Is it not* Rowe (ed. 2).
- 181 *stand] stands* Q₆.
- 182—203 *What do I...to myself?] Ritson* would put this in the margin.
- 182 *What do I fear? myself?] Q₁. What do I feare my selfe? Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈. What? do I feare my Selfe? Ff.*
- 183 *Richard loves...am I.] omitted by Pope. I am I] I and I* Q₁.
- 184 *murderer] murd'rer* Johnson. *murtherer* QqFf.
- 185—192 *Then fly...flatter.] Put in the margin by Pope.*
- 185 *fly.] flie, Qq. flye; F₁. flye? F₂F₃F₄. reason why:] reason why, Q₃Q₄Q₆Q₆Q₇Q₈. reason whie? Q₁. reason why? Q₂. reason: why? Ff.*
- 186 *revenge. What...myself?] revenge myself upon myself.* Dyce, ed. 2 (Lettsom conj.). *What,] What* Qq. *What? Ff.* om. Capell.
upon] on Pope.
- 187 *Alack,] om.* Pope.

That I myself have done unto myself?
 O, no! alas, I rather hate myself
 For hateful deeds committed by myself! 190
 I am a villain: yet I lie, I am not.
 Fool, of thyself speak well: fool, do not flatter.
 My conscience hath a thousand several tongues,
 And every tongue brings in a several tale,
 And every tale condemns me for a villain. 195
 Perjury, perjury, in the high'st degree;
 Murder, stern murder, in the direst degree;
 All several sins, all used in each degree,
 Throng to the bar, crying all 'Guilty! guilty!'
 I shall despair. There is no creature loves me; 200
 And if I die, no soul will pity me:
 Nay, wherefore should they, since that I myself
 Find in myself no pity to myself?
 Methought the souls of all that I had murder'd
 Came to my tent, and every one did threat 205
 To-morrow's vengeance on the head of Richard.

- 188 I] om. $Q_6Q_7Q_8$
have] *hath* Q_7Q_8 .
unto] *upon* F_3F_4 .
- 191 *yet*] *yea* Q_8 .
- 192 *speak well: fool*] *speak—well Fool*
 Rowe (ed. 1).
- 196 *Perjury, perjury*] *Periurie, periurie*
 Q_1Q_2 . *Periurie* (once only) The
 rest. *Perjury, foul perjury* Collier,
 ed. 2 (Collier MS.).
the] om. Pope.
- 197 *Murder...murder*] $Q_6Q_7Q_8$. *Mur-*
ther...murther. The rest.
- 199 *Throng*] Q_1Q_2 . *Throng all* The
 rest.
to the] *to' th'* F_1F_2 . *to th'* F_3F_4 .
bar] *barrre* Q_6 . *Boare* Q_8 .
crying all] *all crying* Pope.
- 200 *shall*] *will* Pope.
- creature*] *creatuces* F_2 . *creatures*
 F_5 .
- 201 *will*] Q_1Q_2 . *shall* The rest.
- 202, 203 *Nay.....myself!*] Put in the
 margin by Pope.
they,....myself!] *they,....my selfe*. Q_1 .
they?...my selfe. The rest.
- 202 *Nay,*] *Ff. And* Q_4 .
- 204—206 *Methought.....Richard.*] See
 note (xxvi).
- 204 *had*] Q_1Ff . om. $Q_2Q_3Q_4Q_5Q_6$. *have*
 Q_7Q_8 .
murder'd] Johnson. *murther'd* Q_1Q_2 .
murthred $Q_3Q_4Q_5$. *murthered* Q_6Q_7 .
murther'd *Ff. murdered* Q_8 .
- 205 *Came*] *Came all* $Q_3Q_4Q_5Q_6$.
and] om. F_4 .
one] on Q_4 .

www.libtool.com.cn
Enter RATCLIFF.

Rat. My lord!
K. Rich. 'Zounds! who is there?
Rat. Ratcliff, my lord; 'tis I. The early village-cock
 Hath twice done salutation to the morn; 210
 Your friends are up, and buckle on their armour.
K. Rich. O Ratcliff, I have dream'd a fearful dream!
 What thinkest thou, will our friends prove all true?
Rat. No doubt, my lord.
K. Rich. O Ratcliff, I fear, I fear,—
Rat. Nay, good my lord, be not afraid of shadows.
K. Rich. By the apostle Paul, shadows to-night 218
 Have struck more terror to the soul of Richard,
 Than can the substance of ten thousand soldiers
 Armed in proof, and led by shallow Richmond.
 It is not yet near day. Come, go with me; 220
 Under our tents I'll play the eaves-dropper,
 To see if any mean to shrink from me. [Exeunt.

208 'Zounds! who is] Qq. Who's Ff.
 [starting. Capell.
 there] heare Q4.
 209 Ratcliff,] om. Q7Q8.
 'tis I] om. Pope.
 210 twice] thrice Q7Q8.
 212—214 K. Rich. O Ratcliff...my lord.]
 Qq. Omitted in Ff.
 213 thinkest] Capell. thinkest Qq.
 214 O...fear,—] O Ratcliff, I have
 dream'd a fearful dream. Collier
 MS.
 O] om. Pope.
 fear,—] fear— Rowe. fears, Q7Q8.
 fears. The rest.
 217 struck] F4. stroke Q1F1F2F3. strooks

The rest.
 219 Armed] Arm'd all Cibber's version.
 220 It is] Pope. Tis or 'Tis QqFf.
 220, 221 me;...tents] me,...tents QqF1
 (me,...Tents, Q8). me,...Tents; F3
 F3F4.
 221 eaves-dropper] F4. ease dropper
 Q1. ewse dropper Q2. ewse-dropper
 Q3. eawse-dropper Q4. ewese-drop-
 per Q6Q6Q7Q8. Ease-dropper F1F3
 F3.
 222 see] Q1Q2. heare The rest.
 mean to shrink] QqF1F3 (means to
 shrinke Q4). man shrink F3F4.
 [Exeunt.] Qq. Exeunt Richard &
 Ratliffe. Ff.

Enter the Lords to RICHMOND, sitting in his tent.

Lords. Good morrow, Richmond!

Richm. Cry mercy, lords and watchful gentlemen,
That you have ta'en a tardy sluggard here. 225

Lords. How have you slept, my lord?

Richm. The sweetest sleep, and fairest-boding dreams
That ever enter'd in a drowsy head,
Have I since your departure had, my lords.
Methought their souls, whose bodies Richard murder'd,
Came to my tent, and cried on victory: 231

I promise you, my soul is very jocund
In the remembrance of so fair a dream.
How far into the morning is it, lords?

Lords. Upon the stroke of four. 235

Richm. Why, then 'tis time to arm and give direction.

His oration to his soldiers.

More than I have said, loving countrymen,
The leisure and enforcement of the time
Forbids to dwell upon: yet remember this,
God and our good cause fight upon our side; 240
The prayers of holy saints and wronged souls,

223 SCENE V. Pope (ed. 1). SCENE IV.
Pope, ed. 2 (a misprint). SCENE VI.
Warburton.

Enter...] Ff. Enter the Lordes to
Richmond. Qq. Richmond wakes.
Enter Oxford, and Others, to him.
Capell.

224 *Cry mercy*] QqF₁. *Cry you mercy*
F₂F₃F₄. *I cry you mercy* Pope.

225 a] om. Q₄.
here.] *heere*? F₁F₂. *here*? F₃F₄.

227 *The...dreams*] One line in Qq. Two
in Ff.
fairest-boding] Theobald. *fairest*
boding Qq. *fairest boading* Ff.

230 *bodies*] *body* Q₇Q₈.
Richard] *Rich.* F₁.
murder'd] Johnson. *murther'd* Q₁.
murther'd Ff. *murthered* The rest.
231 *cried on victory*] QqFf. *cried out*
Victory Pope. *cried On! Victory*
Warburton.

232 *soul*] Qq. *Heart* Ff.

234 *morning*] *mourning* Q₈.

236 [arms, and comes forth. Capell.
His oration.....] QqFf. To his
Troops; who now gather about
the Tent. Capell.

239 *upon*] *on* Pope.

Like high-rear'd bulwarks, stand before our faces.
 Richard except, those whom we fight against
 Had rather have us win than him they follow :
 For what is he they follow ? truly, gentlemen, 245
 A bloody tyrant and a homicide ;
 One raised in blood, and one in blood establish'd ;
 One that made means to come by what he hath,
 And slaughter'd those that were the means to help him ;
 A base foul stone, made precious by the foil 250
 Of England's chair, where he is falsely set ;
 One that hath ever been God's enemy :
 Then, if you fight against God's enemy,
 God will in justice ward you as his soldiers ;
 If you do sweat to put a tyrant down, 255
 You sleep in peace, the tyrant being slain ;
 If you do fight against your country's foes,
 Your country's fat shall pay your pains the hire ;
 If you do fight in safeguard of your wives,
 Your wives shall welcome home the conquerors ; 260
 If you do free your children from the sword,
 Your children's children quit it in your age.
 Then, in the name of God and all these rights,
 Advance your standards, draw your willing swords.
 For me, the ransom of my bold attempt 265
 Shall be this cold corpse on the earth's cold face ;
 But if I thrive, the gain of my attempt
 The least of you shall share his part thereof.

242 *high-rear'd*] *high road* Q₄.243 *Richard except,*] *Richard, except* Q₁
Q₂.247 *establish'd*] Ff. *established* Qq.248 *what*] *that* Q₇Q₈.249 *slaughter'd*] Ff. *slaughtered* Q₃
slandered Q₄. *slaughtered* The rest.250 *foil*] *foile* Q₁Q₂ *soile* Q₃Q₄Q₆. *soyle*
Q₆F₁Q₇F₂Q₈F₃ *soyl* F₄.254 *ward*] *reward* Q₈.255 *do*] om. Q₆Q₇Q₈.*sweat*] *sweate* Q₁Q₂. *swears* The
rest.256 *You*] *You'll* Hanmer.258 *fat*] *fats* Long MS.259 *do*] *stos* F₃.262 *quii*] Pope. *quits* QqFf.267 *attempt*] *attempt*,— Seymour conj.

Sound drums and trumpets boldly and cheerfully ;
 God and Saint George ! Richmond and victory ! [*Exeunt.*

www.libtool.com.cn

Re-enter KING RICHARD, RATCLIFF, *Attendants and Forces.*

K. Rich. What said Northumberland as touching Richmond ? 271

Rat. That he was never trained up in arms.

K. Rich. He said the truth : and what said Surrey, then ?

Rat. He smiled and said 'The better for our purpose.'

K. Rich. He was in the right ; and so indeed it is.

[*The clock striketh.*

Tell the clock there. Give me a calendar. 276

Who saw the sun to-day ?

Rat. Not I, my lord.

K. Rich. Then he disdains to shine ; for by the book He should have braved the east an hour ago :

A black day will it be to somebody. 280

Ratcliff !

Rat. My lord ?

K. Rich. The sun will not be seen to-day ;

269 *trumpets*] *trumpet* F₂.

boldly and] *boldly* Pope. *bold and* Staunton.

270 [*Exeunt.*] Shouts, &c. and *Exeunt.* Capell. om. QqFf.

271 SCENE VI. Pope (ed. 1). SCENE VII. Pope (ed. 2).

Re-enter...] *Re-enter* Richard, and Ratcliffe; *Attendants*, and *Forces*, with them. Capell. Enter King Richard, Rat. &c. Qq. Enter King Richard, Ratcliffe, and Catesby. Ff

273 *then f*] *then.* F₄.

275 *in the*] *i' th'* Pope.

[*The clock striketh.*] Qq. Clocke

strikes. Ff (Clocke F₂).

276, 277 *Tell.....to-day*] As in Pope. As two lines in QqFf, ending *there. ...to day*?

278 (booke brought) Collier MS. A calendar brought. Collier (ed. 2).

279 *braved*] *brac'd* Jackson conj.

280 *will it*] *it will* Rowe (ed. 2).

280, 281 *somebody.* Ratcliff f] *somebody.*

—*Ratcliffe,*— Capell. *some bodie*

Rat. Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆ *somebody.*

Ratcliffe. Ff. *some body,* Q₇. *some body.* Q₈.

281 *Ratcliff*] Put in a separate line first by Johnson.

282 *lord*] Pope. *Lord.* QqFf.

The sky doth frown and lour upon our army.
 I would these dewy tears were from the ground.
 Not shine to-day! Why, what is that to me 285
 More than to Richmond? for the selfsame heaven
 That frowns on me looks sadly upon him.

Re-enter NORFOLK.

Nor. Arm, arm, my lord; the foe vaunts in the field.
K. Rich. Come, bustle, bustle. Caparison my horse.
 Call up Lord Stanley, bid him bring his power: 290
 I will lead forth my soldiers to the plain,
 And thus my battle shall be ordered:
 My foreward shall be drawn out all in length,
 Consisting equally of horse and foot;
 Our archers shall be placed in the midst: 295
 John Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Earl of Surrey,
 Shall have the leading of this foot and horse.
 They thus directed, we will follow
 In the main battle, whose puissance on either side
 Shall be well winged with our chiefest horse. 300
 This, and Saint George to boot! What think'st thou,
 Norfolk?

Nor. A good direction, warlike sovereign.
 This found I on my tent this morning.

[He sheweth him a paper.]

288 *Re-enter...]* Enter... QqFf.

vaunts] *vants* Q₄.

293 *shall be drawn out all]* *battel shall*
be drawn Hanmer. *rankes shall be*
drawn out Collier MS.

out all] Q₁. The rest omit.

297 *this]* Q₁Q₂. *the* The rest.

298 *we]* *we our self* Pope.

follow] *follow them* Collier, ed. 2
 (Collier MS.). *follow them* Keight-
 ley. *follow after* or *follow on*
 (omitting *on* in the next line)

Wright conj.

299 *whose puissance]* *which* Pope.

301 *This...Norfolk?]* One line in Qq.
 Two in Ff.

boot] *bootes* Q₁Q₂.

think'st] Ff. *thinkst* Q₁. *thinkst*

The rest. *think* Rowe (ed. 2).

Norfolk] *Norfolke* Q₁. *Nor.* Q₂Q₃

Q₄Q₅. *not* Q₂Q₇Q₈. *Norfolke* Ff.

303 *This]* *This paper* Pope.

[He sheweth.....:] Qq. om. Ff.

Giving a Scrawl. Rowe.

K. Rich. [*Reads*] 'Jockey of Norfolk, be not so bold,
For Dickon thy master is bought and sold.' 305
A thing devised by the enemy.
Go, gentlemen, every man unto his charge :
Let not our babbling dreams affright our souls :
Conscience is but a word that cowards use,
Devised at first to keep the strong in awe : 310
Our strong arms be our conscience, swords our law.
March on, join bravely, let us to't pell-mell ;
If not to heaven, then hand in hand to hell.

His oration to his Army.

What shall I say more than I have inferr'd ?
Remember whom you are to cope withal ; 315
A sort of vagabonds, rascals, and runaways,
A scum of Bretons, and base lackey peasants,
Whom their o'er-cloyed country vomits forth
To desperate ventures and assured destruction.
You sleeping safe, they bring to you unrest ; 320
You having lands and blest with beauteous wives,

- 304 *K. Rich.* [*Reads*] *Capell.* *Reads.* 312 *to't*] *F₄.* *too't* *F₁F₂F₃.* *to it* *Q₁Q₂*
Rowe. *om.* *QqFf.* *Q₈.* *too it* *Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇.*
so] *too* *Capell.* *to* *Q₆Q₇Q₈.*
306 *A thing*] *Capell.* *King.* *A thing* 314 *His oration...*] *Qq.* *Omitted in*
QqFf. *Ff.* *turning to his Troops.* *Capell.*
[*throws it away.* *Capell.* 315 *whom*] *who* *Q₇Q₈.*
every man unto] *Qq.* *every man to* *to cope*] *in cope* *Q₇Q₈.*
Ff. *go each man to* *Pope.* 316 *rascals, and*] *rascals,* *F₂F₃F₄.* *of*
308—311 *Let not...law.*] *Spoken aside,* *rascals,* *Pope.*
Mason conj. *rascals*] *Q₄Ff.* *rascals* *The rest.*
309 *Conscience is but*] *Q₁Q₂.* *For con-* 317 *Bretons*] *Capell.* *Britains* *Q₁Q₂Q₃*
science is *Ff.* *Conscience is* *The* *Q₅.* *Britains* *Q₄Q₆F₁Q₇F₂Q₈*
rest. *Britains* *F₃F₄.* *Britons* *Pope.*
311 *conscience, swords our*] *conscience* 319 *lackey peasants*] *Hyphened in* *F₁.*
swords, our *Q₁.* *ventures*] *Capell.* *adventures* *QqFf.*
conscience] *consciences* *Q₇.* *assured*] *om.* *Pope* (*reading* *adven-*
swords] *our swords* *Q₇Q₈.* *tures*).
320 *to you*] *Q₁.* *you to* *The rest.*

They would restrain the one, distain the other.
 And who doth lead them but a paltry fellow,
 Long kept in Bretagne at our mother's cost?
 A milk-sop, one that never in his life 325
 Felt so much cold as over shoes in snow?
 Let's whip these stragglers o'er the seas again,
 Lash hence these overweening rags of France,
 These famish'd beggars, weary of their lives,
 Who, but for dreaming on this fond exploit, 330
 For want of means, poor rats, had hang'd themselves:
 If we be conquer'd, let men conquer us,
 And not these bastard Bretons, whom our fathers
 Have in their own land beaten, bobb'd, and thump'd,
 And in record left them the heirs of shame. 335
 Shall these enjoy our lands? lie with our wives?
 Ravish our daughters? [*Drum afar off.*] Hark! I hear
 their drum.
 Fight, gentlemen of England! fight, bold yeomen!
 Draw, archers, draw your arrows to the head!
 Spur your proud horses hard, and ride in blood; 340
 Amaze the welkin with your broken staves!

322 *restrain*] *distrain* Hanmer (Warburton).

323, 324, 326 *fellow, ...cost? ...snow?* Capell. *fellow? ...cost, ...snow:* Qq Ff.

324 *Bretagne*] Hanmer. *Brittains* Qq. *Britains* F₁F₂. *Britain* F₃F₄. *our mother's*] *his mother's* Pope, ed. 2 (Theobald). *our brother's* Capell.

325 *milk-sop*] F₃F₄. *milksop* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₆. *milksope* Q₆. *milks-sop* F₁Q₇F₂Q₈.

326 *conquer'd*] Rowe. *conquered* Qq Ff.

327 *these*] *those* Rowe.

bastard Bretons] Capell. *bastard Britains* Q₁Q₂. *bastard Britains* F₁. *bastard-Britains* F₃F₄. *bastard Britains* The rest. *bastard Britons* Pope.

335 *in record*] Q₁Q₂. *on record* The rest.

heirs] *heire* Q₇.

336 *lands*] *land* Q₆.

337 *Ravish...drum.*] One line in Qq. Two in Ff.

[*Drum...*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

their] *there* Q₇Q₈.

338 *Fight*] Q₁Q₂Q₆. *Right* The rest. *bold*] Q₁. *boldly* The rest.

339 *your*] *you* Q₇.

Enter a Messenger.

What says Lord Stanley? will he bring his power?

Mess. My lord, he doth deny to come.

K. Rich. Off with his son George's head!

Nor. My lord, the enemy is past the marsh : 345
After the battle let George Stanley die.

K. Rich. A thousand hearts are great within my
bosom :

Advance our standards, set upon our foes ;
Our ancient word of courage, fair Saint George,
Inspire us with the spleen of fiery dragons ! 350
Upon them! · Victory sits on our helms. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *Another part of the field.*

*Alarum: excursions. Enter NORFOLK and forces fighting; to him
CATESBY.*

Cate. Rescue, my Lord of Norfolk, rescue, rescue!
The king enacts more wonders than a man,
Daring an opposite to every danger:
His horse is slain, and all on foot he fights,
Seeking for Richmond in the throat of death. 5
Rescue, fair lord, or else the day is lost!

342 *Enter...*] Ff. Omitted in Qq.

343 *come*] *come to you* Capell.

344 *Off*] *Off instantly* Hanmer.
with his] *with's* S. Walker conj.

351 *on*] *one* Q₇.
helms] *helms* Q₁Q₂Q₄Q₆. *helpes* Q₃
Q₅Q₆F₁Q₇F₂. *helps* F₃F₄.
[*Exeunt.*] Q₁Q₂. The rest omit.
Drums, and *Exeunt.* Capell.

SCENE IV.] Capell. SCENE VII. Pope
(ed. 1). SCENE VIII. Pope (ed. 2).

Scene continued in Ff.

Another...] Capell.

Alarum: excursions.] QqFf.

Enter Norfolk.....] Capell. *Enter
Catesby.* QqFf.

1 *Rescue...rescue*!] One line in Qq.
Two in Ff.

3 *Daring an opposite*] *Daring and op-
posite* Q₆. *A daring opposite* War-
burton conj.

Alarums. Enter KING RICHARD.
www.libtool.com.cn

K. Rich. A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a horse!

Cate. Withdraw, my lord; I'll help you to a horse.

K. Rich. Slave, I have set my life upon a cast,
And I will stand the hazard of the die. 10

I think there be six Richmonds in the field;

Five have I slain to-day instead of him.

A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a horse! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *Another part of the field.*

*Alarum. Enter RICHARD and RICHMOND; they fight. RICHARD is slain.
Retreat and flourish. Re-enter RICHMOND, DERBY bearing the crown,
with divers other Lords.*

Richm. God and your arms be praised, victorious
friends!

The day is ours; the bloody dog is dead.

Der. Courageous Richmond, well hast thou acquit
thee.

Lo, here, this long usurped royalty
From the dead temples of this bloody wretch 5

7 *Alarums.] Ff. om. Qq.*

Enter...] Enter Richard. QqFf.

10 *dis] day Q₄.*

13 [*Exeunt.] Theobald. om. QqFf.*

*SCENE V.] Dyce. Ff, Pope, Capell,
&c. continue the Scene.*

Another part...] Dyce.

*Alarum. Enter.....Re-enter Rich-
mond...] Alarum. Enter.....Enter
Richmond..... Ff. Alarum, Enter
Richard and Richmond, they fight,
Richard is slain then retraits being
sounded. Enter Richmond, Darby,
bearing the Crowns, with other*

*Lords. Qq (Lords, &c. Q₁). See note
(xxvii).*

1 *God...friends!] One line in Qq. Two
in Ff.*

arms] arme Q₇.

2 *dog] hog quoted by Rann.*

3, &c. *Der.] Stan. Pope.*

3, 4 *Courageous...royalty] As in Qq.
As three lines in Ff, ending Rich-
mond...Loe...Royalties.*

4 *this...royalty] Q₁. this...roialties Q₂
Q₃Q₄Q₅Q₆Q₇Q₈. these.....Royalties
Ff.*

Have I pluck'd off, to grace thy brows withal:
Wear it, enjoy it, and make much of it.

Richm. Great God of heaven, say amen to all!
But, tell me, is young George Stanley living?

Der. He is, my lord, and safe in Leicester town; 10
Whither, if it please you, we may now withdraw us.

Richm. What men of name are slain on either side?

Der. John Duke of Norfolk, Walter Lord Ferrers,
Sir Robert Brakenbury, and Sir William Brandon.

Richm. Inter their bodies as becomes their births: 15
Proclaim a pardon to the soldiers fled,
That in submission will return to us:

And then, as we have ta'en the sacrament,
We will unite the white rose and the red.

Smile heaven upon this fair conjunction, 20

That long have frown'd upon their enmity!

What traitor hears me, and says not amen?

England hath long been mad, and scarr'd herself;

The brother blindly shed the brother's blood,

The father rashly slaughter'd his own son, 25

7 *enjoy it*] Q₁Q₂. The rest omit.

make much] *make use* Rowe.

9 *tell me*] *tell me first* Pope. *tell me pray* Keightley. *tell me now* Dyce (ed. 2).

young] *your son* Capell.

11 *Whither*] *Whether* Q₁Q₇Q₈F₃.

if it please you] Qq (*ift* Q₈ *please* Q₁). *if you please* Ff. *if you so please* Pope.

if...us] *if you please we will withdraw us now* Keightley conj.

now] Qq. om. Ff.

12 *name*] QqF₁F₂. *note* F₃F₄.

13 *Der.*] Ff. om. Qq.

13, 14 *John.....Brandon.*] As prose in Qq.

13 *Walter*] FfQ₆Q₇Q₈. *Water* Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅. *Walter the Pope*.

Ferrers] Capell. *Ferris* QqFf.

14 *Brakenbury*] F₄. *Brookenbury* Q₁Q₂. *Brokenbury* The rest. *and*] om. Pope.

15 *becomes*] Rowe. *become* QqFf.

20 *Smile heaven*] *Smile, heaven*, Anon. conj. *Smile, heavens*, S. Walker conj.

20, 21 *heaven...have*] Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₄Q₅F₁F₂F₃. *heaven...hath* Q₆Q₇Q₈F₄.

23 *scarr'd*] *scar'd* F₄.

25 *rashly*] *madly* Capell.

slaughter'd] F₃F₄. *slaughterd* Q₁. *slaughtered* The rest.

The son, compell'd, been butcher to the sire :
 All this divided York and Lancaster,
 Divided in their dire division,
 O, now let Richmond and Elizabeth,
 The true succeeders of each royal house, 30
 By God's fair ordinance conjoin together !
 And let their heirs, God, if thy will be so,
 Enrich the time to come with smooth-faced peace,
 With smiling plenty and fair prosperous days !
 Abate the edge of traitors, gracious Lord, 35
 That would reduce these bloody days again,
 And make poor England weep in streams of blood !
 Let them not live to taste this land's increase,
 That would with treason wound this fair land's peace !
 Now civil wounds are stopp'd, peace lives again : 40
 That she may long live here, God say amen ! [Exeunt.

26 *son...butcher...the*] *sonnes...butcher*
...the F₂ sons...butcher...the F₃
Sons...Butchers...the F₄ sons...
butchers...their Johnson.
sire] *father Q₈.*

27, 28 *All...division,*] Put in the margin by Pope.

27 *this*] *that* Rann (Johnson conj.).

27, 28 *Lancaster, Divided*] *Lancaster.*
Divided Grant White. *Lancaster*
Divided Perring conj.

28 *Divided in their*] *Did usher in. Their*
 Anon. conj.
division,] Rann (Johnson conj.).

division. QqFf.

32 *their*] Q₁Q₂Q₈ *thy* The rest.
thy] *they* Q₆Q₈Q₇Q₈.

33 *smooth-faced*] *Smooth-fac'd* Ff.
smooth-faste Q₁Q₂Q₃Q₆ *smooth-fast*
 Q₄ *smooth-fac't* Q₆Q₇Q₈.

34 *days*] *day* Rowe (ed. 1).

35 *Abate*] *Rebate* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

40 *again*] *agen* Ff.

41 *here*] Q₄F₂Q₈F₃F₄. *heere* F₁. *heere*
 The rest.

[Exeunt.] Ff. om. Qq.

NOTES.

NOTE I.

THE first and second Folios give the title of this play as follows: 'The Tragedy of Richard the Third: with the Landing of Earle Richmond, and the Battell at Bosworth Field.' The third and fourth Folios give the same except that for 'Earle Richmond,' they have 'the Earl of Richmond.' The running title in all is: 'The Life and Death of Richard the Third.'

The Acts and Scenes are marked throughout in the Folios, but not in the Quartos.

NOTE II.

i. 1. 98—100. Pope reconstructed the whole passage thus:

'What, fellow? nought to do with mistress *Shore*?
I tell you Sir, he that doth naught with her,
Excepting one, were best to do it secretly.'

Steevens, rejecting the word 'alone' as an interpolation, would arrange the last and the following lines thus:

'Were best to do it secretly.'

Bra. What one

My lord?

Glou. Her husband, knave:—Wouldst thou betray me?

Capell also had omitted 'alone,' but made an Alexandrine by continuing the line to 'my lord.'

NOTE III.

i. 3. 17. Theobald substitutes 'Stanley' for 'Derby' throughout, observing, 'This is a blunder of inadvertence, which has run thro' the

whole chain of impressions. It could not well be original in Shakespeare, who was most minutely acquainted with his history and the intermarriages of the nobility.... Thomas Lord Stanley was not created Earl of Derby till after the accession of that prince (i.e. Henry VII.); and, accordingly, afterwards in the fourth and fifth Acts of this play, before the battel of Bosworth-field, he is every where call'd Lord Stanley. This sufficiently justifies the change I have made in his title.'

This statement is not quite correct. He is called 'Derby' (the word being, of course, variously spelt) throughout the first and second Acts. He is called 'Lord Stanley' for the first time in Act III. Scene 2. In Act III. Scene 4, he is called 'Derby' in the stage directions and 'Stanley' in the text. He is 'Stanley' in Act IV. Scene 1. In Act IV. Scenes 2 and 3 [4], we find in the Folio 'Stanley' both in the stage directions and the text. In the Quarto it is 'Derby' in the stage directions, the name not occurring in the text. In Act IV. Scene 4 [5], he is called 'Derby' in the stage directions. In Act V. Scene 2, Richmond speaks of him as 'my father Stanley,' and in the next scene he is called 'Derby' in the stage directions, and 'Stanley' in the text.

The error must have been due to the author, who would not have written 'my lord of Stanley,' and therefore we have retained 'Derby' wherever both Quarto and Folio agree in reading it. 'An editor,' says Mr Grant White, 'is not justifiable in substituting what his author should have written for what he did write.'

NOTE IV.

i. 3. 322. In Capell's copy of the seventh Quarto an old MS. corrector has converted 'we come' into 'welcome.'

NOTE V.

i. 4. 75. After this line which is assigned to 'Keep,' like the foregoing lines, the Folios insert the stage direction, 'Enter Brakenbury the Lieutenant,' and then prefix '*Bra.*' to the next line, as if Brakenbury and the keeper had been two different persons, instead of being identical as they are in the Quartos. Pope restored the reading of the Quartos. Mr Grant White defends the stage directions of the Folios thus: 'It was a violation of all propriety to make Sir Robert Brakenbury, Lieutenant of the Tower, go about with a bunch of ponderous keys at his girdle or in his hand. These keys were evidently carried by the keeper, a higher

sort of gaoler, but a person of rank much inferior to that of Brakenbury, the commander of the Tower. The stage direction and the prefixes of the Quartos are probably the result of the limited number of actors in Shakespeare's company when the play was first produced, which caused the easily merged parts of the *Keeper* and *Brakenbury* to be assigned to one performer.'

But Clarence was no common prisoner, and there would be no degradation in Brakenbury's acting in person as keeper to a prince of the blood, at a time when even menial offices were rendered by gentlemen of good birth not only to royal personages but also to others. We may observe—though this is of little weight—that the corrector has omitted to provide for the *exit* of the Keeper.

On the whole we have decided to adhere to the Quartos, as they undoubtedly give what Shakespeare originally wrote, and the alteration found in the Folios is not of such obvious propriety that we should unhesitatingly attribute it to the hand of the author.

NOTE VI.

i. 4. 110. The speeches in this part of the scene, which are obviously prose, are printed in the Quartos and Folios as lines of verse of various lengths.

NOTE VII.

i. 4. 257—265. This passage, including the lines immediately preceding, stands thus in the first Quarto, which is followed by the rest, substantially:

'2 What shall we doe?

Cl. Relent, and saue your soules.

1 Relent, tis cowardly and womanish.

Cl. Not to relent, is beastly, sauage, diuelish,

My friend, I spie some pittie in thy lookes:

Oh if thy eye be not a flatterer,

Come thou on my side, and intreat for me,

A begging Prince, what begger pitties not?'

It is thus amplified in the Folios:

'2 What shall we do?

Clar. Relent, and saue your soules:

Which of you, if you were a Princes Sonne,

Being pent from Liberty, as I am now,
 If two such murtherers as your selues came to you,
 Would not intreat for life, as you would begge
 Were you in my distresse.

1 Relent? no: 'Tis cowardly and womanish.

Cl. Not to relent, is beastly, sauage, diuellish:
 My Friend, I spy some pittie in thy lookes:
 O, if thine eye be not a Flatterer,
 Come thou on my side, and intreate for mee,
 A begging Prince, what begger pitties not.

2 Looke behinde you, my Lord.'

Pope adopted the reading of the Quartos, rejecting the last line 'A begging...not?' He was followed by Hanmer and Capell except that the latter retained the line which Pope rejected. Theobald followed the Folios, reading *for life? Ah! you...distress*. Johnson, who gives in his text the arrangement which Warburton had borrowed from Theobald, says, in a note: 'I cannot but suspect that the lines, which Mr Pope observed not to be in the old edition, are now misplaced, and should be inserted here, somewhat after this manner.

"*Cl.* A begging...pities not?

Vil. A begging prince!

Cl. Which of you if you were a prince's son, &c."

Upon this provocation the villain naturally strikes him.'

The arrangement which we have adopted was first suggested by Tyrwhitt, and introduced into the text by Steevens, 1793. It involves a rather violent transposition, but we see no better remedy. As the lines omitted in the Quarto have all the appearance of being Shakespeare's own, we cannot leave them out of the text. We think, however, that they are out of their right place in the Folio, and that the transposition suggested by Johnson does not yield a satisfactory sense.

Mr Grant White says: 'Mr Knight, Mr Collier, Mr Verplanck, and Mr Hudson follow the Folio; the last only attaining a tolerable sense, by supposing *Clarence's* question, as it appears in the Folio, to end at "would not intreat for life," and the *Murderer* to interrupt him in the beginning of a new sentence, thus:—

"Which of you, &c.....

Would not entreat for life? As you would beg,

Were you in my distress,—

1 *Murd.* Relent!" &c.—

presuming, I suppose, the Duke to be about to say, "As you would beg, &c., *so I beg*," &c. I am unable to look so far into *Clarence's* intentions as to decide upon the merits of this reading.'

The punctuation proposed by Mr Hudson had suggested itself independently to Mr Spedding. The chief objection however to the reading of the Folio still remains, viz. the awkwardness of the murderer's taking up Clarence's word 'Relent' after so long an interval. If, as we suppose, Shakespeare wrote those additional lines in the margin of his original MS., nothing is more likely than that a copyist should have misplaced them. In iv. 4. 52, 53, two lines undoubtedly added by Shakespeare are thus misplaced in the Folio :

'That reignes in gauled eyes of weeping soules :
That excellent grand Tyrant of the earth.'

Similarly in Act II. Scene 1, the line

'Of you Lord Wooduill, and Lord Scales of you,'

which the corrector intended to follow 66, is placed in the Folio after 67. We have not introduced this line into the text, because Shakespeare would not have introduced it after line 66 as it stands in the Quarto, nor have altered that line as it is altered in the Folio.

See also iv. 4. 100—104, where, in correcting one mistake of transposition, another has been made.

See also Note (xix).

Mr Collier in his second edition, following in other respects the Folio, inserts three words suggested by his MS. corrector, thus :

'Would not entreat for life? As you would beg
Were you in my distress, *so pity me.*'

Mr Knight's arrangement (ed. 1839), in which he says he has followed 'the Folio, instead of adopting the arbitrary regulations of the modern editors,' is this :

'*Clar.* Not.....devilish.
My friend.....
.....pities not?
Which of you.....
.....distress?'

Here perhaps the printer has mistaken Mr Knight's marginal directions. If such an error can escape the notice of so careful an editor, how likely is it to occur in the Folio which could hardly be said to have an editor at all!

NOTE VIII.

www.libtool.com.cn

II. 3. 12. Johnson supposed that a line had been lost between lines 12 and 13 after 'government.' Malone conjectured that one had been lost after 'council under him,' line 13.

NOTE IX.

II. 4. 1, 2. The Quarto here reads :

'Last night I heare they lay at Northhampton,
At Stonistratford will they be to night.'

The Folio :

'Last night I heard they lay at Stony Stratford,
And at Northampton they do rest to night.'

Pope :

'I heard they lay the last night at Northampton,
At Stony-Stratford they do rest to-night.'

Capell :

'Last night, I hear, they rested at Northampton ;
At Stony-stratford they do lye to-night.'

The correction found in the Folio was probably made, as Malone says, simply for the sake of the metre. The Folio reading accidentally coincides with the statement of Hall's Chronicle, but (what is of more consequence) it is inconsistent with the next line of the Archbishop's speech.

NOTE X.

II. 4. 38. We have followed the Folios in reading 'Enter a Messenger' and in assigning the speeches that follow to him rather than to the Marquess Dorset as is the case in the Quartos. The change must have been deliberate, and as the Queen does not greet the person who brings the intelligence, and expresses no anxiety for his safety when she herself is going to sanctuary, it seems more proper that the messenger should be one of inferior rank than one so nearly connected with the Queen. His ignorance of the cause of the arrest of the nobles and the terms in which he speaks of them are in keeping with the character of a

messenger. In Act iv. Scene 1, the Queen, apparently, meets Dorset for the first time since Richard's designs were disclosed, and passionately urges his escape.

Mr Vaughan retains the reading of the Quartos, but omits 'Marquess' between 'Lord' and 'Dorset,' ending the lines *Dorset....my lord,...prince! ...then?*

NOTE XI.

III. 1. 169, &c. The reading of the first Quarto is:

'Well then no more but this:
Go gentle Catesby, and as it were a farre off,
Sound thou Lo: Hastings, how he stands affected
Vnto our purpose, if he be willing,
Encourage him, &c.'

NOTE XII.

III. 2. 91—93. In the first Quarto the passage reads thus:

'But come my Lo: shall we to the tower?
Hast. I go: but stay, heare you not the newes,
This day those men you talkt of, are beheaded.'

The reading of the Folios, which we have retained, is not satisfactory, and looks like an attempt of the editors to amend the defective metre of the Quartos. The scene opens at four in the morning, and yet Stanley is made to say, 'the day is spent.'

NOTE XIII.

III. 4. 5. We retain here the reading in which both the earliest Quartos and the Folios agree. It doubtless came from the pen of the author, and is after all a pardonable inaccuracy, such as may easily escape from the pen of a rapid writer or the tongue of a ready talker.

NOTE XIV.

III. 4. 10—13. We keep the reading of the Quartos but have made a change in the arrangement of the lines. This is the text of the Quartos:

Buc. Who I my Lo? we know each others faces:
 But for our harts, he knowes no more of mine,
 Then I of yours; nor I no more of his, then you of mine:'

The Folio reads:

Buck. We know each others Faces: for our Hearts,
 He knowes no more of mine, then I of yours,
 Or I of his, my Lord, then you of mine.'

Pope follows the Folios, but reads 'Nor' for 'Or' in the last line.

NOTE XV.

III. 4. 78—80. The first Folio reads:

'Off with his Head; now by Saint *Paul* I sweare,
 I will not dine, vntill I see the same.
Louell and *Ratcliffe*, looke that it be done.'

The first Quarto has:

'Off with his head. Now by Saint Paule,
 I will not diue to day I sweare,
 Vntill I see the same, some see it done.'

Theobald altered *Ratcliffe* to *Catesby*, observing in his note, 'The scene is here in the Tower: and Lord *Hastings* was cut off on that very day, when *Rivers*, *Gray* and *Vaughan* suffered at *Pomfret*. How then could *Ratcliff* at the same instant be both in *Yorkshire* and the Tower? In the very scene preceding this we find him conducting those gentlemen to the block. The players in their edition first made the blunder, as to *Ratcliff* attending Lord *Hastings* to death: for, in the old Quarto, we find it rightly;—*Exeunt: Manet Catesby with Hastings.*' But in the next scene Theobald, while he makes *Louell* and *Catesby* bring in the head of *Hastings*, allows *Gloucester*, just before their entrance, to say, '*Catesby*, o'erlook the walls.' *Hanmer* corrected this inconsistency by reading, '*Some one o'erlook the walls.*' We have followed the Folios, for the difficulties could not be removed entirely without applying more violence to the text than an editor is justified in using.

NOTE XVI.

www.libtool.com.cn

III. 5. 10—21. In the first Quarto this passage stands as follows :

And both are ready in their offices

To grace my stratagemes. *Enter Maior.*

Glo. Here comes the Maior.

Buc. Let me alone to entertaine him. *Lo, Maior,*

Glo. Looke to the drawbridge there.

Buc. The reason we have sent for you.

Glo. Catesby ouerlooke the wals.

Buck. Harke, I heare a drumme.

Glo. Looke backe, defend thee, here are enemies.

Buc. God and our innocence defend vs.

Glo. O, O, be quiet, it is Catesby.

*Enter Catesby
with Hast. head.*

In the last line *Q₁* has *G, O, be quiet, &c.* Instead of lines 12—14, *But what...Lord mayor,* Theobald read with the Quartos.

NOTE XVII.

IV. 1. 92—94. In the second Folio there is a curious mistake here. In the margin of the first Folio, from which the second was printed, some one had inserted the stage directions, 'to Dorset,' 'to Anne,' 'to the Queene,' which the printer mistook and gave as part of the text thus :

'*Duc. Yorke.* Go to Richmond, to Dorset, to Anne, to the Queene, and good fortune guide thee, &c.'

The error is repeated in the third Folio and, strange to say, corrected in the fourth, where the stage directions are inserted in their proper places. It also inserts the word 'thou,' which had been omitted in the second and third Folios.

NOTE XVIII.

IV. 2. 47, &c. In this passage we have followed substantially the reading of the Quartos in preference to that of the Folios.

The first Quarto reads :

'*Darby*. My Lord, I heare the Marques Dorset
Is fled to Richmond, in those partes beyond the seas where he
abides.

King. Catesby. *Cat*. My Lord.

King. Rumor it abroad

That Anne my wife is sicke and like to die, &c.'

In the seventh and eighth Quartos the second line of Darby's speech is divided '...seas Where he abides.'

The first Folio has :

'*Stanley*. Know my louing Lord, the Marquesse *Dorset*

As I heare, is fled to *Richmond*,

In the parts where he abides.

Rich. Come hither *Catesby*, rumor it abroad,

That *Anne* my Wife is very grieuous sicke, &c.'

Pope follows the Folios and Rowe, except that for 'Know, my loving Lord,' he substitutes 'my lord,' ending the next line at *fled*. Steevens retains the reading of the Folios, but in other respects adopts Pope's arrangement, assigning it, more suo, to Sir Thomas Hanmer.

Mr Staunton follows Steevens as regards Stanley's speech, and then reads with the Quartos. In the preceding line he reads with the Quartos: 'How now what news with you?'

Mr Collier suspects that 'What's the news?' in line 46, is an interpolation and that the true reading is,

'How now, Lord Stanley?

Stan.

Know, my loving lord,

The Marquess Dorset, as I hear, is fled &c.'

NOTE XIX.

iv. 4, 364, 365. The first Quarto alone preserves the proper order of the lines here. Its words are :

'*King*. Harpe not one that string Madam that is past.

Qu. Harpe on it still shall I till hartstrings breake.'

The second Quarto omits the first line and gives the second to the King, thus :

'*King.* Harpe on it still shal I, till hartstrings breake.

King. Now by my George, &c.'

The third follows the second in omitting the first line, but it continues the second to the Queen. All the remaining Quartos read with the third.

The Folios give both lines, but in reverse order, thus :

..... 'graues,

Harpe on it still shall I, till heart-strings breake.

Rich. Harpe not on that string Madam, that is past.

Now by my George, &c.'

NOTE XX.

iv. 4. 443. We have here followed the reading of the Quartos, in preference to that of the Folios, in which the passage stands as follows :

'*Rich.* *Catesby*, flye to the Duke.

Cat. I will, my Lord, with all conuenient haste.

Rich. *Catesby* come hither, poste to Salisbury:'

This seems to show that the text of the Quartos has been altered in the Folios by no very skilful hand. Rowe endeavoured to amend the passage by reading in the last line 'Ratcliff, come hither,' and in this has been followed by most succeeding editors.

NOTE XXI.

iv. 4. 511—516. The Quartos here read :

'*Mes.* Your grace mistakes, the newes I bring is good,
My newes is that by sudden flood, and fall of water,
The Duke of Buckingham's armie is disperst and scattered,
And he himselfe fled, no man knowes whether.

King. O I crie you mercie, I did mistake,
Ratcliffe reward him, for the blow I gaue him.'

By substituting 'Tis' for 'My newes is' in the second line, and 'Buckingham's' for 'The Duke of Buckingham's' in the third, the reading of the Quartos might be retained.

www.libtronic.org
NOTE XXII.

iv. 5. 6—20. We have followed the Quartos in the arrangement of the lines of this scene. The Folios insert after line 5 :

‘So get thee gone : commend me to thy Lord.
Withall say, that the Queene hath heartily consented
He should espouse *Elizabeth* hir daughter.’

And in Derby’s last speech they read :

‘Well hye thee to thy Lord : I kisse his hand,
My Letter will resolue him of my minde.
Farewell.’

Pope follows the Folios, except that for ‘Withall say, that’ he reads ‘Say too.’ Capell adopts the arrangement of the Quartos, but reads, ‘Well, hie thee to thy lord’ instead of ‘Return unto thy lord.’

NOTE XXIII.

v. 3. 23—26. In the Quartos these lines are omitted in the present speech of Richmond, but inserted a few lines lower down, as will be seen from the following quotation from the first Quarto :

‘*Blunt.* Vpon my life my Lord, Ile vndertake it,
Rich. Farewell good Blunt.
Giue me some inke, and paper, in my tent,
Ile drawe the forme, and modle of our battel,
Limit each leader to his seuerall charge,
And part in iust proportion our small strength,
Come, let vs consult vpon to morrowes busines,
In to our tent, the aire is rawe and cold.’

As the Quartos omit entirely lines 27, 28 and 43, we have followed the arrangement of the Folios. In Mr Taylor’s copy of the Variorum of 1813 (now in the Library of Trinity College, Cambridge) he has marked lines 23—26 to be inserted after *Blunt*, line 44, reading ‘Good night, good Captain Blunt. Give me some ink | And.....form | And...leader | To...just | Proportion...gentlemen.’

NOTE XXIV.

v. 3. 146. ~~In the first and second Quartos the Ghosts of the two young Princes enter and speak before the Ghost of Hastings. The Folios and the other Quartos make the Ghost of Hastings enter first. As a chronological order is observed in the appearance of the other Ghosts we have thought it best in this case to follow the latter authorities.~~

This discrepancy between the two earliest editions and the rest seems to have escaped the notice of Capell and of all other editors.

NOTE XXV.

v. 3. 179. Warburton says: The players, among their other innumerable absurdities, in the representation of this tragedy, make Richard say instead of 'O coward conscience,' 'O *tyrant* conscience!'

He refers to Colley Cibber's adaptation of Shakespeare's play: 'The Tragical History of King Richard III. Altered from Shakespear. By Colley Cibber Esq.'

NOTE XXVI.

v. 3. 204—206. Johnson says: 'These lines stand with so little propriety at the end of this speech that I cannot but suspect them to be misplaced. Where then shall they be inserted? Perhaps after these words, *Fool do not flatter* (i.e. line 192).'

Rann, following Mason's suggestion, inserted them after 'I fear, I fear' (line 214), and then, says Mason, Ratcliffe's reply bidding the King not be afraid of shadows, would be natural. Mr Grant White would insert them either after line 178, 'Soft! I did but dream,' or after 212, 'I have dream'd a fearful dream.' As the Folios omit lines 212, 213, Ratcliffe's allusion to the shadows, of which he has heard nothing, is rendered absurd. Yet the absurdity escaped the notice of all editors before Capell.

NOTE XXVII.

v. 5. We have retained the stage direction of the Quartos and Folios, 'they fight, Richard is slain,' in preference to 'they fight, and exeunt fighting' of Mr Dyce, because it is probable from Derby's speech, 'From the dead temples of *this* bloody wretch,' that Richard's body is lying where he fell, in view of the audience.

www.libtool.com.cn

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ¹.

KING HENRY the Eighth.

CARDINAL WOLSEY.

CARDINAL CAMPEIUS.

CAPUCIUS, Ambassador from the Emperor Charles V.

CRANMER, Archbishop of Canterbury.

DUKE OF NORFOLK.

DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.

DUKE OF SUFFOLK.

EARL OF SURREY.

Lord Chamberlain.

Lord Chancellor.

GARDINER, Bishop of Winchester.

Bishop of Lincoln.

LORD ABERGAVENNY.

LORD SANDS.

SIR HENRY GUILDFORD.

SIR THOMAS LOVELL.

SIR ANTHONY DENNY.

SIR NICHOLAS VAUX.

Secretaries to Wolsey.

CROMWELL, Servant to Wolsey.

GRIFFITH, Gentleman-usher to Queen Katharine.

Three Gentlemen.

DOCTOR BUTTS, Physician to the King.

Garter King-at-Arms.

Surveyor to the Duke of Buckingham.

BRANDON, and a Sergeant-at-Arms.

Door-keeper of the Council-chamber. Porter, and his Man.

Page to Gardiner. A Crier.

QUEEN KATHARINE, wife to King Henry, afterwards divorced.

ANNE BULLEN, her Maid of Honour, afterwards Queen.

An old Lady, friend to Anne Bullen.

PATIENCE, woman to Queen Katharine.

Several Lords and Ladies in the Dumb Shows; Women attending upon the Queen; Scribes, Officers, Guards, and other Attendants.

Spirits.

SCENE: *London; Westminster; Kimbolton.*

¹ DRAMATIS PERSONÆ. First given, imperfectly, by Rowe.

THE FAMOUS HISTORY OF THE LIFE OF
KING HENRY VIII.

THE PROLOGUE.

I COME no more to make you laugh: things now,
 That bear a weighty and a serious brow,
 Sad, high and working, full of state and woe,
 Such noble scenes as draw the eye to flow,
 We now present. Those that can pity, here 5
 May, if they think it well, let fall a tear;
 The subject will deserve it. Such as give
 Their money out of hope they may believe,
 May here find truth too. Those that come to see
 Only a show or two, and so agree 10
 The play may pass, if they be still and willing,
 I'll undertake may see away their shilling
 Richly in two short hours. Only they
 That come to hear a merry bawdy play,
 A noise of targets, or to see a fellow 15
 In a long motley coat guarded with yellow,
 Will be deceived; for, gentle hearers, know,
 To rank our chosen truth with such a show

3 *high and working*] and *high-working*
 Staunton.
full] F₁F₄. *fall* F₂F₃.
 5 *now*] shall Pope.

10 *agree*] Pope. *a gree*, F₁. *agree*, F₂
 F₃F₄.
 11 *pass, if*] *pass*: *If* Ff.

As fool and fight is, beside forfeiting
 Our own brains and the opinion that we bring 20
 To make that only true we now intend,
 Will leave us never an understanding friend.
 Therefore, for goodness' sake, and as you are known
 The first and happiest hearers of the town,
 Be sad, as we would make ye : think ye see 25
 The very persons of our noble story
 As they were living ; think you see them great,
 And follow'd with the general throng and sweat
 Of thousand friends ; then, in a moment, see
 How soon this mightiness meets misery : 30
 And if you can be merry then, I'll say
 A man may weep upon his wedding-day.

ACT I.

SCENE I. *London. An ante-chamber in the palace.*

Enter the DUKE OF NORFOLK at one door ; at the other, the DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM and the LORD ABERGAVENNY.

Buck. Good morrow, and well met. How have ye done

19 *beside*] *besides* Pope (ed. 2).

20 *brains*] *praise* Vaughan conj., reading line 21 as Malone.

21 *To make.....intend*] *Or make ; that only truth we now intend* Hudson (Johnson conj.). *That only true to make we now intend* Tyrwhitt conj. Put in a parenthesis by Malone (Anon. conj.).

To make] *That make* Rowe.

22 *never*] *ne'er* S. Walker conj.

23 *and as*] *as* Pope.

25 *ye see*] *before ye* Theobald. *you see* Delius.

26 *noble story*] *history* Capell (Heath conj.).

28 *sweat*] *suite* Daniel conj.

ACT I. SCENE I.] Actus Primus. Scena Prima. Ff. The Acts and Scenes are indicated throughout in Ff.

London. An ante-chamber in the palace.] Theobald.

1 *ye*] *you* Pope.

Since last we saw in France?

Nor. I thank your grace,
Healthful, and ever since a fresh admirer
Of what I saw there.

Buck. An untimely ague
Stay'd me a prisoner in my chamber, when 5
Those suns of glory, those two lights of men,
Met in the vale of Andren.

Nor. 'Twixt Guynes and Arde:
I was then present, saw them salute on horseback;
Beheld them, when they 'lighted, how they clung
In their embracement, as they grew together; 10
Which had they, what four throned ones could have
weigh'd
Such a compounded one?

Buck. All the whole time
I was my chamber's prisoner.

Nor. Then you lost
The view of earthly glory: men might say,
Till this time pomp was single, but now married 15
To one above itself. Each following day
Became the next day's master, till the last
Made former wonders its. To-day the French,
All clinquant, all in gold, like heathen gods,
Shone down the English; and to-morrow they 20
Made Britain India: every man that stood
Show'd like a mine. Their dwarfish pages were

2 *saw*] F₁F₂. *saw y'* F₃F₄.

6 *suns*] *sunnes* F₁F₂. *sons* F₃F₄.

7 *Andren*] F₁. *Arde* F₂F₃F₄. *Ardes*
Rowe.

Arde] Ff. *Ardes* Rowe.

8 *them*] 'em Pope.

11 *Which....weigh'd*] One line in Rowe

(ed. 2). Two lines, the first ending
they, in Ff.

17 *next....last*] *last....next* Capell (Theobald conj.).

18 *wonders*] *wond'rers* Theobald conj.
its] *it's* Ff. *his* Hanmer.

19 *heathen*] F₁. *Heathens* F₂F₃F₄.

As cherubins, all gilt: the madams too,
 Not used to toil, did almost sweat to bear
 The pride upon them, that their very labour 25
 Was to them as a painting: now this masque
 Was cried incomparable; and the ensuing night
 Made it a fool and beggar. The two kings,
 Equal in lustre, were now best, now worst,
 As presence did present them; him in eye 30
 Still him in praise; and being present both,
 'Twas said they saw but one, and no discerner
 Durst wag his tongue in censure. When these suns—
 For so they phrase 'em—by their heralds challenged
 The noble spirits to arms, they did perform 35
 Beyond thought's compass; that former fabulous story,
 Being now seen possible enough, got credit,
 That Bevis was believed.

Buck.

O, you go far.

Nor. As I belong to worship, and affect
 In honour honesty, the tract of every thing 40
 Would by a good discourser lose some life,
 Which action's self was tongue to. All was royal;
 To the disposing of it nought rebell'd;
 Order gave each thing view; the office did
 Distinctly his full function.

Buck.

Who did guide,

I mean, who set the body and the limbs 45

33 *censure. When] Rowe. censure, when Ff.*

34 'em] *them* Malone.

36 *that] om. Wordsworth. former] old Pope.*

38 *That] And Seymour conj.*

41 *lose] loss F₁.*

42 *to] too F₁.*

42—49 *All was royal...business.] Ar-*

ranged as by Theobald. *Buc. All ...function: who...together? Nor. As you...business. F₁F₂F₃. Buck. All...function: who...together, As you guess? Nor. Once certes...business. F₄. All...view. Buc. The office...business. Collier MS.*

44 *the office] each office Roderick conj.*

Of this great sport together, as you guess?

Nor. One, certes, that promises no element
In such a business.

Buck. I pray you, who, my lord?

Nor. All this was order'd by the good discretion 50
Of the right reverend Cardinal of York.

Buck. The devil speed him! no man's pie is freed
From his ambitious finger. What had he
To do in these fierce vanities? I wonder
That such a keech can with his very bulk 55
Take up the rays o' the beneficial sun,
And keep it from the earth.

Nor. Surely, sir,
There's in him stuff that puts him to these ends;
For, being not propp'd by ancestry, whose grace
Chalks successors their way, nor call'd upon 60
For high feats done to the crown; neither allied
To eminent assistants; but, spider-like,
Out of his self-drawing web, he gives us note,
The force of his own merit makes his way;

47, 48 *guess?* *Nor. One, certes]* Theobald. *guess:* *One certes* F₁. *guess:* *Once certes* F₂F₃. *guess?* *Nor. Once, certes* F₄. *guess?* *Nor. One sure* Pope.

48 *that]* om. Seymour conj.

49 *I pray]* Pray Pope.

55 *keech]* Ketch F₄.
bulk] hulk Grey conj.

57 *Surely]* Yet surely Pope. *Now, surely* Seymour conj.

62—64 *spider-like, ...force]* spider-like
Out of his self drawing web, he
gives us note The force Spence
conj. (N. & Q., 1880). spider-like,
Out of his-self drawing web a'
gives us note: The force Vaughan
conj.

63 *his self-drawing]* his self-drawn Rowe
(ed. 2) and Capell. *himself drawing*
Theobald conj. *himself drawing his*
Hunter conj. *his self drawing*
Staunton. 's *self-drawing* Dyce,
ed. 2 (S. Walker conj.). *his self-*
wrapping Bulloch conj.

web, he gives us note] Capell. *web,*
a' gives us note or *web erecting all*
The building of his greatness, he
gives us note Id. conj. *Web. O gives*
us note F₁. *Web. O! gives us note*
F₂F₃F₄. *web; this gives us note*
Pope. *web. O! it gives us note*
Singer (ed. 2). *web,—O! give us*
note!—Knight. *web. O! this gives*
us note, Hunter conj. *web,—Oh,*
give it note! Keightley.

A gift that heaven gives for him, which buys 65
A place next to the king.

Aber. I cannot tell
What heaven hath given him; let some graver eye
Pierce into that; but I can see his pride
Peep through each part of him: whence has he that?
If not from hell, the devil is a niggard, 70
Or has given all before, and he begins
A new hell in himself.

Buck. Why the devil,
Upon this French going out, took he upon him,
Without the privity o' the king, to appoint
Who should attend on him? He makes up the file 75
Of all the gentry; for the most part such
To whom as great a charge as little honour
He meant to lay upon: and his own letter,
The honourable board of council out,
Must fetch him in he papers.

Aber. I do know 80

65 *gives for him, which buys]* *gives, which for him buys* Hanmer. *gives; which buys for him* Warburton. *gives to him, which buys* Johnson conj. *has given him buys for him* Hunter conj. *gives him, and which buys* Collier MS. *gives: for him which buys* Jervis conj. *enjoins for him, which buys* Bulloch conj. *gives free to him, which buys* Kinnear conj.

69, 70 *that ?.....hell,]* Theobald (Warburton). *that,....Hell ? Fl*

72 *himself]* *himself now* Keightley. *Why]* *But why* Hanmer. *And why* Capell.

75 *on]* om. Anon. conj.

76, 77 *such To whom]* *such* On whom Hanmer. *such Too, whom* Capell. *such, too, On whom* Keightley (S.

Walker conj.).

78 *meant]* *means* Dyce conj.

78—80 *and...papers.]* Erased in Collier MS.

78 *letter]* *letter only* Hanmer. *letters* Nicholson conj.

79, 80 *council out,....him in he]* *Council, out...him in, he* F₁F₂ *council, out...him in, he* F₃ *council out...him in, he* F₄. *Council out)....in him he* Pope. *council out,.....him (or 'em) in; he* Nicholson conj.

80 *he papers]* *the papers* Campbell. *he paupers* Staunton conj. *he prefers or he puts there* Keightley conj. *he pleases* Cartwright conj. *he palters* Nicholson conj. *the payers* Spence conj. (N. & Q., 1880). *he presses* Kinnear conj.

Kinsmen of mine, three at the least, that have
By this so sicken'd their estates that never
They shall abound as formerly.

Buck. O, many
Have broke their backs with laying manors on 'em
For this great journey. What did this vanity 85
But minister communication of
A most poor issue?

Nor. Grievingly I think,
The peace between the French and us not values
The cost that did conclude it.

Buck. Every man,
After the hideous storm that follow'd, was 90
A thing inspired, and not consulting broke
Into a general prophecy: That this tempest,
Dashing the garment of this peace, aboded
The sudden breach on 't.

Nor. Which is budded out;
For France hath flaw'd the league, and hath attach'd 95
Our merchants' goods at Bourdeaux.

Aber. Is it therefore
The ambassador is silenced?

Nor. Marry, is 't.

Aber. A proper title of a peace, and purchased
At a superfluous rate!

Buck. Why, all this business
Our reverend cardinal carried.

Nor. Like it your grace, 100

82 *sicken'd*] *slacken'd* Theobald conj.

84 *'em*] *them* Capell.

85 *What*] *And what* Capell conj.

vanity] *great vanity* Rowe (ed. 2).

86 *communication*] *the consummation*

Collier MS. *consummation* Collier
(ed. 2).

87 *issue*] Pope. *issue*. Ff.

Grievingly I think] *Grievingly, I
think*. F₄.

93 *garment*] *margent* Vaughan conj.

96 *Bourdeaux*] F₄. *Burdeux* F₁. *Bur-
deaux* F₂F₃.

98 *a peace*] *peace* F₄.

100 *Like it*] *Like 't* Hanmer.

The state takes notice of the private difference
 Betwixt you and the cardinal. I advise you—
 And take it from a heart that wishes towards you
 Honour and plenteous safety—that you read
 The cardinal's malice and his potency 105
 Together; to consider further that
 What his high hatred would effect wants not
 A minister in his power. You know his nature,
 That he's revengeful, and I know his sword
 Hath a sharp edge; it's long and 't may be said 110
 It reaches far, and where 'twill not extend,
 Thither he darts it. Bosom up my counsel;
 You'll find it wholesome. Lo, where comes that rock
 That I advise your shunning.

Enter CARDINAL WOLSEY, *the purses borne before him, certain of the*
Guard, and two Secretaries with papers. The CARDINAL in his
passage fixeth his eye on BUCKINGHAM, and BUCKINGHAM on him,
both full of disdain.

Wol. The Duke of Buckingham's surveyor, ha? 115
 Where's his examination?

First Sec. Here, so please you.

Wol. Is he in person ready?

First Sec. Ay, please your grace.

Wol. Well, we shall then know more; and Buckingham

103 *towards you*] F₁. *towards your* F₂
 F₃F₄. *you* Pope.

106 *Together; to consider further that*
Together, to consider further, that
 Vaughan conj.

107 *effect*] *affect* Rowe (ed. 2).

110 *'t may*] *it may* Steevens.

114 *advise*] *advice* F₁.

115 SCENE II. Pope.

Wol.] Rowe. Car. Ff (and through-

out).

116 *First Sec.*] 1 Sec. Capell. Sec.
 Ff.

117 *please*] *an't please* F₂F₄.

118, 119 *Well, ...look.*] As in Ff. As
 prose in Rowe (ed. 1). In Rowe
 (ed. 2), the lines end *more...look*.
It is well, ...look. Hanmer, ending
 lines 117, 118, *an't please...more*.

Shall lessen this big look. [Exeunt Wolsey and his Train.

Buck. This butcher's cur is venom-mouth'd, and I
Have not the power to muzzle him; therefore best 121
Not wake him in his slumber. A beggar's book
Outworths a noble's blood.

Nor. What, are you chafed?
Ask God for temperance; that's the appliance only
Which your disease requires.

Buck. I read in's looks 125
Matter against me, and his eye reviled
Me as his abject object: at this instant
He bores me with some trick: he's gone to the king;
I'll follow and outstare him.

Nor. Stay, my lord,
And let your reason with your choler question 130
What 'tis you go about: to climb steep hills
Requires slow pace at first: anger is like
A full-hot horse, who being allow'd his way,
Self-mettle tires him. Not a man in England
Can advise me like you: be to yourself 135
As you would to your friend.

Buck. I'll to the king;
And from a mouth of honour quite cry down
This Ipswich fellow's insolence, or proclaim
There's difference in no persons.

Nor. Be advised;
Heat not a furnace for your foe so hot 140

- | | |
|---|--|
| 119 <i>this</i>] F ₁ F ₂ . <i>his</i> F ₃ F ₄ . Wolsey] Cardinal Ff. | 123 <i>chafed</i>] <i>chaf'd</i> F ₃ F ₄ . <i>chaff'd</i> F ₁ F ₂ . |
| 120 <i>venom-mouth'd</i>] Pope. <i>venome</i> <i>mouth'd</i> Rowe. <i>venom'd-mouth'd</i> Ff. | 125 <i>in's</i>] <i>in his</i> Capell. |
| 122 <i>book</i>] <i>boche</i> Becket conj. <i>brood</i> Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). <i>look</i> Staunton conj. <i>brai</i> Lettsom conj. <i>hook</i> Cartwright conj. | 126, 127 Keightley ends the lines <i>re-</i> <i>viled me,...instant he</i> . |
| | 128 <i>bores</i>] <i>bords</i> Becket conj. <i>to the</i>] <i>to' ik'</i> F ₁ F ₂ . <i>to ik'</i> F ₃ F ₄ . |
| | 133 <i>full-hot</i>] F ₄ . <i>full hot</i> F ₁ F ₂ F ₃ . |

That it do singe yourself: we may outrun,
 By violent swiftness, that which we run at,
 And lose by over-running. Know you not,
 The fire that mounts the liquor till 't run o'er
 In seeming to augment it wastes it? Be advised: 145
 I say again, there is no English soul
 More stronger to direct you than yourself,
 If with the sap of reason you would quench,
 Or but allay, the fire of passion.

Buck.

Sir,

I am thankful to you; and I'll go along 150
 By your prescription: but this top-proud fellow—
 Whom from the flow of gall I name not, but
 From sincere motions—by intelligence
 And proofs as clear as founts in July when
 We see each grain of gravel, I do know 155
 To be corrupt and treasonous.

Nor.

Say not 'treasonous.'

Buck. To the king I'll say 't; and make my vouch
 as strong

As shore of rock. Attend. This holy fox,
 Or wolf, or both—for he is equal ravenous
 As he is subtle, and as prone to mischief 160
 As able to perform 't; his mind and place
 Infecting one another, yea, reciprocally—
 Only to show his pomp as well in France
 As here at home, suggests the king our master

143 *by]* *by our F.*

144 *till 't]* *till it Steevens.*

145 *In seeming to]* *Seeming t' S. Walker*
conj.

it ?] *Theobald. it: Ff.*

147 *More]* *om. Pope, ending lines 145,*

146 *at be...English.*

152 *name]* *blame Johnson conj.*

154 *July]* *Inly F.*

when] *where Long MS.*

159—162 *for.....reciprocally]* *Put in a*
parenthesis by Capell. (for...per-
form 't)...reciprocally, Ff.

159 *ravenous]* *ray'nous F.*

161 *perform 't]* *perform it Malone.*

To this last costly treaty, the interview, 165
 That swallow'd so much treasure, and like a glass
 Did break i' the rinsing.

Nor. Faith, and so it did.

Buck. Pray, give me favour, sir. This cunning
 cardinal

The articles o' the combination drew
 As himself pleased; and they were ratified 170
 As he cried 'Thus let be,' to as much end
 As give a crutch to the dead: but our count-cardinal
 Has done this, and 'tis well; for worthy Wolsey,
 Who cannot err, he did it. Now this follows—
 Which, as I take it, is a kind of puppy 175
 To the old dam, treason—Charles the emperor,
 Under pretence to see the queen his aunt—
 For 'twas indeed his colour, but he came
 To whisper Wolsey—here makes visitation:
 His fears were that the interview betwixt 180
 England and France might through their amity
 Breed him some prejudice; for from this league
 Peep'd harms that menaced him: he privily
 Deals with our cardinal; and, as I trow—
 Which I do well, for I am sure the emperor 185
 Paid ere he promised; whereby his suit was granted
 Ere it was ask'd—but when the way was made
 And paved with gold, the emperor thus desired,
 That he would please to alter the king's course,

165 *this last*] *his* F₄.

166 *swallow'd*] F₄. *swallowed* F₁F₂F₃.

167 *rinsing*] Pope. *wrenching* ff. *wren-*
sing Collier MS. See note (1).

168 *sir*] om. Seymour conj.

169 *o' the*] *o' th'* F₁F₂. *oth'* F₃F₄.

171 *Thus let*] F₁F₂. *Thus let it* F₃F₄.
let it Pope.

172 *count-cardinal*] *court-cardinal*
 Pope.

183 *he*] om. F₁. *he therefore* Capell.

184 *trow*] F₃F₄. *troa* F₁F₂.

185 *Which.....sure*] In a parenthesis,
 Vaughan conj.

188 *thus*] *then* Hudson (S. Walker
 conj.).

And break the foresaid peace. Let the king know, 190
 As soon he shall by me, that thus the cardinal
 Does buy and sell his honour as he pleases,
 And for his own advantage.

Nor. I am sorry
 To hear this of him, and could wish he were
 Something mistaken in 't.

Buck. No, not a syllable: 195
 I do pronounce him in that very shape
 He shall appear in proof.

*Enter BRANDON, a Sergeant at arms before him, and two or three
 of the Guard.*

Bran. Your office, sergeant; execute it.

Serg. Sir,
 My lord the Duke of Buckingham, and Earl
 Of Hereford, Stafford, and Northampton, I 200
 Arrest thee of high treason, in the name
 Of our most sovereign king.

Buck. Lo you, my lord,
 The net has fall'n upon me! I shall perish
 Under device and practice.

Bran. I am sorry
 To see you ta'en from liberty, to look on 205
 The business present: 'tis his highness' pleasure

193 *advantage.*] *advantage*,— Anon.
 conj.

194 *he*] you F₄.

198 SCENE III. Pope.

Brandon,] Marney, Capell conj.

200 *Hereford*] Capell. *Hertford* Ff.

Herford Vaughan conj.

202 *lord*,] *lord*, [to *Nor.* Capell.

204—207 *Bran. I...Tower.*] *Nor. I...*

liberty. *Bran. To look.....Tower.*
 Anon. conj.

205, 206 *liberty, to.....present: 'tis*
liberty: to...present, 'tis Collier (ed.
 2). *liberty, and t' attend The pre-*
sent business: 'tis Wordsworth
 conj.

206 *business present*] *business, present*
 Boswell.

You shall to the Tower.

Buck. It will help me nothing
To plead mine innocence; for that dye is on me
Which makes my whitest part black. The will of
heaven

Be done in this and all things! I obey. 210
O my Lord Abergavenny, fare you well!

Bran. Nay, he must bear you company. [*To Abergavenny*]
The king
Is pleased you shall to the Tower, till you know
How he determines further.

Aber. As the duke said,
The will of heaven be done, and the king's pleasure 215
By me obey'd!

Bran. Here is a warrant from
The king to attach Lord Montacute; and the bodies
Of the duke's confessor, John de la Car,
One Gilbert Peck, his chancellor,—

Buck. So, so;
These are the limbs o' the plot: no more, I hope. 220

Bran. A monk o' the Chartreux.

Buck. O, Nicholas Hopkins?

Bran. He.

Buck. My surveyor is false; the o'er-great cardinal
Hath show'd him gold; my life is spann'd already:
I am the shadow of poor Buckingham,

211 *Abergavenny*] *Aburgany* Ff.
you] *ye* Rowe.

212 [*To Abergavenny*] Johnson.

217 *Montacute*] *Mountacute* Ff. *Mont-*
tagus Rowe.

218 *Car*] *Court* Warburton.

219 *One*] *And* Pope, ed. 2 (Theobald),
chancellor,—] Capell. *chancellor.*

Pope, ed. 2 (Theobald). *Council-*
lour. F₁F₂. *Counsellour.* F₃F₄.

221 *O,*] om. Hanmer.

Nicholas] Pope, ed. 2 (Theobald,
from Holinshed). *Michaell* F₁F₂
F₃. *Michael* F₄.

Hopkins] *Henton* Collier MS.

Whose figure even this instant cloud puts on, 225
 By darkening my clear sun. My lord, farewell. [*Exeunt.*]

www.libtool.com.cn

SCENE II. *The same. The council-chamber.*

Cornets. Enter KING HENRY, leaning on the CARDINAL'S shoulder; the Nobles, and SIR THOMAS LOVELL: the CARDINAL places himself under the KING'S feet on his right side.

King. My life itself, and the best heart of it,
 Thanks you for this great care: I stood i' the level
 Of a full-charged confederacy, and give thanks
 To you that choked it. Let be call'd before us
 That gentleman of Buckingham's; in person 5
 I'll hear him his confessions justify;
 And point by point the treasons of his master
 He shall again relate.

A noise within, crying 'Room for the Queen!' Enter QUEEN KATHARINE, ushered by the DUKE OF NORFOLK, and the DUKE OF SUFFOLK: she kneels. The KING riseth from his state, takes her up, kisses and placeth her by him.

Q. Kath. Nay, we must longer kneel: I am a suitor.

225, 226 *Whose.....darkening]* *Whose figure, e'en this instant, clouds jut on, Darkning* Becket conj.

225 *figure.....instant]* *figure, even this instant, Anon. conj. (1814). figure Envy's instant or figure Envy's misty Wellesley conj.*

instant] *upstart Jackson conj. puts on]* *puts out Rann (Theobald conj.). pouts on Steevens conj. juts on Cartwright conj.*

226 *By darkening]* *Be-darkening Steevens conj. By-darkening Perring conj.*

lord] Rowe. *Lords Ff.*

SCENE II.] SCENE IV. Pope.

The same. The council-chamber.]

The council-chamber. Theobald.

Cornets. Enter...] Ff. See note (II).

3 *give]* gives F₃.

4 *choked]* *cheek'd* Keightley conj.

5 *Buckingham's; in person]* Johnson. *Buckinghams, in person, Ff. Buckingham's in person, Rowe.*

7 *of]* om. F₂.

9 *within,]* within F₁. with F₂F₃F₄. *Queen!]* *Queene, usher'd by the Duke of Norfolk. Ff.*

Enter...Suffolk:] Enter the Queene, Norfolk and Suffolke: Ff. Enter the Queen, usher'd by the Dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk. Warburton.

King. Arise, and take place by us : half your suit
 Never name to us ; you have half our power : 11
 The other moiety ere you ask is given ;
 Repeat your will and take it.

Q. Kath. Thank your majesty.
 That you would love yourself, and in that love
 Not unconsider'd leave your honour nor 15
 The dignity of your office, is the point
 Of my petition.

King. Lady mine, proceed.

Q. Kath. I am solicited, not by a few,
 And those of true condition, that your subjects
 Are in great grievance : there have been commissions 20
 Sent down among 'em, which hath flaw'd the heart
 Of all their loyalties : wherein although,
 My good lord cardinal, they vent reproaches
 Most bitterly on you as putter on
 Of these exactions, yet the king our master— 25
 Whose honour heaven shield from soil !—even he escapes
 not

Language unmannerly, yea, such which breaks
 The sides of loyalty, and almost appears
 In loud rebellion.

Nor. Not almost appears ;
 It doth appear ; for, upon these taxations, 30
 The clothiers all, not able to maintain
 The many to them 'longing, have put off
 The spinsters, carders, fullers, weavers, who,
 Unfit for other life, compell'd by hunger

10 *place*] *your place* Theobald.

15 *unconsider'd*] Pope. *unconsidered*
 FF

18 *few*] *few, to tell you* Keightley.

21 *hath*] *have* F₄.

28 *sides*] *tides* Becket conj. *ties* Collier,
 ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

32 *many*] *meiny* Johnson conj.

'*longing*] F₄. *longing* F₁F₂F₃.

And lack of other means, in desperate manner 35
 Daring the event to the teeth, are all in uproar,
 And danger serves among them.

King. Taxation!
 Wherein? and what taxation? My lord cardinal,
 You that are blamed for it alike with us,
 Know you of this taxation?

Wol. Please you, sir, 40
 I know but of a single part in aught
 Pertains to the state, and front but in that file
 Where others tell steps with me.

Q. Kath. No, my lord,
 You know no more than others: but you frame
 Things that are known alike, which are not wholesome
 To those which would not know them, and yet must 46
 Perforce be their acquaintance. These exactions,
 Whereof my sovereign would have note, they are
 Most pestilent to the hearing; and, to bear 'em,
 The back is sacrifice to the load. They say 50
 They are devised by you; or else you suffer
 Too hard an exclamation.

King. Still exaction!
 The nature of it? in what kind, let's know,
 Is this exaction?

Q. Kath. I am much too venturous 55
 In tempting of your patience, but am bolden'd
 Under your promised pardon. The subjects' grief

37 *them*] om. Vaughan conj.

41 *ought*] Theobald (ed. 2). *ought* Ff.

43, 44 *lord, ... others:*] F₄. *Lord? ... others?*
 F₁, F₂, F₃.

45 *Things that*] *The things* Seymour
 conj.

known alike] *known, belike* Collier,

ed. 2 (Theobald conj.).

49 *bear 'em*] *bear them* Capell.

51 *or else*] *if not* Seymour conj.

53 *it?*] Johnson. *it*, Ff.

54 *Is*] *In* Pope (ed. 2).

55 *bolden'd*] Pope. *boldned* Ff.

Comes through commissions, which compel from each
 The sixth part of his substance, to be levied
 Without delay; and the pretence for this
 Is named your wars in France: this makes bold mouths:
 Tongues spit their duties out, and cold hearts freeze 61
 Allegiance in them; their curses now
 Live where their prayers did; and it's come to pass,
 This tractable obedience is a slave
 To each incensed will. I would your highness 65
 Would give it quick consideration, for
 There is no primer business.

King. By my life,
 This is against our pleasure.

Wol. And for me,
 I have no further gone in this than by
 A single voice, and that not pass'd me but 70
 By learned approbation of the judges. If I am
 Traduced by ignorant tongues, which neither know
 My faculties nor person, yet will be
 The chronicles of my doing, let me say
 'Tis but the fate of place, and the rough brake 75
 That virtue must go through. We must not stint
 Our necessary actions, in the fear
 To cope malicious censurers; which ever,
 As ravenous fishes, do a vessel follow
 That is new-trimm'd, but benefit no further 80
 Than vainly longing. What we oft do best,

57 *compel*] Pope. *compels* Ff.

62 *their*] Ff. *all their* Pope. *nay, their*
 Capell. *that their* Dyce, ed. 2 (S.
 Walker conj.). *yea, their* Kinnear
 conj.

64 *This*] *That* Rowe. *Their* Collier,
 ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

67 *business*] Hanmer (Warburton) and
 Southern conj. MS. *baseness* F₁F₂,
 F₃. *baseness* F₄.

71 *learned*] *learn'd* Keightley.
of the judges] Omitted by Capell.

72 *ignorant*] om. Pope, reading as one
 line *If I'm traduc'd...know.*

By sick interpreters, once weak ones, is
 Not ours or not allow'd; what worst, as oft,
 Hitting a grosser quality, is cried up
 For our best act. If we shall stand still, 85
 In fear our notion will be mock'd or carp'd at,
 We should take root here where we sit, or sit
 State-statues only.

King. Things done well,
 And with a care, exempt themselves from fear;
 Things done without example, in their issue 90
 Are to be fear'd. Have you a precedent
 Of this commission? I believe, not any.
 We must not rend our subjects from our laws,
 And stick them in our will. Sixth part of each?
 A trembling contribution! Why, we take 95
 From every tree lop, bark, and part o' the timber,
 And though we leave it with a root, thus hack'd,
 The air will drink the sap. To every county
 Where this is question'd send our letters, with
 Free pardon to each man that has denied 100
 The force of this commission: pray, look to't;
 I put it to your care.

82 *sick...once*] *such...once* Keightley
 conj. *such...or* Lloyd conj.

interpreters, once weak ones] *inter-*
preters' conceivance Anon. conj. *in-*
terpreters' own weakness Vaughan
 conj. (withdrawn).
once] Ff. or Pope. and Becket
 conj.

85 *act*] *action* Capell.
shall] om. F₄ and Pope, who ends
 the line at *fear*.

86 *carp'd*] *carped* Pope.

87 *we sit, or sit*] *we sir*; Or *sir* F₂F₃.

87, 88 or *sit State-statues*] Hanmer. Or

sit state-statues F₁F₂, ending the
 previous line at *we sit*.

88 *done*] *that are done* Hanmer.
well,] *well, my lord,* or *well, lord*
cardinal, Keightley conj.

91 *precedent*] *President* Ff (*Ptoident*
 F₂).

95 *trembling*] *trebling* Collier, ed. 2
 (Collier MS.). *terrible* Cartwright
 conj. *troubling* Vaughan conj. (with-
 drawn).

96 *lop*] *top* Anon. conj.

97 *root, thus*] Theobald (Warburton).
roots thus Ff (*root* F₃F₄).

Wol. [To the Secretary] A word with you.
 Let there be letters writ to every shire,
 Of the king's grace and pardon. The griev'd commons
 Hardly conceive of me: let it be noised 105
 That through our intercession this revokement
 And pardon comes: I shall anon advise you
 Further in the proceeding. [Exit Secretary.]

Enter Surveyor.

Q. Kath. I am sorry that the Duke of Buckingham
 Is run in your displeasure.

King. It grieves many: 110
 The gentleman is learn'd and a most rare speaker;
 To nature none more bound; his training such
 That he may furnish and instruct great teachers,
 And never seek for aid out of himself. Yet see,
 When these so noble benefits shall prove 115
 Not well disposed, the mind growing once corrupt,
 They turn to vicious forms, ten times more ugly
 Than ever they were fair. This man so complete,
 Who was enroll'd 'mongst wonders, and when we,
 Almost with ravish'd listening, could not find 120
 His hour of speech a minute; he, my lady,
 Hath into monstrous habits put the graces

- 102 [To the Secretary] Rowe. to an
 Att. Capell. 114 *never seek for*] *ne'er seek* Ritson conj.
 104 *grieved*] *griev'd* Rowe. *never seek* Vaughan conj.
 108 [Exit...] Exit Secret. Ff. Exit *Yet see,*] Put in a separate line by
 Att. Capell. Capell.
 109 SCENE V. Pope. 115 *these so*] om. Pope, reading *Yet...*
I am] *I'm* Pope. *prove* as one line.
 110 *run*] *one* Collier MS. 118 *complete*] *'complish'd* Hanmer.
 King.] Quee. F₃. 119, 120 *'mongst wonders.....ravish'd*
 111 *is learn'd...rare*] *is learn'd, a most*
rare Pope. *is learned; a rare*
Seymour conj. *'s learned and a*
most rare Vaughan conj. 119 *when*] *whom* Vaughan conj.
 120 *ravish'd listening*] *list'ning ravish'd*
 Pope.

That once were his, and is become as black
 As if besmear'd in hell. Sit by us; you shall hear—
 This was his gentleman in trust—of him 125
 Things to strike honour sad. Bid him recount
 The fore-recited practices; whereof
 We cannot feel too little, hear too much.

Wol. Stand forth, and with bold spirit relate what you,
 Most like a careful subject, have collected 130
 Out of the Duke of Buckingham.

King. Speak freely.

Surv. First, it was usual with him, every day
 It would infect his speech, that if the king
 Should without issue die, he'll carry it so 135
 To make the sceptre his: these very words
 I've heard him utter to his son-in-law,
 Lord Abergavenny, to whom by oath he menaced
 Revenge upon the cardinal.

Wol. Please your highness, note
 This dangerous conception in this point.
 Not friended by his wish, to your high person 140
 His will is most malignant, and it stretches
 Beyond you to your friends.

Q. Kath. My learn'd lord cardinal,
 Deliver all with charity.

King. Speak on:

124 *by us*] om. Pope.

you] and *you* F₄.

126 [to *Wol.*] Collier MS.

127 *The fore-recited*] *To force-recited*
 Rowe (ed. 2). *To - fore - recited*
 Pope.

132 *him, every day*] Pope. *him; every*
day F₁F₂F₃. *him every day* F₄.
him every day, Rowe.

134 *he 'U*] *he 'd* Pope.

136 *I've*] *I have* Steevens.

137 *Abergavenny*] *Aburgany* Ff.

138 *your highness*] *you* Hammer.

139 *This*] *His* Pope. *The Keightley*
 conj.

139, 140 *point. Not.....person*] *point:*
Not...person Capell. *point, Not...*
wish to...person; Ff.

140 *friended*] *ended* Watkins Lloyd
 conj. (N. & Q., 1888), reading *His*
 in line 139.

142 *learn'd*] F₁. *learned* F₂F₃F₄.

How grounded he his title to the crown
 Upon our fail? to this point hast thou heard him 145
 At any time speak aught?

Surv. He was brought to this

By a vain prophecy of Nicholas Henton.

King. What was that Henton?

Surv. Sir, a Chartreux friar,

His confessor, who fed him every minute

With words of sovereignty.

King. How know'st thou this? 150

Surv. Not long before your highness sped to France,
 The duke being at the Rose, within the parish
 Saint Lawrence Poultney, did of me demand .

What was the speech among the Londoners

Concerning the French journey: I replied, 155

Men fear'd the French would prove perfidious,

To the king's danger. Presently the duke

Said, 'twas the fear indeed, and that he doubted

'Twould prove the verity of certain words

Spoke by a holy monk; 'that oft,' says he, 160

'Hath sent to me, wishing me to permit

John de la Car, my chaplain, a choice hour

To hear from him a matter of some moment:

Whom after under the confession's seal

He solemnly had sworn, that what he spoke 165

My chaplain to no creature living but

145 *fail?*] Rowe (ed. 2). *fails*; Ff.

146 *aught*] Theobald. *ought* Ff.

brought] *wrought* S. Walker conj.

147 *Henton*] Ff. *Hopkins* Pope, ed. 2
 (Theobald). *Hopkins'* Keightley.

148 *Henton*] Ff. *Hopkins* Pope, ed. 2
 (Theobald).

153 *Poultney*] *Poultrey* Pope.

154 *among*] *amongst* Steevens (1793).

156 *fear'd*] Pope. *fears* F₁F₂, *fear* F₃,
 F₄.

162 *Car*] *Court* Warburton.

164—167 *Whom after...utter,*] Ff. *Who*
 (*after...utter*) Pope.

164 *confession's*] Theobald (from Hol-
 inshed). *commissions* Ff. *com-
 munion's* Warburton conj. (with-
 drawn).

To me should utter, with demure confidence
 This pausingly ensued: Neither the king nor's heirs,
 Tell you the duke, shall prosper: bid him strive
 To gain the love o' the commonalty: the duke 170
 Shall govern England.'

Q. Kath. If I know you well,
 You were the duke's surveyor and lost your office
 On the complaint o' the tenants: take good heed
 You charge not in your spleen a noble person
 And spoil your nobler soul: I say, take heed; 175
 Yes, heartily beseech you.

King. Let him on.
 Go forward.

Surv. On my soul, I'll speak but truth.
 I told my lord the duke, by the devil's illusions
 The monk might be deceived; and that 'twas dangerous
 for him

To ruminare on this so far, until 180
 It forged him some design, which, being believed,
 It was much like to do: he answer'd 'Tush,
 It can do me no damage;' adding further,

167 *demure confidence*] *confidence demure* Hanmer.

168 *This*] *Thus* F₄.
nor's] *nor his* Capell.

169, 170 *bid him strive To gain the love*] *bid him Strive to (or for) the love* Vaughan conj.

170 *To gain*] F₄. *To* F₁F₂F₃. *For* Steevens (1773, 1778). *To get* Collier MS. *To win* Grant White conj.
o' the] *of the* Steevens.

171 *England.*] Ff. *England*—Rowe.

175 *nobler*] F₁. *noble* F₂F₃F₄.

176 *beseech*] F₁F₂. *I beseech* F₃F₄.

176, 177 *Let him...forward.*] As in Pope.

One line in Ff.

179, 180 *dangerous for him To...until*] Capell. *dangerous For this to...until* Ff. *dangerous For him to...until* Rowe. *dangerous For him to ruminare on this, until* Pope. *dangerous From this to ruminare on it so far, until* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). *dangerous From this to ruminare on it, until* Collier conj. *dangerous For him to ruminare this so far, until* Lettson conj. *dangerous For this to ruminare this so far, until* Vaughan conj.
 179 *for him*] om. Anon. conj.

That, had the king in his last sickness fail'd,
The cardinal's and Sir Thomas Lovell's heads 185
Should have gone off.

King. Ha! what, so rank? Ah, ha!
There's mischief in this man: canst thou say further?

Surv. I can, my liege.

King. Proceed.

Surv. Being at Greenwich,
After your highness had reprov'd the duke
About Sir William Bulmer,—

King. I remember 190
Of such a time: being my sworn servant,
The duke retain'd him his. But on; what hence?

Surv. 'If' quoth he 'I for this had been committed,
As to the Tower I thought, I would have play'd 195
The part my father meant to act upon
The usurper Richard; who, being at Salisbury,
Made suit to come in's presence; which if granted,
As he made semblance of his duty, would
Have put his knife into him.'

King. A giant traitor!

Wol. Now, madam, may his highness live in freedom,
And this man out of prison?

Q. Kath. God mend all! 201

King. There's something more would out of thee;
what say'st?

190 *Bulmer*] Clar. Press ed. (from Holinshed). *Blumer* Ff. *Blomer* Pope.

190, 191 *I remember...servant,*] Arranged as in Pope. One line in Ff.

190 *remember*] *remember me* Vaughan conj. (withdrawn).

191 *being*] *he being* Pope.

sworn servant] *servant sworn* Stee-

vens (1793).

193 *this*] *this deed* F₄.

194 *As to the Tower I thought*] *To the Tower, as I thought* Hanmer. *As I thought to the Tower* Keightley. *thought,*] *thought*; Ff.

197 *in 's*] *in his* Capell.

198 *would*] *he would* Hanmer. *a' would* Vaughan conj. *he'd* Wordsworth.

201 *prison?*] Rowe. *Prison*. Ff.

Surv. After 'the duke his father,' with the 'knife,'
 He stretch'd him, and with one hand on his dagger,
 Another spread on's breast, mounting his eyes, 205
 He did discharge a horrible oath, whose tenour
 Was, were he evil used, he would outgo
 His father by as much as a performance
 Does an irresolute purpose.

King. There's his period,
 To sheathe his knife in us. He is attach'd; 210
 Call him to present trial: if he may
 Find mercy in the law, 'tis his; if none,
 Let him not seek 't of us: by day and night!
 He's traitor to the height. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III. *An antechamber in the palace.*

Enter the LORD CHAMBERLAIN and LORD SANDS.

Cham. Is 't possible the spells of France should juggle
 Men into such strange mysteries?

Sands. New customs,
 Though they be never so ridiculous,
 Nay, let 'em be unmanly, yet are follow'd.

Cham. As far as I see, all the good our English 5
 Have got by the late voyage is but merely

203 'the duke his father'] First marked
 as a quotation by Capell.

'knife'] First marked as a quota-
 tion by Capell.

205 on's] on his Capell.

213 night!] *night*, Theobald. *night*
 Ff.

214 He's traitor] *He is a daring traitor*
 Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).
 SCENE III.] SCENE VI. Pope.

antechamber...] apartment... Theo-
 bald. Anti-room... Capell.
 Sands] Rowe. Sandys Ff.
 Seymour conjectures that this Scene
 is interpolated by Ben Jonson.

1 Is't] *Is it* Stevens.

2 mysteries] *mimickries* Hanmer.
mockeries Warburton.

4 'em] *them* Malone.

6 late] *last* Rowe (ed. 2).

A fit or two o' the face; but they are shrewd ones;
 For when they hold 'em, you would swear directly
 Their very noses had been counsellors
 To Pepin or Clotharius, they keep state so. 10

Sands. They have all new legs, and lame ones: one
 would take it,

That never saw 'em pace before, the spavin
 Or springhalt reign'd among 'em.

Cham. Death! my lord,
 Their clothes are after such a pagan cut too,
 That, sure, they've worn out Christendom.

Enter SIR THOMAS LOVELL.

How now! 15

What news, Sir Thomas Lovell?

Lov. Faith, my lord,
 I hear of none but the new proclamation
 That's clapp'd upon the court-gate.

Cham. What is't for?

Lov. The reformation of our travell'd gallants,
 That fill the court with quarrels, talk, and tailors. 20

Cham. I'm glad 'tis there: now I would pray our
 monsieurs

To think an English courtier may be wise,
 And never see the Louvre.

Lov. They must either,

8, 13, 42, 43 'em] *them* Malone.

11 *They*.....*take it,*] One line in Pope.
 Two in Ff.

12 *never*] *ever* Capell conj.
saw 'em] Pope. *see 'em* Ff. *saw*
them Capell.

13 *Or*] Verplanck (Collier conj.). *And*
 Pope. *A* Ff.
springhalt] *stringhalt* Hanmer
 (Theobald conj.).

reign'd] *rain'd* F₁.

14 *too*] F₄. *too'* F₃. *too't* F₁F₂.

15 *they've*] Pope. *th' have* Ff.

Enter...] Ff, after *Louell*, line 16.

21 *I'm...monsieurs*] As in Pope. Two
 lines in Ff.

I'm] *I me* F₃.

23 *see*] *saw* Collier MS.

Louvre] Rowe. *Louure* F₁F₂. *Louvre*
 F₃F₄.

For so run the conditions, leave those remnants
 Of fool and feather that they got in France, 25
 With all their honourable points of ignorance
 Pertaining thereunto, as fights and fireworks,
 Abusing better men than they can be
 Out of a foreign wisdom, renouncing clean
 The faith they have in tennis and tall stockings, 30
 Short blister'd breeches and those types of travel,
 And understand again like honest men,
 Or pack to their old playfellows: there, I take it,
 They may, 'cum privilegio,' wear away
 The lag end of their lewdness, and be laugh'd at. 35

Sands. 'Tis time to give 'em phisic, their diseases
 Are grown so catching.

Cham. What a loss our ladies
 Will have of these trim vanities!

Lov. Ay, marry,
 There will be woe indeed, lords: the sly whoresons
 Have got a speeding trick to lay down ladies; 40
 A French song and a fiddle has no fellow.

Sands. The devil fiddle 'em! I am glad they are going,
 For, sure, there's no converting of 'em: now
 An honest country lord, as I am, beaten
 A long time out of play, may bring his plain-song, 45
 And have an hour of hearing; and, by'r lady,
 Held current music too.

Cham. Well said, Lord Sands;

- | | |
|---|--|
| 24 <i>those</i>] <i>these</i> Steevens (1778). | conj. |
| 26 <i>their</i>] <i>the</i> Collier MS. | 36 'em] F ₁ . <i>them</i> F ₄ . <i>him</i> F ₂ F ₃ . |
| 27 <i>thereunto</i>] <i>thereupon</i> Rowe (ed. 2). | 41 <i>has</i>] <i>have</i> Collier MS. |
| 29 <i>renouncing clean</i>] <i>clean renouncing</i> Pope. | 42 <i>The...going,</i>] One line in Pope. Two in Ff. |
| 31 <i>blister'd</i>] <i>blistred</i> F ₁ F ₂ F ₃ . <i>bolstred</i> F ₄ . <i>those</i>] <i>such</i> Hanmer. | 43 <i>of 'em: now</i>] F ₁ F ₂ F ₃ . 'em: now F ₄ . 'em: now <i>sirs</i> , Pope. |
| 34 <i>wear</i>] F ₂ F ₃ F ₄ . <i>wes</i> F ₁ . 'oui' Anon. | 47 <i>Held</i>] Ff. <i>Hold</i> Boswell. |

Your colt's tooth is not cast yet.

Sands.

No, my lord ;

Nor shall not, while I have a stump.

Cham.

Sir Thomas,

Whither were you a-going ?

Lov.

To the cardinal's :

50

Your lordship is a guest too.

Cham.

O, 'tis true :

This night he makes a supper, and a great one,

To many lords and ladies ; there will be

The beauty of this kingdom, I'll assure you.

Lov. That churchman bears a bounteous mind indeed,

A hand as fruitful as the land that feeds us ;

56

His dews fall every where.

Cham.

No doubt he's noble ;

He had a black mouth that said other of him.

Sands. He may, my lord ; has wherewithal : in him

Sparing would show a worse sin than ill doctrine :

60

Men of his way should be most liberal ;

They are set here for examples.

Cham.

True, they are so ;

But few now give so great ones. My barge stays ;

Your lordship shall along. Come, good Sir Thomas,

We shall be late else ; which I would not be,

65

48 *yet.*] Capell. *yet?* Ff.

49 *shall*] *shalt* F₂.

50 *were*] *are* Rowe (ed. 2).

a-going] *a going* Ff. *going* Warburton.

55 *That...indeed,*] One line in Pope.

Two in Ff, the first ending *Churchman*.

57 *dews fall*] *dew falls* Rowe.

59 *He...him*] One line in Rowe (ed. 2).

Two in Ff, the first ending *Lord*.

has] *ha's* Ff. *has* Rowe (ed. 2). *he*

has Capell.

wherewithal: in him] *wherewithal:*

in him, Theobald (Thirlby conj.).

wherewithall in him; Ff.

61 *way*] *sway* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

62 *They are*] *They're* Pope.

set] *sent* Collier MS.

63 *But...stays*;] One line in Rowe (ed. 2). Two in Ff.

For I was spoke to, with Sir Henry Guildford
This night to be comptrollers.

Sands.

I am your lordship's. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *A hall in York Place.*

Hautboys. *A small table under a state for the CARDINAL, a longer table for the guests. Then enter ANNE BULLEN and divers other Ladies and Gentlemen as guests, at one door; at another door, enter SIR HENRY GUILDFORD.*

Guild. Ladies, a general welcome from his grace
Salutes ye all; this night he dedicates
To fair content and you: none here, he hopes,
In all this noble bevy, has brought with her
One care abroad; he would have all as merry 5
As, first, good company, good wine, good welcome,
Can make good people.

Enter LORD CHAMBERLAIN, LORD SANDS, and SIR THOMAS LOVELL.

O, my lord, you're tardy:
The very thought of this fair company
Clapp'd wings to me.

Cham.

You are young, Sir Harry Guildford.

SCENE IV.] SCENE VII. Pope.

A hall in York Place.] Capell.

York-house. Theobald.

Gentlemen] Gentlewomen, Steevens.

Hautboys.] Hoboies. F₁F₂. Hoboyes. F₃. Hoboys. F₄.

1 *Ladies.....grace*] One line in Pope.
Two in Ff.

5 *merry*] *merry*, F₄. *merry*: F₁F₂F₃.

6 *first, good*] F₁F₂F₃. *first good* F₄.
first-good Theobald. *fairs, good*
Mason conj. *feast, good* Staunton
conj. *just good* Grant White conj.

far as good Dyce, ed. 2 (Halliwell
conj.). *thirst, good* Anon. conj. *sirs,*
good Bulloch conj. *fair good* Kin-
near conj. *frisk, good* Nicholson
conj. (doubtfully). *fruits, good*
Vaughan conj. *frost, good* Anon.
conj.

good wine] *then good wine* Hanmer.

7 Sir Thomas Lovell.] Capell. Louell
Ff.

you're] Capell. *y' are* Ff. *you are*
Steevens.

9 *You are*] *You're* Pope.

Sands. Sir Thomas Lovell, had the cardinal 10
But half my lay thoughts in him, some of these
Should find a running banquet ere they rested,
I think would better please 'em: by my life,
They are a sweet society of fair ones.

Lov. O, that your lordship were but now confessor 15
To one or two of these!

Sands. I would I were;
They should find easy penance.

Lov. Faith, how easy?

Sands. As easy as a down-bed would afford it.

Cham. Sweet ladies, will it please you sit? Sir Harry,
Place you that side; I'll take the charge of this: 20
His grace is entering. Nay, you must not freeze;
Two women placed together makes cold weather:
My Lord Sands, you are one will keep 'em waking;
Pray, sit between these ladies.

Sands. By my faith,
And thank your lordship. By your leave, sweet ladies:
If I chance to talk a little wild, forgive me; 26
I had it from my father.

Anne. Was he mad, sir?

Sands. O, very mad, exceeding mad, in love too:
But he would bite none; just as I do now,
He would kiss you twenty with a breath. [*Kisses her.*]

Cham. Well said, my lord. 31
So, now you're fairly seated. Gentlemen,
The penance lies on you, if these fair ladies
Pass away frowning.

11 *lay thoughts*] Hyphenated in Ff.

22 *makes*] *make* Pope.

25 [Seating himself between Anne Bul-
len, and another Lady. Capell.

30 *He would*] *He'd* Hanmer.

[*Kisses her.*] Steevens.

31 *you're*] Capell. *y' are* Ff. *you are*
Steevens.

Sands. For my little cure,
Let me alone.

Hautboys. Enter CARDINAL WOLSEY, and takes his state.

Wol. You're welcome, my fair guests: that noble lady
Or gentleman that is not freely merry, 36
Is not my friend: this, to confirm my welcome;
And to you all, good health. [*Drinks.*]

Sands. Your grace is noble:
Let me have such a bowl may hold my thanks,
And save me so much talking.

Wol. My Lord Sands, 40
I am beholding to you: cheer your neighbours.
Ladies, you are not merry: gentlemen,
Whose fault is this?

Sands. The red wine first must rise
In their fair cheeks, my lord; then we shall have 'em
Talk us to silence.

Anne. You are a merry gamester, 45
My Lord Sands.

Sands. Yes, if I make my play.
Here's to your ladyship: and pledge it, madam,
For 'tis to such a thing—

Anne. You cannot show me.

Sands. I told your grace they would talk anon.

[*Drum and trumpet: chambers discharged.*]

33 *cure*] *cue* Rowe.

35, 64 *Hautboys.*] *Hoboyes.* F₁F₂F₃.
Hoboyes. F₄.

35, 52 *You're*] *Capell.* *Y' are* Ff. *You are* Steevens. *Ye're* Dyce.

37 *friend*] *fiend* F₂.

38 [*Drinks.*] *Theobald.* om. Ff.

41 *beholding*] *beholden* Pope.

neighbours] F₁. *neighbour* F₂F₃F₄.

44, 57, 58 *'em*] *them* Malone.

45, 46 *You are.....Sands.*] As one line, Boswell conj.

46 *make*] *may make* Hanmer. *may choose* Capell. *can make* Keightley.

48 *thing*—] Rowe. *thing.* Ff.

49 *they*] *that they* Rowe (ed. 2). *how they* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

[*Drum...*] Ff (Trumpets. F₄), after line 48. Trumpets within..... Capell.

Wol.

What's that?

Cham. Look out there, some of ye. [*Exit Servant.*]

Wol. www.libtool.com.cn What warlike voice,

And to what end, is this? Nay, ladies, fear not; 51
By all the laws of war you're privileged.

Re-enter Servant.

Cham. How now! what is 't?

Serv. A noble troop of strangers;
For so they seem: they've left their barge, and landed;
And hither make, as great ambassadors 55
From foreign princes.

Wol. Good lord chamberlain,
Go, give 'em welcome; you can speak the French tongue;
And, pray, receive 'em nobly and conduct 'em
Into our presence, where this heaven of beauty
Shall shine at full upon them. Some attend him. 60

[Exit Chamberlain, attended. All rise, and tables removed.]

You have now a broken banquet; but we'll mend it.
A good digestion to you all: and once more
I shower a welcome on ye; welcome all.

Hautboys. Enter the KING and others, as masquers, habited like shepherds,
ushered by the LORD CHAMBERLAIN. They pass directly before the
CARDINAL, and gracefully salute him.

A noble company! what are their pleasures?

50 *ye]* you Capell.

[*Exit Servant.*] Steevens (1778).

Exit an Att. Capell. om. Ff.

53 *Re-enter Servant.*] Steevens. *Re-*
enter an Attendant. Capell. Enter
a *Servant.* Ff.

54 *they've]* Collier. *th' have* F₁F₂F₃.
they have F₄. *have* Pope.

57 *the French tongue]* the *French-tongue*
F₄. *the French or their tongue* Anon.
conj.

60 [*Exit...attended.*] Capell. om. Ff.

61 *You have]* *You've* Pope.

62 *digestion]* F₁. *digestion* F₂F₃F₄.
and] om. Seymour conj.

63 *ye]* you Capell.

64 the King and others,] King and
others; Ff. the King and twelve
others, Malone (from Holinshed).
shepherds,] shepherds, with sixteen
torch-bearers; Malone (from Hol-
inshed).

Cham. Because they speak no English, thus they
 pray'd
 To tell your grace, that, having heard by fame 65
 Of this so noble and so fair assembly
 This night to meet here, they could do no less,
 Out of the great respect they bear to beauty,
 But leave their flocks, and under your fair conduct 70
 Crave leave to view these ladies and entreat
 An hour of revels with 'em.

Wol. Say, lord chamberlain,
 They have done my poor house grace; for which I pay
 'em
 A thousand thanks and pray 'em take their pleasures.

[*They choose. The King chooses Anne Bullen.*]

King. The fairest hand I ever touch'd! O beauty, 75
 Till now I never knew thee! [*Music. Dance.*]

Wol. My lord!

Cham. Your grace?

Wol. Pray, tell 'em thus much from me:
 There should be one amongst 'em, by his person,
 More worthy this place than myself; to whom,
 If I but knew him, with my love and duty 80
 I would surrender it.

Cham. I will, my lord. [*Whispers the Masquers.*]

Wol. What say they?

Cham. Such a one, they all confess,
 There is indeed; which they would have your grace

65 *pray'd*] *pray'd me* Collier, ed. 2 (S. Walker conj. and Collier MS.).

72, 73, 74 'em] Ff. *them* Capell.

73, 74 *They have.....pleasures.*] As in Pope. As three lines in Ff, ending *grace...thanks...pleasures.*

73 *They have*] *They've* Pope.

74 [They choose.....] Choose Ladies,

King and Anne Bullen. Ff (An. F₁).

77 *My lord*] *Good my lord* Hanmer.

77, 78 'em] Ff. *them* Malone.

77 *from me*] *as from me* Hanmer.

81 [Whispers the Masquers.] Capell. Whisper. Ff (after it).

Find out, and he will take it.

Wol. Let me see then.

By all your good leaves, gentlemen; here I'll make
My royal choice. 85

King. [*Unmasking*] Ye have found him, cardinal:
You hold a fair assembly; you do well, lord:
You are a churchman, or, I'll tell you, cardinal,
I should judge now unhappily.

Wol. I am glad

Your grace is grown so pleasant,

King. My lord chamberlain, 90
Prithee, come hither: what fair lady's that?

Cham. An't please your grace, Sir Thomas Bullen's
daughter,
The Viscount Rochford, one of her highness' women.

King. By heaven, she is a dainty one. Sweetheart,
I were unmannerly, to take you out, 95
And not to kiss you. A health, gentlemen!
Let it go round.

Wol. Sir Thomas Lovell, is the banquet ready
I' the privy chamber?

Lov. Yes, my lord.

Wol. Your grace,
I fear, with dancing is a little heated. 100

King. I fear, too much.

Wol. There's fresher air, my lord,
In the next chamber.

84 [Comes from his State. Capell.

86 [Unmasking] Capell. om. Ff.

Ye have] *You have* Rowe. *You've*
Pope.

89 *now*] *you* Rowe (ed. 2).

92, 93 *An't...women.*] As in Pope. As
three lines in Ff, ending *Grace...*
Rochford...women.

93 *highness*] *Highness* F₁F₂F₃. *High-*
nesses F₄.

94 *she is*] Ff. *she's* Rowe.

[To Anne Bullen. Rowe.

95 (dance againe) Collier MS.

96 (kisses her) Collier MS.

101 *I fear*] *In faith* Wordsworth conj.
fresher] *fresh* F₂F₄.

King. Lead in your ladies, every one. Sweet partner,
I must not yet forsake you. Let's be merry,
Good my lord cardinal: I have half a dozen healths 105
To drink to these fair ladies, and a measure
To lead 'em once again; and then let's dream
Who's best in favour. Let the music knock it.

[*Exeunt with trumpets.*]

ACT II.

SCENE I. *Westminster. A street.*

Enter two Gentlemen, meeting.

First Gent. Whither away so fast?

Sec. Gent. O, God save ye!
Even to the hall, to hear what shall become
Of the great Duke of Buckingham.

First Gent. I'll save you
That labour, sir. All's now done, but the ceremony
Of bringing back the prisoner.

Sec. Gent. Were you there? 5

First Gent. Yes, indeed was I.

Sec. Gent. Pray, speak what has happen'd.

First Gent. You may guess quickly what.

Sec. Gent. Is he found guilty?

104, 105 *merry, ... cardinal.*] Ff. *merry.*

Good...cardinal, Warburton.

105 *half*] om. Rowe (ed. 2).

107 *'em*] *them* Malone.

108 *knock it*] *strike* Hanmer.

Westminster.....] Edd. A Street.

Theobald. London... Dyce.

meeting.] Capell. at seuerall

Doores. Ff.

1 *fast?*] *fast, sir?* Capell.

O...ye!] *O, sir, I'm bound* Wordsworth.

O,] *O sir,* Pope.

ye] *you* Capell. *you, sir* Keightley.

2 *Even*] *Ev'n* Ff.

6 *happen'd.*] *happened.* Rowe (ed. 2).

happen'd? Pope.

First Gent. Yes, truly is he, and condemn'd upon 't.

Sec. Gent. I am sorry for 't.

First Gent. So are a number more.

Sec. Gent. But, pray, how pass'd it? 10

First Gent. I'll tell you in a little. The great duke
Came to the bar; where to his accusations
He pleaded still not guilty, and alleged
Many sharp reasons to defeat the law.
The king's attorney on the contrary 15
Urged on the examinations, proofs, confessions
Of divers witnesses; which the duke desired
To have brought viva voce to his face:
At which appear'd against him his surveyor;
Sir Gilbert Peck his chancellor; and John Car, 20
Confessor to him; with that devil monk,
Hopkins, that made this mischief.

Sec. Gent. That was he
That fed him with his prophecies?

First Gent. The same.
All these accused him strongly; which he fain
Would have flung from him, but indeed he could not:
And so his peers upon this evidence 26
Have found him guilty of high treason. Much
He spoke, and learnedly, for life, but all
Was either pitied in him or forgotten.

Sec. Gent. After all this, how did he bear himself?

First Gent. When he was brought again to the bar,
to hear 31
His knell rung out, his judgement, he was stirr'd

8 *Yes...upon 't.*] One line in Pope.

Two in Ff.

9 *I am*] *I'm* Pope.

13 *not*] *nor* F₂.

16 *the*] om. Pope.

18 *have*] F₄. *him* F₁F₂F₃.

20 *Car*] *Court* Warburton.

22 *Hopkins*] *Henton* Collier MS.

23 *prophecies?*] Capell. *Prophecies*. Ff.
same.] Rowe. *same*, Ff.

31 *again*] Rowe. *agen* Ff.

32 *knell rung*] Hyphened in F₄.

With such an agony, he sweat extremely,
 And something spoke in choler, ill and hasty:
 But he fell to himself again and sweetly 35
 In all the rest show'd a most noble patience.

Sec. Gent. I do not think he fears death.

First Gent. Sure, he does not;

He never was so womanish; the cause
 He may a little grieve at.

Sec. Gent. Certainly

The cardinal is the end of this.

First Gent. 'Tis likely, 40

By all conjectures: first, Kildare's attainder,
 Then deputy of Ireland; who removed,
 Earl Surrey was sent thither, and in haste too,
 Lest he should help his father.

Sec. Gent. That trick of state

Was a deep envious one.

First Gent. At his return 45

No doubt he will requite it. This is noted,
 And generally, whoever the king favours,
 The cardinal instantly will find employment,
 And far enough from court too.

Sec. Gent. All the commons

Hate him perniciously, and, o' my conscience, 50
 Wish him ten fathom deep: this duke as much
 They love and dote on; call him bounteous Buckingham,
 The mirror of all courtesy—

First Gent. Stay there, sir,

And see the noble ruin'd man you speak of.

33 *sweat*] *sweet* Dyce.

40 *the end*] *at the end* Long MS.

41 *attainder*] *Attendure* F₁F₂. *Attain-*
dure F₃F₄.

45 *deep envious*] *deep-envious* Dyce,
 ed. 2 (S. Walker conj.).

48 *instantly...employment*] *instantly...
 employment for F₄. will find em-
 ployment for Hanmer.*

51 *fathom*] F₄. *faddom* F₁F₂F₃.

53 *courtesy*—] *courtesy*: Capell. *cour-*
tesia. Ff.

Enter BUCKINGHAM *from his arraignment, tipstaves before him, the axe with the edge towards him, halberds on each side, accompanied with* SIR THOMAS LOVELL, SIR NICHOLAS VAUX, SIR WILLIAM SANDS, *and common people, &c.*

Sec. Gent. Let's stand close, and behold him.

Buck. All good people,

You that thus far have come to pity me, 56
 Hear what I say, and then go home and lose me.
 I have this day received a traitor's judgement,
 And by that name must die: yet, heaven bear witness,
 And if I have a conscience, let it sink me, 60
 Even as the axe falls, if I be not faithful!
 The law I bear no malice for my death;
 'T has done upon the premisses but justice:
 But those that sought it I could wish more Christians:
 Be what they will, I heartily forgive 'em: 65
 Yet let 'em look they glory not in mischief,
 Nor build their evils on the graves of great men;
 For then my guiltless blood must cry against 'em.
 For further life in this world I ne'er hope,
 Nor will I sue, although the king have mercies 70
 More than I dare make faults. You few that loved me
 And dare be bold to weep for Buckingham,
 His noble friends and fellows, whom to leave
 Is only bitter to him, only dying,

55 SCENE II. Pope.

Enter...] Ff (after *courtesie*, line 53).

Transposed by Capell.

Sir William Sands,] Theobald (from Holinshed). Sir Walter Sands, F₁.

Walter Sands, F₂F₃F₄.

56 *far*] *farre* F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

60 *And if*] *An if* Vaughan conj.

62 *The law*] F₁F₂. *To th' law* F₃F₄.

63 *'T has*] F₃F₄. *T' has* F₁F₂. *It has*

Malone.

65, 66, 68 *'em*] *them* Malone.

67 *evils*] *evies* Smith apud Grey conj.

68 *against*] *'gainst* Steevens (1773).

70 *have*] *hath* or *has* Seymour conj.

71 *More...me*] One line in Rowe (ed. 2).

Two in Ff.

dare] *could* or *durst* Delius conj.

om. Vaughan conj. *'ld e'er* Id. conj.

can Wordsworth conj.

Go with me, like good angels, to my end, 75
 And, as the long divorce of steel falls on me,
 Make of your prayers one sweet sacrifice
 And lift my soul to heaven. Lead on, o' God's name.

Lov. I do beseech your grace, for charity,
 If ever any malice in your heart 80
 Were hid against me, now to forgive me frankly.

Buck. Sir Thomas Lovell, I as free forgive you
 As I would be forgiven: I forgive all;
 There cannot be those numberless offences
 'Gainst me, that I cannot take peace with: no black envy 86
 Shall mark my grave. Commend me to his grace,
 And if he speak of Buckingham, pray tell him
 You met him half in heaven: my vows and prayers
 Yet are the king's, and, till my soul forsake,
 Shall cry for blessings on him: may he live 90
 Longer than I have time to tell his years!
 Ever beloved and loving may his rule be!
 And when old time shall lead him to his end,
 Goodness and he fill up one monument!

Lov. To the water side I must conduct your grace;
 Then give my charge up to Sir Nicholas Vaux, 96

78 *And...name.*] One line in Pope.
 Two in Ff.

o'] Theobald. *a* Ff.

81 *to]* om. Pope.

85, 86 *'Gainst...grace,*] Two lines in
 Pope. Three lines, ending *with:...*
Grave...Grace: in Ff.

85 *that I cannot take]* *I can't take* Pope.
that I can't take Malone. *I cannot*
take Dyce (ed. 2). *I cannot* Lloyd
 conj.

85, 86 *take.....mark]* Hanmer (War-
 burton). *take...make* Ff. *make...*
take Johnson conj. *take...shake*

Heath conj. *make...take to* Herr
 conj. *take...wake* Vaughan conj.

85, 86 *no black...grave]* *no! black...grave*
 Anon. conj. (Gent. Mag.). *With no*
black envy shall I make my grave
 Martley conj., reading as a separate
 line.

85 *envy]* *enmity* Herr conj.

89 *forsake]* *forsake me* F₄.

Keightley conjectures that a line is
 lost here.

92 *may...be]* *be his rule* Seymour
 conj.

Who undertakes you to your end.

Vaux.

Prepare there;

The duke is coming: see the barge be ready,

And fit it with such furniture as suits

The greatness of his person.

Buck.

Nay, Sir Nicholas,

100

Let it alone; my state now will but mock me.

When I came hither; I was lord high constable

And Duke of Buckingham; now, poor Edward Bohun:

Yet I am richer than my base accusers,

That never knew what truth meant: I now seal it; 105

And with that blood will make 'em one day groan for't.

My noble father, Henry of Buckingham,

Who first raised head against usurping Richard,

Flying for succour to his servant Banister,

Being distress'd, was by that wretch betray'd, 110

And without trial fell; God's peace be with him!

Henry the Seventh succeeding, truly pitying

My father's loss, like a most royal prince,

Restored me to my honours, and out of ruins

Made my name once more noble. Now his son, 115

Henry the Eighth, life, honour, name and all

That made me happy, at one stroke has taken

For ever from the world. I had my trial,

And must needs say, a noble one; which makes me

A little happier than my wretched father: 120

Yet thus far we are one in fortunes: both

Fell by our servants, by those men we loved most;

A most unnatural and faithless service!

101 *now will*] *will now* Whalley conj.

103 *Bohun*] *Stafford* Peck conj.

105 *seal it*] *seal* Vaughan conj.

106 *'em*] *them* Steevens.

116 *life, honour, name*] *name, honour,*

life Pope.

121 *we are*] F_1F_2 *are we* F_3F_4 .

fortunes] *fortune* Rowe.

122 *most*] om. Pope.

Heaven has an end in all: yet, you that hear me,
 This from a dying man receive as certain: 125
 Where you are liberal of your loves and counsels
 Be sure you be not loose; for those you make friends
 And give your hearts to, when they once perceive
 The least rub in your fortunes, fall away
 Like water from ye, never found again 130
 But where they mean to sink ye. All good people,
 Pray for me! I must now forsake ye: the last hour
 Of my long weary life is come upon me.
 Farewell:
 And when you would say something that is sad, 135
 Speak how I fell. I have done; and God forgive me!

[*Exeunt Duke and Train.*]

First Gent. O, this is full of pity! Sir, it calls,
 I fear, too many curses on their heads
 That were the authors.

Sec. Gent. If the duke be guiltless,
 'Tis full of woe: yet I can give you inkling 140
 Of an ensuing evil, if it fall,
 Greater than this.

First Gent. Good angels keep it from us!
 What may it be? You do not doubt my faith, sir?

Sec. Gent. This secret is so weighty, 'twill require

124 *an end]* *a hand* Vaughan conj.
 (doubtfully).

127 *Be sure you be]* *Be sure, be* Vaughan
 conj.
for] om. Pope.
friends] *friends of* Vaughan conj.
 om. Id. conj.

128 *to,]* F₂F₄. *to;* F₁F₂.

131 *where]* *when* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier
 MS.).

132 *now forsake]* *leave* Pope.

ye] om. Vaughan conj.

133 *long weary]* *long-weary* S. Walker
 conj.

134, 135 *Farewell:...sad,]* As in Capell.
 One line in Ff.

135 *that is]* om. Pope, reading 134, 135
 as one line.

136 *Speak...me!]* Two lines in Ff. One
 line in Pope, reading *I've* for *I*
have.

143 *What]* *Where* Reed (1803).

A strong faith to conceal it.

First Gent. Let me have it ; 145
I do not talk much.

Sec. Gent. I am confident ;
You shall, sir : did you not of late days hear
A buzzing of a separation
Between the king and Katharine ?

First Gent. Yes, but it held not :
For when the king once heard it, out of anger 150
He sent command to the lord mayor straight
To stop the rumour and allay those tongues
That durst disperse it.

Sec. Gent. But that slander, sir,
Is found a truth now : for it grows again 155
Fresher than e'er it was, and held for certain
The king will venture at it. Either the cardinal,
Or some about him near, have, out of malice
To the good queen, possess'd him with a scruple
That will undo her : to confirm this too,
Cardinal Campeius is arrived, and lately ; 160
As all think, for this business.

First Gent. 'Tis the cardinal ;
And merely to revenge him on the emperor,
For not bestowing on him at his asking
The archbishopric of Toledo, this is purposed.

Sec. Gent. I think you have hit the mark : but is't
not cruel 165
That she should feel the smart of this ? The cardinal

148 *I am confident*] Continued to First
Gent. Vaughan conj.

149 *Yes,*] om. Hanmer.

151 *to*] unto S. Walker conj.

154 *found a*] F₁F₂. *a sound* F₃F₄.
again] Rowe. *agen* Ff.

160 *lately*] *likely*, Vaughan conj.

165 *I think...cruel*] As two lines, the
first ending *think*, in Ff. One line
in Pope, reading *you've* for *you*
have.

is 't] *is it* Delius.

166 *this!*] F₃F₄. *this*: F₁F₂.

Will have his will, and she must fall.

First Gent.

'Tis woeful.

We are too open here to argue this;

Let's think in private more.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *An ante-chamber in the palace.*

Enter the LORD CHAMBERLAIN, reading a letter.

Cham. 'My lord, the horses your lordship sent for, with all the care I had, I saw well chosen, ridden, and furnished. They were young and handsome, and of the best breed in the north. When they were ready to set out for London, a man of my lord cardinal's, by commission and main power, took 'em from me; with this reason: His master would be served before a subject, if not before the king; which stopped our mouths, sir.'

I fear he will indeed: well, let him have them:
He will have all, I think.

Enter to the LORD CHAMBERLAIN, the DUKES OF NORFOLK and SUFFOLK.

Nor. Well met, my lord chamberlain.

10

Cham. Good day to both your graces.

Suf. How is the king employ'd?

Cham.

I left him private,

Full of sad thoughts and troubles.

Nor.

What's the cause?

169 *think*] *talk* Anon. conj.

SCENE II.] SCENE III. Pope.

An ante-chamber...] Theobald.

the Lord] Lord Ff.

a letter] Rowe. this Letter Ff.

1—7 *My lord...sir.*] S. Walker would read *horse* for *horses*, *sent me* for *sent*, *o' th'* for *of the*, *o' th'* for *in the*, *them* for *'em*, and print as nine verses, ending *me for*,...*chosen*,...

handsome,.....*north*,.....*London*,...
commission,...*reason*,...*subject*,.....
sir.

4, 5 *commission*] *compulsion* Long MS.
7 *sir*] om. Collier MS.

8, 9 *I fear...think.*] As verse first by Theobald. As prose in Ff.

10 *my lord*] *my good Lord* Hanmer, reading *He...graces* as two lines, the first ending *good*.

Cham. It seems the marriage with his brother's wife
Has crept too near his conscience.

Suf. No, his conscience 15
Has crept too near another lady.

Nor. 'Tis so :
This is the cardinal's doing, the king-cardinal :
That blind priest, like the eldest son of fortune,
Turns what he list. The king will know him one day.

Suf. Pray God he do ! he'll never know himself else.

Nor. How holily he works in all his business ! 21
And with what zeal ! for, now he has crack'd the league
Between us and the emperor, the queen's great nephew,
He dives into the king's soul, and there scatters
Dangers, doubts, wringing of the conscience, 25
Fears and despairs ; and all these for his marriage :

And out of all these to restore the king,
He counsels a divorce ; a loss of her
That, like a jewel, has hung twenty years
About his neck, yet never lost her lustre, 30
Of her that loves him with that excellence
That angels love good men with, even of her
That, when the greatest stroke of fortune falls,
Will bless the king : and is not this course pious ?

Cham. Heaven keep me from such counsel ! 'Tis most
true 35

These news are every where ; every tongue speaks 'em,

- 15, 16 *No...lady.*] *Aside*, Vaughan conj. *great nephew*] *nephew* Seymour conj.
17 *doing, ... cardinal:] doing ; ... car-*
dinal: Rowe. *doing:...cardinall,* *great-nephew* Dyce.
Ff. 25 *Dangers, doubts,]* *Doubts, dangers,*
Pope.
18 *blind]* *blown* Kinnear conj. *doubts, wringing]* *doubts wringing*
19 *list]* *lists* Theobald. Anon. conj.
20 *Pray...else.]* As in Pope. Two lines
in Ff. *wringing]* *wringings* Anon. conj.
21 *his]* *this* Capell. 26 *despairs]* *deepair* Rowe (ed. 2).
23 *Between]* *'Tween* Pope. 36 *'em]* *them* Malone.

And every true heart weeps for't: all that dare
 Look into these affairs see this main end,
 The French king's sister. Heaven will one day open
 The king's eyes, that so long have slept upon 40
 This bold bad man.

Suf. And free us from his slavery.

Nor. We had need pray,
 And heartily, for our deliverance;
 Or this imperious man will work us all
 From princes into pages: all men's honours 45
 Lie like one lump before him, to be fashion'd
 Into what pitch he please.

Suf. For me, my lords,
 I love him not, nor fear him; there's my creed:
 As I am made without him, so I'll stand,
 If the king please; his curses and his blessings 50
 Touch me alike; they're breath I not believe in.
 I knew him, and I know him; so I leave him
 To him that made him proud, the pope.

Nor. Let's in;
 And with some other business put the king
 From these sad thoughts that work too much upon him:
 My lord, you'll bear us company?

Cham. Excuse me; 56
 The king has sent me elsewhere: besides,
 You'll find a most unfit time to disturb him:

38 *this*] *his* F.

40 *slept upon*] *slept, upon* Vaughan
 conj.

42, 43 *pray, And heartily*] *pray heartily*
 Wordsworth, reading *We...deliver-*
ance as one line.

43 *our*] om. Pope, reading *We...deliv'-*
rance as one line.

46 *like*] in Steevens (1793).

47 *Into*] *E'en to Lettsom* conj.
pitch] *pinch* Hanmer (Warburton).
batch Theobald conj.

51 *they're*] Pope. *th' are* Ff. *they are*
 Capell.

58 *find*] F₃F₄. *finde* F₁F₂. *find't* Anon.
 conj.

Health to your lordships.

Nor.

Thanks, my good lord chamberlain.

[Exit Lord Chamberlain; and the King draws the curtain and sits reading pensively.]

Suf. How sad he looks! sure, he is much afflicted. 60

King. Who's there, ha?

Nor.

Pray God he be not angry.

King. Who's there, I say? How dare you thrust yourselves

Into my private meditations?

Who am I? ha?

Nor. A gracious king that pardons all offences 65

Malice ne'er meant: our breach of duty this way

Is business of estate, in which we come

To know your royal pleasure.

King.

Ye are too bold:

Go to; I'll make ye know your times of business:

Is this an hour for temporal affairs, ha? 70

Enter WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS, with a commission.

Who's there? my good lord cardinal? O my Wolsey,

The quiet of my wounded conscience,

Thou art a cure fit for a king. *[To Camp.]* You're welcome,

59 and.....pensively.] Ff. The Scene draws, and discovers the King sitting and reading pensively. Rowe. They go towards the Door: Door opens; and the King is discover'd, sitting to a Table, pensively, and reading. Capell. Norfolk opens a folding-door. The King is discovered sitting, and reading pensively. Malone.

60 SCENE IV. Warburton. Pope and Hanmer continue the scene by mistake.

61 *Who's]* *Who is* Steevens. *there, ha?]* *there?* Wordsworth. *Pray]* *I pray* Capell.

68 *Ye are]* *You're* Capell. *You are* Steevens.

70 *[Raising his book. Collier (ed. 2). (holds vp books) Collier MS. and...commission.]* with Campeius. Capell. Campeius.] Campeius the Pope's Legat, Rowe.

73 *a king]* F₁. *the King* F₂F₃F₄. *[To Camp.]* Theobald.

Most learned reverend sir, into our kingdom :
 Use us and it. [To Wols.] My good lord, have great care
 I be not found a talker.

Wol. Sir, you cannot. 76

I would your grace would give us but an hour
 Of private conference.

King. [To Nor. and Suf.] We are busy ; go.

Nor. [Aside to Suf.] This priest has no pride in him ?

Suf. [Aside to Nor.] Not to speak of :

I would not be so sick though for his place : 80
 But this cannot continue.

Nor. [Aside to Suf.] If it do,
 I'll venture one have-at-him.

Suf. [Aside to Nor.] I another.

[Exeunt Norfolk and Suffolk.]

Wol. Your grace has given a precedent of wisdom
 Above all princes, in committing freely
 Your scruple to the voice of Christendom : 85
 Who can be angry now ? what envy reach you ?
 The Spaniard, tied by blood and favour to her,
 Must now confess, if they have any goodness,
 The trial just and noble. All the clerks,
 I mean the learned ones, in Christian kingdoms 90
 Have their free voices : Rome, the nurse of judgement,
 Invited by your noble self, hath sent

75 [To Wols.] Johnson.

78 [To Nor. and Suf.] Theobald.

79—82 The 'Asides' first marked by
 Capell.

79 *him?*] *him*. Collier. *him!* Delius.

80 *sick though*] *sick, though* F₄.

81, 82 *If...him.*] Arranged as in Pope.
 As one line in Ff.

82 *one have-at-him.*] Dyce and Staunton.
one; have at him. F₁. *one have at*

him. F₂F₃F₄. *one;—have at him.*
 Knight.

83 *precedent*] F₄. *President* F₁F₂F₃.

86 *envy*] *enmity* Herr conj.

90 *I...ones, in...kingdoms*] Theobald.
 (*I...ones in...kingdoms*) Ff.

91 *Have*] *Gave* Grant White.

voices:] voyces. Ff. *voice.* Rowe (ed.
 2). *voices—* Knight.

One general tongue unto us, this good man,
 This just and learned priest, Cardinal Campeius;
 Whom once more I present unto your highness. 95

King. And once more in mine arms I bid him welcome,
 And thank the holy conclave for their loves:
 They have sent me such a man I would have wish'd for.

Cam. Your grace must needs deserve all strangers'
 loves,
 You are so noble. To your highness' hand 100
 I tender my commission; by whose virtue,
 The court of Rome commanding, you, my lord
 Cardinal of York, are join'd with me their servant
 In the impartial judging of this business.

King. Two equal men. The queen shall be acquainted
 Forthwith for what you come. Where's Gardiner? 106

Wol. I know your majesty has always loved her
 So dear in heart, not to deny her that
 A woman of less place might ask by law,
 Scholars allow'd freely to argue for her. 110

King. Ay, and the best she shall have; and my favour
 To him that does best: God forbid else. Cardinal,
 Prithee, call Gardiner to me, my new secretary:
 I find him a fit fellow. [Exit Wolsey.]

Re-enter WOLSEY, with GARDINER.

Wol. [Aside to Gard.] Give me your hand: much joy
 and favour to you: 115

- | | |
|---|---|
| 93 <i>us, this</i>] F ₁ . vs. <i>This</i> F ₁ F ₂ F ₃ . | 104 <i>unpartial</i>] <i>impartial</i> F ₃ . <i>impartial</i> F ₄ . |
| 94 <i>learned</i>] <i>learn'd</i> Anon. conj. <i>Cardinal</i>] <i>Cardnall</i> F ₁ . | 108 <i>So</i>] <i>Too</i> Keightley conj. <i>that</i>] <i>that</i> , F ₄ . <i>what</i> Pope. |
| 98 <i>They have</i>] <i>They've</i> Pope. | 114 [Exit Wolsey. Re-enter...] Capell. Cardinal goes out and re-enters with Gardiner. Johnson. Enter Gardiner. Ff. |
| 100 <i>highness</i>] <i>Highnesses</i> F ₄ . (Kneeles & giues it) Collier MS. | 115, 116 The 'Asides' first marked by Capell. |
| 101 <i>commission;</i>] <i>commission</i> ; [Kneel- ing and rising. Collier, ed. 2. | |
| 102 <i>commanding, you</i>] F ₄ . <i>commanding</i> . <i>You</i> F ₁ . <i>commanding</i> : <i>You</i> F ₂ F ₃ . | |

You are the king's now.

Gard. [Aside to *Wol.*] But to be commanded
For ever by your grace, whose hand has raised me.

King. Come hither, Gardiner. [Walks and whispers.

Cam. My Lord of York, was not one Doctor Pace
In this man's place before him?

Wol. Yes, he was. 120

Cam. Was he not held a learned man?

Wol. Yes, surely.

Cam. Believe me, there's an ill opinion spread then,
Even of yourself, lord cardinal.

Wol. How! of me?

Cam. They will not stick to say you envied him,
And fearing he would rise, he was so virtuous, 125
Kept him a foreign man still; which so grieved him
That he ran mad and died.

Wol. Heaven's peace be with him!
That's Christian care enough: for living murmurers
There's places of rebuke. He was a fool;
For he would needs be virtuous: that good fellow, 130
If I command him, follows my appointment:
I will have none so near else. Learn this, brother,
We live not to be griped by meaner persons.

King. Deliver this with modesty to the queen.

[Exit Gardiner.

The most convenient place that I can think of 135
For such receipt of learning is Black-Friars;
There ye shall meet about this weighty business.
My Wolsey, see it furnish'd. O, my lord,
Would it not grieve an able man to leave
So sweet a bedfellow? But, conscience, conscience! 140
O, 'tis a tender place; and I must leave her. [Exit.

118 [Walks and whispers.] Ff. Talk 138 furnish'd. O,] furnish'd, O F.
apart. Capell. 139 able] abler Nicholson conj.

SCENE III. *An ante-chamber of the Queen's apartments.*www.libtool.com.cn*Enter ANNE BULLEN and an old Lady.*

Anne. Not for that neither: here's the pang that pinches:

His highness having lived so long with her, and she
So good a lady that no tongue could ever
Pronounce dishonour of her—by my life,
She never knew harm-doing—O, now, after 5
So many courses of the sun enthroned,
Still growing in a majesty and pomp, the which
To leave a thousand-fold more bitter than
'Tis sweet at first to acquire—after this process,
To give her the avaunt! it is a pity 10
Would move a monster.

Old L. Hearts of most hard temper
Melt and lament for her.

Anne. O, God's will! much better
She ne'er had known pomp: though't be temporal,
Yet, if that quarrel, fortune, do divorce
It from the bearer, 'tis a sufferance panging 15

- SCENE III.] SCENE V. Pope.
An ante-chamber...] Theobald.
2 *highness*] *grace* Wordsworth.
having] om. Pope.
7—9 See note (III).
7 *a majesty*] *majesty* Dyce, ed. 2 (S. Walker conj.).
12 *O,*] *Oh* F₁F₂F₃. *O* F₄.
13 *pomp: though*] *pomp: pomp though* Vaughan conj.
though 't] *though 't* Steevens.
14 *that quarrel, fortune, do*] *that quarrell. Fortune, do* F₁. *that quarr'lous fortune do* Warburton conj. (with-drawn). *they quarrel, and fortune*

do Upton conj. *at quarrel fortune do* Mason conj. *that quarrel fortune to* Steevens conj. *that carle, ill-fortune, do* Becket conj. *that cruel fortune do* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). *that quarrel, by fortune, do* Keightley. *that fortune's quarrel do* Hudson (Lettsom conj.). *that harlot fortune do* Cartwright conj. *that queasy fortune do* Kinnear conj. *that quarrel,*] *that quarr'ler,* Hammer. *that queller,* Jackson conj. *thy quarrel,* Anon. conj. (1814). *that squirrel,* Staunton conj.

As soul and body's severing.

Old L. Alas, poor lady!
She's a stranger now again.

Anne. So much the more
Must pity drop upon her. Verily,
I swear, 'tis better to be lowly born,
And range with humble livers in content, 20
Than to be perk'd up in a glistering grief
And wear a golden sorrow.

Old L. Our content
Is our best having.

Anne. By my troth and maidenhead,
I would not be a queen.

Old L. Beshrew me, I would,
And venture maidenhead for't; and so would you, 25
For all this spice of your hypocrisy:
You, that have so fair parts of woman on you,
Have too a woman's heart; which ever yet
Affected eminence, wealth, sovereignty;
Which, to say sooth, are blessings; and which gifts— 30
Saving your mincing—the capacity
Of your soft cheveril conscience would receive,
If you might please to stretch it.

Anne. Nay, good troth.

Old L. Yes, troth, and troth; you would not be a
queen?

Anne. No, not for all the riches under heaven. 35

Old L. 'Tis strange: a three-pence bow'd would hire
me,

16 *severing*] *parting* so quoted by
Malone (Cymb. i. 1. 130).

Alas] *Ah* Pope.

17 *a stranger*] F₁. *stranger* F₂F₃F₄.

32 *cheveril*] Theobald. *Chiuerell* F₁F₂F₃.

Chiverel F₄.

33 *good troth.*] Ff. *good troth*—Rowe.

36 *bow'd*] *bowed* Reed (1803).

would] F₁. *now would* F₂F₃F₄.

Old as I am, to queen it: but, I pray you,
 What think you of a duchess? have you limbs
 To bear that load of title?

Anne. No, in truth.

Old L. Then you are weakly made: pluck off a little;
 I would not be a young count in your way, 41
 For more than blushing comes to: if your back
 Cannot vouchsafe this burthen, 'tis too weak
 Ever to get a boy.

Anne. How you do talk!
 I swear again, I would not be a queen 45
 For all the world.

Old L. In faith, for little England
 You'd venture an emballing: I myself
 Would for Carnarvonshire, although there 'long'd
 No more to the crown but that. Lo, who comes here?

Enter the LORD CHAMBERLAIN.

Cham. Good morrow, ladies. What were 't worth to
 know 50
 The secret of your conference?

Anne. My good lord,
 Not your demand; it values not your asking:
 Our mistress' sorrows we were pitying.

Cham. It was a gentle business, and becoming
 The action of good women: there is hope 55
 All will be well.

Anne. Now, I pray God, amen!

Cham. You bear a gentle mind, and heavenly blessings

40 *off]* up Johnson conj.

43 *burthen]* *burden* Johnson.

44 *you do]* *do you* Rowe (ed. 2).

47 *You 'ld]* F₁. *you 'l* F₂. *you 'll* F₃F₄.
emballing] *empalling* Malone conj.

embalming Whalley conj. *empaling*
 Jackson conj.

48 *although there 'long'd]* *though there*
belong'd Pope.

Follow such creatures. That you may, fair lady,
 Perceive I speak sincerely, and high note's
 Ta'en of your many virtues, the king's majesty
 Commends his good opinion of you, and
 Does purpose honour to you no less flowing
 Than Marchioness of Pembroke; to which title
 A thousand pound a year, annual support,
 Out of his grace he adds.

60

Anne. I do not know
 What kind of my obedience I should tender;
 More than my all is nothing: nor my prayers
 Are not words duly hallowed, nor my wishes
 More worth than empty vanities; yet prayers and wishes
 Are all I can return. Beseech your lordship,
 Vouchsafe to speak my thanks and my obedience,
 As from a blushing handmaid, to his highness,
 Whose health and royalty I pray for.

65

70

Cham. Lady,
 I shall not fail to approve the fair conceit
 The king hath of you. [*Aside*] I have perused her well;
 Beauty and honour in her are so mingled
 That they have caught the king: and who knows yet
 But from this lady may proceed a gem
 To lighten all this isle?—I'll to the king,
 And say I spoke with you.

76

59 *and high note's*] Theobald. *and high notes* Ff. *and high note is* Hanmer. *an high note's* Johnson. *and that high note's* Capell.

61 *of you*] Capell. *of you, to you* Ff. *to you* Pope.

64 *pound*] *pounds* Theobald.

66 *kind*] *sign or hint* Anon. conj.

67 *is*] *which is* Warburton.

nor] for Pope.

68 *hallowed*] Ff. *hallow'd* Pope.

69 *empty*] om. Pope.

vanities] *wants* Vaughan conj.

74 *approve*] *improve* Collier MS.

75—79 [*Aside*] Pope.

78 *gem*] F₄. *Jemme* F₁F₂. *Jemme* F₃.

79 *isle*] F₃F₄. *Ile*. F₁. *Ile*? F₂F₃.

[To her.] Collier MS.

Anne. My honour'd lord. 80

[*Exit Lord Chamberlain.*]

Old L. Why, this it is; see, see!
I have been begging sixteen years in court,
Am yet a courtier beggarly, nor could
Come pat betwixt too early and too late
For any suit of pounds; and you, O fate! 85
A very fresh fish here—fie, fie, fie upon
This compell'd fortune!—have your mouth fill'd up
Before you open it.

Anne. This is strange to me.

Old L. How tastes it? is it bitter? forty pence, no.
There was a lady once, 'tis an old story, 90
That would not be a queen, that would she not,
For all the mud in Egypt: have you heard it?

Anne. Come, you are pleasant.

Old L. With your theme, I could
O'er mount the lark. The Marchioness of Pembroke!
A thousand pounds a year for pure respect! 95
No other obligation! By my life,
That promises no thousands: honour's train
Is longer than his foreskirt. By this time
I know your back will bear a duchess: say,
Are you not stronger than you were?

Anne. Good lady, 100
Make yourself mirth with your particular fancy,
And leave me out on't. Would I had no being,

80 [Exit...] Exit... Ff (after you.).

83 *nor*] *ne'er* Anon. conj.

86 *fresh fish*] *fresh-fish* Steevens (1793).
fie, fie, fie] *fie, fie* Pope.

89 *bitter?...pence*] *not bitter for thy sense*
Jackson conj.

forty pence] for *two pence* Roderick
conj. for *fi' pence* Anon. conj.

90 *a lady*] F₁F₂. *no lady* F₃F₄. *an old*
lady Rowe.

96 *By*] *But* Rowe (ed. 2).

97 *mo*] F₁F₂. *moes* F₃F₄. *more* Rowe.

If this salute my blood a jot: it faints me,
To think what follows.

The queen is comfortless, and we forgetful
In our long absence: pray, do not deliver
What here you've heard to her.

Old L.

What do you think me?

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *A hall in Black-Friars.*

Trumpets, sennet and cornets. Enter two Vergers, with short silver wands; next them, two Scribes, in the habit of doctors; after them, the ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY alone; after him, the BISHOPS OF LINCOLN, ELY, ROCHESTER, and Saint ASAPH; next them, with some small distance, follows a Gentleman bearing the purse, with the great seal, and a cardinal's hat; then two Priests, bearing each a silver cross; then a Gentleman Usher bare-headed, accompanied with a Sergeant at arms bearing a silver mace; then two Gentlemen bearing two great silver pillars; after them, side by side, the two CARDINALS; two Noblemen with the sword and mace. The KING takes place under the cloth of state; the two CARDINALS sit under him as judges. The QUEEN takes place some distance from the KING. The BISHOPS place themselves on each side the court, in manner of a consistory; below them, the Scribes. The LORDS sit next the BISHOPS. The rest of the Attendants stand in convenient order about the stage.

Wol. Whilst our commission from Rome is read,
Let silence be commanded.

King.

What's the need?

103 *salute*] *elate* Collier MS. *shall heat*
Bailey conj. (doubtfully). See note
(IV).

107 *you've*] *y' have* F₁F₂F₃. *y' ave* F₄.
you have Capell.

me?] *me?*— Pope. *me*— Ff.

SCENE IV.] SCENE VI. Pope.

A hall.....] Capell. Black-Fryers.
Theobald.

sennet] F₁. Sonnet F₂F₃F₄. om.

Hanmer. See note (v).

habit] *habite* F₁F₂. *habits* F₃F₄.

Archbishop] Johnson. Bishop Ff.

pillars] F₃F₄. Pillers F₁F₂.

below] between Reed (1803).

The rest] The crier and the rest
Malona.

stage] hall Dyca.

2 *commanded*] *commended* F₄.

It hath already publicly been read,
 And on all sides the authority allow'd;
 You may then spare that time.

Wol. Be't so. Proceed. 5

Scribe. Say, Henry King of England, come into the court.

Crier. Henry King of England, &c.

King. Here.

Scribe. Say, Katharine Queen of England, come into the court. 11

Crier. Katharine Queen of England, &c.

[The Queen makes no answer, rises out of her chair, goes about the court, comes to the King, and kneels at his feet; then speaks.]

Q. Kath. Sir, I desire you do me right and justice,
 And to bestow your pity on me; for
 I am a most poor woman, and a stranger, 15
 Born out of your dominions; having here
 No judge indifferent, nor no more assurance
 Of equal friendship and proceeding. Alas, sir,
 In what have I offended you? what cause
 Hath my behaviour given to your displeasure, 20
 That thus you should proceed to put me off,
 And take your good grace from me? Heaven witness,
 I have been to you a true and humble wife,
 At all times to your will conformable,
 Ever in fear to kindle your dislike, 25
 Yea, subject to your countenance, glad or sorry
 As I saw it inclined: when was the hour
 I ever contradicted your desire,

10, 11 *Say...court.*] As two lines in Ff.

As prose first by Capell.

13 *Q. Kath.*] Queen. Warburton. om.

Ff.

do] *do* F₄.

17 *nor*] *and* Pope.

23 *I have*] *I've* Pope.

27 *inclined*.] *inclin'd*: Rowe (ed. 2).

inclin'd? Ff.

28 *desire*.] *desire*; Capell. *Desire*? Ff.

Or made it not mine too? Or which of your friends
 Have I not strove to love, although I knew 30
 He were mine enemy? what friend of mine
 That had to him derived your anger, did I
 Continue in my liking? nay, gave notice
 He was from thence discharged? Sir, call to mind
 That I have been your wife, in this obedience, 35
 Upward of twenty years, and have been blest
 With many children by you: if in the course
 And process of this time you can report,
 And prove it too, against mine honour aught,
 My bond to wedlock or my love and duty, 40
 Against your sacred person, in God's name,
 Turn me away, and let the foul'st contempt
 Shut door upon me, and so give me up
 To the sharp'st kind of justice. Please you, sir,
 The king, your father, was reputed for 45
 A prince most prudent, of an excellent
 And unmatch'd wit and judgement: Ferdinand,
 My father, king of Spain, was reckon'd one
 The wisest prince that there had reign'd by many
 A year before: it is not to be question'd 50
 That they had gather'd a wise council to them
 Of every realm, that did debate this business,
 Who deem'd our marriage lawful: wherefore I humbly
 Beseech you, sir, to spare me, till I may

29 *Or which*] *which* Pope.

31 *were*] *was* Seymour conj.

33 *nay, gave*] *nay, gave not* Hanmer.
nay, give Jackson conj. *nor gave*
 Steevens conj.

34 *discharged*] *discharg'd*. Theobald.

39 *aught*] $F_1 F_2$. *ought* $F_3 F_4$.

40 *to wedlock*] *of wedlock* F_4 .
or my love and duty,] *my love and*
duty, or Mason conj.

40, 41 *duty, Against*] Malone. *dutie*
Against F_1 . *duty Against* $F_2 F_3 F_4$.

42 *the*] F_1 . om. $F_2 F_3 F_4$.

44 *sharp'st*] *sharpest* Theobald.
kind] *knife* Collier MS.

46 *of*] F_1 . and $F_2 F_3 F_4$.

53 *wherefore I humbly*] *humbly I Sey-*
mour conj.

53, 54 *I humbly Beseech you, sir, to spare*] *humbly, Sir I beseech you spare* Pope.

Be by my friends in Spain advised, whose counsel 55
 I will implore : if not, i' the name of God,
 Your pleasure be fulfill'd!

Wol. You have here, lady,
 And of your choice, these reverend fathers ; men
 Of singular integrity and learning,
 Yea, the elect o' the land, who are assembled 60
 To plead your cause : it shall be therefore bootless
 That longer you desire the court, as well
 For your own quiet, as to rectify
 What is unsettled in the king.

Cam. His grace
 Hath spoken well and justly : therefore, madam, 65
 It's fit this royal session do proceed,
 And that without delay their arguments
 Be now produced and heard.

Q. Kath. Lord cardinal,
 To you I speak.

Wol. Your pleasure, madam ?

Q. Kath. Sir,
 I am about to weep ; but, thinking that 70
 We are a queen, or long have dream'd so, certain
 The daughter of a king, my drops of tears.
 I'll turn to sparks of fire.

Wol. Be patient yet.

Q. Kath. I will, when you are humble ; nay, before,
 Or God will punish me. I do believe, 75

60 *o'* of Steevens (1778).

62 *That...court,*] Printed by Keightley
 as an imperfect line.

desire] *defer* F₄. *defy* Vaughan
 conj.

court] *court delay'd* Keightley conj.,
 reading *as well...rectify* as one line.

68, 69 *Lord...speak.*] As in Pope. One

line in Ff.

69 *madam*] Theobald. *Madam.* Ff.

69, 70 *Sir.....that*] As in Pope. One
 line in Ff.

69 *Sir,*] *Sir...* Keightley.

70 *am*] *was* Hudson (Daniel conj.).

73 *yet.*] Ff. *yet*—Rowe.

75 *Or...believe,*] See note (vi).

Induced by potent circumstances, that
 You are mine enemy, and make my challenge
 You shall not be my judge: for it is you
 Have blown this coal betwixt my lord and me;
 Which God's dew quench! Therefore I say again, 80
 I utterly abhor, yea, from my soul
 Refuse you for my judge; whom, yet once more,
 I hold my most malicious foe, and think not
 At all a friend to truth.

Vol. I do profess
 You speak not like yourself; who ever yet 85
 Have stood to charity and display'd the effects
 Of disposition gentle, and of wisdom
 O'ertopping woman's power. Madam, you do me wrong:
 I have no spleen against you, nor injustice
 For you or any: how far I have proceeded, 90
 Or how far further shall, is warranted
 By a commission from the consistory,
 Yea, the whole consistory of Rome. You charge me
 That I have blown this coal: I do deny it:
 The king is present: if it be known to him 95
 That I gainsay my deed, how may he wound,
 And worthily, my falsehood! yea, as much
 As you have done my truth. If he know
 That I am free of your report, he knows
 I am not of your wrong. Therefore in him 100
 It lies to cure me; and the cure is to
 Remove these thoughts from you: the which before
 His highness shall speak in, I do beseech

77, 78 *challenge You] challenge, You F₁.
 challenge; You Theobald. chal-
 lenge. You F₂F₃F₄.*

88 *Madam,] om. Seymour conj.*

90 *I have] I've Pope.*

91 *shall,] Rowe. (Shall) Ff.*

95 *if it] if't Pope.*

96 *how] now Delius conj.*

98 *If he] But if he Pope. If he then
 Keightley. An if he Anon. conj.*

You, gracious madam, to unthink your speaking,
And to say so no more.

Q. Kath. My lord, my lord, 105

I am a simple woman, much too weak
To oppose your cunning. You're meek and humble-
mouth'd ;

You sign your place and calling, in full seeming,
With meekness and humility; but your heart
Is cramm'd with arrogancy, spleen, and pride. 110

You have, by fortune and his highness' favours,
Gone slightly o'er low steps, and now are mounted
Where powers are your retainers, and your words,
Domestics to you, serve your will as't please
Yourself pronounce their office. I must tell you, 115

You tender more your person's honour than
Your high profession spiritual; that again
I do refuse you for my judge, and here,
Before you all, appeal unto the pope,
To bring my whole cause 'fore his holiness, 120
And to be judged by him.

[*She curtsies to the King, and offers to depart.*]

Cam. The queen is obstinate,

Stubborn to justice, apt to accuse it, and
Disdainful to be tried by't: 'tis not well.
She's going away.

105 *to say so*] F₁. *to say* F₂F₃F₄. *say*
Pope, ending this and the next line,
I am... I oppose. to say it Collier
MS.

107 *You're*] F' *are* Ff. *You are* Pope.
humble-mouth'd ;] *humble-mouth'd*
F₁.

110 *arrogancy*] *Arrogancie* F₁. *Ar-*
rogance F₂F₃F₄. *arrogance, with*
Rowe (ed. 2).

111 *favours*] *favour* S. Walker conj.

112 *slightly*] *lightly* S. Walker conj.

113 *powers*] *towers* Jackson conj. *peers*
Vaughan conj. (reading *wards* with
Tyrwhitt).

your words] *your wards* Keightley
(Tyrwhitt conj.). *our lords* Mason
conj. *proud lords* Anon. conj.

117 *again*] F₄. *agen* F₁F₂F₃.

123 *by 't*] *by it* Steevens.

124 *She's*] *Your grace* [to the King],
she's Wordsworth.

King. Call her again. 125

Crier. Katharine Queen of England, come into the court.

Gent. Ush. Madam, you are call'd back.

Q. Kath. What need you note it? pray you, keep
your way:

When you are call'd, return. Now the Lord help!

They vex me past my patience. Pray you, pass on: 130

I will not tarry, no, nor ever more

Upon this business my appearance make

In any of their courts. [*Exeunt Queen, and her Attendants.*]

King. Go thy ways, Kate:

That man i' the world who shall report he has

A better wife, let him in nought be trusted, 135

For speaking false in that: thou art, alone,

If thy rare qualities, sweet gentleness,

Thy meekness saint-like, wife-like government,

Obeying in commanding, and thy parts

Sovereign and pious else, could speak thee out, 140

The queen of earthly queens. She's noble born,

And like her true nobility she has

Carried herself towards me.

Wol. Most gracious sir,

In humblest manner I require your highness,

That it shall please you to declare in hearing 145

Of all these ears—for where I am robb'd and bound,

There must I be unloosed, although not there

At once and fully satisfied—whether ever I

127 *Gent. Ush.*] Grif. Malone.

129 *help*] *help me* Hudson (S. Walker
conj.).

133 [*Exeunt.....*] Rowe. Exit... Ff.
Exeunt Queen, Griffith, and her
other Attendants. Malone.

SCENE VII. Pope.

135 *nought*] *naught* F₁.

140 *else, could*] *els, could* F₁. *could* F₂,
F₃F₄. *could but* Pope.

141 *She's*] *She is* Steevens.

noble] *nobly* Collier MS.

147 *unloosed*] *enloos'd* Seymour conj.

148 *At once*] *Atton'd* Hanmer (War-
burton).

whether ever] *if* Pope.

Did broach this business to your highness, or
 Laid any scruple in your way which might 150
 Induce you to the question on 't? or ever
 Have to you, but with thanks to God for such
 A royal lady, spake one the least word that might
 Be to the prejudice of her present state
 Or touch of her good person?

King. My lord cardinal, 155
 I do excuse you; yea, upon mine honour,
 I free you from 't. You are not to be taught
 That you have many enemies that know not
 Why they are so, but, like to village curs,
 Bark when their fellows do: by some of these 160
 The queen is put in anger. You're excused:
 But will you be more justified? you ever
 Have wish'd the sleeping of this business, never desired
 It to be stirr'd, but oft have hinder'd, oft,
 The passages made toward it: on my honour, 165
 I speak my good lord cardinal to this point,
 And thus far clear him. Now, what moved me to 't,
 I will be bold with time and your attention:

151 *on't f]* Capell. *on't: Ff.*

153 *spake one]* *spoke one* Hanmer.
spoke, or Vaughan conj.

one the least] *one, the least F₁F₂F₃*
one, the least, F₄
that] om. Capell.

154 *to the]* *the* Rowe (ed. 1). In Rowe
 (ed. 2), *that might...state* is read as
 one line, as by Pope who omits to
the.

159 *to]* *F₁, the F₂F₃F₄.*

161 *You're]* *y' are Ff. You are* Capell.

162 *more justified f]* *more—justified?*
 Vaughan conj.

163, 164 *never desired It...hinder'd, oft]*

never desir'd It...hinder'd, oft Ff.
never Desir'd it.....hinder'd Pope.
never Desir'd it...hinder'd, oft Capell.
never Desired it stirr'd;.....
hinder'd, oft Steevens conj.

165 *toward]* *towards* Rowe (ed. 2).
tow'rd Pope.

166 *speak my...cardinal]* *F₁F₂ speak,*
my...cardinal F₃F₄ speak, my...
cardinal, Rowe (ed. 2).

167 *And...to't,]* One line in Pope. Two
 in Ff.

167, 169 *to't]* *F₄ too't F₁F₂F₃.*

168 *be bold with]* *unfold—with* Wordsworth conj.

Then mark the inducement. Thus it came; give heed
to 't:

My conscience first received a tenderness, 170
Scruple, and prick, on certain speeches utter'd
By the Bishop of Bayonne, then French ambassador;
Who had been hither sent on the debating
A marriage 'twixt the Duke of Orleans and
Our daughter Mary: i' the progress of this business, 175
Ere a determinate resolution, he,
I mean the bishop, did require a respite,
Wherein he might the king his lord advertise
Whether our daughter were legitimate, 180
Respecting this our marriage with the dowager,
Sometimes our brother's wife. This respite shook
The bosom of my conscience, enter'd me,
Yea, with a splitting power, and made to tremble
The region of my breast; which forced such way 185
That many mazed considerings did throng
And press'd in with this caution. First, methought
I stood not in the smile of heaven, who had
Commanded nature that my lady's womb,
If it conceived a male-child by me, should
Do no more offices of life to 't than 190
The grave does to the dead; for her male issue
Or died where they were made, or shortly after
This world had air'd them: hence I took a thought,
This was a judgement on me, that my kingdom,

172 *Bayonne*] Capell. *Bayon* Ff.

174 *A*] Rowe (ed. 2). *And* Ff.

177 *require*] *requite* F₂.

181 *Sometimes*] *Sometime* Rowe (ed. 2).

182 *bosom*] *bottom* Theobald, ed. 2
(Thirlby conj., from Holinshed).
See note (vii).

182—184 *enter'd...breast*:] As a parenthesis, Vaughan conj.

183 *splitting*] *spitting* F₁.

186 *press'd*] Capell. *prest* Ff. *press* Collier MS.

in] *it* Pope (ed. 2).

187 *who*] *which* Pope.

190 *to 't*] *to 't*, F₃F₄. *too 't*; F₁F₂.

Well worthy the best heir o' the world, should not 195
 Be gladdened in 't by me: then follows that
 I weigh'd the danger which my realms stood in
 By this my issue's fail; and that gave to me
 Many a groaning throe. Thus hulling in
 The wild sea of my conscience, I did steer 200
 Toward this remedy whereupon we are
 Now present here together; that's to say,
 I meant to rectify my conscience, which
 I then did feel full sick and yet not well,
 By all the reverend fathers of the land 205
 And doctors learn'd. First I began in private
 With you, my Lord of Lincoln; you remember
 How under my oppression I did reek,
 When I first moved you.

Lin. Very well, my liege.

King. I have spoke long: be pleased yourself to say
 How far you satisfied me.

Lin. So please your highness, 211
 The question did at first so stagger me,
 Bearing a state of mighty moment in 't
 And consequence of dread, that I committed
 The daring'st counsel which I had to doubt, 215
 And did entreat your highness to this course
 Which you are running here.

King. I then moved you,
 My Lord of Canterbury, and got your leave
 To make this present summons: unsolicited.

196 *gladdened in 't*] F₁. *glad in 't* F₂F₃.
 F₄. *glad in one* Pope. *glad in it*
 Collier MS.

197 *which*] F₁F₂. *that* F₃F₄.
realms] *realm* Anon. conj.

199 *throe*] Pope. *throw* Ff.

201 *Toward*] F₁F₂. *Towards* F₃F₄.
whereupon] *whereon* Pope.

208 *reek*] *reel* Rowe.

216 *to this*] F₁F₄. *in this* F₂F₃.

219 *summons: unsolicited*] Theobald.
summons vnsolicited. Ff.

I left no reverend person in this court; 220
 But by particular consent proceeded
 Under your hands and seals: therefore, go on;
 For no dislike i' the world against the person
 Of the good queen, but the sharp thorny points
 Of my alleged reasons, drive this forward: 225
 Prove but our marriage lawful, by my life
 And kingly dignity, we are contented
 To wear our mortal state to come with her,
 Katharine our queen, before the primest creature
 That's paragon'd o' the world.

Cam. So please your highness,
 The queen being absent, 'tis a needful fitness 231
 That we adjourn this court till further day:
 Meanwhile must be an earnest motion
 Made to the queen, to call back her appeal
 She intends unto his holiness.

King. [*Aside*] I may perceive 235
 These cardinals trifle with me: I abhor
 This dilatory sloth and tricks of Rome.
 My learn'd and well-beloved servant, Cranmer,
 Prithee, return; with thy approach, I know,
 My comfort comes along.—Break up the court: 240
 I say, set on.

[*Exeunt in manner as they entered.*]

224 *the good*] F₁. *our good* F₂F₃F₄.

225 *drive*] Pope. *driues* Ff.

228 *our*] *her* F₃F₄.

230 *paragon'd o' the*] *paragon'd i' th'*
 Pope. *paragon o' th'* Hanmer.

232 *till*] F₁. om. F₂. *to a* F₃F₄. *to*
 Pope.

235 [They rise to depart. The King
 speaks to Cranmer. Johnson.

235—240 *I may...along.*] Marked as
 'Aside' by Capell.

237 *This*] *The* Hanmer.

238 *learn'd*] *learned* Rowe.
well-beloved] *well-belov'd* Rowe (ed.
 2).

239 *return;...approach.*] F₄. *returne...*
approch: F₁F₂F₃.

240 (loud) Collier MS.

www.libtr.org ACT III.

SCENE I. *London. The Queen's apartments.**The QUEEN and her Women, as at work.*

Q. Kath. Take thy lute, wench: my soul grows sad
with troubles;

Sing, and disperse 'em, if thou canst: leave working.

SONG.

Orpheus with his lute made trees,
And the mountain tops that freeze,
Bow themselves when he did sing: 5
To his music plants and flowers
Ever sprung, as sun and showers
There had made a lasting spring.

Every thing that heard him play,
Even the billows of the sea, 10
Hung their heads, and then lay by.
In sweet music is such art,
Killing care and grief of heart
Fall asleep, or hearing die.

Enter a Gentleman.

Q. Kath. How now! 15

Gent. An't please your grace, the two great cardinals
Wait in the presence.

Q. Kath. Would they speak with me?

Gent. They will'd me say so, madam.

ACT III. SCENE I.] ACT II. SCENE VIII.

Two in Ff.

Warburton conj. (withdrawn).

2 'em] *them* Capell.

The Queen's apartments.] Theobald.

7 *prung*] F₁. *spring* F₂F₃F₄. *rose*

Palace at Bridewell. A Room in...

Pope.

Apartment. Steevens (1793).

8 *made*] *been* Reed (1803).The Queen...] Enter Queene... F₁F₂.13 *heart*] Hanmer. *heart*, Ff.Enter Queen... Woman... F₃F₄.16 *An't*] Hanmer. *And't* Ff.1 *Take...troubles*;} One line in Pope.

Q. Kath. Pray their graces
To come near. [*Exit Gent.*] What can be their business
With me, a poor weak woman, fall'n from favour? 20
I do not like their coming. Now I think on't,
They should be good men, their affairs as righteous :
But all hoods make not monks.

Enter the two CARDINALS, WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS.

Wol. Peace to your highness!

Q. Kath. Your graces find me here part of a housewife ;
I would be all, against the worst may happen. 25
What are your pleasures with me, reverend lords ?

Wol. May it please you, noble madam, to withdraw
Into your private chamber, we shall give you
The full cause of our coming.

Q. Kath. Speak it here ;
There's nothing I have done yet, o' my conscience, 30
Deserves a corner : would all other women
Could speak this with as free a soul as I do !
My lords, I care not, so much I am happy
Above a number, if my actions
Were tried by every tongue, every eye saw 'em, 35
Envy and base opinion set against 'em,
I know my life so even. If your business
Seek me out, and that way I am wife in,

19 [*Exit Gent.*] Capell. *Exit Messenger.*

Johnson, after line 20. om. Ff.

20 *favour* ?] F₁. *favour*, F₂F₃F₄.

21 *coming*. *Now...on't,*] Rowe (ed. 2).
comming; *now...on't*, Ff. *coming*,
now...on't. Capell.

22 *as*] F₁. *are* F₂F₃F₄.

23 *Campeius*.] Rowe. *Campian*. Ff.

25 *I...all, against*] (*I...all*) *against* Ff.
I...all against Johnson.

26 *reverend*] *reuerent* F₁.

35, 36 *'em*] *them* Malone.

37, 38 *If...Seek*] *If 'tis your business To*
seek Blackstone conj.

38 *Seek...in*] *Seek me, speak out, and...*
wise in Tyrwhitt conj. *In that way*
I am wise in, seek me out; Mitford
conj.

Seek] *Do seek* Pope. *Doth seek* Rit-
son conj.

that way] *in that way* Keightley.
that way that Anon. conj.

wife] Ff. *wise* Rowe. *a wife* Anon.
conj. (1814).

Out with it boldly : truth loves open dealing. 39

Wol. Tanta est erga te mentis integritas, regina serenissima,—
www.libtool.com.cn

Q. Kath. O, good my lord, no Latin ;
I am not such a truant since my coming,
As not to know the language I have lived in : 44
A strange tongue makes my cause more strange, suspicious ;
Pray speak in English : here are some will thank you,
If you speak truth, for their poor mistress' sake ;
Believe me, she has had much wrong : lord cardinal,
The willing'st sin I ever yet committed
May be absolved in English.

Wol. Noble lady, 50
I am sorry my integrity should breed,
And service to his majesty and you,
So deep suspicion, where all faith was meant.
We come not by the way of accusation,
To taint that honour every good tongue blesses, 55
Nor to betray you any way to sorrow—
You have too much, good lady—but to know
How you stand minded in the weighty difference
Between the king and you, and to deliver,
Like free and honest men, our just opinions 60
And comforts to your cause.

Cam. Most honour'd madam,
My Lord of York, out of his noble nature,
Zeal and obedience he still bore your grace,

42 *O, good*] *F*₁. *Good* *F*₂*F*₃*F*₄.

45 *strange, suspicious*] *strange-suspicious*
Dyce, ed. 2 (S. Walker conj.). *strange*
suspicious Vaughan conj.

48 *Believe me,*] *Believing* Vaughan
conj.

51 *I am*] *I'm* Pope.

should] *shoul* *F*₁.

52, 53 *And...you, So...meant.*] *So...*
meant, And...you. Singer, ed. 2
(Edwards conj.).

52 *And*] *In* Kinnear conj.

61 *your*] *our* *F*₁.

honour'd] *F*₁*F*₂. *honoured* *F*₃*F*₄.

Forgetting, like a good man, your late censure
 Both of his truth and him, which was too far, 65
 Offers, as I do, in a sign of peace,
 His service and his counsel.

Q. Kath. [Aside] To betray me.—

My lords, I thank you both for your good wills;
 Ye speak like honest men; pray God, ye prove so!
 But how to make ye suddenly an answer, 70
 In such a point of weight, so near mine honour,
 More near my life, I fear, with my weak wit,
 And to such men of gravity and learning,
 In truth, I know not. I was set at work
 Among my maids, full little, God knows, looking 75
 Either for such men or such business.
 For her sake that I have been—for I feel
 The last fit of my greatness—good your graces,
 Let me have time and counsel for my cause:
 Alas, I am a woman, friendless, hopeless! 80

Wol. Madam, you wrong the king's love with these
 fears:

Your hopes and friends are infinite.

Q. Kath.

In England

But little for my profit: can you think, lords,
 That any Englishman dare give me counsel?
 Or be a known friend, 'gainst his highness' pleasure—
 Though he be grown so desperate to be honest— 86

67 *counsel.*] *counsel.*— Pope.

To betray me.] Marked as 'Aside'
 first by Capell.

78 *last*] *lost* Vaughan conj.

79 *counsel*] Capell. *Councill* F₁F₂.
Council F₃F₄.

81 *Madam.*] As in Pope. In a separate
 line in Ff.

these] *those* Rowe.

82 *England*] Johnson. *England*, Ff.
England! Capell.

83 *profit: can*] F₂F₃F₄. *profit can* F₁.

85 *his*] om. F₃.

86 *Though...honest*] In a parenthesis
 in Ff.

86, 87 *honest—And live*] *honest, And live*
 Vaughan conj.

And live a subject? Nay, forsooth, my friends,
 They that must weigh out my afflictions,
 They that my trust must grow to, live not here:
 They are, as all my other comforts, far hence 90
 In mine own country, lords.

Cam. I would your grace
 Would leave your griefs, and take my counsel.

Q. Kath. How, sir?

Cam. Put your main cause into the king's protection;
 He's loving and most gracious: 'twill be much
 Both for your honour better and your cause; 95
 For if the trial of the law o'ertake ye,
 You'll part away disgraced.

Wol. He tells you rightly.

Q. Kath. Ye tell me what ye wish for both, my ruin:
 Is this your Christian counsel? out upon ye!
 Heaven is above all yet; there sits a judge 100
 That no king can corrupt.

Cam. Your rage mistakes us.

Q. Kath. The more shame for ye: holy men I thought ye,
 Upon my soul, two reverend cardinal virtues;
 But cardinal sins and hollow hearts I fear ye:
 Mend 'em, for shame, my lords. Is this your comfort? 105
 The cordial that ye bring a wretched lady,
 A woman lost among ye, laugh'd at, scorn'd?
 I will not wish ye half my miseries;
 I have more charity: but say, I warn'd ye;

87 *Nay*] *They* Warburton.

88 *must...out*] *should...up* Mason conj.

90 *other comforts*] *other comforts are*

Rowe (ed. 2). *comforts are* Pope.

far] *far, far* Anon. conj.

95 *Both...better*] *Better both for your*

honour Keightley.

100 *judge*] *Judge*. F₁.

101 *rage*] *grace* Anon. conj.

102, 104, &c. *ye*] *you* Seymour conj.

104 *fear*] *find* Anon. conj.

ye] *ye're* Keightley. *me* Anon.

conj.

105 *'em*] *them* Malone.

106 *lady*] *Lady*? Ff.

Take heed, for heaven's sake, take heed, lest at once 110
The burthen of my sorrows fall upon ye.

Wol. Madam, this is a mere distraction;
You turn the good we offer into envy.

Q. Kath. Ye turn me into nothing: woe upon ye,
And all such false professors! would you have me— 115
If you have any justice, any pity,
If ye be any thing but churchmen's habits—
Put my sick cause into his hands that hates me?
Alas, has banish'd me his bed already,
His love, too long ago! I am old, my lords, 120
And all the fellowship I hold now with him
Is only my obedience. What can happen
To me above this wretchedness? all your studies
Make me a curse like this.

Cam. Your fears are worse.

Q. Kath. Have I lived thus long—let me speak myself,
Since virtue finds no friends—a wife, a true one? 125
A woman, I dare say without vain-glory,
Never yet branded with suspicion?
Have I with all my full affections
Still met the king? loved him next heaven? obey'd him?
Been, out of fondness, superstitious to him? 131
Almost forgot my prayers to content him?
And am I thus rewarded? 'tis not well, lords.
Bring me a constant woman to her husband,

110 *for...heed*] *take heed for heav'n's sake* Pope.

at once] *once* Vaughan conj.

111 *burthen*] *burden* Johnson.

112, 138, 153 *Wol.*] *Car. Ff* (and *passim*).

115 *you*] *ye* Steevens.

117 *ye*] *you* Capell.

habits] *habit* F₃F₄.

119 *has*] *ha's* Ff. *K'as* Rowe. *he has*

Capell. *he's* Grant White.

120 *love, too long*] *love too, long* F₄.

I am] *I'm* Pope.

122 *my*] F₁. *by* F₂F₃F₄.

124 *curse*] *cure* Vaughan conj.

this.] F₁. *this:* F₂F₃F₄. *this!*

Theobald. *this?* Hanmer.

worse.] Ff. *worse.*—Rowe.

131 *Been*] F₄. *Bin* F₁F₂F₃.

One that ne'er dream'd a joy beyond his pleasure, 135
 And to that woman, when she has done most,
 Yet will I add an honour, a great patience.

Wol. Madam, you wander from the good we aim at.

Q. Kath. My lord, I dare not make myself so guilty,
 To give up willingly that noble title 140
 Your master wed me to: nothing but death
 Shall e'er divorce my dignities.

Wol. Pray, hear me.

Q. Kath. Would I had never trod this English earth,
 Or felt the flatteries that grow upon it!
 Ye have angels' faces, but heaven knows your hearts. 145
 What will become of me now, wretched lady!
 I am the most unhappy woman living.
 Alas, poor wenches, where are now your fortunes?
 Shipwreck'd upon a kingdom, where no pity,
 No friends, no hope; no kindred weep for me; 150
 Almost no grave allow'd me: like the lily,
 That once was mistress of the field and flourish'd,
 I'll hang my head and perish.

Wol. If your grace

Could but be brought to know our ends are honest,
 You 'ld feel more comfort: why should we, good lady, 155
 Upon what cause, wrong you? alas, our places,
 The way of our profession is against it:

138 *Madam...at.*] One line in Rowe (ed. 2). Two, the first ending *good*, in Ff.

139 *My...guilty,*] One line in Rowe (ed. 2). Two, the first ending *Lord*, in Ff.

142 *Wol.*] Car. F₁. Card. F₂F₃F₄. *me.*] Ff. *me*—Rowe.

145 *Ye have*] *Ye've* Pope.

146 *will*] F₁. *shall* F₂F₃F₄.

148 [To her women. Rowe.

149 *Shipwreck'd*] Theobald (ed. 2). *Shipwreck'd* Ff.

where] *where's* Wordsworth.

150 *hope*;) Capell. *hope*, Ff. *hope!* Theobald.

me;) *me*, Capell. *me?* Ff. *me!* Pope.

151 *me*:] Capell. *me?* Ff. *me!* Rowe (ed. 2).

155 *You 'ld*] F₂F₃. *You'd* F₁. *You'l* F₄.

We are to cure such sorrows, not to sow 'em.
 For goodness' sake, consider what you do;
 How you may hurt yourself, ay, utterly 160
 Grow from the king's acquaintance, by this carriage.
 The hearts of princes kiss obedience,
 So much they love it; but to stubborn spirits
 They swell, and grow as terrible as storms.
 I know you have a gentle, noble temper, 165
 A soul as even as a calm: pray think us
 Those we profess, peace-makers, friends and servants.
Cam. Madam, you'll find it so. You wrong your virtues
 With these weak women's fears: a noble spirit,
 As yours was put into you, ever casts 170
 Such doubts, as false coin, from it. The king loves you;
 Beware you lose it not: for us, if you please
 To trust us in your business, we are ready
 To use our utmost studies in your service.
Q. Kath. Do what ye will, my lords: and pray forgive
 me, 175
 If I have used myself unmannerly;
 You know I am a woman, lacking wit
 To make a seemly answer to such persons.
 Pray do my service to his majesty:
 He has my heart yet, and shall have my prayers 180
 While I shall have my life. Come, reverend fathers,

158 *cure*] *ear* Theobald.
 'em] *them* Malone.

160 *ay*] Rowe. *I* Ff. *nay* Pope.

164 *grow*] F₃F₄. *grow*, F₁F₂.

165 *gentle, noble*] *gentle-noble* S. Walker
 conj.

168 *Madam...virtues*] One line in Pope.
 Two in Ff.

171 *king loves you*] *King's love's yours*
 Anon. conj.

172 *lose*] F₄. *loose* F₁F₂F₃.

it not] 't not Hanmer. *him not*
 Seymour conj. *that* Vaughan conj.
you please] *please you* Dyce, ed. 2
 (S. Walker conj.).

175 *Do...me*] One line in Rowe (ed. 2).
 Two in Ff.

ye] F₁F₂. *you* F₃F₄.

175, 176 *me...unmannerly* ;] F₄. *me* ;
 ...*unmannerly*, F₁F₂F₃.

Bestow your counsels on me: she now begs,
That little thought, when she set footing here,
She should have bought her dignities so dear. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. *Ante-chamber to the King's apartment.*

Enter the DUKE OF NORFOLK, the DUKE OF SUFFOLK, the EARL OF SURREY, and the LORD CHAMBERLAIN.

Nor. If you will now unite in your complaints
And force them with a constancy, the cardinal
Cannot stand under them: if you omit
The offer of this time, I cannot promise
But that you shall sustain moe new disgraces, 5
With these you bear already.

Sur. I am joyful
To meet the least occasion that may give me
Remembrance of my father-in-law, the duke,
To be revenged on him.

Suf. Which of the peers
Have unctem'd gone by him, or at least 10
Strangely neglected? when did he regard
The stamp of nobleness in any person
Out of himself?

Cham. My lords, you speak your pleasures:
What he deserves of you and me I know;
What we can do to him, though now the time 15
Gives way to us, I much fear. If you cannot

SCENE II.] ACT III. SCENE I. Warburton conj. (withdrawn).

Ante-chamber...] Theobald.

Enter...the Earl of Surrey...] Capell.

Enter...Lord Surrey... Ff.

5 moe] Ff. more Rowe.

10 or at] not at Hanmer.

least] least not Keightley.

11 Strangely] Stood not Warburton.

12, 13 person Out...himself?] person,
Out of't himself? Hanmer (Warburton).

16 Gives] Give Hanmer.

to us] t' us S. Walker conj.

Bar his access to the king, never attempt
Any thing on him; for he hath a witchcraft
Over the king in's tongue.

Nor. O, fear him not;
His spell in that is out: the king hath found
Matter against him that for ever mars
The honey of his language. No, he's settled,
Not to come off, in his displeasure. 20

Sur. Sir,
I should be glad to hear such news as this
Once every hour.

Nor. Believe it, this is true: 25
In the divorce his contrary proceedings
Are all unfolded; wherein he appears
As I would wish mine enemy.

Sur. How came
His practices to light?

Suf. Most strangely.

Sur. O, how, how?

Suf. The cardinal's letters to the pope miscarried, 30
And came to the eye o' the king: wherein was read
How that the cardinal did entreat his holiness
To stay the judgement o' the divorce; for if
It did take place, 'I do' quoth he 'perceive
My king is tangled in affection to
A creature of the queen's, Lady Anne Bullen.' 35

Sur. Has the king this?

Suf. Believe it.

19 *in's*] *in his* Capell.

23 *displeasure*] *Ff. high displeasure*
Rowe. most high displeasure Pope.

Sir] *om.* Pope.

28 *would*] *could* Steevens (1793).

mine] *my* Hanmer.

29 *O, how, how?*] *How?* Pope.

30 *letters*] *letter* Steevens (1778).

31 *came*] *F₁. come* F₂F₃F₄.

37 *Sur.*] *Cham. Vaughan conj.*

Sur. Will this work ?

Cham. The king in this perceives him, how he coasts
And hedges his own way. But in this point
All his tricks founder, and he brings his physic 40
After his patient's death: the king already
Hath married the fair lady.

Sur. Would he had !

Suf. May you be happy in your wish, my lord !
For, I profess, you have it.

Sur. Now, all my joy
Trace the conjunction !

Suf. My amen to 't !

Nor. All men's ! 45

Suf. There's order given for her coronation :
Marry, this is yet but young, and may be left
To some ears unrecounted. But, my lords,
She is a gallant creature and complete
In mind and feature: I persuade me, from her 50
Will fall some blessing to this land, which shall
In it be memorized.

Sur. But will the king
Digest this letter of the cardinal's ?
The Lord forbid !

Nor. Marry, amen !

Suf. No, no ;
There be moe wasps that buzz about his nose 55
Will make this sting the sooner. Cardinal Campeius .

37 *Will this work ?*] *This will work.* Capell conj.

38 *Cham.*] *Sur.* Vaughan conj.

39 *hedges*] *edges* Warburton.

43 *May you*] *You may* Collier conj.

44 *all my joy*] Ff. *all joy* Pope. *may all joy* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

45 *Trace*] *Grace* Clark MS. *to 't* F₁. *too 't* F₁F₂F₃.

47 *yet*] om. Rowe.

53 *Digest*] *Disgest* F₃.

54 *The Lord forbid*] Cham. *The Lord forbid* ! S. Walker conj.

55 *moe*] Ff. *more* Pope.

Is stol'n away to Rome; hath ta'en no leave;
 Has left the cause o' the king unhandled, and
 Is posted as the agent of our cardinal,
 To second all his plot. I do assure you 60
 The king cried 'Ha!' at this.

Cham. Now God incense him,
 And let him cry 'Ha!' louder!

Nor. But, my lord,
 When returns Cranmer?

Suf. He is return'd in his opinions, which
 Have satisfied the king for his divorce, 65
 Together with all famous colleges
 Almost in Christendom: shortly, I believe,
 His second marriage shall be publish'd, and
 Her coronation. Katharine no more
 Shall be call'd queen, but princess dowager 70
 And widow to Prince Arthur.

Nor. This same Cranmer's
 A worthy fellow, and hath ta'en much pain
 In the king's business.

Suf. He has; and we shall see him
 For it an archbishop.

Nor. So I hear.

Suf. 'Tis so.

The cardinal!

57 *Is stol'n away]* *stoln* Hanmer, ending
 line 56 at *Cardinal*.

hath] *has* Rowe (ed. 2).

58 *Has]* *Ha's* Ff. *Hath* Rowe (ed. 2).
o' the] *o' th'* F₁. *to 'th'* F₂. *to th'* F₃
 F₄. *of the* Collier MS.

64—69 *return'd in ... Christendom: ...*
coronation.] *return'd; in ... Christen-*
dom, ... coronation; Perring conj.

64 *in his]* *with his* Rowe. *in wise*
 Vaughan conj.

66 *Together with all]* *Gather'd from all*
the Rowe.

colleges] *colleges'* Vaughan conj.

71 *And]* F₁F₂. *A* F₃F₄. *As* Hanmer.

72 *pain]* F₃F₄. *paine* F₁F₂. *pains*
 Anon. conj.

75 *The cardinal!]* *The cardinal—*Theo-
 bald. *The Cardinall.* Ff.

[They stand back. Collier, ed. 2
 (Collier MS.).

Enter WOLSEY and CROMWELL.

Nor. Observe, observe, he's moody. 75

Wol. The packet, Cromwell,
Gave't you the king?

Crom. To his own hand, in's bedchamber.

Wol. Look'd he o' the inside of the paper?

Crom. Presently

He did unseal them, and the first he view'd,
He did it with a serious mind; a heed 80
Was in his countenance. You he bade
Attend him here this morning.

Wol. Is he ready
To come abroad?

Crom. I think, by this he is.

Wol. Leave me awhile. [*Exit Cromwell.*]

[*Aside*] It shall be to the Duchess of Alençon, 85
The French king's sister: he shall marry her.
Anne Bullen! No; I'll no Anne Bullens for him:
There's more in't than fair visage. Bullen!
No, we'll no Bullens. Speedily I wish.
To hear from Rome. The Marchioness of Pembroke! 90

Nor. He's discontented.

Suf. May be, he hears the king

75 Enter...] Ff, after so, line 74.

76, 77 *The...king!*] As in Ff. As one line by Steevens (1793), reading *gave it*.

77 *Gave't*] *Gave it* Theobald.

To] *Into* Keightley.
in's] *in his* Capell. *in his* Steevens conj.

78 *paper*] *papers* Keightley (Grey conj.).

81 *You*] *And you* Hanmer. *You, my lord*, Capell. *You, sir*, Steevens conj.

bade] *bade then* Keightley.

82, 83 *Attend...he is.*] Arranged as by Hanmer. As three lines in Ff.

85, 94 [*Aside*] Rowe.

88 *There's more in't*] *There is more in it* Malone. *There's something more in't* Cartwright conj.

in't than fair] *in it than a fair* Hanmer.

Bullen!] *Bullen! Bullen!* S. Walker conj.

90 *Pembroke*] *Penbroke* F₁F₂. *Penbrook* F₃. *Penbrook* F₄.

Does whet his anger to him.

Sur. Sharp enough,
Lord, for thy justice!

Wol. [*Aside*] The late queen's gentlewoman, a knight's daughter,

To be her mistress' mistress! the queen's queen! 95
This candle burns not clear: 'tis I must snuff it;
Then out it goes. What though I know her virtuous
And well deserving? yet I know her for
A spleeny Lutheran, and not wholesome to
Our cause, that she should lie i' the bosom of 100
Our hard-ruled king. Again, there is sprung up
An heretic, an arch one, Cranmer, one
Hath crawl'd into the favour of the king,
And is his oracle.

Nor. He is vex'd at something.

Sur. I would 'twere something that would fret the string, 105

The master-cord on's heart!

Enter KING, reading of a schedule, and LOVELL.

Suf. The king, the king!

King. What piles of wealth hath he accumulated
To his own portion! and what expense by the hour
Seems to flow from him! How, i' the name of thrift,
Does he rake this together? Now, my lords, 110
Saw you the cardinal?

94 *The...daughter,*] One line in Pope.

Two in Ff.

knights] *Right's Rowe* (ed. 2).

100, 101 *cause, that.....king.*] *cause!*—
that...king!— Rowe.

102 *arch one*] Hyphened in Ff.

104 (*stande backe*) Collier MS.

[He goes apart, musing. Collier (ed. 2).

He is] *He's F.*

105 SCENE III. Pope.

106 *on's*] *of's Pope. of his Steevens.*
Enter.....schedule] Ff, after line
104.

and Lovell.] Theobald. om. Ff.

107 (*to himselfe*) Collier MS.

108 *and*] om. Pope.

110 (*to them*) Collier MS.

111 (*forward*) Collier MS. coming for-
ward. Collier (ed. 2).

Nor. My lord, we have
 Stood here observing him: some strange commotion
 Is in his brain: he bites his lip, and starts;
 Stops on a sudden, looks upon the ground,
 Then lays his finger on his temple; straight 115
 Springs out into fast gait; then stops again,
 Strikes his breast hard, and anon he casts
 His eye against the moon: in most strange postures
 We have seen him set himself.

King. It may well be;
 There is a mutiny in 's mind. This morning 120
 Papers of state he sent me to peruse,
 As I required: and wot you what I found
 There, on my conscience, put unwittingly?
 Forsooth, an inventory, thus importing,
 The several parcels of his plate, his treasure, 125
 Rich stuffs, and ornaments of household, which
 I find at such proud rate that it out-speaks
 Possession of a subject.

Nor. It's heaven's will:
 Some spirit put this paper in the packet,
 To bless your eye withal.

King. If we did think 130
 His contemplation were above the earth,
 And fix'd on spiritual object, he should still

113 *lip*] *lips* Rowe (ed. 2).

116 *gai*] Johnson. *gate* Ff.

117 *Strikes*] *And strikes* Keightley.

hard, and anon] *hard and oft*;

anon Lettsom conj.

anon] *then anon* Rowe (ed. 2).

117—119 Mason would end lines 117,

118 at *eye...we*.

119 *We have*] *We've* Pope.

119, 120 *be*; *There*] *be, There* Ff. *be*

There S. Walker conj.

120 *in 's*] *in his* Steevens.

123 *There...unwittingly?*] Capell. *There,*
on my conscience put unwittingly?
 Rowe. *There (on...unwittingly)* Ff.

127 *such*] *such a* F₄.

such...that it] *such a...it* Pope.

131 *contemplation*] F₁. *contemplations*
 F₂F₃F₄.

132 *object*] *objects* F₄.

Dwell in his musings : but I am afraid
 His thinkings are below the moon, not worth
 His serious considering.

[*King takes his seat ; whispers Lovell, who goes to the Cardinal.*

Wol. Heaven forgive me ! 135
 Ever God bless your highness !

King. Good my lord,
 You are full of heavenly stuff, and bear the inventory
 Of your best graces in your mind ; the which
 You were now running o'er : you have scarce time
 To steal from spiritual leisure a brief span 140
 To keep your earthly audit : sure, in that
 I deem you an ill husband, and am glad
 To have you therein my companion.

Wol. Sir,
 For holy offices I have a time ; a time
 To think upon the part of business which 145
 I bear i' the state ; and nature does require
 Her times of preservation, which perforce
 I, her frail son, amongst my brethren mortal,
 Must give my tendance to.

King. You have said well.

Wol. And ever may your highness yoke together, 150
 As I will lend you cause, my doing well
 With my well saying !

King. 'Tis well said again ;
 And 'tis a kind of good deed to say well :

134 *not*] F₁F₂ nor F₃F₄.

135 *His*] *This* Vaughan conj.
 (amazedly) Collier MS. [starting
 amazedly. Collier (ed. 2).

138 *graces*] F₁F₂ *Grace* F₃F₄.

140 *leisure*] *labour* Collier MS.

142 *glad*] *gald* F₁.

144 *offices*] *office*' S. Walker conj.
time ; a time] *time ; time* Rowe (ed.
 2).

145 *which*] om. Pope, reading *a time...*
business as one line.

152 *again*] F₄ *agen* F₁F₂F₃.

And yet words are no deeds. My father loved you :
 He said he did, and with his deed did crown 155
 His word upon you. Since I had my office,
 I have kept you next my heart ; have not alone
 Employ'd you where high profits might come home,
 But pared my present havings, to bestow
 My bounties upon you.

Wol. [Aside] What should this mean? 160

Sur. [Aside] The Lord increase this business!

King. Have I not made you
 The prime man of the state? I pray you, tell me,
 If what I now pronounce you have found true :
 And, if you may confess it, say withal,
 If you are bound to us or no. What say you? 165

Wol. My sovereign, I confess your royal graces,
 Shower'd on me daily, have been more than could
 My studied purposes requite ; which went
 Beyond all man's endeavours : my endeavours
 Have ever come too short of my desires, 170
 Yet filed with my abilities : mine own ends
 Have been mine so that evermore they pointed
 To the good of your most sacred person and
 The profit of the state. For your great graces
 Heap'd upon me, poor undeserver, I 175
 Can nothing render but allegiant thanks,
 My prayers to heaven for you, my loyalty,

154 *no*] *not* Wordsworth.

155 *his deed*] F_1F_2 *this deed* F_3F_4 .

156 *word*] F_1F_2 *sword* F_3F_4 .

160, 161 [Aside] Rowe.

161 [Aside] Behind. Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

168 *requite*] F_1 *require* $F_2F_3F_4$.
which] *they* Hanmer.

169 *man's endeavours*] *man's ambition*

Hanmer. *men's, in devoirs* Becket
 conj.

171 *filed*] *fil'd* Hanmer. *fill'd* Ff.

172 *been mine so*] F_1 . *been so* $F_2F_3F_4$
 and Pope, who reads *Ends have been*
so...pointed as one line. *been such*
 Hanmer.

Which ever has and ever shall be growing,
Till death, that winter, kill it.

King. Fairly answer'd ;

A loyal and obedient subject is 190
Therein illustrated : the honour of it
Does pay the act of it ; as, i' the contrary,
The foulness is the punishment. I presume
That, as my hand has open'd bounty to you,
My heart dropp'd love, my power rain'd honour, more 185
On you than any ; so your hand and heart,
Your brain and every function of your power,
Should, notwithstanding that your bond of duty,
As 'twere in love's particular, be more
To me, your friend, than any.

Wol. I do profess 190

That for your highness' good I ever labour'd
More than mine own ; that am, have, and will be—
Though all the world should crack their duty to you,
And throw it from their soul ; though perils did
Abound, as thick as thought could make 'em, and 195
Appear in forms more horrid—yet my duty,
As doth a rock against the chiding flood,
Should the approach of this wild river break,
And stand unshaken yours.

King. 'Tis nobly spoken.

Take notice, lords, he has a loyal breast, 200
For you have seen him open 't. [*Giving him papers.*] Read
o'er this ;

178 *ever has*] *still has been* Seymour
conj.

182 *as, i' the*] *as i' th'* Ff. *i' th'* Pope.
o' th' Hanmer.

190 *I do profess*] *I profess* Pope.

192 *that...be—*] See note (viii).

193 *crack*] *lack* Singer conj.

195 *'em*] *them* Malone.

201 [*Giving him papers.*] Pope. om.
Ff.

And after, this: and then to breakfast with

What appetite you have.

[*Exit King, frowning upon the Cardinal: the nobles throng after him, smiling and whispering.*]

Vol.

What should this mean?

What sudden anger's this? how have I reap'd it?

He parted frowning from me, as if ruin 205

Leap'd from his eyes. So looks the chafed lion

Upon the daring huntsman that has gall'd him;

Then makes him nothing. I must read this paper;

I fear, the story of his anger. 'Tis so;

This paper has undone me: 'tis the account 210

Of all that world of wealth I have drawn together

For mine own ends; indeed, to gain the popedom,

And fee my friends in Rome. O negligence!

Fit for a fool to fall by: what cross devil

Made me put this main secret in the packet 215

I sent the king? Is there no way to cure this?

No new device to beat this from his brains?

I know 'twill stir him strongly; yet I know

A way, if it take right, in spite of fortune

Will bring me off again. What's this? 'To the Pope!'

The letter, as I live, with all the business 221

I writ to's holiness. Nay then, farewell!

I have touch'd the highest point of all my greatness;

And, from that full meridian of my glory,

202 *after, this*] Theobald. *after this*
Ff.

203 *have*] *may* Rowe. See note (IX).
smiling and whispering] whisper-
ing, and smiling F₃F₄.
SCENE IV. Pope.

204 *reap'd*] *rous'd* Keightley. *rais'd* or
rip'd Id. conj.

209 *fear, the*] Rowe. *fear the* Ff.
[Opens the paper and reads,

trembling. Collier (ed. 2). Opens
and reads. Collier MS.

'Tis so] 'Tis even so Wordsworth.

210 (trembling) Collier MS.

211, 223 *I have*] *I've* Pope.

213, 214 *negligence!...by:]* Ff. *negli-*
gence,...by! Theobald.

219 *if it*] *if I* Vaughan conj.

222 *to's*] F₃F₄. *too's* F₁. *to his*
Capell.

I haste now to my setting: I shall fall
 Like a bright exhalation in the evening, 225
 And no man see me more.

*Re-enter to WOLSEY the DUKES OF NORFOLK and SUFFOLK,
 the EARL OF SURREY, and the LORD CHAMBERLAIN.*

Nor. Hear the king's pleasure, cardinal: who com-
 mands you

To render up the great seal presently
 Into our hands; and to confine yourself 230
 To Asher-house, my Lord of Winchester's,
 Till you hear further from his highness.

Wol.

Stay:

Where's your commission, lords? words cannot carry
 Authority so weighty.

Suf.

Who dare cross 'em,

Bearing the king's will from his mouth expressly? 235

Wol. Till I find more than will or words to do it—

I mean your malice—know, officious lords,
 I dare, and must deny it. Now I feel
 Of what coarse metal ye are moulded—envy:
 How eagerly ye follow my disgraces, 240
 As if it fed ye! and how sleek and wanton
 Ye appear in every thing may bring my ruin!
 Follow your envious courses, men of malice;
 You have Christian warrant for 'em, and, no doubt,

227 [sinks in a chair. Collier, ed. 2
 (Collier MS.).

228 SCENE V. Pope.

Re-enter...] Capell. *Enter... Ff.*
to Wolsey] om. Capell.

Hear...you] As in Pope. Two lines
 in Ff.

231 *Asher]* *Esher* Capell.

233 *commission, lords?]* Rowe. *com-*
mission? Lords, Ff.

234 *weighty]* F₁F₂. *mighty* F₃F₄.

234, 244 'em] *them* Malone.

236 *Till...it—]* *Whilst I find more than*
his will, or words to it, Hanmer.

239 *coarse]* *course* Ff. *base* Capell.

240 *disgraces]* *Disgrace* F₄.

241 *ye]* *you* Seymour conj.

241, 242 *ye!...ruin!]* *ye!...ruin?* Ca-
 pell. *ye,...ruine?* Ff. *ye,...ruin;*
 Rowe (ed. 2).

244 *Christian]* F₁F₂. *a Christian* F₃F₄,
 and Pope, who omits *no doubt*.

In time will find their fit rewards. That seal 245
 You ask with such a violence, the king,
 Mine and your master, with his own hand gave me;
 Bade me enjoy it, with the place and honours,
 During my life; and, to confirm his goodness,
 Tied it by letters-patents: now, who'll take it? 250

Sur. The king, that gave it.

Wol. It must be himself, then.

Sur. Thou art a proud traitor, priest.

Wol. Proud lord, thou liest:

Within these forty hours Surrey durst better
 Have burnt that tongue than said so.

Sur. Thy ambition,

Thou scarlet sin, robb'd this bewailing land 255

Of noble Buckingham, my father-in-law:

The heads of all thy brother cardinals,

With thee and all thy best parts bound together,

Weigh'd not a hair of his. Plague of your policy!

You sent me deputy for Ireland; 260

Far from his succour, from the king, from all

That might have mercy on the fault thou gavest him;

Whilst your great goodness, out of holy pity,

Absolved him with an axe.

Wol. This, and all else

This talking lord can lay upon my credit, 265

I answer, is most false. The duke by law

Found his deserts. How innocent I was

From any private malice in his end,

His noble jury and foul cause can witness.

If I loved many words, lord, I should tell you 270

246 *a violence*] *violence* Warburton.

250 *letters-patents*] *Letters Patents* Ff.

letters patent Knight and Collier.

252 *Thou art*] *Thou'rt* Pope.

253 *forty*] *four* Malone conj.

261 *Far from*] *Far for* F.

You have as little honesty as honour,
That in the way of loyalty and truth
Toward the king, my ever royal master,
Dare mate a sounder man than Surrey can be,
And all that love his follies.

Sur. By my soul, 275
Your long coat, priest, protects you; thou shouldst feel
My sword i' the life-blood of thee else. My lords,
Can ye endure to hear this arrogance?
And from this fellow? If we live thus tamely,
To be thus jaded by a piece of scarlet, 280
Farewell nobility; let his grace go forward,
And dare us with his cap like larks.

Wol. All goodness
Is poison to thy stomach.

Sur. Yes, that goodness
Of gleaning all the land's wealth into one,
Into your own hands, cardinal, by extortion; 285
The goodness of your intercepted packets
You writ to the pope against the king: your goodness,
Since you provoke me, shall be most notorious.
My Lord of Norfolk, as you are truly noble,
As you respect the common good, the state 290
Of our despised nobility, our issues,
Who, if he live, will scarce be gentlemen,
Produce the grand sum of his sins, the articles
Collected from his life. I'll startle you

271 After this line S. Walker would
insert *To rail in such irreverent
wise on me.*

272 *in the*] *I i' th'* Theobald.

273 *master,*] *master, I* Keightley.

274 *Dare*] *I dare* Staunton conj.

276 *Your...feel*] One line in Pope. Two

lines, the first ending *you*, in Ff.

280 *jaded*] *japed* Becket conj.

282 *dare*] *daze* Anon. conj.

289 *you are*] *you're* Pope.

291 *issues*] *issues'* Vaughan conj.

292 *Who*] F₂F₃F₄. *Whom* F₁.

Worse than the sacring bell, when the brown wench 295
Lay kissing in your arms, lord cardinal.

Wol. How much, methinks, I could despise this man,
But that I am bound in charity against it!

Nor. Those articles, my lord, are in the king's hand:
But, thus much, they are foul ones.

Wol. So much fairer 300
And spotless shall mine innocence arise,
When the king knows my truth.

Sur. This cannot save you:
I thank my memory, I yet remember
Some of these articles, and out they shall.
Now, if you can blush and cry 'guilty,' cardinal, 305
You'll show a little honesty.

Wol. Speak on, sir;
I dare your worst objections: if I blush,
It is to see a nobleman want manners.

Sur. I had rather want those than my head. Have
at you!
First that, without the king's assent or knowledge, 310
You wrought to be a legate; by which power
You maim'd the jurisdiction of all bishops.

Nor. Then that in all you writ to Rome, or else
To foreign princes, 'Ego et Rex meus'
Was still inscribed; in which you brought the king 315
To be your servant.

Suf. Then that, without the knowledge
Either of king or council, when you went

295 *sacring*] *Sacring* Ff. *scaring* Rowe
(ed. 2) and Pope.

298, 386 *I am*] *I'm* Pope.

300 *But, thus*] Capell. *But thus* Ff.

302 *my truth*] *the truth* Anon. conj.

save] *serve* Collier conj.

305 *can blush*] *can blush*, Ff. *can, blush*,
Pope.

309 *I had*] *I'd* Pope.

Have at you] As in Rowe (ed. 2).

As a separate line in Ff.

316, 326 *Then that*] *That* Pope.

Ambassador to the emperor, you made bold
To carry into Flanders the great seal.

Sur. Item, you sent a large commission 320
To Gregory de Cassado, to conclude,
Without the king's will or the state's allowance,
A league between his highness and Ferrara.

Suf. That, out of mere ambition, you have caused
Your holy hat to be stamp'd on the king's coin. 325

Sur. Then, that you have sent innumerable substance—
By what means got, I leave to your own conscience—
To furnish Rome, and to prepare the ways
You have for dignities, to the mere undoing
Of all the kingdom. Many more there are; 330
Which, since they are of you and odious,
I will not taint my mouth with.

Cham. O my lord!
Press not a falling man too far; 'tis virtue:
His faults lie open to the laws; let them,
Not you, correct him. My heart weeps to see him 335
So little of his great self.

Sur. I forgive him.

Suf. Lord cardinal, the king's further pleasure is—
Because all those things you have done of late,
By your power legatine, within this kingdom,
Fall into the compass of a præmunire— 340
That therefore such a writ be sued against you;
To forfeit all your goods, lands, tenements,

321 *Cassado*] Ff, from Hall and Hol-
inshed. *Cassalis* Rowe.

323 *his*] *hie* F₂.

325 *holy hat*] *holy-Hat* F₁F₂F₃. *Holy-
Hat* F₄.

to be] *be* Pope.

326 *substance*] *sums* Hanmer.

329 *have*] *pave* Staunton conj.

339 *legatine*] Rowe (ed. 2). *Legatus*
F₁. *Legantive* F₂F₃. *Legantine*
F₄.

340 *into the*] F₄. *into' th'* F₁F₂. *into
th' F₃*. *in the* Pope. *into* Steevens
conj.

Chattels, and whatsoever, and to be
Out of the king's protection. This is my charge.

Nor. And so we'll leave you to your meditations 345
How to live better. For your stubborn answer
About the giving back the great seal to us,
The king shall know it, and, no doubt, shall thank you.
So fare you well, my little good lord cardinal.

[*Exeunt all but Wolsey.*]

Wol. So farewell to the little good you bear me. 350
Farewell! a long farewell, to all my greatness!
This is the state of man: to-day he puts forth
The tender leaves of hopes; to-morrow blossoms,
And bears his blushing honours thick upon him;
The third day comes a frost, a killing frost, 355
And, when he thinks, good easy man, full surely
His greatness is a-ripening, nips his root,
And then he falls, as I do. I have ventured,
Like little wanton boys that swim on bladders,
This many summers in a sea of glory, 360
But far beyond my depth: my high-blown pride
At length broke under me, and now has left me,
Weary and old with service, to the mercy
Of a rude stream that must for ever hide me.
Vain pomp and glory of this world, I hate ye: 365
I feel my heart new open'd. O, how wretched
Is that poor man that hangs on princes' favours!
There is, betwixt that smile we would aspire to,

343 *Chattels, and*] Theobald. *Castles*
and ff. *And chattels* Daniel conj.
whatsoever] *whatsoever else* Herr
conj.

344 *This is*] *This*' S. Walker conj.

350 SCENE VI. Pope.

351 *Farewell!* *a...greatness!*] *Farewell?*
A...greatness. ff.

353 *hopes*] *hope* Steevens.

357 *root*] *shoot* Warburton conj.

360 *This*] *These* Pope.

361 *But*] *Out* Anon. conj.

365 *this*] F₁F₂. *the* F₃F₄.

ye] *you* Seymour conj.

368 *we*] *he* Hanmer.

to] *too* F₁.

That sweet aspect of princes, and their ruin,
 More pangs and fears than wars or women have: 370
 And when he falls, he falls like Lucifer,
 Never to hope again.

Enter CROMWELL, and stands amazed.

Why, how now, Cromwell!

Crom. I have no power to speak, sir.

Wol. What, amazed

At my misfortunes? can thy spirit wonder
 A great man should decline? Nay, an you weep, 375
 I am fall'n indeed.

Crom. How does your grace?

Wol. Why, well;

Never so truly happy, my good Cromwell.
 I know myself now; and I feel within me
 A peace above all earthly dignities, 379
 A still and quiet conscience. The king has cured me,
 I humbly thank his grace; and from these shoulders,
 These ruin'd pillars, out of pity, taken
 A load would sink a navy, too much honour.
 O, 'tis a burden, Cromwell, 'tis a burden
 Too heavy for a man that hopes for heaven! 385

Crom. I am glad your grace has made that right use
 of it.

Wol. I hope I have: I am able now, methinks,

369 *their*] *our* Pope. *his* Hanmer.
ruin] *frown* Anon. and Cartwright
 conj.

372 and stands] Edd. standing Ff.

374 *thy*] F₁F₄. *the* F₂F₃.

375 *decline* ?] Pope. *decline*. Ff.

an] Capell. and Ff. *if* Pope.

376 *grace* ?] F₃F₄. *Grace*. F₁F₂.

377 *Cromwell.*] *Cromwell*, Ff.

382 *These.....pillars*] Rowe (ed. 2).
These...Pillars F₁. *These...Pillet*
 F₂. *This...Pillet* F₃F₄. *This...
 pillar* Rowe (ed. 1).

383 *navy, too much honour.*] *navy. Too
 much honour*—Perring conj.

386, 387 Two lines in Pope. Four,
 ending *Grace.....it.....have.....
 me thinks*, in Ff.

Out of a fortitude of soul I feel,
 To endure more miseries and greater far
 Than my weak-hearted enemies dare offer. 390
 What news abroad?

Crom. The heaviest and the worst
 Is your displeasure with the king.

Wol. God bless him!

Crom. The next is, that Sir Thomas More is chosen
 Lord chancellor in your place.

Wol. That's somewhat sudden:
 But he's a learned man. May he continue 395
 Long in his highness' favour, and do justice
 For truth's sake and his conscience; that his bones,
 When he has run his course and sleeps in blessings,
 May have a tomb of orphans' tears wept on 'em!
 What more?

Crom. That Cranmer is return'd with welcome, 400
 Install'd lord archbishop of Canterbury.

Wol. That's news indeed.

Crom. Last, that the Lady Anne,
 Whom the king hath in secrecy long married,
 This day was view'd in open as his queen,
 Going to chapel; and the voice is now 405
 Only about her coronation.

Wol. There was the weight that pull'd me down. O
 Cromwell,
 The king has gone beyond me: all my glories
 In that one woman I have lost for ever:

393 *More*] Hanmer. *Moore* F₁F₂. *Moor*
 F₃F₄.

397 *conscience*] *consciencs'* S. Walker
 conj.

399 *tomb*] *coomb* Becket conj.
orphans'] Warburton. *Orphants*

F₁F₂. *Orphan's* F₃. *Orphans* F₄.
 'em] Capell. *him* Ff.

401 *Install'd*] *And stall'd* Wordsworth.

407 *There...Cromwell,*] Oline in Pope.
 Two, the first ending *downs*, in
 Ff.

No sun shall ever usher forth mine honours, 410
 Or gild again the noble troops that waited
 Upon my smiles. Go, get thee from me, Cromwell ;
 I am a poor fall'n man, unworthy now
 To be thy lord and master : seek the king ;
 That sun, I pray, may never set ! I have told him 415
 What and how true thou art : he will advance thee ;
 Some little memory of me will stir him—
 I know his noble nature—not to let
 Thy hopeful service perish too : good Cromwell,
 Neglect him not ; make use now, and provide 420
 For thine own future safety.

Crom. O my lord,
 Must I then leave you ? must I needs forgo
 So good, so noble and so true a master ?
 Bear witness, all that have not hearts of iron,
 With what a sorrow Cromwell leaves his lord. 425
 The king shall have my service, but my prayers
 For ever and for ever shall be yours.

Wol. Cromwell, I did not think to shed a tear
 In all my miseries ; but thou hast forced me,
 Out of thy honest truth, to play the woman. 430
 Let's dry our eyes : and thus far hear me, Cromwell ;
 And, when I am forgotten, as I shall be,
 And sleep in dull cold marble, where no mention
 Of me more must be heard of, say, I taught thee ;
 Say, Wolsey, that once trod the ways of glory, 435
 And sounded all the depths and shoals of honour,

411 waited] F₄. waighted F₁F₂. weighed
 F₃.

413 fall'n] falne F₁F₂. fal'n F₃. fallen
 F₄.

415 I have] I've Pope.

434 more must] must more Pope.

heard of, say] heard: say Rowe.
 heard: say then Pope. heard; 0
 say Vaughan conj.

435 trod the ways] rode the waves War-
 burton conj. trod the waves Capell
 conj.

Found thee a way, out of his wreck, to rise in;
 A sure and safe one, though thy master miss'd it.
 Mark but my fall and that that ruin'd me.
 Cromwell, I charge thee, fling away ambition: 440
 By that sin fell the angels; how can man then,
 The image of his Maker, hope to win by it?
 Love thyself last: cherish those hearts that hate thee;
 Corruption wins not more than honesty.
 Still in thy right hand carry gentle peace, 445
 To silence envious tongues. Be just, and fear not:
 Let all the ends thou aim'st at be thy country's,
 Thy God's, and truth's; then if thou fall'st, O Cromwell,
 Thou fall'st a blessed martyr! Serve the king;
 And prithee, lead me in: 450
 There take an inventory of all I have,
 To the last penny; 'tis the king's: my robe,
 And my integrity to heaven, is all
 I dare now call mine own. O Cromwell, Cromwell!
 Had I but served my God with half the zeal 455
 I served my king, he would not in mine age
 Have left me naked to mine enemies.

Crom. Good sir, have patience.

Wol.

So I have. Farewell

The hopes of court! my hopes in heaven do dwell.

[*Exeunt.*]

437 *wreck*] Theobald (ed. 2). *wracks*
 F₁F₂. *wrack* F₃F₄.

439 *that that*] *that which* Pope.

442 *The image*] *Tho' th' image* Han-
 mer.

win by it] *win it* F₄. *win by 't*
 Theobald. *win in 't* Warburton
 conj. (withdrawn).

443 *those hearts*] *ev'n th' hearts* Han-
 mer.

hate] *wait* Warburton conj. *bate*
 Bulloch conj.

444 *wins*] F₁F₂. *win* F₃F₄.

449—453 *Thou fall'st...all*] Four lines,
 ending *and...inventory...king's...
 all*, in Keightley.

449, 450 *Serve...in:]* As in Rowe
 (ed. 2). One line in Ff.

450 *And prithee*] *And—Prithee* John-
 son.

451, 452 *have,...penny:]* Capell. *have,
 ...penny, Ff. have;...penny, Theo-
 bald.*

www.libtool.com.cn ACT IV.

SCENE I. *A street in Westminster.*

Enter two Gentlemen, meeting one another.

First Gent. You're well met once again.

Sec. Gent. So are you.

First Gent. You come to take your stand here and behold

The Lady Anne pass from her coronation?

Sec. Gent. 'Tis all my business. At our last encounter, The Duke of Buckingham came from his trial. 5

First Gent. 'Tis very true: but that time offer'd sorrow; This, general joy.

Sec. Gent. 'Tis well: the citizens, I am sure, have shown at full their royal minds— As, let 'em have their rights, they are ever forward— In celebration of this day with shows, 10 Pageants and sights of honour.

First Gent. Never greater, Nor, I'll assure you, better taken, sir.

Sec. Gent. May I be bold to ask what that contains, That paper in your hand?

First Gent. Yes; 'tis the list

A...Westminster.] Theobald.

1 You're] Rowe. F' are Ff. You are Capell.

again] again, sir Keightley.

So] And so Pope. Sir, so Nicholson conj.

3 coronation?] Capell. Corronation. F₁F₂. Coronation. F₃F₄.

8 I am] I'm Pope.

royal] loyal Pope.

8, 9 minds—As.....forward—] minds

(As.....forward) Knight (Boswell conj.). minds, As...forward Ff.

9 As] And Rowe (ed. 2).

'em] them Malone.

rights] right Hanmer.

they are] they're Pope.

10 this day] these days Hanmer.

13 ask] task Warburton.

14 That] The Rowe (ed. 2).

hand] F₁. hands F₂F₃F₄.

Of those that claim their offices this day 15
By custom of the coronation.

The Duke of Suffolk ~~is the first,~~ and claims
To be high-steward; next, the Duke of Norfolk,
He to be earl marshal: you may read the rest.

Sec. Gent. I thank you, sir: had I not known those
customs, 20

I should have been beholding to your paper.
But, I beseech you, what's become of Katharine,
The princess dowager? how goes her business?

First Gent. That I can tell you too. The Archbishop
Of Canterbury, accompanied with other 25

Learned and reverend fathers of his order,
Held a late court at Dunstable, six miles off
From Ampthill, where the princess lay; to which
She was often cited by them, but appear'd not:
And, to be short, for not appearance and 30

The king's late scruple, by the main assent
Of all these learned men she was divorced,
And the late marriage made of none effect:
Since which she was removed to Kimbolton,
Where she remains now sick.

Sec. Gent. Alas, good lady! 35

[*Trumpets.*

The trumpets sound: stand close, the queen is coming.

[*Hautboys.*

19 *He to be*] *To be* Pope.

20 *Sec. Gent.*] 2. F₄. 1 F₁F₂F₃.

21 *beholding*] *beholden* Pope.

24 *too*] *too, sir* Capell.

27 *off*] om. Pope.

29 *was often*] *oft was* Hanmer. *was oft*
Hudson.

30 *not appearance*] *non-appearance*
Steevens conj.

34 *Kimbolton*] F₃F₄. *Kymmalton* F₁
F₂.

35 [*Trumpets.*] Capell. om. Ff.

36 *The.....coming.*] One line in Pope.
Two lines, the first ending *close*, in
Ff.

[*Hautboys.*] Ho-boys. F₁F₂F₃. Ho-
boys. F₄. om. Capell.

www.libtoof.com.cn
THE ORDER OF THE CORONATION.

1. *A lively Flourish of Trumpets.*
2. *Then two Judges.*
3. LORD CHANCELLOR, *with purse and mace before him.*
4. Choristers, *singing.* Musicians.
5. Mayor of London, *bearing the mace. Then Garter, in his coat of arms, and on his head he wears a gilt copper coron.*
6. MARQUESS DORSET, *bearing a sceptre of gold, on his head a demi-coronal of gold. With him, the EARL OF SURREY, bearing the rod of silver with the dove, crowned with an earl's coronet. Collars of SS.*
7. DUKE OF SUFFOLK, *in his robe of estate, his coronet on his head, bearing a long white wand, as high-steward. With him, the DUKE OF NORFOLK, with the rod of marshalship, a coronet on his head. Collars of SS.*
8. *A canopy borne by four of the Cinque-ports; under it, the QUEEN in her robe; in her hair richly adorned with pearl, crowned. On each side her, the BISHOPS OF LONDON and WINCHESTER.*
9. *The old DUCHESS OF NORFOLK, in a coronal of gold, wrought with flowers, bearing the QUEEN'S train.*
10. *Certain Ladies or Countesses, with plain circlets of gold without flowers.*
They pass over the stage in order and state.

Sec. Gent. A royal train, believe me. These I know :
Who's that that bears the sceptre ?

First Gent. Marquess Dorset :
And that the Earl of Surrey, with the rod. 39

37 Choristers,] Quirristers F₁F₂F₃. Qui-
risters F₄.
Musicians.] Edd. Musicke. Ff.
he wears] he wore Ff. om. Rowe.
Collars of SS.] Rowe. Collars of
Esses. Ff.
in her hair] her hair Dyce, ed. 2
(S. Walker conj.).

They pass...state.] Edd. Exeunt,
first passing over the Stage in Order
and State, and then, A great Flour-
ish of Trumpets. Ff. Omitted by
Capell.
38 *that that*] F₁F₂. *that* F₃F₄. *that*
who Pope.

Sec. Gent. A bold brave gentleman. That should
be
The Duke of Suffolk?

First Gent. 'Tis the same: high-steward. 41

Sec. Gent. And that my Lord of Norfolk?

First Gent. Yes.

Sec. Gent. [*Looking on the Queen*] Heaven bless thee!
Thou hast the sweetest face I ever look'd on.
Sir, as I have a soul, she is an angel;
Our king has all the Indies in his arms, 45
And more and richer, when he strains that lady:
I cannot blame his conscience.

First Gent. They that bear
The cloth of honour over her, are four barons
Of the Cinque-ports.

Sec. Gent. Those men are happy; and so are all are
near her. 50

I take it, she that carries up the train
Is that old noble lady, Duchess of Norfolk.

First Gent. It is; and all the rest are countesses.

Sec. Gent. Their coronets say so. These are stars
indeed,

And sometimes falling ones.

First Gent. No more of that. 55

[*Exit procession; and then a
great flourish of trumpets.*]

40 *That*] *The next* Hanmer. *That next*
Capell. *That lord* Hudson (S.
Walker conj.). *And that* Keight-
ley.

41 *Suffolk*] Dyce. *Suffolke*. Ff.

42 [*Looking on the Queen*] Johnson.
om. Ff.

46 *lady*:] Rowe. *lady*, Ff.

48 *honour over*] *state above* Pope.

50 *Those...her*] As in Pope. Two lines,

the first ending *happy*, in Ff.
and so] so Pope.

52 *Duchess of*] *the Dutchess of Rowe*.
Duchess S. Walker conj.

55 *And...that*] *First Gent. And...ones*.
Sec. Gent. No.....that. Dyce, ed. 2
(S. Walker conj.).

First Gent.] 1. F₃F₄. 2 F₁F₂.

[*Exit procession; and then...*] *Exit*
procession, with... Capell. om. Ff.

Enter a third Gentleman.

God save you, sir! where have you been broiling?

Third Gent. Among the crowd i' the abbey; where a
finger

Could not be wedged in more: I am stifled
With the mere rankness of their joy.

Sec. Gent.

You saw

The ceremony?

Third Gent. That I did.

First Gent.

How was it?

60

Third Gent. Well worth the seeing.

Sec. Gent.

Good sir, speak it to us.

Third Gent. As well as I am able. The rich stream
Of lords and ladies, having brought the queen
To a prepared place in the choir, fell off
A distance from her; while her grace sat down 65
To rest awhile, some half an hour or so,
In a rich chair of state, opposing freely
The beauty of her person to the people.
Believe me, sir, she is the goodliest woman
That ever lay by man: which when the people 70
Had the full view of, such a noise arose
As the shrouds make at sea in a stiff tempest,
As loud and to as many tunes: hats, cloaks,—
Doublets, I think,—flew up; and had their faces
Been loose, this day they had been lost. Such joy 75

56 *God*] 1 *God* Ff. 2. *G. God* Capell.
where] *say where* Hanmer. *and*
where Capell. *why, where* S. Walker
conj.
been] F₄. *bin* F₁F₂F₃.
broiling] *a-broiling* Wordsworth
(Seymour conj.).
58 *I*] *and I* Hanmer.

59, 60 *You saw The ceremony?*] *As in*
Hanmer. One line in Ff.
60 *That I did*] F₁F₂. *I did* F₃F₄.
61 *us.*] F₃F₄. *vs?* F₁F₂.
64, 90 *choir*] *Quire* Ff.
65 *sat*] F₄. *sate* F₁F₂F₃.
67 *opposing*] *exposing* Long MS.
75 *Been*] F₄. *Bin* F₁F₂F₃.

I never saw before. Great-bellied women,
 That had not half a week to go, like rams
 In the old time of war, would shake the press,
 And make 'em reel before 'em. No man living
 Could say 'This is my wife' there, all were woven 80
 So strangely in one piece.

Sec. Gent. But what follow'd?

Third Gent. At length her grace rose, and with modest
 paces

Came to the altar, where she kneel'd and saintlike
 Cast her fair eyes to heaven and pray'd devoutly;
 Then rose again and bow'd her to the people; 85
 When by the Archbishop of Canterbury
 She had all the royal makings of a queen,
 As holy oil, Edward Confessor's crown,
 The rod, and bird of peace, and all such emblems
 Laid nobly on her: which perform'd, the choir, 90
 With all the choicest music of the kingdom,
 Together sung 'Te Deum.' So she parted,
 And with the same full state paced back again
 To York-place, where the feast is held.

First Gent. Sir,

You must no more call it York-place; that's past; 95
 For, since the cardinal fell, that title's lost:
 'Tis now the king's, and call'd Whitehall.

Third Gent. I know it;

But 'tis so lately alter'd, that the old name

- | | | | |
|----|--|--------|---|
| 78 | would] should F ₃ F ₄ . | 87 | She had] Sh' had Pope. Sh' ad Hanmer. |
| | press] F ₄ . please F ₁ F ₂ F ₃ . | | |
| 79 | 'em...em] them...them Malona. him ...em Vaughan conj. | 94, 95 | Sir, You must] You must Pope. Good sir, You must Capell. Sir, you Must Steevens (1793). |
| 80 | 'This is my wife' there] 'That is my wife there' Capell (Errata). This] That Capell. | | that's] that is Steevens (1793). |
| 81 | in] into Mitford conj. But] But pray Pope. | 96 | title's] F ₃ F ₄ . Titles F ₁ F ₂ . |
| | | 98 | that] om. Pope. |

Is fresh about me.

Sec. Gent. What two reverend bishops
Were those that went on each side of the queen? 100

Third Gent. Stokesly and Gardiner; the one of Win-
chester,
Newly preferr'd from the king's secretary,
The other, London.

Sec. Gent. He of Winchester
Is held no great good lover of the archbishop's,
The virtuous Cranmer.

Third Gent. All the land knows that: 105
However, yet there is no great breach; when it comes,
Cranmer will find a friend will not shrink from him.

Sec. Gent. Who may that be, I pray you?

Third Gent. Thomas Cromwell;
A man in much esteem with the king, and truly
A worthy friend. The king has made him master 110
O' the jewel house,
And one, already, of the privy council.

Sec. Gent. He will deserve more.

Third Gent. Yes, without all doubt.
Come, gentlemen, ye shall go my way,

- 101 *Stokesly*] F₄. *Stokeley* F₁F₂F₃.
104 *archbishop's*] *Archbishops* F₁. *Arch-*
bishop F₂F₃F₄.
106 *there is...when it*] *there's...when't*
Pope. *there's...when it* Steevens
(1778).
108 *that be*] F₁F₂. *be that* F₃F₄.
you?] Rowe. *you*. Ff.
108—111 *Thomas.....house,*] As three
lines, ending *esteem...friend...house*,
in Malone.
110—112 *A worthy...council.*] As three
lines, ending *him...House...Coun-*
cell, in Ff. As two lines, ...*master*
O' th' jewel house and one o' th' privy

- council*. Hanmer. As three lines,
the first ending *king*, in Steevens
(1793). Two lines, the first ending
master, in Keightley.
110 *made*] *lately made* S. Walker conj.,
reading *master.....already*, as one
line.
111—113 *O' the...Yes.*] As two lines, S.
Walker conj., the first ending *al-*
ready, of.
112 *of the*] *O' th'* S. Walker conj.
114, 115 *Come...Which*] One line in
Capell.
114 *ye shall*] *you shall* Rowe (ed. 2).
you shall both Hanmer.

Which is to the court, and there ye shall be my guests :
 Something I can command. As I walk thither, 116
 I'll tell ye more. www.libtool.com.cn

Both. You may command us, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *Kimbolton.*

*Enter KATHARINE, Dowager, sick; led between GRIFFITH,
 her Gentleman Usher, and PATIENCE, her woman.*

Grif. How does your grace?

Kath. O Griffith, sick to death!
 My legs, like loaden branches, bow to the earth,
 Willing to leave their burthen. Reach a chair.
 So; now, methinks, I feel a little ease.
 Didst thou not tell me, Griffith, as thou led'st me, 5
 That the great child of honour, Cardinal Wolsey,
 Was dead?

Grif. Yes, madam; but I think your grace,
 Out of the pain you suffer'd, gave no ear to 't.

Kath. Prithee, good Griffith, tell me how he died :
 If well, he stepp'd before me, happily, 10
 For my example.

Grif. Well, the voice goes, madam :
 For after the stout Earl Northumberland
 Arrested him at York, and brought him forward,
 As a man sorely tainted, to his answer,

115 *ye*] om. Pope.

Kimbolton.] Theobald.

2 *loaden*] *F*₁. *loaded* *F*₂*F*₃*F*₄.

3 *burthen*] *burden* Johnson.

4 *So; now*] *So—now* Rowe. *So now*

Ff.

[*Sitting down.* Rowe.

VOL. V.

5 *led'st*] Rowe (ed. 2). *lead'st* *Ff.*

7 *think*] *F*₂*F*₄. *thinks* *F*₂. *thanks* *F*₁.
thought Hudson (*Letsom* conj.).

8 *to't*] *F*₂*F*₄. *too't* *F*₁*F*₂.

10 *me, happily,*] *me happily* *Ff.* *me*
happily, Rowe (ed. 2).

12 *Earl*] *Earl of* Rowe (ed. 2).

He fell sick suddenly, and grew so ill 15
 He could not sit his mule.

Kath. www.libtool.com.cn Alas, poor man!

Grif. At last, with easy roads, he came to Leicester,
 Lodged in the abbey; where the reverend abbot,
 With all his covent, honourably received him;
 To whom he gave these words, 'O father abbot, 20
 An old man, broken with the storms of state,
 Is come to lay his weary bones among ye;
 Give him a little earth for charity!'

So went to bed; where eagerly his sickness
 Pursued him still; and three nights after this, 25
 About the hour of eight, which he himself
 Foretold should be his last, full of repentance,
 Continual meditations, tears and sorrows,
 He gave his honours to the world again,
 His blessed part to heaven, and slept in peace. 30

Kath. So may he rest; his faults lie gently on him!
 Yet thus far, Griffith, give me leave to speak him,
 And yet with charity. He was a man
 Of an unbounded stomach, ever ranking
 Himself with princes; one that by suggestion 35
 Tied all the kingdom: simony was fair-play:
 His own opinion was his law: i' the presence
 He would say untruths, and be ever double
 Both in his words and meaning: he was never,
 But where he meant to ruin, pitiful: 40

19 *covent*] Ff. *convent* Rowe.

27 *full of*] F₁. *full* F₂F₃F₄.

29 *gave*] F₁. *give* F₂F₃F₄.
again] Rowe. *agen* Ff.

31 *So...him*] One line in Pope. Two
 in Ff.

lie] *lay* Rowe (ed. 2).

gently on] F₁. *on* F₂F₃F₄. *bury'd*
with Rowe. *lightly* on Collier MS.

36 *Tied*] *Ty'de* F₁F₂F₃. *Ty'd* F₄. *Tyth'd*
 Hanmer. *sway'd* Dodd conj. *Tir'd*
 or *Task'd* Keightley conj. *Ruled*
 Gould conj.

His promises were, as he then was, mighty ;
 But his performance, as he is now, nothing :
 Of his own body he was ill, and gave
 The clergy ill example.

Grif. Noble madam,
 Men's evil manners live in brass ; their virtues 45
 We write in water. May it please your highness
 To hear me speak his good now ?

Kath. Yes, good Griffith ;
 I were malicious else.

Grif. This cardinal,
 Though from an humble stock, undoubtedly
 Was fashion'd to much honour from his cradle. 50
 He was a scholar, and a ripe and good one ;
 Exceeding wise, fair-spoken and persuading :
 Lofty and sour to them that loved him not,
 But to those men that sought him, sweet as summer.
 And though he were unsatisfied in getting, 55
 Which was a sin, yet in bestowing, madam,
 He was most princely : ever witness for him
 Those twins of learning that he raised in you,
 Ipswich and Oxford ! one of which fell with him,
 Unwilling to outlive the good that did it ; 60
 The other, though unfinish'd, yet so famous,
 So excellent in art and still so rising,
 That Christendom shall ever speak his virtue.

41 *promises were, as]* F₁. *Promises,*
were as F₁F₂F₃.

42 *is now]* *now is* Rowe.

50 *honour from his cradle.]* *honour, from*
his cradle ; Theobald. *honor. From*
his cradle Ff.

59 *Oxford !]* Pope. *Oxford :* Ff.

60 *to outlive]* *outlive* Keightley.

good that did it] *good he did it* Pope.

good man did it Collier MS. *good*
that rear'd it Staunton. *good that*
did it nourish Keightley. *good that*
did it cherish Id. conj. (with-
 drawn). *hand that fed it* Anon. conj.
good one built it Cartwright conj.
good that bid it Bulloch conj. *hand*
that rear'd it Kinnear conj.

His overthrow heap'd happiness upon him ;
 For then, and not till then, he felt himself, 65
 And found the blessedness of being little :
 And, to add greater honours to his age
 Than man could give him, he died fearing God.

Kath. After my death I wish no other herald,
 No other speaker of my living actions, 70
 To keep mine honour from corruption,
 But such an honest chronicler as Griffith.
 Whom I most hated living, thou hast made me,
 With thy religious truth and modesty,
 Now in his ashes honour : peace be with him ! 75
 Patience, be near me still ; and set me lower :
 I have not long to trouble thee. Good Griffith,
 Cause the musicians play me that sad note
 I named my knell, whilst I sit meditating
 On that celestial harmony I go to. 80

[*Sad and solemn music.*]

Grif. She is asleep : good wench, let's sit down quiet,
 For fear we wake her : softly, gentle Patience.

The vision. Enter, solemnly tripping one after another, six personages, clad in white robes, wearing on their heads garlands of bays, and golden vizards on their faces ; branches of bays or palm in their hands. They first congee unto her, then dance ; and, at certain changes, the first two hold a spare garland over her head ; at which the other four make reverent curtsies ; then the two that held the garland deliver the same to the other next two, who observe the same order in their changes, and holding the garland over her head : which done, they deliver the same garland to the last two, who likewise observe the same order : at which, as it were by inspiration, she makes in her sleep signs of

75 *Now in his ashes*] Put in a parenthesis in Ff.

79 *meditating*] F₁F₄. *meditating.* F₂
 F₃.

80 *to*] too F₁.

83 *tripping*] trooping Clark MS.
 heads] head F₃F₄.

reverent] reverend Ff.

changes] F₁. charges F₂F₃F₄.

rejoicing, and holdeth up her hands to heaven: and so in their dancing vanish, carrying the garland with them. The music continues.

www.libtool.com.cn

Kath. Spirits of peace, where are ye? are ye all gone,
And leave me here in wretchedness behind ye?

Grif. Madam, we are here.

Kath. It is not you I call for:
Saw ye none enter since I slept?

Grif. None, madam. 86

Kath. No? Saw you not even now a blessed troop
Invite me to a banquet, whose bright faces
Cast thousand beams upon me, like the sun?
They promised me eternal happiness, 90
And brought me garlands, Griffith, which I feel
I am not worthy yet to wear: I shall, assuredly.

Grif. I am most joyful, madam, such good dreams
Possess your fancy.

Kath. Bid the music leave;
They are harsh and heavy to me. [*Music ceases.*]

Pat. Do you note 95
How much her grace is alter'd on the sudden?
How long her face is drawn! how pale she looks,
And of an earthy cold! Mark her eyes!

Grif. She is going, wench: pray, pray.

Pat. Heaven comfort her!

vanish] they vanish Hanmer.

[starting out of her Sleep. Capell.

all] om. Pope.

gone,] gone f Ff.

89 thousand] F₁. a thousand F₂F₃F₄.

92 I am] Alas! I am Wordsworth,
omitting I shall, assuredly.

worthy...shall,] worthy, yet wear shall
or worthy yet, wear shall Vaughan
conj.

assuredly] As a separate line in

Hanmer.

95 They are] 'Tis Pope.

98 And] Her hand or And feels Staun-
ton conj.

earthy cold] earthy cold Rowe (ed.
2). earthy coldness Collier, ed. 2
(Collier MS.). earthy colour Dyce,
ed. 2 (S. Walker conj.).

Mark] Observe Pope. Mark you
Capell. Do you mark Vaughan
conj.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. An't like your grace,—

Kath. You are a saucy fellow:
Deserve we no more reverence?

Grif. You are to blame, 101
Knowing she will not lose her wonted greatness,
To use so rude behaviour: go to, kneel.

Mess. I humbly do entreat your highness' pardon;
My haste made me unmannerly. There is staying 105
A gentleman, sent from the king, to see you.

Kath. Admit him entrance, Griffith: but this fellow
Let me ne'er see again. [*Exeunt Griffith and Messenger.*]

Re-enter GRIFFITH, with CAPUCIUS.

If my sight fail not,
You should be lord ambassador from the emperor,
My royal nephew, and your name Capucius. 110

Cap. Madam, the same; your servant.

Kath. O, my lord,
The times and titles now are alter'd strangely
With me since first you knew me. But, I pray you,
What is your pleasure with me?

Cap. Noble lady,
First, mine own service to your grace; the next, 115
The king's request that I would visit you;
Who grieves much for your weakness, and by me
Sends you his princely commendations,

100 Messenger.] Gentleman. Capell.

An't] Hanmer. *And't* Ff.

101 *to blame*] F₃F₄. *too blame* F₁F₂.

102 *lose*] F₄. *loos* F₁F₂F₃.

103 *to*] *too* F₁.

(Kneeles) Collier MS.

108 [*Exeunt...*] *Exeunt* Gri. and Gen.

Capell. Exit Messeng. Ff.

Re-enter...] Capell. Enter Lord
Capuchius. Ff.

110 *Capucius*] *Capuchius* Ff (and else-
where).

113 *With...pray you,*] One line in Rowe
(ed. 2). Two in Ff.

And heartily entreats you take good comfort.

Kath. O my good lord, that comfort comes too late ;
 'Tis like a pardon after execution : 121
 That gentle physic, given in time, had cured me ;
 But now I am past all comforts here but prayers.
 How does his highness ?

Cap. Madam, in good health,

Kath. So may he ever do ! and ever flourish, 125
 When I shall dwell with worms, and my poor name
 Banish'd the kingdom ! Patience, is that letter,
 I caused you write, yet sent away ?

Pat. No, madam.

[*Giving it to Katharine.*]

Kath. Sir, I most humbly pray you to deliver
 This to my lord the king.

Cap. Most willing, madam. 130

Kath. In which I have commended to his goodness
 The model of our chaste loves, his young daughter,—
 The dews of heaven fall thick in blessings on her !—
 Beseeching him to give her virtuous breeding—
 She is young and of a noble modest nature : 135
 I hope she will deserve well—and a little
 To love her for her mother's sake, that loved him,
 Heaven knows how dearly. My next poor petition
 Is that his noble grace would have some pity
 Upon my wretched women, that so long 140
 Have follow'd both my fortunes faithfully :
 Of which there is not one, I dare avow,—
 And now I should not lie—but will deserve,

128 [*Giving...*] Malone. reaching it. 138 *Heaven...petition*] One line in Rowe
 Capell. Omitted in Ff. (ed. 2). Two in Ff.
 129 *most*] Ff. *must* Rowe. 143 *will deserve*] F₁F₂. *well deserve* F₃
 130 *This*] *Thus* Rowe (ed. 2). F₄. *well deserves* Hanmer.
willing] F₁. *willingly* F₂F₃F₄.

For virtue and true beauty of the soul,
 For honesty and decent carriage, 145
 A right good husband, let him be a noble :
 And, sure, those men are happy that shall have 'em.
 The last is, for my men ; they are the poorest,
 But poverty could never draw 'em from me ;
 That they may have their wages duly paid 'em, 150
 And something over to remember me by :
 If heaven had pleased to have given me longer life
 And able means, we had not parted thus.
 These are the whole contents : and, good my lord,
 By that you love the dearest in this world, 155
 As you wish Christian peace to souls departed,
 Stand these poor people's friend, and urge the king
 To do me this last right.

Cap. By heaven, I will,
 Or let me lose the fashion of a man !

Kath. I thank you, honest lord. Remember me 160
 In all humility unto his highness :
 Say his long trouble now is passing
 Out of this world ; tell him, in death I bless'd him,
 For so I will. Mine eyes grow dim. Farewell,
 My lord. Griffith, farewell. Nay, Patience, 165
 You must not leave me yet : I must to bed ;
 Call in more women. When I am dead, good wench,

146 *husband, let...noble :*] Pope. *hus-*
band, let...noble, Rowe. *husband*
(let...noble) Ff. *husband ; let.....*
noble ; Capell.

147, 149, 150 'em] *them* Malone.

148 *the poorest] o' th' poorest* S. Walker
 conj.

151 *by]* om. Pope.

152 *to have given] to 'vs giv'n* Hanmer.

153 *able] abler* Hudson (S. Walker
 conj.).

159 *lose]* F₄. *loose* F₁F₂F₃.

162 *Say]* Ff. *And tell him* Pope. *Say*
to him Keightley.

passing] *passing from him* Capell.
passing fast or passing, passing
 Anon. conj. *quickly passing* Words-
 worth.

165 [Exeunt Capucius and Griffith.
 Edd. conj.

167 [Enter women. Edd. conj.

Let me be used with honour: strew me over
 With maiden flowers, that all the world may know
 I was a chaste wife to my grave: embalm me, 170
 Then lay me forth; although unqueen'd, yet like
 A queen, and daughter to a king, inter me.
 I can no more. [Exeunt, leading Katharine.]

ACT V.

SCENE I. *London. A gallery in the palace.*

Enter GARDINER, Bishop of Winchester, a Page with a torch
before him, met by SIR THOMAS LOVELL.

Gar. It's one o'clock, boy, is't not?

Boy. It hath struck.

Gar. These should be hours for necessities,
 Not for delights; times to repair our nature
 With comforting repose, and not for us
 To waste these times. Good hour of night, Sir Thomas!
 Whither so late?

Lov. Came you from the king, my lord? 6

Gar. I did, Sir Thomas, and left him at primero
 With the Duke of Suffolk.

Lov. I must to him too,
 Before he go to bed. I'll take my leave.

Gar. Not yet, Sir Thomas Lovell. What's the matter?

171 *forth; although unqueen'd, yet]*
 Pope. *forth (although unqueen'd)*
yet Ff.

172 *inter] F₄. enterré F₁F₂. interr F₃.*
 London. A gallery...] Gallery...
 Capell. Before the Palace. Theobald.

1 o'] a Ff.

not?] F₄. not. F₁F₂F₃.

struck] F₄. strooke F₁F₂. strook F₃.

5 *waste these times. Good] waste. These*
times— Good Vaughan conj.

6 *Whither] F₃F₄. Whether F₁F₂.*

7 *and] om. Pope.*

It seems you are in haste: an if there be 11
 No great offence belongs to't, give your friend
 Some touch of your late business: affairs that walk,
 As they say spirits do, at midnight, have
 In them a wilder nature than the business 15
 That seeks dispatch by day.

Lov. My lord, I love you;
 And durst commend a secret to your ear
 Much weightier than this work. The queen's in labour,
 They say, in great extremity; and fear'd
 She'll with the labour end.

Gar. The fruit she goes with 20
 I pray for heartily, that it may find
 Good time, and live: but for the stock, Sir Thomas,
 I wish it grubb'd up now.

Lov. Methinks I could
 Cry the amen; and yet my conscience says
 She's a good creature, and, sweet lady, does 25
 Deserve our better wishes.

Gar. But, sir, sir,
 Hear me, Sir Thomas: you're a gentleman
 Of mine own way; I know you wise, religious;
 And, let me tell you, it will ne'er be well,
 'Twill not, Sir Thomas Lovell, take't of me, 30
 Till Cranmer, Cromwell, her two hands, and she,
 Sleep in their graves.

Lov. Now, sir, you speak of two

11 *an if*] Capell. *and if* Ff.

12 *to't*] F₃F₄. *too't* F₁F₂.

13, 14 *affairs that walk, As*] *affairs that*
Walk as Vaughan conj.

18 *work*] *word* Rowe (ed. 2).

19 *great*] om. F₄.

and] *and 'tis* Rowe (ed. 2). *'tis*

Pope.

20 *goes*] *goe* F₂.

24 *Cry the*] *Cry ye* Anon. conj.

25 *She 's*] *She is* F₄.

27 *you're*] Theobald. *y' are* Ff. *you*
are Steevens.

28 *you*] *you are* F₃F₄.

The most remark'd i' the kingdom. As for Cromwell,
Beside that of the jewel house, is made master
O' the rolls, and the king's secretary; further, sir, 35
Stands in the gap and trade of moe preferments,
With which the time will load him. The archbishop
Is the king's hand and tongue; and who dare speak
One syllable against him?

Gar. Yes, yes, Sir Thomas,
There are that dare; and I myself have ventured 40
To speak my mind of him: and indeed this day,
Sir, I may tell it you, I think I have
Incensed the lords o' the council that he is—
For so I know he is, they know he is—
A most arch-heretic, a pestilence 45
That does infect the land: with which they moved
Have broken with the king; who hath so far
Given ear to our complaint, of his great grace
And princely care foreseeing those fell mischiefs
Our reasons laid before him, hath commanded 50
To-morrow morning to the council-board
He be convented. He's a rank weed, Sir Thomas,
And we must root him out. From your affairs
I hinder you too long: good night, Sir Thomas. 54

Lov. Many good nights, my lord: I rest your servant.

[*Exeunt Gardiner and Page.*]

34 *is] he's* Theobald. *he is* Capell.

35 *sir,] om.* Pope.

36 *trade of]* F₁F₂F₃. *trade for* F₄.
tread for Warburton.

moe] Ff. *more* Rowe.

37 *time]* F₄. *Lime* F₁F₂F₃.

38 *and tongue]* F₁F₂. *or tongue* F₃F₄.

39 *Yes, yes]* Ff. *Yes* Pope.

41 *and indeed this]* *indeed this* Pope.
indeed this very Hanmer.

43 *Incensed]* *Insens'd* Knight.

o' the] o' th' F₁F₂. *of the* F₃F₄.

44 *For so]* *For, so* Vaughan conj.

48 *ear]* *year* F₄.

of] *that of* Keightley.

50 *hath]* *he hath* Pope. *Nath* Malone

conj. *'hath* Collier.

52 *convented]* *convened* Johnson.

55 [*Exeunt.....]* *Exit...* Ff (after line
54).

Enter KING and SUFFOLK.

King. Charles, I will play no more to-night;
My mind's not on 't; you are too hard for me.

Suf. Sir, I did never win of you before.

King. But little, Charles,
Nor shall not, when my fancy's on my play. 60
Now, Lovell, from the queen what is the news?

Lov. I could not personally deliver to her
What you commanded me, but by her woman
I sent your message; who return'd her thanks
In the great'st humbleness, and desired your highness
Most heartily to pray for her.

King. What say'st thou, ha? 66
To pray for her? what, is she crying out?

Lov. So said her woman, and that her sufferance made
Almost each pang a death.

King. Alas, good lady!

Suf. God safely quit her of her burthen, and 70
With gentle travail, to the gladding of
Your highness with an heir!

King. 'Tis midnight, Charles;
Prithee, to bed; and in thy prayers remember
The estate of my poor queen. Leave me alone;
For I must think of that which company 75

56 SCENE II. Pope.

Enter King...] Ff. Ex. *Lov.* Scene
changes to an Apartment in the
Palace. *Enter King...* Theobald.
As Lovell is going, *Enter the King,*
and the Duke of Suffolk, as new
risen from Play. Capell.

56—59 *Charles.....Charles,*] As three
lines, ending *mind's.....I* (or *I did,*
reading *you're*)...*Charles,* Nicholson
conj.

56 *more*] *more with you* S. Walker
conj.

60 *fancy's*] F₄. *Fancies* F₁F₂. *Fancie's*
F₃.

61 Re-enter Lovell. Theobald. *Enter*
Lovell. Hanmer.

news?] Rowe. *News.* Ff.

65 *In the great'st*] *In the greatest* F₁.
In greatest Pope.

70 *burthen*] *burden* Johnson.

71 *travail*] *travel* Rowe.

Would not be friendly to.

Suf. I wish your highness
A quiet night, and my good mistress will
Remember in my prayers.

King. Charles, good night. [*Exit Suffolk.*]

Enter SIR ANTHONY DENNY.

Well, sir, what follows?

Den. Sir, I have brought my lord the archbishop, so
As you commanded me.

King. Ha! Canterbury?

Den. Ay, my good lord.

King. 'Tis true: where is he, Denny?

Den. He attends your highness' pleasure.

King. Bring him to us.
[*Exit Denny.*]

Lov. [*Aside*] This is about that which the bishop spake:
I am happily come hither. 85

Re-enter DENNY, with CRANMER.

King. Avoid the gallery. [*Lovell seems to stay.*] Ha! I
have said. Be gone.

What! [*Exeunt Lovell and Denny.*]

Cran. [*Aside*] I am fearful: wherefore frowns he thus?
'Tis his aspect of terror. All's not well.

76 *to] too F₁.*

78 *good] a good Pope.*

79 *Enter...] Ff (after follows?).*

82 *Ay] Rowe. I Ff. Yea Pope.*

83 [*Exit Denny.*] Rowe. om. Ff.

84 [*Aside*] Rowe.

86 *Re-enter...] Capell. Enter Cranmer
and Denny. Ff.*

Avoid...gone.] One line in Capell.

Two in Ff.

seems] seemeth F₄.

87 *What /] What? F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.*

SCENE III. Pope.

[*Aside*] Capell.

fearful] much fearful Hanmer.

King. How now, my lord! you do desire to know
Wherefore I sent for you.

Cran. [*Kneeling*] It is my duty 90
To attend your highness' pleasure.

King. Pray you, arise,
My good and gracious Lord of Canterbury.
Come, you and I must walk a turn together;
I have news to tell you: come, come, give me your hand.
Ah, my good lord, I grieve at what I speak, 95
And am right sorry to repeat what follows:
I have, and most unwillingly, of late
Heard many grievous, I do say, my lord,
Grievous complaints of you; which, being consider'd,
Have moved us and our council, that you shall 100
This morning come before us; where, I know,
You cannot with such freedom purge yourself,
But that, till further trial in those charges
Which will require your answer, you must take
Your patience to you and be well contented 105
To make your house our Tower: you a brother of us,
It fits we thus proceed, or else no witness
Would come against you.

Cran. [*Kneeling*] I humbly thank your highness;
And am right glad to catch this good occasion
Most throughly to be winnow'd, where my chaff 110

89, 90 *How...you.*] Arranged as in Rowe
(ed. 2). As three lines in Ff, ending

Lord?...wherefore...you.

90, 108 [*Kneeling*] Johnson.

91 *To attend*] *T'* attend Ff.
arise] rise Pope.

94 *I have.....hand.*] One line in Pope.
Two in Ff.

I have] *I've* Pope.

come, come] *come* Pope.

97 *unwillingly, of*] F₄. *unwillingly of*
F₁F₂F₃.

98 *grievous, I*] F₄. *grievous; I* F₃.
grievous. I F₁F₂.

106 *you a brother of us,*] *you, a Brother*
of vs F₁. *you, a Brother of us,* F₄.
you a brother, us Vaughan conj.
you] *were you* Long MS. *to Collier*
MS.

110 *winnow'd*] Pope. *winnowed* Ff.

And corn shall fly asunder: for, I know,
 There's none stands under more calumnious tongues
 Than I myself, poor man.

King. Stand up, good Canterbury:
 Thy truth and thy integrity is rooted
 In us, thy friend: give me thy hand, stand up: 115
 Prithee, let's walk. Now, by my holidame,
 What manner of man are you? My lord, I look'd
 You would have given me your petition, that
 I should have ta'en some pains to bring together
 Yourself and your accusers, and to have heard you, 120
 Without indurance further.

Cran. Most dread liege,
 The good I stand on is my truth and honesty:
 If they shall fail, I, with mine enemies,
 Will triumph o'er my person; which I weigh not,
 Being of those virtues vacant. I fear nothing 125
 What can be said against me.

King. Know you not
 How your state stands i' the world, with the whole
 world?
 Your enemies are many, and not small; their practices
 Must bear the same proportion; and not ever
 The justice and the truth o' the question carries 130
 The due o' the verdict with it: at what ease
 Might corrupt minds procure knaves as corrupt

113 *myself, poor man.* King.] *myself.*

King. *Poor man,* Grey conj.

114 *is*] *are* Collier MS.

115 [Cranmer rises. Johnson.

116 *holidame*] *holydame* Ff. *holy Dame*
Rowe.

120 *to have*] *have* Pope.

121 *Without indurance*] *While out of*
durance, Daniel conj.
indurance further] Ff. *indurance,*

further Capell.

122 *good*] *ground* Rann (Johnson
conj.).

123 *fail*] *fall* Rowe (ed. 2).

126 *What*] *Which* Johnson.

128 *Your enemies*] In a separate line in
Steevens (1793).

enemies are] *foes are* Pope. *enemies*
Capell.

131 *due*] F₃F₄. *dew* F₁F₂.

To swear against you? Such things have been done.
 You are potently opposed, and with a malice
 Of as great size. Ween you of better luck, 135
 I mean, in perjured witness, than your master,
 Whose minister you are, whiles here he lived
 Upon this naughty earth? Go to, go to;
 You take a precipice for no leap of danger,
 And woo your own destruction.

Cran. God and your majesty
 Protect mine innocence, or I fall into 141
 The trap is laid for me!

King. Be of good cheer;
 They shall no more prevail than we give way to.
 Keep comfort to you; and this morning see
 You do appear before them. If they shall chance, 145
 In charging you with matters, to commit you,
 The best persuasions to the contrary
 Fail not to use, and with what vehemency
 The occasion shall instruct you: if entreaties
 Will render you no remedy, this ring 150
 Deliver them, and your appeal to us
 There make before them. Look, the good man weeps!
 He's honest, on mine honour. God's blest mother!
 I swear he is true-hearted, and a soul
 None better in my kingdom. Get you gone, 155
 And do as I have bid you. [*Exit Cranmer.*] He has
 strangled
 His language in his tears.

134 *You are*] *You're* Pope.

137 *whiles*] *while* Pope.

138, 143 *to*] *too* F₁.

139 *precipice*] *Precept* F₁.

140 *And woo*] F₃F₄. *And woe* F₁. *Ane
 woe* F₂.

145 *shall*] om. Pope.

152 *good man*] F₃F₄. *goodman* F₁F₂.

156, 157 *He has...tears.*] Arranged as
 in Hanmer. As one line in Ff.

156 *He has*] *He ha's* Ff. *He's* as Pope.

157 *His language*] F₁. *all his language
 F₂F₃F₄*. *All language* Hanmer.

Enter Old Lady; Lovell following.

Gent. [Within] Come back: what mean you?

Old L. I'll not come back; the tidings that I bring
Will make my boldness manners. Now, good angels
Fly o'er thy royal head, and shade thy person 160
Under their blessed wings!

King. Now, by thy looks
I guess thy message. Is the queen deliver'd?
Say, ay, and of a boy.

Old L. Ay, ay, my liege;
And of a lovely boy: the God of heaven
Both now and ever bless her! 'tis a girl, 165
Promises boys hereafter. Sir, your queen
Desires your visitation, and to be
Acquainted with this stranger: 'tis as like you
As cherry is to cherry.

King. Lovell!

Lov. Sir?

King. Give her an hundred marks. I'll to the queen.
[Exit.]

Old L. An hundred marks! By this light, I'll ha'
more. 171

An ordinary groom is for such payment.
I will have more, or scold it out of him.
Said I for this, the girl was like to him?
I will have more, or else unsay't; and now, 175
While it is hot, I'll put it to the issue. [Exeunt.]

Enter...] Capell. Enter Olde Lady. 174—176 *Said...issue.*] Arranged as by
Ff. Enter an old Lady in haste. Steevens (1778). In Ff the lines
Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). end *He...hot...issue.*
169 Enter Lovell. Steevens. 174 *like to*] like Pope.
Sir ?] Dyce. *Sir.* Ff. 175 *I will*] Steevens (1778). *He* F₁F₂.
170 *Give.....queen.*] One line in Pope. *I'll* F₃F₄.
Two in Ff. and now] now Pope.
[Exit.] Exit King. Ff. 176 *it is*] Steevens (1778). 'tis Ff.
171 *ha*] F₃. *ha* F₁F₂F₄. *have* Capell. [Exeunt.] Capell. Exit Ladie. Ff.

www.libtocol.com.cn
SCENE II. *Before the council-chamber.*

Pursuivants, Pages, &c. attending.

Enter CRANMER, Archbishop of Canterbury.

Cran. I hope I am not too late; and yet the gentleman

That was sent to me from the council pray'd me
To make great haste. All fast? what means this? Ho!
Who waits there? Sure, you know me?

Enter Keeper.

Keep. Yes, my lord;
But yet I cannot help you. 5

Cran. Why?

Enter DOCTOR BUTTS.

Keep. Your grace must wait till you be call'd for.

Cran. So.

Butts. [*Aside*] This is a piece of malice. I am glad
I came this way so happily: the king
Shall understand it presently. [*Exit.*]

Cran. [*Aside*] 'Tis Butts,
The king's physician: as he pass'd along, 10

SCENE II.] SCENE IV. Pope.
Before the council-chamber.] Theobald. The council-Chamber. Capell.
Pursuivants, Pages, &c. attending.
Enter...] Chair, under a State, for the King; beneath, a Table: Chamber-keeper attending. Servants at the Door without; to which, Enter Cranmer. Capell. Enter Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury. Ff.

1 *I am*] I'm Pope.
4—6 *Yes... Why?*] One line, Nicholson conj.
5—7 *But...grace*] One line in Capell.
6 *Why f*] *Why so?* Wordsworth.
7 Enter...] Capell. In Ff after for. So.] om. Wordsworth.
8 [*Aside*] Dyce and Staunton. *piece*] Peere F₁.
9 *happily*] F₁F₂F₃. *haply* F₄.
10 [*Aside*] Johnson.

How earnestly he cast his eyes upon me!
 Pray heaven, he sound not my disgrace! For certain,
 This is of purpose laid by some that hate me— 14
 God turn their hearts! I never sought their malice—
 To quench mine honour: they would shame to make me
 Wait else at door, a fellow-councillor,
 'Mong boys, grooms and lackeys. But their pleasures
 Must be fulfill'd, and I attend with patience. 19

Enter the KING and BUTTS at a window above.

Butts. I'll show your grace the strangest sight—
King. What's that, Butts?

Butts. I think your highness saw this many a day.

King. Body o' me, where is it?

Butts. There, my lord:
 The high promotion of his grace of Canterbury;
 Who holds his state at door, 'mongst pursuivants,
 Pages and footboys.

King. Ha! 'tis he, indeed: 25
 Is this the honour they do one another?
 'Tis well there's one above 'em yet. I had thought
 They had parted so much honesty among 'em,
 At least good manners, as not thus to suffer
 A man of his place and so near our favour 30
 To dance attendance on their lordships' pleasures,
 And at the door too, like a post with packets.
 By holy Mary, Butts, there's knavery:

13 *sound*] *found* Rowe.

18 *'Mong...pleasures*] One line in Rowe
 (ed. 2). Two in Ff.

'Mong] *Among* Capell.

boys] *footboys* Anon. conj. *pages*

Anon. conj. (from Fox).

grooms] *and grooms* Rowe (ed. 2).

19 *fulfill'd*] Ff. *fulfilled* Rowe.

20 *sight*—] Rowe. *sight*. Ff.

22 *o' me*] Pope. *a me* Ff.

27 *above 'em yet*. I] *above 'em*.—*Yet I*
 Theobald conj. (withdrawn).

had] om. Pope.

27, 28, 34 *'em*] *them* Malone.

28 *They had*] *They'd* Pope.

Let 'em alone, and draw the curtain close;
We shall hear more anon.

[*Exeunt.* 35

www.libtool.com.cn

SCENE III. *The council-chamber.*

Enter LORD CHANCELLOR, *places himself at the upper end of the table on the left hand; a seat being left void above him, as for CANTERBURY'S seat; DUKE OF SUFFOLK, DUKE OF NORFOLK, SURREY, LORD CHAMBERLAIN, GARDINER, seat themselves in order on each side. CROMWELL at lower end, as secretary. Keeper at the door.*

Chan. Speak to the business, master secretary :

Why are we met in council ?

Crom. Please your honours,

The chief cause concerns his grace of Canterbury.

Gar. Has he had knowledge of it ?

Crom. Yes.

Nor. Who waits there ?

Keep. Without, my noble lords ?

Gar. Yes.

Keep. My lord archbishop ;

And has done half an hour, to know your pleasures. 6

Chan. Let him come in.

Keep. Your grace may enter now.

[*Cranmer enters and approaches the council-table.*

35 [*Exeunt.*] Reed (1803). Curtain drawn. Capell.

SCENE III.] Edd. SCENE V. Pope. om. Ff. See note (x).

The council-chamber.] Reed. The council. Theobald. A Councill Table brought in with Chayres and Stooles, and placed vnder the State. Ff.

Enter...secretary.] Ff.

Lord Chancellor,] Sir Thomas More,

Lord Chancellor. Theobald conj. (withdrawn).

Keeper at the door.] Edd. om. Ff.

1 *master*] Steevens (1778). *M.* F₁F₂. *Mr.* F₃F₄.

1, 2 *secretary: Why...council ?] secretary, Why...council.* Perring conj.

2 *are we] we are* Anon. conj. (reading council.).

3 *chief] om.* Pope. *chiefest* Capell. *cause] om.* Anon. conj.

concerns] 'cerns Lettsom conj.

4 *had] om.* F₄.

5 *noble] om.* Steevens conj.

lords ?] F₁F₂. Lords. F₃F₄.

Gar. Yes.] om. Mitford conj.

7 *enters and] Edd.* om. Ff.

Chan. My good lord archbishop, I'm very sorry
 To sit here at this present and behold
 That chair stand empty : but we all are men, 10
 In our own natures frail and capable
 Of our flesh ; few are angels : out of which frailty
 And want of wisdom, you, that best should teach us,
 Have misdemean'd yourself, and not a little,
 Toward the king first, then his laws, in filling 15
 The whole realm, by your teaching and your chaplains,—
 For so we are inform'd,—with new opinions,
 Divers and dangerous ; which are heresies,
 And, not reform'd, may prove pernicious.

Gar. Which reformation must be sudden too, 20
 My noble lords ; for those that tame wild horses
 Pace 'em not in their hands to make 'em gentle,
 But stop their mouths with stubborn bits and spur 'em,
 Till they obey the manage. If we suffer,
 Out of our easiness and childish pity 25
 To one man's honour, this contagious sickness,
 Farewell all physic : and what follows then ?
 Commotions, uproars, with a general taint
 Of the whole state : as of late days our neighbours,
 The upper Germany, can dearly witness, 30
 Yet freshly pitied in our memories.

8 *I'm*] *I am* Capell.

11 *frail and capable*] *culpable and frail*
 Keightley conj. *frail and fallible*
 Cartwright conj.

11, 12 *and.....angels*] *and culpable ;*
Those frailty-frees are angels Theobald
 conj.

and capable Of our flesh ;] Capell.
and capable Of our flesh, Ff. *and*
capable Of frailty, Pope. *incapable ;*
Of our flesh, Malone. *and culpable :*
Of our flesh, Mason conj. *and cul-*
pable Of our flesh ; Collier, ed. 2

(Collier MS.). *and culpable, Of*
devilish Bulloch conj. *and capable ;*
Of our flesh, quoted by Staunton.
incapable Of our flesh ; Wilmshurst
 conj. (N. & Q., 1880).

11 *capable*] *peccable* Spence conj. (N. &
 Q., 1880).

12 *Of our flesh ; few*] *Of falling ; so*
 Anon. conj.
out of] *from* Pope.

16 *chaplains*] *chaplains'* Vaughan conj.

22, 23 *'em*] *them* Malone.

29 *as*] *om.* F₃F₄.

Cran. My good lords, hitherto, in all the progress
 Both of my life and office, I have labour'd,
 And with no little study, that my teaching
 And the strong course of my authority 35
 Might go one way, and safely; and the end
 Was ever to do well: nor is there living,
 I speak it with a single heart, my lords,
 A man that more detests, more stirs against,
 Both in his private conscience and his place, 40
 Defacers of a public peace, than I do.
 Pray heaven, the king may never find a heart
 With less allegiance in it! Men that make
 Envy and crooked malice nourishment
 Dare bite the best. I do beseech your lordships, 45
 That, in this case of justice, my accusers,
 Be what they will, may stand forth face to face,
 And freely urge against me.

Suf. Nay, my lord,
 That cannot be: you are a councillor,
 And, by that virtue, no man dare accuse you. 50

Gar. My lord, because we have business of more
 moment,
 We will be short with you. 'Tis his highness' pleasure,
 And our consent, for better trial of you,
 From hence you be committed to the Tower;
 Where, being but a private man again, 55
 You shall know many dare accuse you boldly,
 More than, I fear, you are provided for.

Cran. Ah, my good Lord of Winchester, I thank you;
 You are always my good friend; if your will pass,

39 *stirs*] F₄. *stirres* F₁F₂F₃. *strives* 51 *we have*] *we've* Pope.
 Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.). 58 *Ah*] *Ay* Rowe (ed. 2).
 41 *of a*] *of the* Rowe.

I shall both find your lordship judge and juror, 60
 You are so merciful. I see your end;
 'Tis my undoing. Love and meekness, lord,
 Become a churchman better than ambition:
 Win straying souls with modesty again,
 Cast none away. That I shall clear myself, 65
 Lay all the weight ye can upon my patience,
 I make as little doubt as you do conscience
 In doing daily wrongs. I could say more,
 But reverence to your calling makes me modest.

Gar. My lord, my lord, you are a sectary; 70
 That's the plain truth: your painted gloss discovers,
 To men that understand you, words and weakness.

Crom. My Lord of Winchester, you are a little,
 By your good favour, too sharp; men so noble,
 However faulty, yet should find respect 75
 For what they have been: 'tis a cruelty
 To load a falling man.

Gar. Good master secretary,
 I cry your honour mercy; you may, worst
 Of all this table, say so.

Crom. Why, my lord?

Gar. Do not I know you for a favourer 80
 Of this new sect? ye are not sound.

Crom. Not sound?

Gar. Not sound, I say.

Crom. Would you were half so honest!
 Men's prayers then would seek you, not their fears.

60 *both...lordship] your lordship find both* Wordsworth.

72 *you, words] your words* Long MS.

73 *you are] Pope. y' are Ff. you're Rowe.*

75 *faulty] faultily* F₁.

76 *a cruelty] cruelty* Anon. conj.

77 *master] Steevens (1778). M. F₁F₂.*

Mr. F₃F₄.

Gar. I shall remember this bold language.

Crom. Do.

Remember your bold life too.

Chan. This is too much ; 85
Forbear, for shame, my lords.

Gar. I have done.

Crom. And I.

Chan. Then thus for you, my lord : it stands agreed,
I take it, by all voices, that forthwith
You be convey'd to the Tower a prisoner ;
There to remain till the king's further pleasure 90
Be known unto us : are you all agreed, lords ?

All. We are.

Cran. Is there no other way of mercy,
But I must needs to the Tower, my lords ?

Gar. What other
Would you expect ? you are strangely troublesome.
Let some o' the guard be ready there.

Enter Guard.

Cran. For me ? 95
Must I go like a traitor thither ?

Gar. Receive him,
And see him safe i' the Tower.

Cran. Stay, good my lords,
I have a little yet to say. Look there, my lords ;
By virtue of that ring, I take my cause
Out of the gripes of cruel men, and give it 100
To a most noble judge, the king my master.

85 *Chan.*] Capell. Cham. Ff.
This is] *This'* S. Walker conj.

86 *I have*] *I've* Pope.

87 *Chan.*] Capell (Theobald conj.).
Cham. Ff.

91 *lords* ?] F₄. *Lords.* F₁F₂F₃.

94 *you are*] *you're* Pope.

95 *Enter Guard.*] *Enter the Guard.*

Ff.

Cham. This is the king's ring.

Sur. 'Tis no counterfeit.

Suf. 'Tis the right ring, by heaven: I told ye all,
When we first put this dangerous stone a-rolling,
'Twould fall upon ourselves.

Nor. Do you think, my lords, 105
The king will suffer but the little finger
Of this man to be vex'd?

Cham. 'Tis now too certain:
How much more is his life in value with him?
Would I were fairly out on't!

Crom. My mind gave me, 110
In seeking tales and informations
Against this man, whose honesty the devil
And his disciples only envy at,
Ye blew the fire that burns ye: now have at ye!

Enter KING, frowning on them; takes his seat.

Gar. Dread sovereign, how much are we bound to
heaven 115
In daily thanks, that gave us such a prince,
Not only good and wise, but most religious:
One that, in all obedience, makes the church
The chief aim of his honour; and, to strengthen
That holy duty, out of dear respect,
His royal self in judgement comes to hear 120
The cause betwixt her and this great offender.

King. You were ever good at sudden commendations,
Bishop of Winchester. But know, I come not

102, 107 *Cham.*] Ff. Cha. Capell.

Chan. Dyce.

103 'Tis the] F₂. 'Tis the F₁. 'Tis his
F₃F₄.

108 *him?*] *him!* Perring conj.

112 *disciples*] *diciples* F₂.

114 SCENE VI. Pope.

Dread...heaven] One line in Pope.

Two in Ff.

119 *out of*] *of our* F₃F₄.

122 *You were*] *You're* Pope.

To hear such flattery now, and in my presence
 They are too thin and bare to hide offences. 125
 To me you cannot reach you play the spaniel,
 And think with wagging of your tongue to win me ;
 But, whatsoe'er thou takest me for, I'm sure
 Thou hast a cruel nature and a bloody.

[*To Cranmer*] Good man, sit down. Now let me see the
 proudest 130

He, that dares most, but wag his finger at thee :
 By all that's holy, he had better starve
 Than but once think this place becomes thee not.

Sur. May it please your grace,—

King. No, sir, it does not please me.

I had thought I had had men of some understanding
 And wisdom of my council ; but I find none. 136

Was it discretion, lords, to let this man,
 This good man,—few of you deserve that title,—
 This honest man, wait like a lousy footboy
 At chamber-door? and one as great as you are? 140

Why, what a shame was this! Did my commission
 Bid ye so far forget yourselves? I gave ye
 Power as he was a councillor to try him,
 Not as a groom: there's some of ye, I see,
 More out of malice than integrity, 145
 Would try him to the utmost, had ye mean ;

124 *flattery*] *flatteries* Rowe (ed. 2).

124, 125 *presence They*] *F*₁. *presence*,
They *F*₂*F*₃*F*₄. *presence*; *They* *Ca-*
pell.

125 *bare*] Dyce (Malone conj.). *bare*
Ff.
offences.] Steevens. *offences*, *Ff.*

126 *To me*] *To one* Rann (Whalley
 conj.).

reach you] *reach*, *you* Steevens
 (Mason conj.). *reach*. *You* *Ff.*

130 [*To Cranmer*] Rowe. *om. Ff.*
 (Cranm. sittes. Collier MS.)

130, 131 *proudest He*,] *Ff. proudest*,
He Collier.

133 *this*] Rowe. *his Ff.*

135 *I had thought I had had men*] *Ff.*
I had had thought I had men Rowe
 (ed. 1). *I had thought I had men*
 Rowe (ed. 2). *I thought I had men*
 Pope.

146 *mean*] *means* Pope.

Which ye shall never have while I live.

Chan. www.libtool.com.cn Thus far,
My most dread sovereign, may it like your grace
To let my tongue excuse all. What was purposed
Concerning his imprisonment, was rather, 150
If there be faith in men, meant for his trial
And fair purgation to the world, than malice,
I'm sure, in me.

King. Well, well, my lords, respect him;
Take him and use him well; he's worthy of it.
I will say thus much for him, if a prince 155
May be beholding to a subject, I
Am, for his love and service, so to him.
Make me no more ado, but all embrace him:
Be friends, for shame, my lords! My Lord of Canterbury,
I have a suit which you must not deny me; 160
That is, a fair young maid that yet wants baptism;
You must be godfather, and answer for her.

Cran. The greatest monarch now alive may glory
In such an honour: how may I deserve it,
That am a poor and humble subject to you? 165

King. Come, come, my lord, you 'ld spare your spoons:
you shall have two noble partners with you; the old
Duchess of Norfolk, and Lady Marquess Dorset: will
these please you?

147 *while*] *the while* Collier MS.

live] *do live* F₃F₄.

Chan.] F₁F₂. *Chan.* F₃F₄.

Thus far] om. Pope.

153 *I'm*] *I am* Capell.

156 *beholding*] *beholden* Rowe (ed. 2).

158 *him*] om. Johnson.

[They embrace him; Gardiner last.

Collier, ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

161 *That is,*] *There is* Rowe.

162 *her*] om. Vaughan conj.

166—169 *Come...you?*] As in Ff. Pope

arranges as verse, ending the lines
have ... Dutchess ... Dorset. Capell
ends them *have...Norfolk...please*
you?

168 *of*] om. S. Walker conj., arranging
as Capell.

Lady] *the Lady Rowe* (ed. 2). *the*
old Lady Johnson (1771).

Dorset] F₁F₂. *of Dorset* F₃F₄.

168, 169 *will these please you?*] Omitted
by Pope.

Once more, my Lord of Winchester, I charge you, 170
Embrace and love this man.

Gar. www.libtool.com.cn With a true heart
And brother-love I do it.

Cran. And let heaven
Witness how dear I hold this confirmation.

King. Good man, those joyful tears show thy true
heart :

The common voice, I see, is verified 175

Of thee, which says thus : 'Do my Lord of Canterbury
A shrewd turn, and he is your friend for ever.'

Come, lords, we trifle time away ; I long
To have this young one made a Christian.

As I have made ye one, lords, one remain ; 180

So I grow stronger, you more honour gain. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *The palace yard.*

Noise and tumult within. Enter Porter and his Man.

Port. You'll leave your noise anon, ye rascals : do you
take the court for Paris-garden ? ye rude slaves, leave your
gaping.

[*Within*] 'Good master porter, I belong to the larder.'

171 [They embrace again. Collier,
ed. 2 (Collier MS.).

172 *brother-love*] Malone. *Brother ; love*
F₁. *Brothers love* F₂F₃F₄. *brother's*
love Rowe.

174 *heart*] *hearts* F₁.

177 *A*] *But one* Pope.
he is] Capell. *hee's* F₁F₂. *he's* F₃
F₄.

SCENE IV.] Edd. *Scena Tertia. Ff.*

SCENE VII. Pope.

The palace yard.] Theobald.

1—9 *You 'U...rude rascals !*] As ten
lines of verse in Capell, ending *noise*
...court...gaping...larder...rogue:...
roar in!..... ones;... to 'em...christ-
nings?...rascals ?

1 *leave*] *leans* F₂.

2 *Paris-garden?*] Johnson. *Paris-*
Garden: F₄. *Parish Garden:* F₁F₂F₃.

4, 26, 27 *master*] Steevens. *M.* F₁F₂.
Mr. F₃F₄.

Port. Belong to the gallows, and be hanged, ye rogue !
Is this a place to roar in ? Fetch me a dozen crab-tree
staves, and strong ones : these are but switches to 'em.
I'll scratch your heads : you must be seeing christenings ?
do you look for ale and cakes here, you rude rascals ?

Man. Pray, sir, be patient : 'tis as much impossible—
Unless we sweep 'em from the door with cannons— 11
To scatter 'em, as 'tis to make 'em sleep
On May-day morning ; which will never be :
We may as well push against Powle's as stir 'em.

Port. How got they in, and be hang'd ? 15

Man. Alas, I know not ; how gets the tide in ?
As much as one sound cudgel of four foot—
You see the poor remainder—could distribute,
I made no spare, sir.

Port. You did nothing, sir.

Man. I am not Samson, nor Sir Guy, nor Colbrand,
To mow 'em down before me : but if I spared any 21
That had a head to hit, either young or old,
He or she, cuckold or cuckold-maker,
Let me ne'er hope to see a chine again ;
And that I would not for a cow, God save her ! 25

[*Within*] 'Do you hear, master porter ?'

5 *ye*] *you* Capell.

6 *roar*] *roats* F₂.

7 *switches* to 'em.] *switches*.—*To* 'em.

Warburton.

7, 12, &c. 'em] *them* Malone (and
throughout the scene).

9 (Shouts) Collier MS.

11 *sweep*] *swept* F₃F₄.

'em] *them* Steevens.

14 *as well*] *is well* F₂.

Powle's] *Powles* F₁F₂. *Poule's* F₃.

Pauls F₄.

20—25 *I...her*] As in Ff. Prose in

Pope.

20, 21 *I...To*] One line, Watkiss Lloyd
conj. (N. & Q., 1887).

23 *He*] *Be it he* Keightley.

24 *ne'er*] *never* Rowe (ed. 2).

chine] *queen* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier
MS.).

25 *a cow*] *a crown* Collier, ed. 2 (Collier
MS.). *my cow* Staunton conj. *a
sow* Watkiss Lloyd conj. (N. & Q.,
1887).

26 (tumult) Collier MS.

Port. I shall be with you presently, good master puppy. Keep the door close, sirrah.

Man. What would you have me do? 29

Port. What should you do, but knock 'em down by the dozens? Is this Moorfields to muster in? or have we some strange Indian with the great tool come to court, the women so besiege us? Bless me, what a fry of fornication is at door! On my Christian conscience, this one christening will beget a thousand; here will be father, godfather, and all together. 36

Man. The spoons will be the bigger, sir. There is a fellow somewhat near the door, he should be a brazier by his face, for, o' my conscience, twenty of the dog-days now reign in 's nose; all that stand about him are under the line, they need no other penance: that fire-drake did I hit three times on the head, and three times was his nose discharged against me; he stands there, like a mortar-piece, to blow us. There was a haberdasher's wife of small wit near him, that railed upon me till her pinked porringer fell off her head, for kindling such a combustion in the state. I missed the meteor once, and hit that woman, who cried out 'Clubs!' when I might see from far some forty truncheoners draw to her succour, which were the hope o' the Strand, where she was quartered.

30 *What should you do,*] In a line by itself in Ff. As prose in Rowe.

30—63 *but knock...to come.*] As prose in Ff. As verse in Capell. See note (xi).

32 *tool*] Pope. *Toole* (italic) Ff.

33 (Noise) Collier MS.

34 *at door*] *at dore* F₁F₂. *at the door* F₃F₄.

40 *in 's*] *in his* Capell.

44 *blow us*] F₁F₂. *blow us up* F₃F₄.

45 *wit*] *wares* Watkiss Lloyd conj. (N. & Q., 1887).

46 *fell*] *sell* F₂.

a] om. Capell.

48, 49 *from far*] om. Pope.

49 *truncheoners*] F₁F₂. *Truncheons* F₃ F₄. *truncheoneers* Capell.

50 *hope*] *fortorn hope* Hanmer. *o']* of Pope.

Strand] F₄. *Strond* F₁F₂F₃.

They fell on; I made good my place: at length they came to the broomstaff to me; I defied 'em still: when suddenly a file of boys behind 'em, loose shot, delivered such a shower of pebbles, that I was fain to draw mine honour in and let 'em win the work: the devil was amongst 'em, I think, surely. 56

Port. These are the youths that thunder at a play-house and fight for bitten apples; that no audience, but the tribulation of Tower-hill, or the limbs of Limehouse, their dear brothers, are able to endure. I have some of 'em in Limbo Patrum, and there they are like to dance these three days; besides the running banquet of two beadles that is to come.

Enter LORD CHAMBERLAIN.

Cham. Mercy o' me, what a multitude are here! They grow still too; from all parts they are coming, 65
As if we kept a fair here. Where are these porters, These lazy knaves? Ye have made a fine hand, fellows! There's a trim rabble let in: are all these Your faithful friends o' the suburbs? We shall have Great store of room, no doubt, left for the ladies, 70
When they pass back from the christening.

Port. An 't please your honour,

- | | |
|--|--|
| 52 to me] with me Pope. wi' me Capell. | F ₃ F ₄ . lambs Steevens conj. young limbs Anon. conj. |
| 53, 54 behind 'em,.....pebbles,] behind 'em deliver'd...pibbles, loose shot, Pope. | 60 brothers] brethren S. Walker conj. |
| loose shot, delivered] loos'd shot and delivered Daniel conj. | 63 (Tumult and shouts) Collier MS. |
| 54 pebbles] Johnson. Pibbles Ff. | 64 a] om. F ₂ . |
| 56 (Shoutes) Collier MS. | 66 here] om. Pope. |
| 59 tribulation] Ff. Tribulation Theobald. sweet tribulation Capell. | 67 Ye have] F' have Ff. |
| limbs] Pope. Limbes F ₁ F ₂ . Limbs | a fine] fine F ₂ . |
| | 71 christening.] Capell. Christening? Ff. |
| | An't please] Capell. And't please Ff. Please Pope. |

We are but men; and what so many may do,
 Not being torn a-pieces, we have done:
 An army cannot rule 'em.

Cham.

As I live,

If the king blame me for 't, I'll lay ye all
 By the heels, and suddenly; and on your heads
 Clap round fines for neglect: ye're lazy knaves;
 And here ye lie baiting of bombards when
 Ye should do service. Hark! the trumpets sound;
 They're come already from the christening:
 Go, break among the press, and find a way out
 To let the troop pass fairly, or I'll find
 A Marshalsea shall hold ye play these two months.

75

80

Port. Make way there for the princess.

Man.

You great fellow,

Stand close up, or I'll make your head ache.

85

Port. You i' the camlet, get up o' the rail;
 I'll peck you o'er the pales else.

[*Exeunt.*]

72 *what so many*] *what-so man* Anon. conj.

73 *a-pieces*] *a pieces* F₁F₂F₃. *in pieces* F₄.

77 *ye're*] Dyce. *y' are* Ff. *you are* Steevens.

78 (Trumpets) Collier MS.

80 *They're*] Capell. *Th' are* Ff. *They are* Steevens.

81 *press*] F₄. *preasse* F₁F₂. *preass* F₃. *a way*] *away* F₁.

84—87 *Make...else.*] Prose in Pope.

84 *there*] om. Warburton.

(Tumult and confusion) Collier MS.

86 *camlet*] Steevens (1793). *Chamblet* Ff. *camblet* Pope.

up o'] off Rann (Mason conj.). *up off* Mason conj.

87 *peck*] F₃F₄. *pecke* F₁F₂. *pick* Johnson.

pales] *pates* Knight, ed. 2 (Anon. conj.). *poll* Collier MS.

SCENE V. *The palace.*
 www.hdtol.com.cn

Enter Trumpets, sounding; then two Aldermen, Lord Mayor, Garter, CRANMER, DUKE OF NORFOLK with his marshal's staff, DUKE OF SUFFOLK, two Noblemen bearing great standing-bowls for the christening gifts; then four Noblemen bearing a canopy, under which the DUCHESS OF NORFOLK, godmother, bearing the child richly habited in a mantle, &c., train borne by a Lady; then follows the MARCHIONESS DORSET, the other godmother, and Ladies. The troop pass once about the stage, and Garter speaks.

Gart. Heaven, from thy endless goodness, send prosperous life, long, and ever happy, to the high and mighty princess of England, Elizabeth!

Flourish. Enter KING and Guard.

Cran. [*Kneeling*] And to your royal grace, and the good queen.

My noble partners and myself thus pray: 5
 All comfort, joy, in this most gracious lady,
 Heaven ever laid up to make parents happy,
 May hourly fall upon ye!

King. Thank you, good lord archbishop:
 What is her name?

Cran. Elizabeth.

King. Stand up, lord.

[*The King kisses the child.*]

SCENE V.] Edd. Scena Quarta. Ff.

SCENE VIII. Pope.

The palace.] Theobald. Palace at Greenwich. Collier (Reed conj.).

Dorset,] of Dorset, F.

1—3 *Heaven...Elizabeth!*] Printed as prose, first, by Capell. As four lines, ending *Heaven,...life,...Mighty...Elizabeth*, in Ff. See note (XII).

4 *Guard.*] Train. Capell.

4 [*Kneeling*] Johnson. om. Ff.

to] for Hudson (reading *queen*).

4, 5 *queen. My...pray:*] Edd. *Queen, My...pray* Ff. *queen, My...pray*, Rowe. *queen, My...pray*; Pope.

6 *lady*] *day* Johnson, 1771 (a misprint).

7 *Heaven ever*] *That heav'n e'er* Pope.

8 *archbishop*] om. Steevens conj.

9 [*The King...*] Johnson. om. Ff.

With this kiss take my blessing: God protect thee! 10
 Into whose hand I give thy life.

Cran. www.libtool.com.cn Amen.

King. My noble gossips, ye have been too prodigal:
 I thank ye heartily; so shall this lady,
 When she has so much English.

Cran. Let me speak, sir,
 For heaven now bids me; and the words I utter 15
 Let none think flattery, for they'll find 'em truth.
 This royal infant—heaven still move about her!—
 Though in her cradle, yet now promises
 Upon this land a thousand thousand blessings,
 Which time shall bring to ripeness: she shall be— 20
 But few now living can behold that goodness—
 A pattern to all princes living with her,
 And all that shall succeed: Saba was never
 More covetous of wisdom and fair virtue
 Than this pure soul shall be: all princely graces, 25
 That mould up such a mighty piece as this is,
 With all the virtues that attend the good,
 Shall still be doubled on her: truth shall nurse her,
 Holy and heavenly thoughts still counsel her:
 She shall be loved and fear'd: her own shall bless her;
 Her foes shake like a field of beaten corn, 31
 And hang their heads with sorrow. Good grows with her:
 In her days every man shall eat in safety,
 Under his own vine, what he plants, and sing

12 *ye have*] Johnson. *y' have* Ff. *you have* Hanmer.

16 *'em*] *them* Malone.

21 *few now*] *few or none* Warburton.

23 *Saba*] *Sheba* Rowe (ed. 2).

25 *pure*] *poor* Rowe (ed. 2). *blest* Pope.

26 *such*] F₁. om. F₂F₃F₄.

is] om. Pope.

31 *corn*] F₃F₄. *Corne* F₁F₂. See note (XIII).

32 *And...her:]* One line in Rowe (ed. 2). Two lines, the first ending *sorrow*, in Ff.

grows] *grow* Wordsworth.

The merry songs of peace to all his neighbours: 35
 God shall be truly known; and those about her
 From her shall read the perfect ways of honour,
 And by those claim their greatness, not by blood.
 Nor shall this peace sleep with her; but, as when
 The bird of wonder dies, the maiden phoenix, 40
 Her ashes new create another heir
 As great in admiration as herself,
 So shall she leave her blessedness to one—
 When heaven shall call her from this cloud of darkness—
 Who from the sacred ashes of her honour 45
 Shall star-like rise, as great in fame as she was,
 And so stand fix'd. Peace, plenty, love, truth, terror,
 That were the servants to this chosen infant,
 Shall then be his, and like a vine grow to him:
 Wherever the bright sun of heaven shall shine, 50
 His honour and the greatness of his name
 Shall be, and make new nations: he shall flourish,
 And, like a mountain cedar, reach his branches
 To all the plains about him. Our children's children
 Shall see this, and bless heaven.

King. Thou speakest wonders.

Cran. She shall be, to the happiness of England, 56
 An aged princess; many days shall see her,
 And yet no day without a deed to crown it.
 Would I had known no more! but she must die;
 She must; the saints must have her; yet a virgin, 60

37 *read*] *tread* Collier conj.

37, 38 *ways...by those claim*] *F₄*. *way*
...by those claime *F₁F₂F₃*. *ways...*
claim by those Pope. *way...by that*
claim Capell.

39—55 *Nor shall.....heaven.*] See note
 (xiv).

54 *Our*] om. Pope.

56—62 *She shall...mourn her.*] See note
 (xiv).

57 *shall see her*] *she'll see here* Vaughan
 conj.

60 *her; yet a virgin.*] *Ff.* *her yet a*
virgin; Theobald.

A most unspotted lily shall she pass
To the ground, and all the world shall mourn her.

King. O lord archbishop,
Thou hast made me now a man ! never, before
This happy child, did I get any thing. 65
This oracle of comfort has so pleased me,
That when I am in heaven I shall desire
To see what this child does, and praise my Maker.
I thank ye all. To you, my good lord mayor,
And your good brethren, I am much beholding ; 70
I have received much honour by your presence,
And ye shall find me thankful. Lead the way, lords :
Ye must all see the queen, and she must thank ye ;
She will be sick else. This day, no man think
Has business at his house ; for all shall stay : 75
This little one shall make it holiday. [Exeunt.

THE EPILOGUE.

'Tis ten to one this play can never please
All that are here : some come to take their ease,
And sleep an act or two ; but those, we fear,
We have frighted with our trumpets ; so, 'tis clear,
They'll say 'tis naught : others, to hear the city 5

61 *most*] *pure* Capell (corrected in *Errata*).

62 *To*] *Unto* Hanmer.

62, 63 *and...archbishop,*] As one line S. Walker conj., supposing something lost after *ground*.

62 *mourn*] *mourn for* S. Walker conj.

70 *your good*] Theobald (Thirlby conj.)
you good Ff.

beholding] *beholden* Rowe (ed. 2).

75 *Has*] *'Has* Ff. *H' as* Rowe (ed. 2).
He'as Hanmer. *He has* Capell.

2 *ease*] *case* F₂.

3 *sleep*] *sleep out* F₃F₄.

4 *We have*] *W' haws* Ff. *We've* Rowe (ed. 2).

5 *'tis*] F₁. *it's* F₂F₃F₄.

Abused extremely, and to cry 'That's witty!'
 Which we have not done neither; that, I fear,
 All the expected good we're like to hear
 For this play at this time, is only in
 The merciful construction of good women;
 For such a one we show'd 'em: if they smile,
 And say 'twill do, I know, within a while
 All the best men are ours; for 'tis ill hap,
 If they hold when their ladies bid 'em clap.

10

8 *we're]* *w' are* Ff. *we are* Capell. *men,* But Collier conj.
 9, 10 *is only in The]* *we shall not owe* 11 *'em]* *them* Malone.

NOTES.

NOTE I.

I. 1. 167. Mr Collier says: "In the three earlier Folios the word is spelt 'wrenching,' which the printer of the fourth folio, not understanding, altered to 'drenching.'" In the three copies of the fourth Folio now before us the word is 'wrenching.'

NOTE II.

I. 2. Capell, followed by Malone, made many gratuitous alterations in the stage-directions of the Folios, which we have not thought it worth while always to record.

NOTE III.

II. 3. 7—9. Pope's reading is as follows:

'Still growing in a majesty and pomp,
The which to leave, a thousand-fold more bitter
Than sweet at first t' acquire.'

Theobald, followed by Hanmer, has:

'Still growing to a majesty and pomp,
The which to leave's a thousand-fold more bitter
Than sweet at first t' acquire.'

Capell reads, following the arrangement of the Folios :

‘Still growing in a majesty and pomp,—the which
To leave, ’s a thousand fold more bitter, than
’Tis sweet at first to acquire.’

We are in doubt here as to which is the reading of Mr Collier’s MS. Corrector, for in his edition of Coleridge’s Lectures he gives it,

‘To leave’s a thousand times more bitter, than
Sweet, &c.’

while in the second edition of his Shakespeare he quotes it as follows :

‘To leave’s a thousand-fold more better, than
’Tis sweet, &c.’

[The former version is the more accurate, but both are wrong. The only changes made by the Corrector were the addition of ‘s’ in the first line, and the omission of ‘Tis’ in the second.]

NOTE IV.

II. 3. 103. Mr Collier says, “If the blood of Anne Bullen had saluted or welcomed the news,—‘If my blood salute this a jot—’ there would have been no difficulty.” It is not clear whether Mr Collier intends this as a conjectural emendation or not.

NOTE V.

II. 4. The stage direction which we have given from the Folios has been variously altered. The only important change which Capell introduces is in making the Archbishop of Canterbury follow the Bishops. The alteration ‘between’ for ‘below’ appeared in Reed’s edition of 1803, and has been followed by some modern editors.

NOTE VI.

II. 4. 75. This line appears to have been accidentally omitted by the printer of the edition by Johnson, who, without taking the trouble to refer even to Warburton’s text, conjectured that the passage was corrupt and proposed to read :

‘Nay, before.—

Induc’d by potent circumstances, that
You are my enemy, I make my challenge.
You shall not be my judge.’

NOTE VII.

ii. 4. 182. Mr Collier, in his 2nd edition, says, "We are quite satisfied that Theobald was right in reading 'The bottom of my conscience.'" Theobald does not adopt the conjecture in the text of his first edition. His note is as follows: "Tho this reading be sense, and therefore I have not ventur'd to displace it; yet, I verily believe, the poet wrote; 'The bottom of my conscience,—' My reason is this. Shakespeare in all his historical plays was a most diligent observer of Hollingshead's Chronicle; and had him always in eye, wherever he thought fit to borrow any matter from him. Now Hollingshead, in the speech which he has given to King Henry upon this subject, makes him deliver himself thus. 'Which words, once conceived within the secret bottom of my conscience, ingendred such a scrupulous doubt, that my conscience was incontinently accombred, vex'd, and disquieted.'" Theobald appears to have forgotten that the emendation was suggested to him by Dr Thirlby (See Nichols' *Illustrations*, II. p. 461). He put it in the text of his second edition (1740).

NOTE VIII.

iii. 2. 192. The first and second Folios, which in so doubtful a case we have followed, read :

'that am, have, and will be (Though...horrid) yet my duty, &c.'

The third and fourth extend the parenthesis so as to include line 198, '(Though...break).'

Rowe reads: 'that am I, have been, and will be: Though...horrid; yet, my duty, &c.'

Pope: 'that am I, have been, will be:' pointing the rest with Rowe.

Capell, reading as the Folios, puts a full stop at 'be,' line 192, and a semicolon at 'horrid,' line 196.

Mason proposes to omit the words 'that am, have, and will be,' because he can find no meaning in them.

Malone supposes that a line following 192 has been lost.

Seymour proposes to read :

'that I am, have been, and shall be

.....

And throw it from their soul (most firm and loyal)
Though perils &c.'

Jackson conjectures: 'that aim, has, and will be, Though, &c.'
 or, 'that aim has, and will be To you, though...duty, And throw, &c.'

Mr Knight conjectures: 'that aim I have and will, Though, &c.,'
 'will' being here a noun.

Mr Collier adopts this reading, but takes 'will' to be a verb, for 'will have.'

Mr Singer reads: 'that I am true, and will be, Though, &c.' by which, he says, all is made 'congruous and clear.'

Mitford would read: 'that am, and will be yours. Though, &c.'

Dr Badham (1856) suggests: 'that am your slave and will be. Though, &c.'

[I am informed that Dr Badham's conjecture was anticipated by Mr Edward Bickley Rogers, of Wadham College, Oxford, in a letter to the Sun newspaper. W. A. W.]

Mr Staunton conjectures: 'to that I am slave and will be, Though, &c.'

Sidney Walker says: "If there be no other corruption, the period after 'be' ought to be replaced by a comma: otherwise the words appear unintelligible. Even so, however, this will be a most harsh instance of *ἀνακολουθία*. But I rather think that a line is lost, somewhat to the following effect:

'that I am, have, and will be,
 [In heart and act, tied to your service; yea,]
 Though all the world should, &c.'"

Mr Grant White adopts Mr Singer's reading, nearly: 'that am true and will be, &c.'

Mr Nichols proposes to transfer 'yours' from line 199 to follow 'will be:'

'that am, have, and will be yours

 And stand unshaken.'

Mr Keightley prints, 'that am, have and will be...Though &c.' indicating that the sense is interrupted.

Mr Bulloch puts a full stop at 'labour'd,' and reads

'More than mine own, that arm and hand will be.'

Mr Kinnear reads 'that am, have, and will be yours; Though &c.'

Mr Spence (N. & Q., 1880) proposes 'that I 'm, &c.'

Dr Nicholson would read,

'that, am, have, and will be:'

or

'yours am, have, and will be.'

Mr Watkiss Lloyd (*Athenæum*, 30 July, 1881) transposes the words thus:

'though all the (*or i'* the) world that are
Have and will be should &c.'

Mr Joicey puts a semicolon at 'labour'd,' and reads,

'More than my own they are, have, and will be, &c.'

referring 'they' to 'hand and heart &c.' in the King's speech.

NOTE IX.

III. 2. 203. The misreading 'may' for 'have,' which is so familiar to us in this often-quoted passage, was not corrected by Pope or any subsequent editor till Capell.

NOTE X.

v. 3. Mr Grant White suggests that a new scene should begin here, "although the stage direction in the folio is only 'A Councill Table brought in with Chayres and Stooles, and placed under the State,' &c. But this is plainly the mere result of the absence of scenery of any kind on Shakespeare's stage, and the audience were to imagine that the scene changed from the lobby before the Council Chamber to that apartment itself." We have adopted his suggestion, thinking that the obvious propriety of changing the scene outweighs any inconvenience which might result for purposes of reference. Hanmer, Warburton, and Johnson all follow Pope in calling this Scene v. Theobald also supposes a new scene to begin here, although in his edition the scenes are not numbered. Capell, by his stage direction, indicated that the scene presented the Council-chamber and the lobby both at once to the eyes of the spectators.

NOTE XI.

v. 4. 30—63. It is scarcely worth while to record how Capell cut up these lines of prose into verse. No editor has followed him. Mr Sidney Walker however has made a similar attempt, but is forced to admit that in some changes of reading he has 'ventured beyond the lawful limits of an emendator.' With the same license, it would be easy to convert an Act of Parliament or a leading article into verse.

Mr Walker also has followed Capell, or perhaps has hit independently on the same arrangement, as regards the first part of the scene. The intervening lines from 10 to 29 are printed as verse in the Folio. In these he proposes some trifling changes of arrangement.

Mr Watkiss Lloyd (N. & Q., 7th S. iv. 104) proposes another method of dividing the lines, which involves the omission of the words 'all that stand...penance', and 'he stands...blow us', and the transposition of 'for kindling such combustion in the state' to follow 'on the head'.

NOTE XII.

v. 5. 1—3. Pope, with more than usual audacity, makes the lines run smoothly by thus changing them :

'Heav'n, from thy endless goodness, send long life,
And ever happy, to the high and mighty
Princess of England, fair Elizabeth.'

Theobald, Hanmer, Warburton, and Johnson adopt Pope's reading without remark.

NOTE XIII.

v. 5. 31. Mr Collier mentions that the second Folio has 'Come' in this line, a misprint rectified by his 'old annotator.' In three copies which we have consulted it is distinctly 'Corne.'

NOTE XIV.

v. 5. 39—55, 56—62. Theobald was the first to suggest that lines 39 to 55 'Nor shall this peace...bless heaven,' and lines 56 to 62, 'She shall be...mourn her,' were an interpolation. Cranmer's speech originally, as he supposed, ended at 'not by blood.' Then the King replied :

'Thou speakest wonders. O lord Archbishop, &c.'

ADDENDA.

www.libtool.com.cn

1 HENRY VI.

iv. 4. 19 *in advantage lingering,*] *ta'en at vantage, lingering* Joicey conj.

2 HENRY VI.

iv. 8. 45 *Villiago*] *Vive le roy* Orger conj.

3 HENRY VI.

l. 1. 268 *cost*] *crest* Orger conj.

RICHARD III.

l. 4. 145 *in thy mind*] *in the wind* Joicey conj.

HENRY VIII.

l. 1. 63 *his self-drawing*] *his self drawing his* Bailey conj.

l. 1. 222—226 *My surveyor...farewell.*] Mr Bailey proposes to arrange and read as follows:

*My surveyor is false: the o'ergreat cardinal,
Whose figure even this instant cloud puts on
Be-darkening my clear sun, hath show'd him gold:
I am the shadow of poor Buckingham:
My life is spann'd already.—My lord, farewell.*

III. 2. 271 *You*] *Who* Bailey conj., reading line 272 as Theobald.

v. 1. 126, 127 *What...How*] One line in Steevens (1793).

v. 1. 127 *with the whole world*] om. Seymour conj., reading *Your state... enemies* as one line.

v. 3. 11, 12 *capable Of our flesh*] *culpable Of our flesh* Jackson conj.

v. 4. 53 *loose shot*] *loose-shod* Jackson conj.

v. 4. 58 *bitten*] *bitter* Anon. conj. (Gent. Mag., 1790).

v. 5. 72 *lords*] om. Seymour conj.

www.libtool.com.cn

www.libtool.com.cn

www.libtool.com.cn

www.libtool.com.cn



•

This book should be returned to the Library on or before the last date stamped below.

A fine is incurred by retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

DUE MAR '69 H

~~CANCELLED~~
32-80-447

SEP '69 H

~~CANCELLED~~
8064



3 2044 082 534 348

www.libtool.com.cn